

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL
GENEALOGY COLLECTION

GEN

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01753 7108

523

GENEALOGY
973.006
AM3529A
1932

✓



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2016

<https://archive.org/details/americana26amer>

AMERICANA

(AMERICAN HISTORICAL MAGAZINE)



VOLUME XXVI

January, 1932—December, 1932



The American Historical Society, Inc.

80-90 Eighth Avenue

New York

Allen County Public Library
900 Webster Street
PO Box 2270
Fort Wayne, IN 46801-2270

Copyrighted, 1932, by

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.

Entered at the Somerville, N. J., Post Office as Second-Class Mail Matter

All rights reserved

CONTENTS

VOLUME XXVI

January, 1932—December, 1932

Allis, Marguerite, Two Heroes of Maryland.....	355
Anderson, Mary F., The Gold Star Pilgrimages to the American Overseas Cemeteries	381
Anderson, Mary F., Jackson's Hermitage—An Intimate Record of Its Builder	502
Animals, Our Ancestral, Louise Hubert Guyol.....	489
Arms, American Municipal, Howard M. Chapin.....	339
Bangs, Charles Howard, Washington.....	472
Banning and Allied Families, E. D. Clements.....	516
Bonapartes and American Marriage, By Alta Ralph.....	408
Boucher, John Newton, Edgar Cowan, United States Senator from Pennsylvania During the Civil War.....	247
Bronson, Henry, M. D., Distinguished Physician and Educator, Herold R. Finley.....	304
California, Rhode Island's Contribution to, Eileen M. MacMannus, Ed. B.	232
Chapin, Howard M., American Municipal Arms.....	339
Clements, E. D., Banning and Allied Families.....	516
Clements, E. D., Devenpeck, Schermerhorn and Allied Families..	261
Conklin, Edwin P., The Expedition of the "Mayflower" Men for Location	23
Cowan, Edgar, United States Senator from Pennsylvania During the Civil War, John Newton Boucher.....	247
Crothers, George E., Founding of the Leland Stanford Junior University	194
Daggett and Allied Families, E. C. Finley.....	85
de Boer, Louis P., Isaac De Rasière, the First Secretary of New Netherland; His Ancestry and Descendants.....	394
De Rasière, Isaac, The First Secretary of New Netherland; His Ancestry and Descendants, Louis P. de Boer, A. M.....	394
Devenpeck, Schermerhorn and Allied Families, E. D. Clements...	261
Eno, Joel N., A. M., The Expansion of New England in Southern New York—Long Island	388
Finley, Herold R., Henry Bronson, M. D., Distinguished Physi- cian and Educator.....	304
Finley, E. C., Daggett and Allied Families.....	85

Finley, Herold R., Kendall and Allied Families.....	422
Finley, E. C., Sheffield, St. John, and Allied Families.....	40
Gold Star Pilgrimages to the American Overseas Cemeteries, The, Mary F. Anderson.....	381
Gordon, Armistead C., LL. D., Litt. D., Old Halifax, North Carolina	321
Green Family of Printers, The, Douglas C. McMurtrie.....	364
Green's Harbor, George P. Peterson.....	376
Guyol, Louise Hubert, Our Ancestral Animals.....	489
Halifax, Old, North Carolina, Armistead C. Gordon, LL. D., Litt. D.	321
Hill, Gordon G., Princeton to the Close of the Revolutionary War..	28
Hutt, Frank Walcott, Puritan Colonel John Mason, Indian Fighter	7
Irwin, Ray Watkins, Ph. D., The Mission of Soliman Mellimelni, Tunisian Ambassador to the United States, 1805-07.....	465
Jackson's Hermitage—An Intimate Record of Its Builder, Mary F. Anderson	502
Kendall and Allied Families, Herold R. Finley.....	422
Leland Stanford Junior University, Founding of the, George E. Crothers	194
Lewis, M. M., Watertown, Massachusetts, Colonial Beehive.....	18
Lynah, Mary-Elizabeth, Casimir Pulaski.....	474
MacMannus, Eileen M., Ed. B., Rhode Island's Contribution to California	232
McMurtrie, Douglas C., The Green Family of Printers.....	364
Maryland, Two Heroes of Marguerite Allis.....	355
Mason, Puritan Colonel John, Indian Fighter, Frank Walcott Hutt "Mayflower" Men for Location, The Expedition of the, Edwin P. Conklin	7 23
New England in Southern New York—Long Island, The Expan- sion of, Joel N. Eno, A. M.....	388
Peterson, George P., Green's Harbor.....	376
Princeton to the Close of the Revolutionary War, Gordon G. Hill..	28
Pulaski, Casimir, Mary-Elizabeth Lynah.....	474
Ralph, Alta, Bonapartes and American Marriage.....	408
Salem and the "Discontinuers," Horace A. Warriner.....	12
Schermerhorn and Allied Families, E. D. Clements.....	261
Sheffield, St. John, and Allied Families, E. C. Finley.....	40
Soliman Mellimelni, Tunisian Ambassador to the United States, 1805-07, The Mission of, Ray Watkins Irwin, Ph. D.....	465
Warriner, Horace A., Salem and the "Discontinuers".....	12
Washington, Charles Howard Bangs, M. D.....	472
Washington and Jefferson, the Oldest College West of the Alle- ghanies, Maurice E. Wilson, D. D.....	181
Watertown, Massachusetts, Colonial Beehive, M. M. Lewis.....	18
Wilson, Maurice E., D. D., Washington and Jefferson, the Oldest College West of the Alleghanies.....	181

ILLUSTRATIONS

Axtell Coat-of-Arms	162
Bancker Coat-of-Arms	292
Banning, Asenath C.	Between 522-523
Banning Coat-of-Arms	516
Banning, Bavid	Between 522-523
Banning Family Chart	572
Banning Residence	520
Beecher Coat-of-Arms	562
Bird Coat-of-Arms	546
Bishop Coat-of-Arms	562
Blaine, James G.	192
Boardman, Mabel T.	56
Boomer Coat-of-Arms	96
Bond Coat-of-Arms	292
Borden Coat-of-Arms	111
Bradley Coat-of-Arms	524
Bradshaw Coat-of-Arms	292
Brock Coat-of-Arms	162
Bronson, Henry	304
Brown Coat-of-Arms	140
Brownell Coat-of-Arms	140
Butterworth Coat-of-Arms	140
Carpenter Coat-of-Arms	Between 132-133
Chickering Coat-of-Arms	111
Church Coat-of-Arms	96
Commemorative Stone and Tablet on the Barbican, Plymouth, England	132
Compact, Signing of the	Between 132-133
Corner Stone of the University, Laying of the	208
Cowan, Edgar	256
Crosby Coat-of-Arms	522
Daggett Coat-of-Arms	85
Daggett Family Chart	98
Daggett, John	92
Daggett, Nancy M. (Boomer)	100
Darnley, Catherine	Between 40-41
de Rasière, Laurens	Frontispiece No. 3
Devenpeck, Cornelia B.	Between 264-265
Devenpeck, L. W.	Between 264-265

Earle Coat-of-Arms	150
Embarkation of the Pilgrims.....	Between 132-133
Esten Coat-of-Arms	140
Evans Coat-of-Arms	448
Everett Coat-of-Arms	111
Fales Coat-of-Arms	140
Flower Garden at "The Hermitage".....	503
Foster, Stephen Collins.....	193
Frost Coat-of-Arms	74
Fuller Coat-of-Arms	150
Hayward Coat-of-Arms	140
Headstones, Types Used in American Overseas Cemeteries.....	381
Hermitage Church, Where Andrew Jackson Attended Services....	508
Holt Coat-of-Arms	562
Holway Coat-of-Arms	162
Honywood Coat-of-Arms	532
Jarvis Coat-of-Arms	440
Jefferson College, 1840.....	188
Jennings Coat-of-Arms	162
Johnson Coat-of-Arms	150
Kendal Castle	Between 422-423
Kendall Coat-of-Arms	Between 422-423
Kendall Family Chart	438
Kendall, Harriet Terry	Between 426-427
Kendall Home, Interior Views.....	Between 426-427
Kendall, Leonard Jarvis	Between 426-427
Kendall, N. W.	Between 426-427
Kendall, N. W., 2d.....	428
Kendall, Sarah R. Spencer.....	Between 426-427
Kenmore, Home of Nathaniel Wyeth Kendall.....	Between 426-427
King Coat-of-Arms	74
Lansing Coat-of-Arms	292
Leland Stanford University Administration Building.....	208
Leland Stanford University—Arcades, Archway Through.....	224
Leland Stanford University—Arches, Through the.....	228
Leland Stanford University Memorial Court and Memorial Church	216
Mayflower Compact	Frontispiece No. 1
"Mayflower," The	24
McClellan Coat-of-Arms	111
McMillan Log College.....	Frontispiece No. 2
Martin Coat-of-Arms	96
Maxey Coat-of-Arms	96
Mayhew Coat-of-Arms	96
Moffat, James D.....	192
Monsell Coat-of-Arms	Between 436-437
Monsell, Hannah Roe	Between 436-437

ILLUSTRATIONS

vii

Norton Coat-of-Arms	532
Original Cabins at "The Hermitage"	514
Passavant, William A.	192
Pearce Coat-of-Arms	150
Pepper Coat-of-Arms	150
Perry Coat-of-Arms	132-133
Pilgrim Fathers Watching the "Mayflower"	Between 132-133
Pilgrims, Landing of the	Between 132-133
Plymouth in 1622	Between 132-133
Plymouth Rock	Between 132-133
Pritchard Coat-of-Arms	562
Richardson Coat-of-Arms	451
Roe Coat-of-Arms	Between 436-437
St. John Coat-of-Arms	68
St. Peter's Church, Leyden, Holland	Between 534-535
St. Peter's Church, Interior View	Between 534-535
Salter Coat-of-Arms	446
Schermerhorn Coat-of-Arms	268
Schermerhorn Homestead	276
Scudamore Coat-of-Arms	574
Sheffield Coat-of-Arms	40
Sheffield, Lord Edmond Baron	Between 40-41
Sheffield, Edmund, First Lord	Between 40-41
Sheffield, Edmund, Second Duke of Buckingham and Normandy	Between 40-41
Sheffield, Edmund, Second Earl of Mulgrave	Between 40-41
Sheffield Family Chart	42
Sheffield Family Chart, No. 2	86
Sheffield, G. S.	62
Sheffield Hall, A. D. 1860	47
Sheffield, Sir John of Mulgrave	Between 40-41
Sheffield, John, Second Lord	Between 40-41
Sheffield, Joseph E.	44
Sheffield, Maria St. John	73
Sheffield Residence, New Haven, Connecticut	64
Sheffield, Sir Robert	Between 40-41
Shepard Coat-of-Arms	96
Sherman Coat-of-Arms	162
Skidmore Coat-of-Arms	546
Skinner Coat-of-Arms	532
Sparrow Coat-of-Arms	532
Spencer Coat-of-Arms	426
Sprague Coat-of-Arms	111
Stanford, Mrs. Leland	200
Stanford, Senator Leland	194
Steele Coat-of-Arms	532

Stockton Coat-of-Arms	74
“The Hermitage,” Home of President Andrew Jackson.....	
.....Frontispiece No. 4	
Thompson Coat-of-Arms	546
Thorp Coat-of-Arms	78
Tompkins Coat-of-Arms	562
Terry Coat-of-Arms	Between 428-429
Terry, Harriet Monsell	Between 436-437
Terry, Captain John Tyler.....	Between 436-437
Todd Coat-of-Arms	423
Van Branken Coat-of-Arms.....	292
Vicars Coat-of-Arms	546
Walker Coat-of-Arms	150
Warren Coat-of-Arms	111
Washington College, 1836.....	186
Washington College, 1850.....	190
Wilmot Coat-of-Arms	562
Woodford Coat-of-Arms	532
Wright Coat-of-Arms	162

CORRIGENDA

In Vol. XXVI, No. 1, pp. 30-31, the name “Ogden” occurs three times. In each instance this should read “Olden,” a typographical error that is deeply regretted.



26
VOL. XXVII JANUARY, 1932 NUMBER 1

AMERICANA

ILLUSTRATED



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.
SOMERVILLE, NEW JERSEY
AND
NEW YORK CITY

Entered at the Post Office in Somerville, N. J., as Second Class Matter, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

Copyright, 1932

The American Historical Society, Inc.

AMERICANA

Published by THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC., formerly published by the National Americana Society. Issued in quarterly numbers at \$4 per annum; single copies \$1. Publication Office, the C. P. Hoagland Company Building, 16 Union Street, Somerville, N. J.

AMERICANA is a Quarterly Magazine of History, Genealogy, Heraldry, and Literature. Manuscripts upon these subjects are invited, and will be given early and careful consideration. It is desirable that contributions should contain not less than two thousand nor more than ten thousand words. Contributors should attach to their manuscript their full names, with academic or other titles, and memorandum of number of words written.

All correspondence relating to contributions should be addressed to the Editor. All communications should be addressed:

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.,
Somerville, N. J., or 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City

BOARD OF OFFICERS

President and Managing Director MARION L. LEWIS
Secretary F. M. KELLER
Research and Circulation Departments M. M. LEWIS

EDITORIAL STAFF

Editor-in-Chief

WINFIELD SCOTT DOWNS

Contributing Editors

EDW. D. CLEMENTS

JAMES A. DAILEY

HEROLD R. FINLEY

WALTER S. FINLEY

HERBERT A. HULL

WILLIAM B. TOWNE

CLYDE F. RYAN

Biographical Editor HORACE A. WARRINER

Heraldic Art MILDRED K. BAKLEY

Historical Editors } EDWIN P. CONKLIN
E. MELVIN WILLIAMS

EUROPEAN RESEARCH ASSOCIATES

MR. A. T. BUTLER, Windsor Herald, College of Arms, Queen Victoria St., London, E. C. 4, England.

MR. EDWARD PHELPS, 3 Tobernea Terrace, Monkstown, County Dublin, Ireland.

DR. N. F. ÖSTMAN, Arkivarien (Keeper of the Stockholm City Archives) Rådhuset, Stockholm 8, Sweden.

FRU GUDRUN NATRUD, Arkivkonsulent, Statarkivet, Oslo, Norway.

Jan 1932

54.

set by them done (this their condition considered) might
be as firme as any patent; and in some respects more iud.
The forme was as followeth.

In y^e name of god Amen. We whose names are underwritten,
the loyal subjects of our dread soveraigne Lord King James,
by y^e graco of god, of great Britaine, France, & Ireland King
Defondor of y^e faith, &c.

haueing undertaken, for y^e glorio of god, and aduancement
of y^e christian^{faith} and honour of our king & country, a voyago to
plant y^e first Colonie in y^e Northern parts of Virginia. Do
by these presents solemnly & mutually in y^e presence of god, and
one of another, Covenant, & combine our selues together into a
Ciuil Body politick; for our better ordering, & preservation & fur=
therance of y^e ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enacte,
constitute, and frame such just & equal Lawes, ordinances,
Acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought
most meete & conuenient for y^e generall good of y^e Colonie: vnto
which we promise all due submission and obedienc. In witness
whereof we haue hereunder subscribed our names at Cap=
Codd y^e 11. of Nouember, in y^e year of y^e raigne of our soveraigne
Lord King James of England, France, & Ireland y^e eighteenth,
and of Scotland y^e fifth fourth. An: Dom. 1620. 1

After this they chose, or rather confirmed Mr. John caruer (a man
godly & well approued amongst them) their Governour for that
year. And after they had provided a place for their goods, or
comon store, (which were long in unloading for want of boats
foulnes of y^e winter weather, and sicknes of diuered) and beyond
some small cottages for their habitation; as time would admit
they met and consulted of Lawes, & ordors, both for their
ciuil & military gouernments, as y^e necessitie of their condi=
tion did require, still adding therunto as vrgent occasion
in severall times, and ^{as} cases did require.

In these hard & difficult beginings they found some discontentes
& murmurings ^{arise} amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriage
in other; but they were soon quelled, & ouercome, by y^e wis
dome, patience, and just & equal carriage of things, by y^e gou.
and better part wth cleau^{er} faithfully together in y^e maine.
But that which was most sad, & lamentable, was, that in 2
or 3. moneths time ealys of their company dyed especially
in Jan: & february, being y^e depth of winter, and wanting
houses & other comforts; being enforced with y^e Current &

Contents

	PAGE
Puritan Colonel John Mason, Indian Fighter - - - - -	7
By Frank Walcott Hutt, Secretary Old Colony Historical Society, Taunton, Massachusetts.	
Salem and the "Discontinuers" - - - - -	12
By Horace A. Warriner, Brooklyn, New York.	
Watertown, Massachusetts, Colonial Beehive - - - - -	18
By M. M. Lewis, Glen Rock, New Jersey.	
The Expedition of the "Mayflower" Men for Location - -	23
By Edwin P. Conklin, New York City.	
Princeton to the Close of the Revolutionary War - - - -	28
By Gordon G. Hill, New York City.	
Sheffield, St. John, and Allied Families - - - - -	40
By E. C. Finley, Providence, Rhode Island.	
Daggett and Allied Families - - - - -	85
By E. C. Finley, Providence, Rhode Island.	

A M E R I C A N A

January, 1932

Puritan Colonel John Mason, Indian Fighter

BY FRANK WALCOTT HUTT, SECRETARY OLD COLONY HISTORICAL SOCIETY, TAUNTON, MASSACHUSETTS



IN all the grim history of Indian wars of New England, with the annihilation of the ruthless native at the hands of the equally ruthless Puritan adventurer, few English leaders keep the pace of the Puritan Colonel John Mason, to whom was given the command of the Connecticut Colony's forces in the Pequod Fight, during the years 1637-38. Himself a resistless force pitted against savage hordes, we see him moving on and past and through a critical period directing and taking part in his few and brief campaigns, with the talents of a captain fully competent for the time and the event, a fierce fighter whom we now have practically forgotten.

We remember the Pequod War period as that in which a cluster of Massachusetts settlements were finding foothold, as a result of the determined march of the colonists through the wilderness to the founding of New Haven, Hartford, Wethersfield, Taunton. There was just then taking place the primitive gatherings of the "first families" into communities that have persisted to this hour, for whose consummation those newcomers endured such odds of deprivation and trial of soul and body that have but little comparison in subsequent history.

From contemporary writers, although Mather and others wrote fully as matters were reported to them, we obtain but glimpses of a savage age wherein an old race went out of existence and a new career in the movement of migration was started upon its way. For the whole range of the drama of Colonial retrospect, inclusive of the many causes and effects of pioneer settlement, offers no more tragic event, within a very brief space, than that of the extermination of the Pequod tribe,

PURITAN COLONEL JOHN MASON

in toto. Over those years of our history there still hangs a heavy pall of cloud indicating the doom of natives of the Connecticut territory.

The stern and helmeted figure of John Mason, "of the same relentless fibre as Miles Standish," dominates the old region that he was appointed to desolate, with the eventual overthrow of the powerful Sassacus, who was at one time lord of twenty-six sachems; and Mason and Sassacus as opponents constitute the two foremost personalities of that decisive Colonial warfare, when the wigwam and its inhabitants completely perished, and fire and bloodshed marked the highway of the oncoming race.

The immediate opening episode of the short war occurred when John Oldham, of Watertown, was murdered by some Block Island Pequods, his vessel robbed, and two boys taken captive, though other atrocities had preceded this one. Governor Bradford's "History of the Plimouth Plantation" records the opening incidents and subsequent events, and Gardener's "Pequot Warres" describes the flaying and roasting of Butterfield and Tilly, such cruelties arousing the Colony, and calling into action men of the hour like Colonel Mason.

Our pageant of the conflict that followed discloses the Connecticut Colony as then composed of three towns, Hartford, Windsor, and Wethersfield, and these, in General Court, concurred in the appointment of John Mason, veteran of Netherland warfare, as commander-in-chief of the first levy of ninety men, combined with an Indian contingent of seventy under the "renegade" chief Uncas, formerly a leader of the Pequods. To their standard eventually were sent, but not in time to participate in the first set-to, several hundred men from the Massachusetts colonies, the Pequods then and thereafter finding themselves minus allies of any sort, and destined to enter combat unaided; and so the fight was on.

Our retrospect for this occasion is not to review to great extent the story of the Pequod War, but, exclusive of a considerable array of concurrent personages and incidents, to follow the gleam of the helmet of John Mason (and that helmet was the means of saving his life on one occasion), as it proceeded in an unswerving and relentless course like a beacon through the scene of carnage. With the development of events, and of the prowess of the man whom we keep in sight throughout, we see Mason, on May 20, 1637, with his ninety Englishmen and seventy Indians, en route down the Connecticut River, a nondescript

PURITAN COLONEL JOHN MASON

crew from any modern standpoint, but clever at arms, routing enemy groups on the way, and reaching the fort at Saybrook.

Here, at Saybrook, Mason's military experience and foresight, in disapproval of the plans of the magistrates and of the existent powers (that of landing at Pequod Harbor), made him for that time sole master of the situation, and of his present determination to proceed through the country of the Narragansetts; and so, joining in with Captain John Underhill, he arrived at the headquarters of Canonicus, chief of the Narragansetts, his allies, who made that part of the way clear.

Thence on, through the wilderness and to the Pequod lands, Mason proceeded, his forces, white and red, increasing, Uncas and some 500 of his Indians constituting a large part of his following. The crossing of the Paucatuck River was Mason's Rubicon.

The enormities that took place at Fort Mystic, and that revenged former enormities on the part of the Pequods, on June 5, 1637, composed an episode that revealed to the Pequods not only the superiority of the Colonists, but their purpose of leaving nothing undone on the part of Mason and his small army to rout their enemy to the last man. Though the Pequods skulked as was their way in fighting, there was no hesitancy on the part of the invaders. They poured through the palisades of the Indian encampment, and mowed down their enemy with musket fire, and with a conflagration that destroyed the native settlement. This all happened within an hour, and it was here that Colonel Mason was saved by his helmet from a shower of Indian arrows.

After the victors left the smoking ruins, and the straggling few of the Pequods that remained had retreated, other reinforcing Pequods appearing too late to be of any aid, it is Cotton Mather's report as told him, that brings the scene before us:

"They were like bears bereft of their whelps. When they came to the ashes of their friends at the fort, and saw the bodies of their friends horribly barbecued, where the English had been doing a good morning's work, they howled, they roared, they stamped, they tore their hair, they cursed, and were pictures of so many devils in desperation." He adds that they did not swear, for they did not know how yet.

After this, the most hideous encounter of the war, Mason and his troops continued a shoreward march, to Saybrook, and the mouth of the Connecticut, this route being marked with minor skirmishes with the natives.

PURITAN COLONEL JOHN MASON

This, in briefest possible review, tells the tale of the main and decisive fight of the first expedition with Mason in command. His contemporaries mainly sustained his methods of meeting and pursuing the enemy without allowing any quarter whatever, so following out, as he did, the precedent established by the Pequods, who were unmerciful in their treatment of whosoever of the English fell into their hands. The Indians fought mostly with arrows, while the instant havoc wrought by the settlers' gunfire was astounding both in physical and moral effect, the surprised enemy calling it "magic."

It is related that Mason had some hopes of preventing destruction of the Indian encampment, but once the fire caused by the musketry was underway, there was nothing to stop a holocaust.

The third episode in the tragic event, Mason and his men now having arrived at Saybrook, was that of Chief Sassacus in solemn conclave with his council, that last conference of the leaders of the tribe being held on the site of the present city of New London. The decision of the forlorn remnant was to abandon their country, and to make a retreat, they knew not where, so long as they might get out of sight of the white men and out of the sound of their guns. Then they destroyed their wigwams on this their last hilltop, and departed in their canoes, on their way, meantime, capturing and ferociously killing three colonists.

The fourth episode finds the broken fugitive ranks in a swamp, at what is now Fairfield, Connecticut, where took place the final conflict between the English and the Pequods.

The Massachusetts Bay had been tardy in response to the needs of the Connecticut Colony, but now, after the Fort Mystic fight, there came on the field Captain Israel Stoughton, a veteran who had fought under Cromwell, a typical Puritan leader, now at the head of the Massachusetts forces. Joining in with Mason, both went in pursuit of Sassacus and his fugitive followers, Uncas and his Narragansetts continuing as allies to the whites as heretofore. Marches and counter marches brought them to the Fairfield Swamp, where Sassacus and 300 of the Pequods awaited them. After the usual savage sortie, the battle began, though the enemy realized that there was no hope for their cause from the beginning. In a word, and to pass over the excruciating incidents of this affair, the battle of the Fairfield Swamp practically put an end to the Pequod Tribe.

PURITAN COLONEL JOHN MASON

Our epilogue is in Sylvester's own words: "From this on, the few wandering Pequods scattered here and there through their old domain, from time to time becoming the easy prey of the Mohegans and Narragansetts, who for some time after were bringing the heads and hands of their Pequod victims into the settlements of the English, as the gory relics of their man-hunting expeditions."

Mason, his appointed errand done, died in 1672, three years before the King Philip War.

We say of John Mason, and we say it advisedly, taking into full account the times, the conditions, and the Puritan mind, itself, that brooked no interference with the harsh purpose of putting an end to heathen men, that he represented the scheme of things as few others might have done. The weak gave way before the strong in two merciless encounters in which Mason was leader. Remorselessness was supreme on both sides, and Mason adopted and put into effect that soulless quality of combat, in this incident of old Indian border warfare. He is to be ranked with Miles Standish among the military men of his times as one of the fierce, rough battering-rams that mowed the way for the English settlers.



Salem and the "Discontinuers"

BY HORACE A. WARRINER, BROOKLYN, NEW YORK



HERE are reasons, and with very good historical basis, why the word "conservative" persistently clung to certain of the Massachusetts communities until within very recent years. The proud old appellation cannot be used with its former emphasis in Salem or Boston since the present-day migrations of Southern Europeans have so surprisingly spread their tides over and throughout these centres, and therewith swept from their long-established foundations old home landmarks, the ancient family holdings, and even the patronymics themselves—the Ropes, Gardners, Saltonstalls, Endicotts, in Salem; the Reveres, Everetts, Hancocks, Copps, Greenes, Leveretts, and the like, in Boston—having been forced aside by a new citizenry, the -ines, the -oses, the -skys, and the -ians. The old has not been wholly eradicated, but their time is not for long. Here and there, as in Cambridge, Lexington, Putnam, Danvers, Beverly, you will find some descendants of first-comers persistently holding to gray thresholds and their conservatism. But a new people, that will shortly give way to others, according to the swift migratory changes, and the remarkable increase in population that we are witnessing, are dominating, for a period. The traditions of conservatism no longer hold full sway; these are to be found to a great extent only in the story of localities. Would you review for this purpose the former folk and times, renew your old friendships with Nathaniel Hawthorne, Edward Everett Hale and their group, and also converse with your more recent historians, M. V. B. Perley and Mary Northend.

The conservative North Shore, and of Salem in present discussion, had its beginning with the inception of Colonial settlement, when a "peculiar people," one of the ultra-conservative groups of history, faced a wilderness domain, and fastened themselves and their purpose to the rocky New England shores, for a considerable length of time. The religious tenets of these stern old testamentarians, as we may call them, made so deep and sure a mark upon their place of habitation

SALEM AND THE "DISCONTINUERS"

here, and their doctrine so influenced their age, that the households of Naumkeag (Salem) and others in the cluster of towns settled in places of Indian nomenclature, became imbued for generations with that spirit, and with a spirit of social reserve that differentiated them from other communities. In a phrase, that former time of religious restraint first gave emphasis to the long-held traditions of conservatism of Massachusetts Bay people.

Blinded with the glare of our times, deafened with the blare and the ceaseless cries of argument upon every conceivable matter in our generation, the challenge to an understanding of the well-meaning of the first-comers is seldom given serious attention. We are not easy with those old conservatives, any more than they were easy with any who came to their Province with notions unlike their own polity. Generally, we accept the early settlers of Salem as having come and gone; and often enough we only smile at the grim time and the plain folk, and express ourselves as thankful that we lived not in their day.

"Put yourself in his place" is a phrase that has seldom operated successfully in any of the concerns of our contemporary life. In historical matters, an army of controversialists has found this plea for humanity a *bête noir*, due to a long maintained prejudice, or some unexplained unwillingness to seize the viewpoint of those earlier generations that participated in an era of existence quite as valuable in human history as our own.

We are just now traveling along with a group of sight-seeing historians who are reviewing that dim, forest-fringed and rock-bound Massachusetts coastline whereto, somewhat more than three hundred years ago, arrived a discontented colony of dissenters from an established religious usage in England. Our perspective of those first-comers, Discontinuers, as they sometimes styled themselves, and of their religious, political, of whatever motive, is not always in agreement as to the justness of their cause, or the prevailing intention in the tide of the affairs of far-wandering men and women. We are sometimes thrilled with the accounts of their adventure, and we agree that there is romance in the event that our long distance from the old scene has made.

But as we laymen attempt to give some close-heed to a practical study of the strict Puritan usage of the primitive communities, we find a hard task-master as we meet up with that word "bigotry" that belit-

SALEM AND THE "DISCONTINUERS"

bles history in this and many another review of the story of mankind. To put one's self, ourselves of today, in the place of Endicott and Winthrop and their colleagues at Salem, requires considerable effort on our part who hesitate from being lured from this present, extravagant in all things, to the past, frugal in most matters.

That tide in the affairs of men, that migrating tide that thrust from one side of the Atlantic to the other, was one of the most powerful effluences of an age. Upon its crest came these severe, staid, solemn Discontinuers, that we are now thinking of, as first resident at Salem, and afterwards at Tri-Mountain (Boston), where for a generation and more they, in the full ecstasy of their religious possession, deemed themselves at length having arrived in their Promised Land, to fulfill a destiny like unto the Israelites after whom they aimed to pattern.

We may well select their era as exemplary of what we are denominating one of religious tolerance. Not tolerated in the cities and towns of England for their disobedience toward certain ecclesiastical usages, they removed by the hundred and the thousand, ten thousand in ten years, to this then fearsome place, and themselves, as we look upon it, at once became intolerant of any who might not become conformable to their laws, religious and civil. It is simply and only for this stand that our generation can never put itself, even sympathetically in the place of that earlier one; and it is extremely difficult to find a writer, except in biography, who will champion the theological narrowness of the age of the settlement of the early Puritans. For we have traveled very far from that type, and into a larger, fuller age, with our wide-ranging beliefs and very extravagant ones, so that the Salem of three hundred years ago appears as an incomprehensible isolation. But, accept it or not, the early men of Salem believed implicitly in their devotion to and their preservation of a most strict rule of faith, and in its Biblical interpretation by a ruling parson. And the parson did rule. And thus far, Salem was at one with the custom of all Puritan settlement.

One of the explicit dogmas, and the outstanding one of these Massachusetts charter-holders was the promulgation of their right "for their special defence and safety, to incounter, expulse, repel, and resist, all such person and persons as shall at any time attempt the destruction, invasion, or annoyance to the plantation or its inhabitants." Thus

SALEM AND THE "DISCONTINUERS"

they barricaded themselves, as the bishops abroad had barricaded them. And within their barricade, they built their edifice.

So that their church was set up with a close and very reverential regard for the Bible in its literalness. Their conversation was chiefly of the Bible; all were commanded to attend the "meeting"; the talk throughout the week was largely concerning what they had heard on Sabba' Day. So teaching, and so conversing, their leaders and closest adherents came to distrust any whosoever among them, or whosoever might visit them, dared to offer "interpretations, revelations, or inspirations" of their own. The first comers, the undeviating story of their experience shows us, had no sympathy with liberty of conscience. Having hastened away from overseas strictures, they narrowed free thought and free speech down to the "limit" here, and they feared what might come of public utterances of "fanatical spirits." Their theological and civic rule was intended in this regard to be, and it was, sole and supreme. The Colonial records, those of Salem, and elsewhere, are filled with proofs of these statements. Men and women of "prophetic spirit," that sort of teaching which did not conform to the teaching of the magistracy, were not to be tolerated.

So arose the Salem bulwarks and so arose the edifice. Yet despite this close religious defence the inner sanctuary was invaded. This first impregnable (or so intended) citadel of conservatism that made its mark upon the traditions of this locality was now and again assaulted by a certain restlessness of religious argument offered by individuals who did not belong to that age but were actually nearer to our own. There arose in Salem discontinuers among the Discontinuers; and Dissenters from without came in and besieged the old Dissenters. Proponents of the liturgy of the Church in England came, too—and went.

In the instance of the proponency for the liturgy, we refer to the expulsion from Salem of John Brown, merchant, and Samuel Brown, lawyer, who had the boldness to urge that the parsons make use of the forms of prayer-book and missal. This was nipped in the bud, the local rulers foreseeing and fearing genuflections, crossings, vestments outside their own plain gown, and the "extravagant outward show" of Old World ecclesiastical usage.

The isolated dominance of the theocracy of Salem and nearby towns throve, temporarily, but there were other arguments of assault besides that for the old liturgy. Antinomianism (in general, the opin-

SALEM AND THE "DISCONTINUERS"

ion that Christians are freed from obligation to keep the law of God; specifically, that Christians are not obligated to observe Jewish law of ceremonial observance) pressed hard here, in particular when Thomas Scrogg, a deputy, and a judge of the local court, was apprehended when he was found to be in sympathy with the Antinomian views of Anne Hutchinson, and was deprived of his office; when William Alford, who was in agreement with Judge Scrogg, was disarmed, and left the Colony; when William King, who had come in the "Abigail" in 1635, was required to be disarmed, also, and his Christian kindness to the Quakers exposed him to whipping and banishment, though he was restored in 1661; when Richard Waterman, having the courage to dissent from the severe policy of the leaders, was banished. These are but a few of the earlier instances of dissension from the local theocratic standard.

Yet, with these explicit examples before us of the theocratic rule, there are claimants that the Salem Church exhibited a somewhat more tolerant spirit than that of Boston, and they are right in citing the incident of Roger Williams. It is not absolutely clear why that great figure of Colonial times, afterward the founder of Providence Plantation, was called to preside at the church at Salem, or rather to exhort there, since the Boston Court was already in disagreement with him, because he "had declared his opinion that the magistrate might not punish the breach of the Sabbath nor any other offence that was a breach of the first table"—the first four Commandments of Moses. Nevertheless, Roger William came twice to Salem, by invitation of the leaders there, his prophet-voice "crying out into the wilderness." Whatsoever tolerance there existed in the staid Massachusetts town, tolerated Williams again and again.

Emily Easton's recently published biography of Roger Williams brings that pioneer man very near to us, this scholarly writer of comparative history in biography inviting us into such an accord with the spirit of his times and his spirited personality that the curtains are completely thrown aside. Therewith, we may the more easily "put ourselves in his place," or with him, in Salem, as elsewhere, and his unyielding, versatile, restless movements, a twentieth-century man in the seventeenth century. This, briefly, was his "Independent" manner of living and teaching:

SALEM AND THE "DISCONTINUERS"

Freedom from the control of the bishops was only half of his belief about religious liberty; freedom from the interference of magistrates in religious matters, was the other half, which grew increasingly important in his eyes. The divine right of kings had no foundation in his soul; and as a prophet he must speak out and show the people their errors—the highest, as well as the lowest.

Salem, agreeing largely with Williams, called him, and listening to him, thus let down the bars to a broader sort of tolerance than had theretofore existed in that part of the Colony; and this, after the expulsion of laymen before mentioned for their varied expression of religious thought.

Boston was severe on Salem and on the fearless preacher, summoning Williams to the General Court on several occasions to answer the charges of holding "divers dangerous opinions," "complaining of the injustice and oppression of the magistrates," and "attempting to persuade his own church to give up communion with the other churches in the Massachusetts Bay Colony, as being full of 'antichristian pollution.'"

Eventually, then, when Roger Williams, after trial before the implacable Boston Court, was sentenced to depart out of their jurisdiction, the Salem church wrote its humble submission to the magistrates. Governor John Winthrop, in 1638, made the last showing of a local liberal spirit in his suggestion of a repeal of the order of banishment, but it was never carried into effect. Williams went on and on, through the wilderness, and to his Providence, and there the greater and the enduring chapter of his life was written; but the effects of his stay in Salem were felt for a long period after he had gone away.

Thus, with our hurried sight-seers we have a passing glimpse of the first establishment and the presence of the Discontinuers and their earliest opponents in the "conservative" town of Salem, where John Winthrop, a most "Bible-minded" man, first set foot, and where the rise and fall of bigotry and its temporary revival was the strange fashion of an hour when intolerance was the rule, and the conservatism of parsons, magistrates and people was the entering wedge of the wilderness church. Nay, we have no wish to put ourselves in the place of those whose work and ways were so peculiarly their own. Yet we may not annul that generation, that isolated chapter, and that era of conservatism, as these led the way in the pageantry of New England history.

Watertown, Massachusetts, Colonial Beehive

BY M. M. LEWIS, GLEN ROCK, NEW JERSEY



FROM all the traditions and the first chapters of the story of Watertown, Massachusetts, we have come to think of its Colonial settlement as a depository of Puritan faith and of Puritan strict rules of industry, and as a centre from which these were spread broadcast, still in the keeping of its own folk, for the further upbuilding of scores of other towns in Western Massachusetts and elsewhere.

The Colonial development of old Massachusetts Bay, all now having become a part of the picturesque parade of that age of New England history, in its succession of plain-garbed, pious-minded, yet stubborn and highly adventurous men and women, with their inevitable planting of meetinghouse, school, and some sort of industry, and their continuous search for "broad places" and "independence," included in its many pauses that of Piguusset (Watertown).

Not in the least to be compared with that brilliant and ostentatious parade then in progress in the Old World, there were, nevertheless, in this New World line of march knightly and brave figures, redoubtable men and courageous women, the gleam of arms and helmets, the songs of Psalms, and all preceded, to whatsoever goal, by the ægis of the Mosaic Law.

A foremost baronet in this primitive processional facing and subduing the perils and privations that were the chosen lot of the ever-increasing bands of immigrants, was the tolerant man, Sir Richard Saltonstall, one of the founders of the Massachusetts Bay Company, one of the counsellors with the group that surrounded the standard of the Charter of the Bay Colony, close friend of Matthew Craddock, governor of the company's affairs abroad, and of John Winthrop, Governor of the located Colony.

Saltonstall, who was present at the hour of the founding of other towns, besides, and in the rough trek through the wilderness, is known in the Province history as the chief man in the settlement of Watertown, fourth of the Massachusetts Bay towns, and incorporated the

WATERTOWN, MASS., COLONIAL BEEHIVE

very year of the landing of the Winthrop fleet at Salem, 1630. This personage, of good birth and breeding, and not of the Old Establishment, is in view here for but a brief period, soon to resume his residence in England again, but remaining here long enough to secure the beginnings of this town, and a "church fellowship as its first work." Had he remained here, he would undoubtedly have been a power in the town's further progress, as well as that of the Province, for he was chosen an assistant to the General Court just before his departure. Herbert Milton Sylvester, our most thorough and prolific historian of the Indian Wars in New England, remarks, in effect, that though Saltonstall never returned to New England, he always had the affairs of the Colony at heart, and he interestingly refers to a letter by him against intolerance, written about the year 1650.

The activities of the founder thus instituted, there ensued the more than traditional round of prayer and work ("to work is to pray, to pray is to work"), and law-making and law-enforcing, with this steadfast group of laborers, for they were all that, even Governor Winthrop himself, building, delving, providing, in common with all the people of all the settlements.

The scene, either then or later on, is not very auspicious, not very attractive, as Watertown (probably so named because the locality was a "well-watered" situation) appeared for this part of the pageant; a fair place to halt, to build homes, to farm, to raise cattle.

Comparatively a town of very wide limits as to its boundaries, at first, now one of the smaller towns of the State, there soon arose and progressed within its borders, and thence beyond, a Colonial urge for exploration that has little likeness to the conservatism of its sister towns. Five years after its planting, in 1635, there were included within its area, the present townships of Waltham, Weston, and a large part of Lincoln, as well as a section of Cambridge—these, by successive excisions, reducing the old bounds, as at present. Yet for twenty years, Watertown continued to be more populous than any of the neighboring towns, with the exception of Boston.

The standard of town-making thus irrevocably set in place, a new sort of activity almost immediately became apparent. The "crowding" at this Colonial centre (and give a thought to that and our "crowding" today), was the cause of that unanimous feature of further migratory impulse in the Bay Shore pageantry, such as that chiefly at Dorchester.

WATERTOWN, MASS., COLONIAL BEEHIVE

Forthwith, we see various groups of these "Independent Congregationalists" taking up anew the heavy burden of removal over the primitive trails, the impossible paths through woods, swamps and plains, as these and others assumed the added tasks of planting in Connecticut, its own Watertown (now Wethersfield), while some of these became, in turn, the first settlers of Stamford, Milford, Branford, all reminiscent of those old "fording" localities in England. "Straitness of accommodation" was the prevailing reason for sudden new and widely radiating marches of these wanderers from the Watertown centre, the "old hive" as Dr. Henry Bond, Watertown's historian has aptly styled it. The busy bees presently became massed on new river plantations, as at Dedham and Sudbury, fifty or sixty families at a time, and still plenty remained at Watertown to pledge its existence for the State's future history; and again some of the migrators returning from time to time to the old hive, not honey-seeking, but desiring a useful place of abode, something to work with and for, some industry to establish, a place of worship to secure.

They veered away in little far-seeking throngs to the westward; and it was the Far West then, to found Lancaster (then Nashaway); while, crossing the Bay, just below, Thomas Mayhew, the redoubtable missionary, and later governor of small islands, took a Watertown colony to Martha's Vineyard, there to become the earliest of the white settlers of the shoreward isles, New England's "lord of the isles." To and fro, incessantly they went, like bees, indeed, with the following-named towns for their goal and founding, many to continue within their new bounds, some to seek out again the old home-place: Groton, Framingham, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Rutland, Spencer. Their descendants, too, bore the Watertown tradition farther along into Long Island, to Maine, New Hampshire, and Vermont.

This period of cruising about, inquiry, and investigation of the Promised Land, produced no more constructive personality, however, than Thomas Mayhew, whose name and work are identified with the initial chapters in the history of Martha's Vineyard. But not until he had made a lasting impression upon the civic records of the Watertown settlement did he migrate to the shoreward islands. Having housed himself and entered upon his activities in Watertown in 1631, he at once became one of the town's chosen men, and for thirteen years it is related that few, if any other persons, so often secured important

WATERTOWN, MASS., COLONIAL BEEHIVE

appointments from the General Court, wherein he also served as representative. If there was a hive, as Bond says, here was no drone of a bee, for he built and owned mills, built bridges (the first one in history over the Charles River), and proved himself an "all-round business man" of the period. Though Watertown was his first school of experience, Watertown could not hold him. In 1641, Thomas Mayhew and his son, Thomas, were granted by the local agent of the Earl of Stirling, the Island of Nantucket and two small islands adjacent; and later, Martha's Vineyard and the Elizabeth Islands, and of these Thomas Mayhew, Senior, was constituted the Governor.

One more, and a very significant personage of Colonial times, is reckoned largely in this scene of pioneer action, a rover of rovers in this our pageant of early wanderers. It is that of John Oldham, whose name is inseparably associated with the inception of the Pequod War (we spell Pequod as the Historian Sylvester spells it), and also as the official who had the charge of Morton, the Merrymount rioter. First coming to Plymouth, he had been expelled from that town in 1624, then alighting (not settling) at Nantasket (Hull), where he was joined by Roger Conant and some others. We have the story from the Historian Sylvester, that Oldham's offence was "plotting and writing against the Colony, and attempting to excite a sedition." Banished from Plymouth on this account, his wife and children were allowed to remain in that town, and when he came back after awhile, the company ordered him to be punished by blows from a musket. He at that time bore the description of a "turbulent man and a spy," and he again went to Nantasket, where he continued until 1630, when he went to Watertown, Conant proceeding to Cape Ann, where he settled down, and where his descendants continue to this hour. Oldham made good at Watertown, and in 1634, the General Court granted to this pioneer a 500-acre farm in Watertown, long known as the Oldham Farm, and afterwards quite as long known as the Dummer Farm. He is recorded as having been the first representative of Watertown. He figures as the leading cause of the war of the white settlers against the Pequods. Chief Canonicus gave him an island in Narragansett Bay, on condition that he (Oldham) should dwell there, but his death prevented his acceptance of the gift. He was killed on Block Island, in July, 1636, and this precipitated the war. Such as these, all of the pioneer calibre, tremendously venturesome, ready to try the risks of

WATERTOWN, MASS., COLONIAL BEEHIVE

Colonial innovations once, if not twice, were the forerunners of actual eventual town establishment.

Watertown, thus, possessed all the essentials of the typical first New England towns, and somewhat more. The settlement itself continued steadfast, and took root, and the community is of great importance in the Commonwealth today. But its prestige in the further founding and building of other towns was more far-flung and productive of enterprising citizenry than most others. Watertown received abundantly of the independent opportunity offered to all these new towns, and it in turn spread abroad to lasting effect that independent spirit of further establishment and broader provincial growth and opportunity.



The Expedition of the "Mayflower" Men for Location

BY EDWIN P. CONKLIN, NEW YORK CITY



HOW the beginnings of great events magnetize us. How Dr. Freeman's "History of the Norman Conquest," most elaborately and intimately performed, brings the vital scenes and the living people directly before our eyes, both before and during the Conquest, that most important of all the decisive chapters in English history. How fortunate we are over here, in having at hand Governor Bradford's own story of the Pilgrim Fathers, and their own conquest of the new land. You who are interested at all in history and genealogy, make these two books your friends and reference books.

To the many thousands of the descendants of the Pilgrims of the "Mayflower," there is no more gratifying retrospect than the unobstructed view we now have direct from our broad modern highways to the little Leyden Street and the landing-place at Plymouth, Massachusetts. Both historian and genealogist have made the outlook clear to them and to us, rendered the small Pilgrim street easy of access, and simplified the journey from the American origins to the present generation. There now exists a much-traversed way from the old shrine and its venerated traditions, from the ancient goal, and today's hither milestone; and the lines of descent in the main are fixed and certain. Within comparatively few years this has been accomplished.

The wholesale changes of three centuries have borne us so diversely and far afield and aflood, that most of us have lost sight of certain of the little journeys of the first-comers that preceded Leyden Street, land-journeys of the Pilgrim people before Plymouth was possible. We are all the time thinking chiefly of the Landing, and of the housing, and the settling down to the business of the town-making, and that, true enough, is the first landmark in all our research this side of Holland and England.

Yet there were, necessarily, those first expeditions and explorations, those preliminary inquiries of the intrepid wanderers from overseas, that were to make sure of the "New Plymouth" and your family tree.

THE EXPEDITION OF THE "MAYFLOWER" MEN

There is no descendant of the Pilgrims who will not at once confess to a thrill of family pride in reviewing that early groping to and fro by our forefathers in the barrens of The Wampanoags; those hazardous pursuits of perilous trails up and down inhospitable shores, beset with dangers to be tested only by such a pioneering group as the Pilgrims were. There were paths to be made, a land choked with swamps and dead timber to be explored before there should ever be a dwelling-place and a town and that Leyden Street that has become so securely merged with the route genealogical. The brave struggle and the firm endurance of the Pilgrim Fathers at this primitive period of their combat with the wilderness, and in a district for which they had neither chart nor charter, these are matters that we seldom take into our present-day accounting of first things.

Historical accounts of the plunge into the Patuxet country (the Patuxets were a sub-tribe of the Wampanoags) include those of three explorations, the first by ten men, with Captain Myles Standish in command (and he was in command in all subsequent events, a commanding figure, indeed) and with William Bradford, second Governor of the Colony, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Tilley, as advisors, the date of this investigation of the territory being Wednesday, Thursday, and Friday, November 25, 26, 27, 1620.

The second of such expeditions (at first with twenty-four explorers, these dwindling down to eighteen, and with Captain Jones, "Mayflower" captain, as leader), was by shallop, as well as by land marches, from Monday, December 7, to Thursday, December 10.

It is to the third expedition that we made particular reference here, as this at times desperate trip led again by sea and land, to the chosen locality where Plymouth should one day arise. And let us remember that the "Mayflower", while this ardent seeking for home and shelter was underway, was riding at anchor in the Cape Cod cove, near where Provincetown should become settled.

By means of the two earlier explorations having become familiarized with the lay of the land we now start out with eighteen men, twelve of the principal passengers, and six of Captain Jones' crew, for the third venture. "Ten of the principal men" had been chosen as volunteers, for this inquiry, and their names stand forth in all the Pilgrim story. They were: Captain Myles Standish, Governor John Carver, William Bradford, Edward Winslow, John Tilley, Edward Til-



THE MAYFLOWER

THE EXPEDITION OF THE "MAYFLOWER" MEN

ley, and John Howland, from Leyden in Holland, and Richard Warren, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Dotey (Doten), from the London metropolis and neighborhood. With these, the Pilgrims took their own seamen, John Allerton and Thomas English, while Captain Jones sent three of his own seamen, with the two mates and pilots, Clarke and Coppin, and the master gunner of the "Mayflower." William Bradford, then as always, was the journalist, and no newspaper reporter of today is more thorough in his assignment than was Bradford in his review of the comings and goings of his people.

With these, then, your heroic forefathers, many of them wearing steel helmets and breastplates, we set forth late on Wednesday, December 16, aboard that shallop that had been freighted over in the hold of the "Mayflower," and for the last, and an epoch-making cruise, as we grant it to have been.

Every league at sea, and every mile on land of this venture, was accompanied with hardships, toil and vigil unceasing, the severity of cold weather and storms. The voyagers got away from the "Mayflower." The boat had a mainsail, but the crew had to row the heavy craft against a strong northeasterly wind, and the effort soon began to tell upon many who had not been used to continued rowing in heavy weather. Edward Tilley became insensible from the cold, but this valiant forefather would not allow his mates to take him back to the ship; and it is stated that the gunner was "sick unto death." They kept on. They were on pilgrimage. And when finally they were able to make sail, the heavy seas broke over the boat, and as the water struck the pioneers, their clothing became "like sheets of iron." But presently they got under the lea of Truro shore, when their condition became somewhat easier.

For twenty miles they cruised, that freezing December day, the "bleak New England shore" of Mrs. Hemans' poem then indeed becoming verified to them. Doubling Billingsgate Point, they came into Wellfleet Bay, and landed on a beach, where, years later, the famous Eastham camp-meetings were held. They camped around a fire, at that place.

With the dawn, and neither then nor at any time later on were pioneers accustomed to rise later, ten of the men advanced further to explore the land, and ten took the shallop. Wellfleet Bay and its surroundings had nothing inviting to the travelers at that time, where-

THE EXPEDITION OF THE "MAYFLOWER" MEN

upon both parties turned south, the land crew arriving at a locality where they had seen Indians, and, losing sight of the shallop, there was no dinner for them.

At this stopping-place they made certain discoveries that were of interest to them, namely, a tract of old corn-land and an Indian burial-place. There were also here the remains of the frames of small houses, not further described. It was a desolate land.

Presently, this exploring party returning to the beach, they were there joined by their friends from the shallop, and built a barricade and encamped.

Wolves or foxes caused an alarm at midnight, after which the Pilgrims, though sleeping in the open, got some rest. On Friday, December 18, they were out and about at five o'clock a. m., and two and a half hours before sunrise. It was their custom to invoke the care of the Almighty upon all occasions, and this, which was far more than a mere ceremony to them, was done at this time.

Most of the Pilgrims had stacked their guns on the beach, so that they might have them handy when the shallop came; but Captain Standish, William Bradford, and two others, the most cautious ones of the party had kept theirs by them. It was well that the four men had shown this care, for, while all were having their breakfast within the barricade, they were suddenly set upon by a fusillade of arrows from an unexpected Indian attack. Standish was ready with his "snap-chance," a flintlock gun, but the others had to run to their campfire to light their matches. There ensued on the part of the others an excited scurrying about to save their guns and to protect the shallop. Fire from the four guns at the barricade and from the shallop dispersed the invaders, who, it is recorded, numbered from thirty to fifty, and having only bows and arrows for their weapons.

Neither white man nor Indian was injured, though the Indians made three assaults, twelve men pursuing the natives into the woods, the others remaining near the shallop. After the set-to, eighteen arrows were picked up, that later on were sent to friends in England.

Great Meadow Creek was the place of this attack, which the Pilgrims called "The first encounter." Thence, all again boarded the shallop, with the intention of making a cruise of forty-five miles, and with Manomet Harbor in view. Meantime, a snow-squall and rough weather added to their hardships. The rudder of the shallop was

THE EXPEDITION OF THE "MAYFLOWER" MEN

broken by the force of the waves, and a fierce wind broke the mast in three pieces, the mainsail dragging overboard. It was a desperate plight for a time, but the crew eventually made land by rowing in by Manomet. Nearly shipwrecked, the party came to a sheltered place between Clark's Island and Saquish Head. Wet through, and suffering from the freezing temperature, our Pilgrims made a campfire on Clark's Island, right opposite the locality of the later famous landing.

This, told in brief, was the sort of welcome the Pilgrims found in Plymouth Harbor, which had already been so named by the earlier explorer, Captain John Smith. Clark, the master's mate, having been the first to land on the island where the encampment was made, that island was named for him.

On Saturday, December 19, the Pilgrims put their arms and the shallop in good order, and "on the Sabbath Day we rested."

On Monday, December 21, new style (December 11, old style), the technical landing was made on the very site of the present town of Plymouth. The explorers reported back to the ship, and on the 26th the "Mayflower" came into the harbor of Plymouth. All plans, routes and explorations were circuitous, but the haven such as it was, was at length gained, and this was the end of a pilgrimage that history has made famous.



Princeton to the Close of the Revolutionary War

BY GORDON G. HILL, NEW YORK CITY



DURING the years which immediately preceded the freeing of the American Colonies from British control, the little town of Princeton played a part in the history, not only of the Province of New Jersey, but of the Nation, out of all proportion to its size. For this there are many reasons. Princeton was the seat of the College of New Jersey, which attracted to it many outstanding personalities, both as teachers and students. The town occupied a strategic position about halfway between New York and Philadelphia on by far the most traveled road connecting those cities, and to this fact owed access to early information concerning events and frequent visits from travelers. During the war it was the scene of an important battle. Furthermore, since the county of Mercer did not come into existence until 1837, the town, split almost in equal halves between Somerset and Middlesex counties, had frequently two representatives in the early Assemblies and Provincial Congresses, when neighboring towns had only one. However, this account of Princeton deals primarily not with the town's part in the stirring history of the Revolution, but with the story of its settlement and the coming of the college.

So far as can now be determined, the area now known as Princeton, New Jersey, was not occupied by settlers until 1696. Long before that year, however, legal ownership of the land had passed into the hands of various English gentlemen in the simple and uncomplicated way that title to territories in the American Colonies was generally secured. His Gracious Majesty, Charles II, one day presented James, Duke of York, with most of the Province of New Jersey, and the latter in turn bestowed it upon two of his friends, Sir George Carteret and Lord John Berkeley, who were only too glad to split the land between them, dividing it into what came to be known as the Eastern and Western Divisions. In 1676, Sir George was sole proprietor of the area which included Princeton, then virgin and unsettled soil. In 1682 he, or rep-

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

representatives of his estate, disposed of most of his land to a syndicate of eleven men, most of them Quakers, few of whom ever visited the shores of America, and among them no less a person than William Penn. It would seem that investment in American lands was popular at that time, for inside of a year the original syndicate had doubled the number of its members. But except for a strip of some eight hundred acres acquired by a resident of New Jersey, the actual site of Princeton was to remain for a period of some thirteen years the property of William Penn and another Quaker named Thomas Warne, who is described as a respected and prosperous Dublin business man. To the American proprietor of the eight hundred acres some writers have ascribed the honor of being the first settler of Princeton. That he lived in New Jersey there is no doubt, but that he ever settled or cultivated his Princeton lands there is not the slightest evidence.

In 1696, comes the first record of settlers in Princeton. A group of five families, followed within a year or two by a sixth, and later by a small but steady stream of newcomers, decided for reasons unknown to form a new community rather than remain in not far distant and previously settled localities. Thirty years before the first homestead was located at Princeton, or Stoney Brook, as it was at first called, a group of New Hampshire men had left their homes for the milder climate and perhaps more fertile soil of New Jersey, there to found the town of Piscataway, which they named after their former village in New England. This town seems to have been peaceful and prosperous when, in 1696, the five families who had resided there and one from the neighboring town of Woodbridge pulled up stakes and moved further into the wilderness. Of the reasons for the move we can only conjecture.

These were not landless and impoverished pioneers driven by necessity to unexploited land. Benjamin Clark, the first man to build at Stoney Brook, owned some two hundred and seventy-five acres at Piscataway and the records of that town show that Benjamin Fitz Randolph owned one hundred and thirty acres. Richard Stockton, another of the group, who had more recently come to Piscataway, had been a considerable landowner near Flushing on Long Island at an earlier date. The group seems to have been rather more than less prosperous than the majority of those they left behind. Looking back over the span of years we find that it is almost always difficult and often impos-

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

sible to establish the motives which led to migrations such as these. In some cases one must suppose that some of the wealthier men who took up land in those early days were shrewd real estate operators, anticipating the movement of population, developing the land and selling out at a profit to do it all over again. Our Princeton group, however, all remained in that locality, although some of them made profitable sales of portions of their holdings to later comers, and there were among them men who had moved several times prior to settling at Stoney Brook. It is, perhaps, more plausible that the desire to find a degree of religious freedom impossible in the older towns, or to provide an environment where their children could grow up uncontaminated by worldly or unsympathetic surroundings, was responsible for the move. Most of these men are known to have been Quakers and tradition attributes that sect to those whose faith is less certain. The fact that most of the land they settled was purchased from such outstanding members of that faith as William Penn and Thomas Warne lends support to the theory, and it is known that in Piscataway and Woodbridge Quakers were a small minority in 1696. In any case there is every evidence that these men came to their new home in accordance with some plan previously decided on between them, rather than that they drifted there independently, for not only did they all come in one year and all but one from the same town, but three of them were related by marriage and sons-in-law of James Giles, of Piscataway. Benjamin Clark married Ann Giles, William Ogden married Elizabeth Giles, and Joseph Worth, the man from Woodbridge, married Sarah Giles.

Putting conjecture aside, let us state the known facts of the settlement. Between 1695 and 1696, Benjamin Clark bought from Thomas Warne, the English proprietor, twelve hundred acres of land upon which in the Revolutionary War the battle of Princeton was to be fought, and in 1696 he erected the first dwelling-house at Stoney Brook. In the same year his brothers-in-law purchased land from him. William Ogden, one of whose descendants was to be Governor of New Jersey at the time of the Civil War, bought four hundred acres. Whether Joseph Worth, who was later to be the miller of the community, and whose name has come down to us in connection with the Worth's Mills, which were defended against the British in the battle of Princeton and cost the Continental Army the life of a general,

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

purchased as much acreage as Ogden is doubtful. John Horner and Richard Stockton each bought half of the eight hundred acres belonging to Doctor Gordon, Stockton later disposing of his holding to the Fitz Randolfs and buying, in 1701, a tract of five thousand and five hundred acres from William Penn. The land he acquired, in 1696, however, is now occupied by buildings of Princeton University, and the Theological Seminary. Although it would appear that of the tract he purchased from Penn no less than ten hundred and fifty acres, a block the position of which was to be decided upon later, were reserved to the original proprietor, Stockton became thereby the largest landowner in that first group of settlers and was probably the wealthiest man amongst them. Perhaps William Penn hoped by this curious deed to make certain that some land in the locality would still be open for Quaker settlement. Certainly, within a few years, there were more Presbyterians and members of other faiths in Princeton than Quakers.

It is to Richard Stockton that Mr. J. F. Hageman, in his excellent history of Princeton, gives the credit for naming the new community. He states, on the authority of the Hon. George H. Sykes, an enthusiastic student of Jersey history, that Stockton named the stream, which is still so-called after a Stoney Brook which ran through the land previously owned by him on Long Island and which was called by the Indians "Wopowog." The name Stoney Brook was applied to the whole locality until 1724, and was formally recognized by William Penn in the deed which he gave to Stockton.

The next arrival seems to have been Benjamin Fitz Randolph, some time between 1696 and 1699. At first the little village seems to have attracted few other settlers. The center of community life remained near the brook, and the Quaker meetinghouse and burying ground for which Benjamin Clark, in 1709, gave nine and one-half acres of land in trust, are there still to be seen. About 1710 another settler arrived. John Leonard, from New England, was a man of considerable wealth and a widespread reputation as friend of the Indians. It is said that during the King Philip's War in Massachusetts that chief had expressly directed his tribesmen on no account to harm any of the Leonards. He brought with him an iron forge which is said to have been one of the very first used in the Colonies.

From this time on there is every reason to believe that the settle-

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

ment attracted a small but steady stream of newcomers. It was located almost exactly half way between New York and Philadelphia on the most traveled route, already known as the King's Highway, although then probably little more than an Indian path. As early as 1695 the innkeepers of Piscataway, Woodbridge and Elizabethtown had been taxed to provide for its upkeep, but as late as 1716, when a ferry boat had been plying at New Brunswick for almost a score of years, provision was made on the ferry for only "man and horse and single persons." Nevertheless, it was along this road that the houses of the later comers began to be built, rather than about the first nucleus of Quaker houses near the banks of Stoney Brook. Realizing that the center of the town was to be near the highway, where now run Stockton and Nassau streets, some of the inhabitants were unwilling to accept longer the name of Stoney Brook for the community as a whole.

We are indebted to the private journal of Nathaniel Fitz Randolph, a son of Benjamin, the original settler, who was born at Stoney Brook in 1703, for information concerning the change in name. An entry made in this journal on December 28, 1758, states: "Princeton first named at the raising of the first house there by James Leonard, A. D. 1724. Whitehead Leonard the first child born in Princeton, 1725."

For the choice of the name many reasons have been advanced by various writers, but upon this question the journal remains silent and no contemporary evidence is available. It has been often stated that Princeton was named for Henry Prince, a merchant of Piscataway to whom Thomas Leonard, a brother or uncle of James, sold two hundred acres of Princeton land. Nevertheless, other authorities point out that this Henry Prince was a comparatively small landowner, was not particularly distinguished in the community so far as we know, and furthermore had been in his grave for about ten years when the first house was built by James Leonard. Is it reasonable to suppose, they ask, that so little would now be known of this man if he had made sufficient impression upon his neighbors in the very few years he lived among them for them to name the community after him? It has also been pointed out that Princeton is a name perfectly in keeping with neighboring towns, some of which may have been older by name than it and one of which, Kingston, is generally agreed to have been its predecessor. As one travels the King's Highway to Trenton, one passes through a series of towns with a succession of names which seem

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

hardly likely to have been given to them by chance. First comes Kingston, then Queenston, next Princeton, and lastly Princessville. Can this collection of names appearing in the short space of a few miles be purely fortuitous? Another theory is sometimes advanced, though without any authority than a vague local tradition. It is said that the town was named after Prince William of Orange, who is said to have been particularly popular among the Quakers, because he brought to and end the hostility between the English and Dutch, notwithstanding a record rather too militant to attract the liking of that community of Friends. In this connection we may well mention that the first building built by the college at Princeton still bears the name of Nassau Hall, a fact which may seem to support this theory.

Although the town grew steadily, it does not appear to have grown very fast. An European traveler who passed through it before the turn of the century remarked that it looked more European than most American villages, in that there were gardens and orchards between the houses and the town was not crowded together. As late as 1758 we have the residents of Princeton presenting a petition to the House of Representatives of the Province of New Jersey, then convened at Burlington, which protested at the quartering of soldiers upon the town and pleaded the poverty of some of the house-holders. Some parts of this petition we will reproduce; the residents of Princeton asked the House to take notice:

That your petitioners, ever since the commencement of the present war, between the Crown of Great Britain and that of France have been greatly burdened with the quartering of his majesty's troops . . . ; and that although many of your petitioners are poor, have small houses and numerous families, with not more than one room, they have yet been forced to entertain sometimes ten, twelve or fifteen soldiers for a night, to their great inconvenience and distress; and what greatly increases your petitioners' unhappiness is, that during the two winters last past, they have been obliged to quarter in their houses, some two, some three, others four of his majesty's troops, and find them fire, bedding, &c. . . . Your petitioners therefore pray that at this present session (which we hope will be time enough) your Honorable House will take the premises into your serious consideration; and for our relief cause it to be enacted, that barracks be made, erected and set up in this town, for the accomodating and quartering his majesty's troops in their marches and winter quarters, at the expense of the Province.

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

Although such barracks were set up at the expense of the Province in several other Jersey towns, there is no record that Princeton petitioners met with any success. A stone house still standing on Edgehill Street, and known as the "Barracks," was built by Richard Stockton, and although it was certainly used by troops during the Revolutionary War, it is not definitely known whether it was so used at the time of the French and Indian War, though this is probable. It is not altogether impossible, therefore, that the House felt the residents of Princeton a little inclined to exaggerate in their petition, their inability to quarter His Majesty's troops. That theory seems at least not unlikely when we consider the fact that only a few years before, in 1752, these residents had been able to meet the demands of the trustees of the College of New Jersey, a considerable sum of proclamation money and a free gift of land, and thereby secure the location of the college in their town. These demands the older and much larger town of New Brunswick had been either unwilling or unable to meet.

Undoubtedly the College of New Jersey, which was later to change its name to Princeton University, was to a very large extent responsible for such political importance as Princeton assumed in the Revolutionary struggle. Early in its history it attracted men of revolutionary sentiments and trained men who were to hold the highest offices in the government of the new Nation. A brief account of its beginnings and establishment at Princeton must therefore find a place in our narrative.

The more liberal and evangelical clergy of the Presbyterian faith had long felt the need of an institution where young men could be trained for the ministry, especially as the older universities were the tools of a somewhat rigid sectarianism and not always hospitable to more liberal doctrine. New Jersey was settled upon not only because of its central position and because of the many Presbyterians settled there, but because its governors were known to be liberal and less under the thumb of the Bishop of London, who had already made good his claim to overlordship of religious instruction in some other colonies, particularly New York (and that despite a governmental promise not to interfere with the religious observances of the Dutch there, made when they surrendered). A charter for such a college would, they felt, be opposed by this clergyman with all the resources at his command. Furthermore, although the southern colonies had their William and Mary, and New England has its Harvard and Yale universities, the

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

middle section of the country had as yet no institution of higher learning. As early as 1746 a charter was granted for the foundation of a college and instruction begun soon after under the charge of the Rev. Mr. Dickinson in Elizabethtown. On his death, in 1747, the students were moved to Newark and came under the instruction of the Rev. Aaron Burr, son-in-law of the illustrious Jonathan Edwards. One of these students was Richard Stockton, grandson of the settler of Stoney Brook, who was to later study law, become within a few years a trustee of his *alma mater*, and distinguish himself in many ways. In 1748, another charter was secured from Governor Belcher, who personally gave the college every support and encouragement, and one of the trustees mentioned in that charter was Thomas Leonard, of Princeton. It was Belcher, according to a letter written by him to a friend shortly after he came to the Province as Governor, who first suggested that the college should be located at Princeton: 284388

This affair was agitated before my arrival and much contested between the gentlemen of the Eastern and those of the Western Division, where it (the college) should be placed, and I have got them to agree to have it built at Princeton, in the Western Division, being—I apprehend—nearest to the center of the Province.

But whatever was decided on as a result of Governor Belcher's suggestion, the trustees afterwards, on September 26, 1750, voted that a proposal be made to the towns of both "Brunswick and Princeton, to try what sum of money they can raise for building of the college," and in May, 1751, voted that the college be placed at New Brunswick if that town should be found willing to provide one thousand pounds proclamation money, ten acres of cleared land and two hundred acres of woodland. This, New Brunswick failed to do, and the citizens of Princeton promised. On September 27, 1752, the location was fixed at Princeton and in January, 1753, Mr. Nathaniel Fitz Randolph, by giving the college a deed for certain lands, completed the gift of property demanded by the trustees.

Certain residents of Princeton previously mentioned deserve credit for making Princeton a university town. John Horner, Richard Stockton, and Thomas Leonard joined in a bond for the one thousand pounds proclamation money. All the land was found. Mr. Nathaniel Fitz Randolph gave the four and one-half acres upon which building was commenced and once more an entry in his journal is of value to us:

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

"January 25, 1753. Gave a deed to the Trustees for ($4\frac{1}{2}$) four and one half acres of land for the college." In that deed a consideration of one hundred and fifty pounds is mentioned, but we find the further note in the journal: "I did never receive one penny for it; it was only to confirm the title." In July, 1754, the building which was to house the college, the historic Nassau Hall, still standing despite fire and cannonade, was begun, and in 1756 President Burr and seventy students took possession. It is of interest to note that the corner-stone of that building was laid by Thomas Leonard.

Not until John Witherspoon became president of the college was the strong fatality which hung over those elected to guide its destinies dispelled. Aaron Burr died less than a year after the move to Princeton. Two days later the trustees invited his father-in-law, Jonathan Edwards, one of the most famous of Colonial divines, to take his place. At first the missionary to the Indians at Stockbridge, Massachusetts, wrote declining the offer and adding that gentlemen who knew him and his defects so well should not have even considered him for such a position. His modesty was overcome and he came to Princeton, only to die less than two months after his arrival as the result of an inoculation against the smallpox then prevalent in those parts. Finley, his successor, served less than five years. The next president, the Rev. Samuel Davies, entered upon his duties in July, 1759, and died in February, 1761. It was then that the trustees invited John Witherspoon, a noted Presbyterian minister in Scotland, to come to the colonies and take charge. At first he refused and strangely enough it was Richard Stockton, the student in 1747, already a trustee of the college, whose name was to be associated with his as a signer of the Declaration of Independence, who was able finally to persuade him to accept the offer over a year after his first refusal.

Richard Stockton was in England during the years of 1766 and 1767, and at the request of his fellow-trustees called upon Witherspoon and discussed the invitation with him. He found the man who was to be the most important of the early presidents of Princeton with very vague ideas concerning the college, of which he had previously heard very little, and of the opportunities for service in the colonies. At last he won the man around, but Mrs. Witherspoon remained strongly opposed to acceptance. In his well-written and amusing letters to his wife in Princeton, Stockton describes the manœuvres, in which he dis-

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

played diplomatic skill of a high order, by which he brought pressure to bear on the lady through various prominent clergymen. In 1768, the Witherspoons came to Princeton.

Already the place was a center of revolutionary fervor. There were demonstrations on the part of the students in 1770 and again in 1774; burning of tea; boycott of British goods by students who would wear only American cloth. No less a person than James Madison, then an undergraduate, describes them in a letter to a friend named Thomas Martin. Into this troubled atmosphere the Scot, John Witherspoon, fitted quickly and easily. He was pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Princeton as well as college president, and did not hesitate to speak strongly on the political situation from that pulpit. It may be only a commentary on the troubled times, but while in previous years the vast proportion of the students had become clergymen, under Witherspoon's administration less than half of the graduates became ministers and many later distinguished themselves in public life.

Some years previous to the Declaration of Independence a spirit of preparation for war had made itself evident in New Jersey, although the Governor, William Franklin, was an ardent supporter of the Crown, and led a considerable body of Royalists. Finding it difficult to obtain a suitable expression of opinion through the Assemblies which the Governor controlled, various New Jersey towns formed Committees of Correspondence with a view to taking concerted action. The Historian Bancroft mentions particularly the activity of these committees in Princeton and Perth Amboy in urging the meeting of a Provincial Congress, and on May 2, 1775, it gathered at Trenton, the various counties sending representatives, among whom the town of Princeton, lying in two counties, had perhaps more than her share. The Congress when it adjourned in August appointed a Committee of Safety to act during its recess. This committee numbered eleven men, two of whom were from Princeton and no less than seven from Somerset and Middlesex counties, in which that town was located. It is not strange that the committee decided to meet at Princeton.

In the meantime, Governor Franklin had attempted to anticipate and defeat the actions of the Provincial Congress by convening the regular Assembly at Perth Amboy at the same time. The following year he attempted the same tactics, but this time the Provincial Congress which met at Burlington on June 10, 1776, ten days before the

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

date set for the Assembly, stole a march on him. Not only did they vote that the Governor's proclamation calling a General Assembly should be disregarded, but they succeeded in having that gentleman arrested and brought before them under military guard. The Princeton representatives present were John Witherspoon and John Dickinson Sergeant, who had long served as treasurer of the college. According to the eighth president of Princeton, Dr. Ashbel Green:

The Governor treated the Congress with marked indignity—refusing to answer questions—denouncing the body as lawless, ignorant and vulgar, incapable of devising anything for the public good, and subject to the charge and punishment of rebellion. When he had finished his tirade of abuse, Dr. Witherspoon rose and let loose upon him a copious stream of irony and sarcasm, reflecting upon the Governor's want of proper early training in liberal knowledge and alluding to an infirmity in his pedigree.

The Governor's conduct must indeed have been insupportable to lead the Reverend Dr. Witherspoon to use such forceful language. The former was forthwith deposed and afterwards sailed for England, while Witherspoon's zeal so impressed and stirred the Congress that after only eleven days of service as a member of it he was elected a delegate to the Continental Congress in Philadelphia, where, with Richard Stockton, who had become a member of his congregation in Princeton, he signed the Declaration of Independence.

On July 2, 1776, the Provincial Congress of New Jersey decided to adopt an independent State government and accepted for the province the title of State, and it was in Princeton that the first Legislature of the State of New Jersey assembled in the library of the college to organize that new government. It met on August 27, 1776, and who but Richard Stockton was one of the two candidates for Governor. Not yet, however, was Princeton to supply the State with a Governor. Livingston, comparatively a newcomer to New Jersey, won the election.

Upon the occupation of Princeton by both Continental and British armies and upon the battle of Princeton fought on land purchased by the Quaker Benjamin Clark from the Quaker Thomas Warne some eighty years before, it is unnecessary to comment, for the facts are too well known. Perhaps it may be mentioned, however, that General Mercer, whose name was given, in 1837, to the new county, which included Princeton and was formed from parts of Middlesex, Burling-

PRINCETON TO CLOSE OF REVOLUTIONARY WAR

ton, Hunterdon and Somerset counties, was mortally wounded in the defense of Worth's Mill and died in the Clark home, where he was nursed by Quaker women.


Once more Princeton served the cause of American independence in 1783, when the Continental Congress was disturbed and alarmed in Philadelphia by the violence of Pennsylvania soldiers, whose terms of enlistment had expired, but who remained unpaid. On June 26, 1783, the Congress met in Princeton, where the New Jersey State Legislature was also in session, and where the halls and library of the college building were placed at its disposal.

In less than a century Princeton had become very unlike the quiet settlement probably envisaged by the Quakers who first had settled along the banks of Stoney Brook, but something of that peace has remained there to this day, when Princeton is known the world over.



Sheffield, St. John, and Allied Families

BY E. C. FINLEY, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND

HE name Sheffield is of ancient origin. When surnames first began to be used in Great Britain, following the subjugation of the Saxons by the Normans under William the Conqueror, many men assumed as a second or family name the name of the town or shire in which they lived. Sheffield was originally used as the name of a town in Yorkshire, and still endures as such; the town of Sheffield was famous during the latter part of the eighteenth century for the production of beautiful silverware. It is now the seat of Sheffield University and many other institutions of learning.

Arms—Ermine a griffin segreant azure. (Arms in possession of the family.)

One of the earliest members of the family on record is Sir Robert Sheffield, who lived in the time of Henry III (1207-72). Another Sir Robert Sheffield, living in the fifteenth century, married Genetta Lownde, daughter and co-heiress of Alexander Lownde, of Butterwicke, thus bringing this estate in the Sheffield family. His son, Sir Robert Sheffield, was a London barrister and Speaker of the House of Commons in 1510 and 1512. He was also a commander at the battle of Stoke, and was knighted after the fight. He died in 1518. He married (first) Helen Delves, daughter and heiress of Sir John Delves, of Doddington, Cheshire; (second) Anne. His son by the first marriage, Sir Robert Sheffield, married Jane Shirley, and died in 1531. Their son, Edmund Sheffield, was born in 1521, and killed in Ket's rebellion in 1549. He was first a ward of Lord Rochford, but later passed under the control of the Earl of Oxford; was sent to Cromwell and became one of his gentlemen. He was designed for a barony by the will of Henry VIII, and was created Baron Sheffield of Butterwicke in 1547. He married Anne de Vere, daughter of John de Vere, fifteenth Earl of Oxford. His son, John Sheffield, became the second Baron Sheffield of Butterwicke. Edmund Sheffield, third Baron Sheffield, was created, in 1626, Earl of Mulgrave. His son, Sir John



Sheffield



Ben. Motte sculp.

Edm. Smith fecit.

SIR ROBERT SHEFFIELD OF BUT

SPEAKER OF THE HOUSE OF COMMONS, SON OF

JENNET DAUGHTER, AND HEIR, OF SIR

OB. 1678



TERWICKE KNIGHT BANNERET.

SIR ROBERT SHEFFIELD OF BANNERET, 1600 &c.

ALEXANDER, LORD OF BUNNINGSWICK

1678



The right Honorable Lord EDMOND Baro
Sheffeld, His M^{ty} Governour of y^e Citty and Countie of
Yorke, and President of his Council & Treasurers in y^e North
Kingd^{om} of the Most noble Order of the Garter.



EDMUND SHEFFIELD FIRST LORD

SON OF SIR ROBERT SHEFFIELD OF
DAUGHTER OF SIR JOHN



SHEFFIELD OF BUTTERWICK,

BUTTERWICK AND OF MARGARET
TOUCHE OF COVNER



Engraving taken from a picture.

Robert Green, del.

JOHN SHEFFIELD SECOND LORD

SON OF EDMUND FIRST LORD SHEFFIELD AND

JOHN FIFTEENTH EARL OF OXFORD HEREDITARY

as 1569



SHEFFIELD OF BUTTERWICKE.

OF THE LADY ANN DE VERE, DAUGHTER OF

BY LORD HUGH CHAMBERLAIN OF ENGLAND K.C.

E.T. 37

24



En. Anthonysz. utelli.

Rob. Gouss. Sc. London.

THE HON. SIR JOHN SHEP
 SON OF EDMOND FIRST EARL OF
 DAUGHTER OF SIR ROBERT



FIELD OF MULGRAVE, E.B.
 MULGRAVE X^O AND OF URSULA
 TOWNMENT OF KESTERY

Ob. 1612

S. G.



EDMUND SHEFFIELD SE-
SON OF THE HON SIR JOHN SHEFFIELD
SIR EDMUND ANDERSON OF FLIX



COND EARL OF MULGRAVE,
KB. AND OF GRISELD DAUGHTER OF
BOROUGH, LORD CHIEF JUSTICE.

OE. 1658

ET.

1658



CATHERINE D'ARNOY
LITHOGRAPHE PAR M. DE LAUNAY, PARIS
DANS LE SALON DE M. DE LAUNAY, RUE DE LA HARPE, N. 101
1788



EDMUND STEELE SECOND DUKE OF BUCKINGHAM AND NORFOLK

AND OF THE LADY CECILIA JAMES DUCHESSE

AND OF THE LADY CECILIA JAMES DUCHESSE

AND OF THE LADY CECILIA JAMES DUCHESSE

COUNTRESS OF DORCHESTER AND FOREMERE



1735

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Sheffield, died before his father, leaving a son Edmund, born about 1611, who succeeded his grandfather to the title and became the second Earl of Mulgrave. He was appointed by Parliament Vice-Admiral of Yorkshire, succeeding his grandfather, and was one of the nine true peers who sat in Oliver Cromwell's House of Lords. He married Elizabeth Cranfield, daughter of Lionel Cranfield, Earl of Middlesex. His son, John Sheffield, third Earl of Mulgrave, was one of the most eminent noblemen of his day. He was created, in 1594, Marquess of Normanby in Lincolnshire, and in 1703, Duke of Buckingham and Normanby; he died in 1720. He married (first) Ursula, daughter of Colonel Starvel, and widow of the Earl of Conway; (second) Catherine, daughter of Fulk Greville, Lord Brooke, and widow of Baptist, Earl of Gainsborough; (third) Lady Catherine Darnley, Countess of Anglesey, natural daughter of James II and Catherine Sedley, Countess of Dorchester, and widow of the Earl of Annesley. Edmund Sheffield, son of John and Catherine (Darnley) Sheffield, was the second Duke of Buckingham and Normanby. He was born in 1716 and died in 1735 without issue, when the titles became extinct. He devised the estates of the Sheffield family to his mother, Catherine Darnley, and they eventually passed into the Phipps family through her daughter by her first marriage, who married a Phipps. The titles of Marquess of Normanby and Earl of Mulgrave are now borne by this family. The Sheffield line was continued by Charles Herbert, an illegitimate son of the first Duke of Buckingham and Normanby, who assumed the name of Sheffield, and was created a baronet in 1755; his descendants are still found in Lincolnshire.

(Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Burke: "General Armory." Burke: "Peerage and Baronetage." Debrett: "Peerage." Lee: "Dictionary of National Biography," Vol. LII, pp. 11, 12, 16. Banks: "Dormant and Extinct Baronage," Vol. III, pp. 541, 543-44.)

The immediate ancestors of the Sheffield family of America have been traced for several generations in England, as follows:

I. Thomas Sheffield, of Sudbury, County Suffolk, England, was born about 1550, was buried June 29, 1598. He was a last maker and was interred at St. Peter's, Sudbury. At this time the Sheffields had not long been settled in Suffolk, and it is thought that they may have come from the Essex family. Child (probable): 1. Edmund, of whom further.

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Edmund Sheffield, probably son of Thomas Sheffield, was born about 1580, and died before January 4, 1630-31, when administration of his estate was granted to his son, Humphrey. He married, about 1607, Thomazine, who was cited September 3, 1632, for not attending her parish church of All Saints. Children: 1. Humphrey, baptized at All Saints, November 30, 1608. 2. Thomazine, baptized July 17, 1610. 3. Edmund, of whom further. 4. William, baptized November 15, 1619; removed to America. 5. Amos, baptized at St. Peter's, in December, 1627; died in Braintree, Massachusetts, December 31, 1708. 6. Ichabod, baptized December 23, 1630; removed to America.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LXX, p. 192.)

(The Family in America)

I. Edmund (2) Sheffield, son of Edmund (1) and Thomazine Sheffield, was baptized in Sudbury, County Suffolk, England, August 16, 1612, and died October 13, 1705. He was a wheelwright by trade, and in 1641 settled in Roxbury, Massachusetts. He was made a freeman, May 29, 1644. About 1646 he removed to Braintree, where he was one of the first settlers, and served as selectman in 1677-78. He was admitted to the First Church of Roxbury before 1650.

Edmund Sheffield married (first), in England, a wife whose name is unknown, and who probably died in England; (second), April 17, 1644, Mary Woody, daughter of Richard Woody; (third), September 5, 1662, Sarah (Beal) Marsh, born in 1625, died November 9, 1710, daughter of John Beal, and widow of Thomas Marsh. Child of first marriage: 1. Elizabeth, baptized at All Saints, Sudbury, England, March 12, 1635-36; probably died in England. Children of second marriage: 2. John, born March 6, 1645. 3. Edmund, born December 15, 1646; was a soldier in attack on Fort Narragansett in 1675. 4. Ann, born April 1, 1649; married Joseph Stocker. 5. Isaac, of whom further. 6. Mary, born June 14, 1653, died at age of seven. 7. Matthew, born May 26, 1655. 8. Samuel, born November 26, 1657. 9. Sarah, born June 6, 1660; married Joseph Parmenter. Children of third marriage: 10. Mary, born June 26, 1663; married (first) Jonathan Mills; (second), May 12, 1690, John Marshall. 11. Nathaniel, born January 16, 1666. 12. Deborah, born



KING



FROST

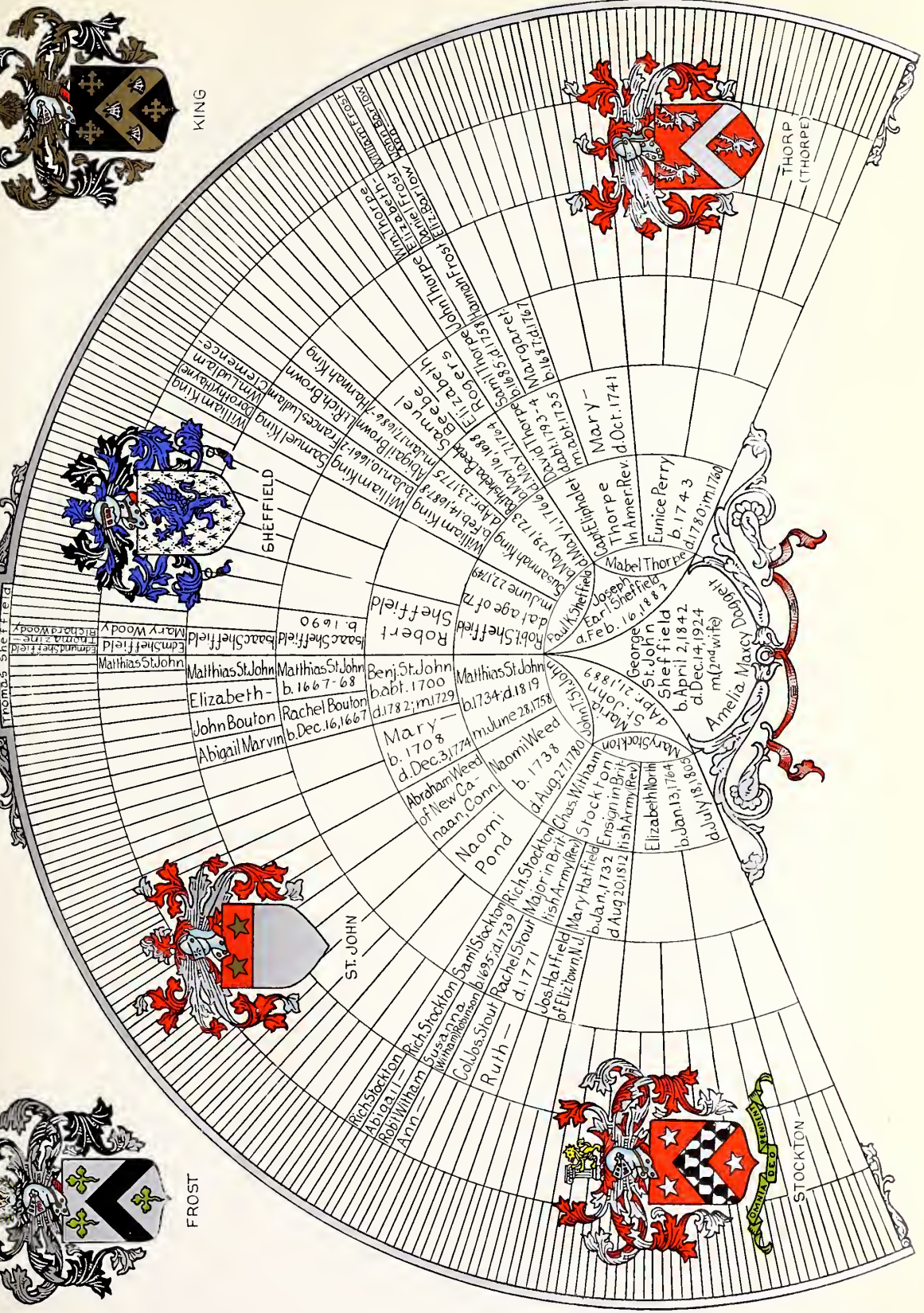
THOMAS SHEFFIELD

SHEFFIELD

ST. JOHN

THORP
(THORPE)

STOCKTON



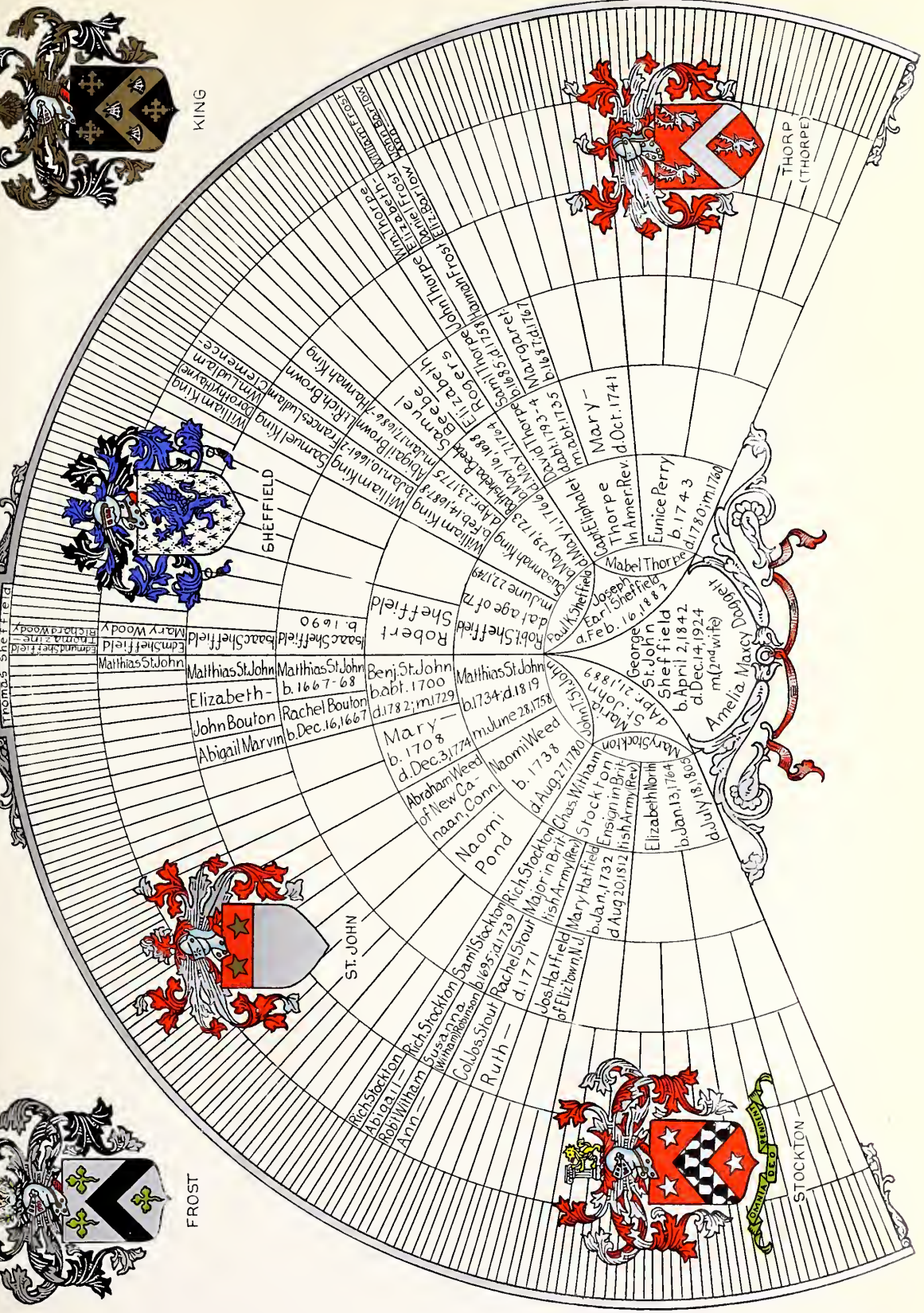
THOMAS SHEFFIELD

SHEFFIELD

ST. JOHN

THORP
(THORPE)

STOCKTON



SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

June 23, 1667, died unmarried, January 8, 1691 (or January 18, 1690).

(C. M. Ellis: "History of Roxbury, Massachusetts," pp. 31, 130. "Vital Records of Roxbury, Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 318; Vol. II, p. 363. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. IV, p. 68. "Vital Records of Braintree, Massachusetts," p. 894. Bates: "Records of Braintree, Massachusetts," pp. 18, 171, 638, 694, 722. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. III, p. 190; Vol. XI, p. 190; Vol. XXXVI, pp. 46-48, 300, 378-79; Vol. XXXVII, pp. 28, 167, 287; Vol. LXXVII, p. 192. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 410. Moore: "Genealogical Register of Inhabitants of Sherborn and Holliston, Massachusetts," p. 240. Vinton: "Giles Memorial," pp. 349-50. "History of Hingham, Massachusetts," Vol. II, p. 54.)

II. Isaac Sheffield, son of Edmund (2) and Mary (Woody) Sheffield, was born March 15, 1651. Child: 1. Isaac, of whom further.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. IV, p. 68. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XII, p. 107; Vol. XXXVI, p. 48. Wildley: "Chesebrough Genealogy," pp. 537-38.)

III. Isaac (2) Sheffield, son of Isaac (1) Sheffield, was born in 1690. Children: 1. Isaac, born in 1732, died July 30, 1794; married, in 1751-52, Freelove Pendleton. 2. Achors. 3. Robert, of whom further.

(Wildley: "Chesebrough Genealogy," p. 538. Virkus: "Compendium of American Genealogy," Vol. I, pp. 479, 592. Family data.)

IV. Robert Sheffield was the son of Isaac (2) Sheffield. Children: 1. George. 2. Joseph. 3. Nathaniel. 4. Robert, of whom further.

(Virkus: "Compendium of American Genealogy," Vol. I, p. 478. Family data.)

V. Robert (2) Sheffield, son of Robert (1) Sheffield, died at Norwalk Island, at the age of seventy-two. For many years previously he had lived with his daughter, Mrs. Bottom, of Stonington, Connecticut. He was very fond of music and amused himself in constructing an instrument which he called "Long spell," resembling a large violin with seven strings laid on a table and played with quills.

Robert Sheffield married, June 22, 1749, Susannah King. (King

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V.) Children: 1. Susanna, born December 7, 1750, died May 1, 1766. 2. Bathsheba; married a Mr. Brown, and removed to the "Genesee Country" of New York. 3. Robert, born June 21, 1752, died August 7, 1753. 4. Paul King, of whom further. 5. William E. 6. Mary; married a Mr. Bottom, of Stonington, Connecticut.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LXIII, pp. 333-34, 414. Harris: "Ancient Long Island Epitaphs," p. 34. Virkus: "Compendium of American Genealogy," Vol. I, p. 478. Family data.)

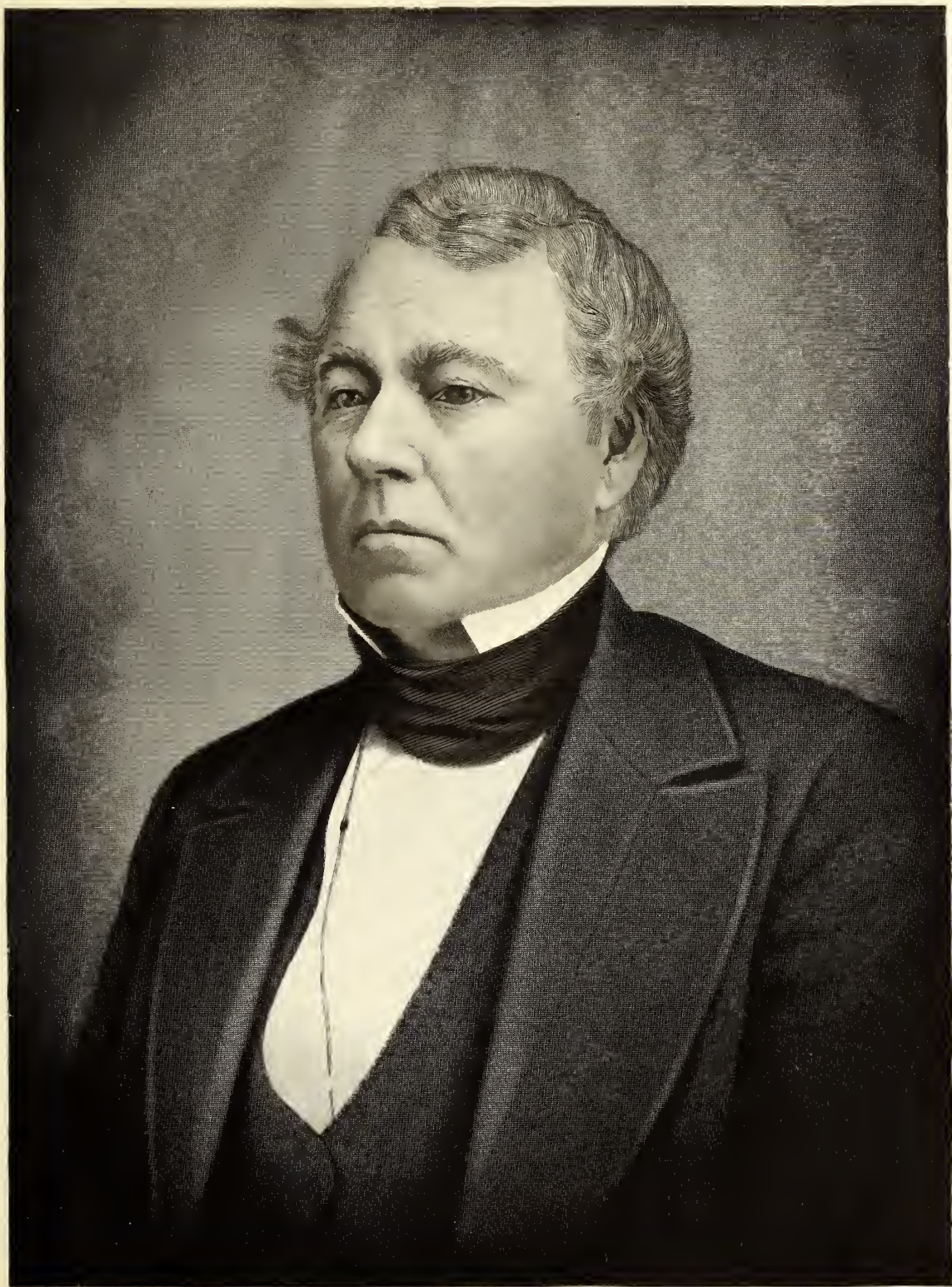
VI. *Paul King Sheffield*, son of Robert and Susannah (King) Sheffield, was born in Stonington, Connecticut, about 1766, and died about 1845. His son, Joseph Earl Sheffield, wrote of him: "He . . . was old enough to take an active part in the War of the Revolution, and, with his father and brothers built, equipped and sailed a private armed ship in quest of the enemy, and had one or two pretty hard fought battles, in one of which his brother 'Bob' lost an eye and he himself was slightly wounded." After the war he settled in Fairfield, Connecticut, and embarked in the Cuban trade, with good success, until, about the time of the War of 1812, his accumulations were swept away by a series of misfortunes, under the operation of the Berlin and Milan decrees, and in consequence of the unfaithfulness of one of his captains.

Paul King Sheffield married Mabel Thorpe. (Thorpe VI.) Children 1. Harriet; married Dr. Ezekiel Webb. 2. Eliphalet Thorpe, died unmarried. 3. Melinda; unmarried, died in Fairfield, Connecticut, January 18, 1878, aged eighty-six; buried in Southport, Connecticut. 4. Joseph Earl, of whom further. 5. Frederick, died before 1876; married in Mobile, Alabama. 6. Paschal; married; living in Southport, Connecticut, in 1876, aged seventy-eight; died in 1884; served as naval officer in War of 1812. 7. Paul K., born in 1803; unmarried; lived in St. Louis, Missouri, and died August 28, 1892.

(*Ibid.*)

VII. *Joseph Earl Sheffield*, son of Paul King and Mabel (Thorpe) Sheffield, was born in Southport, Fairfield County, Connecticut, June 19, 1793, and died February 16, 1882.

After receiving what formal education was to be had from the village schools, at the early age of fourteen, Mr. Sheffield began his career in the world as a clerk in the employ of Stephen Fowler, of Newbern, North Carolina. Later he entered the drug store of his



American Historical Socy

Langley, J. May 8, 1877

Gen. Ed Sheffield

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

brother-in-law, Dr. Ezekiel Webb, in Newbern, remaining there until the outbreak of the War of 1812, which occurred while he was on a visit to his parents in the North. The following year, at the age of twenty, he acted as supercargo of a trading vessel which ran the British blockade to North Carolina and back. His conduct of this mission led to his being made a partner in a New York firm whose business he managed in North Carolina. His success in this connection gave early evidence of the energy and wisdom which in after years characterized all his operations to such a remarkable degree.

In 1816, trade conditions being bad in North Carolina, Mr. Sheffield traveled to Alabama, which was then rapidly expanding under the stimulus of immigration, and soon afterward transferred his business to Mobile. For about twenty years he carried on business in that city, and became one of the largest shippers of cotton in the country. In 1830, he was appointed by Nicholas Biddle, president of the United States Bank, as confidential director of the branch of the bank in Mobile. His administration of this trust during several critical years was such as to be followed by the offer of the presidency, which, however, he declined. He remained in Alabama until 1835, when he returned to make his permanent home in the North. He was then forty-two years of age and his business was prospering, but he felt that he could not, in Mobile, give to his children the educational advantages which he wished them to have. It was characteristic of him that this motive should weigh above considerations of profit.

Mr. Sheffield's removal to New Haven, in 1835, did not mean the severing of all his ties in Mobile, for during the next nine years his winters were spent there in buying and shipping cotton. It did, however, mark the broadening of his range of interests to include the building of railroads, in which he became more and more deeply involved and upon which the foundation of his fortune was laid. In connection with Henry Farnam, the civil engineer, he invested heavily in the stock of the Farmington Canal, and was instrumental in having it extended to Northampton, Massachusetts. This was unprofitable, and in 1844 he advocated substituting a railroad for it. This was done, and for many years Mr. Sheffield maintained a large financial interest in it. This was the old Canal or Northampton Railroad, now owned by the New York, New Haven & Hartford Railroad. Mr. Sheffield's association with Mr. Farnam in this project led to a warm and lasting

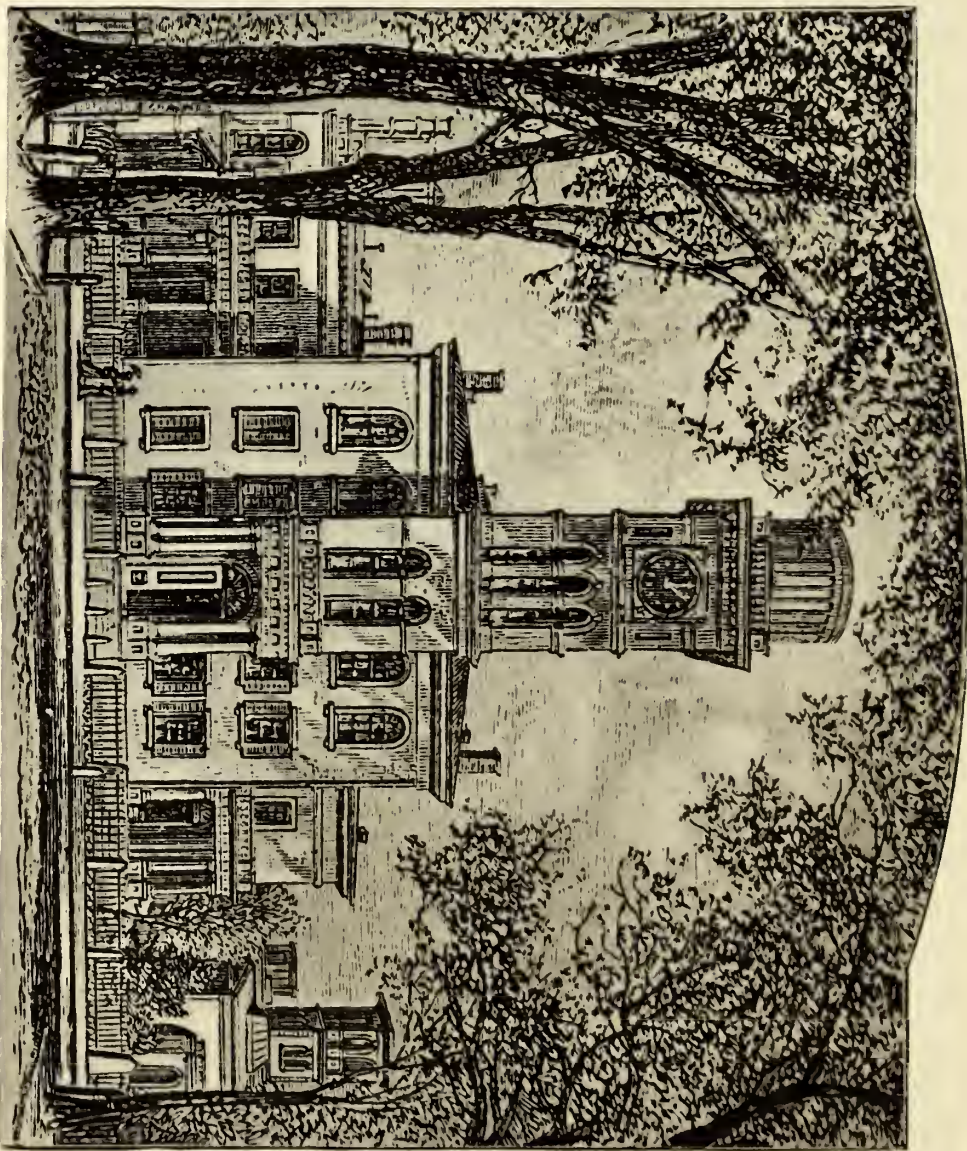
SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

friendship, and they engaged together in other enterprises on a much larger scale.

The next project in which they were concerned was the promotion of the first railway between New Haven and New York. Between 1843 and 1846, Mr. Sheffield gave most of his time to this enterprise, and personally superintended the first steps in its construction. In spite of the obvious desirability of this road, the organizers met with many vexatious complications, which at length induced them to transfer their main interest to other fields. Mr. Sheffield, however, continued to bear the responsibilities of his first railway investment, and after long years of delay he was able to see it successful a short time before his death.

The first of Mr. Sheffield's undertakings in the West was the connection of Chicago with one of the great western lines, by the construction of the last hundred miles, which had long been delayed. The next was the construction of the Chicago & Rock Island Railroad, the beginning of the Chicago, Rock Island & Pacific Railroad. Within two years after the signing of the contract and one year short of the time limit, Mr. Sheffield and his able associate, Mr. Farnam, had completed the road at a cost of more than \$5,000,000. By the terms of the contract, Mr. Sheffield and Mr. Farnam secured by the early completion of the road the right to control it up to a specified date and to receive all its earnings. This was found exceedingly profitable, and Mr. Sheffield remained as a director of the company which built the road until 1856. The next movement engaged in by the associates was the bridging of the Mississippi, which was accomplished after many legal and other obstacles had been overcome. This done, Mr. Sheffield, who was nearly seventy, withdrew as much as possible from active business, leaving to others the task of carrying on the work he had begun.

This brief record does scant justice to the incalculable influence which Mr. Sheffield had on the industrial and economic life of this country, or to the genius for organization which made possible his success. Born in a period of expansion, he was one of the few men who understood the needs and tendencies of his age; and while taking advantage of its opportunities, he at the same time contributed materially to the welfare of his own and of future generations. He was a builder on the grand scale, one who not only conceived great things in



SHEFFIELD HALL

A.D. 1860

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

his own mind, but was able, by initiative, courage, and indomitable perseverance, to make them realities.

Mr. Sheffield's vision was exemplified, however, in ways other than his industrial activity. Indeed, it is for his constructive work in the field of education that he is chiefly remembered. He was one of the men who enabled Yale University to become what it is today; one of the few really great institutions of learning in this country. In particular, the Sheffield Scientific School, which bears his name, is a monument to his wise and philanthropic use of his great fortune. In 1855, the year after the completion of the Rock Island Railway, he made his first contribution to Yale University, and on his return from Europe two years later he took an active interest in its plans for expansion. This was partly inspired by his son-in-law, Professor John A. Porter, Professor of Analytical and Agricultural Chemistry. The Sheffield Scientific School was the direct outgrowth of a new movement in education which sought to be, in the words of President Porter, "at once more technically scientific and more positively practical than had been provided in the colleges." Mr. Sheffield, realizing that this idea could find its full development only in separate school devoted to its realization, provided the funds for the new venture. The old Medical College was purchased, enlarged, refitted, and opened in 1860 as Sheffield Hall. The same year Mr. Sheffield provided an endowment of \$40,000, which he later increased; in 1865-66, he enlarged Sheffield Hall at an expense of about \$46,000, and added a Library Fund of \$10,000, later increased to \$12,000. North Sheffield Hall was erected in 1870-71, at a cost of \$115,000. Up to the time of his death he continued to make contributions from time to time to meet various needs, among the most prominent being a fund of \$130,000 for professorships and the Hillhouse Mathematical Library, purchased for \$41,000. After his death the school received his house and grounds and a share of his estate amounting to upwards of \$500,000. In all, the sum of his contributions to the Sheffield Scientific School was over \$1,000,000. The school as it is today provides cultural education to supplement its thorough technical training, and has produced some of America's most brilliant and accomplished engineers and men of affairs.

Mr. Sheffield did not confine his benefactions to Yale University, however, for he gave generously to other educational and charitable

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

causes. To Trinity College, Hartford, of which he was a trustee, his donations amounted to \$16,800; and to the Berkeley Divinity School at Middletown he gave \$75,000 in his lifetime and a bequest of \$100,000. He also contributed to the Theological Seminary of the Northwest in Chicago. He provided a parish school, an Old Ladies' Home, and a chapel, for Trinity Church, New Haven; and contributed liberally to a large number of public institutions in New Haven and other places.

We have seen Joseph Earl Sheffield's achievements in the realm of commerce and industry, and in the development of American education. We have recognized in him the powerful intelligence, the rugged and dominating strength, and the superb vitality which are given to only a few men in each generation. No record of his life would, however, be complete without paying tribute to the finer qualities of character which made up his unique personality. His firm and delicate sense of honor, his freedom from prejudice, his tenderhearted sympathy, his appreciation of the beautiful, and his utter lack of vanity or self-importance, evoked the admiration of all, and the devoted attachment of those who were intimate with him. Some there were, indeed, who, viewing his career superficially and seeing only the fact of his success, imputed to him motives of selfishness; but the testimony of those who knew him, and the moving evidence of his own words, make plain both the loftiness of his principles and the essential generosity of his heart.

In an address delivered a few months after Mr. Sheffield's death, President Noah Porter, of Yale University, paid an eloquent tribute to his great achievements, his nobility of character, and especially his benefactions to the university. President Porter expressed his admiration, not only of the unparalleled liberality of Mr. Sheffield (who contributed a larger amount to the university than any other one man), but also to the open and generous spirit in which his gifts were made. He attached no strings or limitations to his donations, nor did he ever manifest any desire to influence the policy and administration of the university. His relations with the officers of the university were cordial and friendly, and marked by mutual esteem and forbearance.

In the same address President Porter quotes from a letter of Mr. Sheffield's, written at the age of eighty-three, which throws light on the reasons for his success:

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

When I embarked in commerce, the most interesting of all business occupations, my mind was called to a higher plane and tone, for then it became incumbent upon me to seek knowledge and correct information; and whether it was cotton or coffee, in the former of which I was for many years chiefly and largely engaged, it was all-important to success that I should make myself fully and accurately acquainted with the productions of all climates and countries, and to carefully watch and note the probable causes which were likely to increase or diminish production, not only in one's own country, but in all parts of the world where cotton was grown, and at the same time watch and carefully consider all the causes which were likely to increase or diminish consumption.

Another letter, written nine years earlier, gives a simple statement of the principles which Mr. Sheffield adopted early in life and to which he adhered strictly until the end:

But you must bear in mind that I was then young, especially when I was called upon, in 1815 in Carolina and in 1817 in Mobile, to exercise my own judgment in important matters, in which not only my own credit and future prospects were concerned, but the interests and credit of my associates, who were too distant to be consulted. Of course, my reflections and decision as to the proper course of action, being in a measure responsible to others, made a deep and lasting impression on my mind, of the necessity of mature and earnest reflection in forming one's judgment, and after thus arriving at a conclusion, of *then* acting with energy in carrying out your plans. My decision and prompt action *then*, no doubt gave some direction and tone to my future business course and standing; and I now recommend you never to decide hastily, and without mature and honest reflection in important matters; but earnestly seek in your own judgment the *right course*, and when you have decided, *then* to act with *energy* and *promptitude*—taking care in all public matters or enterprises to throw your own interests and your own feelings to the winds rather than suffer them to have any, the least, influence in your actions or decisions. Swerve not from your convictions of right and duty; learn to say *no* with decision, *yes* with caution. *No* with decision when it meets a temptation; *yes* with caution when it implies a promise;—and however things may eventuate, you will have the satisfaction of having acted honestly, and may sleep quietly.

President Porter comments:

From the earliest days of trade and commerce down to the present, there have been merchants and bankers who were not only princely in their estate and splendor but also princely in their honor and truth, not only princely in the reach of their plans and aims but princely in their

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

methods of fulfilling them. There have also been merchants and bankers who have been the meanest and most cruel of their kind. To which of these classes Mr. Sheffield belonged I need not say. Whatever else might be said of him it was always true that as a man of business his sense of honor was as quick as the blush of a maiden and hence it was that whenever he gave his word, no matter how largely or speedily any credit was needed, credit and money were always at his command. I need not say that he abhorred from the bottom of his soul sharp practices of every sort—that he was never content to fulfill his word or bond merely to the letter if he could by any means evade its spirit.

There are eminent men of business who say of their associates that every man is to be presumed a knave, thereby confessing that this is true of themselves. There are also lookers-on who sometimes conclude that the artifices of modern exchange and the enormous opportunities of capital are such that what men call honor and high-toned sentiment must soon be forever dismissed from the transactions of traffic and the lawful competitions of enterprise and exchange must end in violence and robbery. To Mr. Sheffield such utterances were simply blasphemy against his guild and against his manhood. He was not honorable simply from the traditions of his guild, but he was honorable from the convictions of his conscience and the sentiments of his heart.

To the political questions which raged during his lifetime, Mr. Sheffield was keenly alive, although his interest was impartial and he took little active part in politics. He cast his first vote at Newbern, North Carolina, in 1814, for what was then called the Federal ticket. Throughout his life in the South he adhered to Federal or Republican principles, and was firmly opposed to slavery. During the exciting times of Nullification he was a member of a quasi-military organization in Mobile for the purpose of defending the United States authorities against threatened violence. Although opposed to slavery and a believer in Union principles, Mr. Sheffield did not sympathize with the Civil War, fearing that the havoc wrought by this great cataclysm would outweigh the benefits obtained. His sympathy went out to the sufferings of his old acquaintances in the South; but he contributed, nevertheless, to alleviate the hardships of the Union soldiers.

The sight of suffering and need always grieved Mr. Sheffield, and his life was rich in those small, unostentatious deeds of charity which spring rather from true pity than from a sense of duty. His own feelings are expressed in some lines composed on January 31, 1878, a stormy day when he was besieged by applications for help:

Shall one whom Providence has raised above want
Shut his eyes and his ears on the hungry and gaunt?

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

To his private charities, also, may be applied the words which President Porter used in reference to his liberality toward education: "Mr. Sheffield was an example to the men of wealth in all this land."

His friend and close associate, Mr. Henry Farnam, has left a short but comprehensive description of Mr. Sheffield's person: "In his manner, appearance, and tastes he was what would now be called a gentleman of the old school—tall, handsome, well-dressed, dignified, courteous, self-contained." Though largely self-educated, Mr. Sheffield was in every sense a man of culture and refinement. He read widely and was equally at home in all fields of knowledge; his taste was elevated and his critical appreciation sound. His own literary style was clear, forceful, polished, and sincere. He valued education highly, and contributed much of his fortune toward providing for later generations the advantages which his own youth had not enjoyed.

In 1856, Mr. Sheffield and his family went to Europe, where they passed two years in pleasant and profitable travel. The winter of 1856-57 was spent in Dresden, and marked by an event of unusual interest. This was the painting of several pictures of the Sheffield family by Professor Julius Hübner, president of the Dresden Gallery. During the work on these pictures the artist and his subjects became very good friends, and Professor Hübner expressed great admiration for the manly qualities of Mr. Sheffield and the amiability of his wife and daughters. A large group representing Mr. and Mrs. Sheffield playing at chess, with their daughters Ellen and Florence looking on, was followed by individual portraits of each. These were placed on exhibition before being sent to America, and received the approbation of the King and members of the royal family and court, as well as of critics of art. The large picture—"The Embarrassed Chess Player"—was a gift to Mr. Sheffield's daughter, Mrs. John A. Porter, of New Haven, and is now the property of Miss Mabel T. Boardman, Washington, District of Columbia, while the portraits became the property of another daughter, Mrs. Van Buren, of New York.

Mr. Sheffield's nature was deeply though not demonstratively religious, and throughout his life he cherished his connection with the historic church—the Protestant Episcopal—in which he had been baptized in youth. During his southern experiences he kept the habit of attending services, and was active in promoting the growth of the church in Mobile. In 1836, soon after his removal to New Haven, he

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and his family were confirmed by Bishop Brownell as members of Trinity Church, New Haven. We know from his own words that this event was not a mere formality, but the outward sign of a strong inward resolution "to walk with God by a definite and supreme purpose." Though to others his life appeared to have fulfilled this resolve to an unusually high degree, in his own eyes it was full of errors. About three years before his death, on his eighty-sixth birthday, he wrote the following beautiful survey of his long and active career:

When I review my life it seems to me I have blundered and stumbled along without any great object to be accomplished or ambition to be gratified. I have not been ambitious to "lay up" a fortune for my children, for during a long life of observation I have seen too many instances of the evil effects of sons and daughters growing up with great expectations. . . . We have believed that money expended for the education of our children and in promoting their happiness and welfare in married life was vastly more important and beneficial to them and more likely to insure them a rational religious life here below and prepare them for a far better one above than any fortune laid up for them.

Blest with a most devoted wife with whom I have lived happily over fifty-seven years, the mother of nine children (six now alive) to whom she has devoted constant care and love and affection; with loving and affectionate children; with worldly prosperity and rugged health in my old age—few indeed have reason to be more thankful to a kind Providence that has vouchsafed them. With this blessing constantly on my mind, may I hope to be better prepared if spared to see another birthday, to answer the summons which must so soon be made to go hence and give account of my stewardship.

This modest and touching expression reveals a side of Mr. Sheffield's nature which accounts for the universal esteem in which he was held. He was gentle as well as strong, and throughout his successes never lost the virtue of humility.

Joseph Earl Sheffield married, in 1822, Maria St. John. (St. John VII.) Children: 1. Sarah Elizabeth, born March 20, 1828, died October 16, 1848. 2. Harriet Carthy, of whom further. 3. Mary Huder, born December 19, 1832, died March 28, 1848. 4. Josephine Earl, of whom further. 5. Henry Kneeland, born March 5, 1836, died March 22, 1841. 6. Ellen Maria, of whom further. 7. Florence, of whom further. 8. George St. John, of whom further. 9. Charles Joseph, of whom further.

(Family data.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

VIII. Harriet Carthy Sheffield, daughter of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born July 18, 1830, and died January 8, 1901. She married, in 1853, General Thomas Brodhead Van Buren. General Van Buren was prominent in the Civil War and also, later, in the United States diplomatic service. He was eighth in descent from Cornelis Van Buren, an early settler (Cornelis¹, Martin², Pieter³, Barent⁴, Pieter⁵, Barent⁶, De Pieter⁷, Thomas Brodhead⁸). General Van Buren was educated at Union College, Schenectady, New York. He entered the Civil War and was brevetted Major-General for his bravery in action. Among other responsible positions he occupied the post of Consul-General and Judge of the American Court in Japan for eleven years, and died in San Francisco, California, in 1888, after a long and distinguished career. General Van Buren was in Europe at the same time as ex-President Martin Van Buren, and they were presented together at the German Court, where they danced in the royal quadrille. Later, in Rome, they dined together with the Pope (Pius IX). Children: 1. Joseph Sheffield, died in 1910; was in the steamship business in Hong Kong. 2. Harold Sheffield, consul at Nice, and died there in 1906; married, and had three sons and a daughter. 3. Edith May; married, in 1900, Count Ginnaro Curzo de Castelmannardo, of Naples; deceased. 4. Thomas Brodhead, Jr.; married Florence Lanman, of Hartford, Connecticut. Children: Vera and David. He was in the silk business in New York City, and is deceased.

(Family data.)

VIII. Josephine Earl Sheffield, daughter of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born November 3, 1834, and died May 30, 1908. She married, July 16, 1855, John Addison Porter, son of Addison and Anne (Hogeboom) Porter, and eighth in descent from John Porter, who came to the Massachusetts Bay Colony in 1628. John Addison Porter was born in Catskill, New York, March 15, 1822, and died in New Haven, Connecticut, August 25, 1866. He was graduated at Yale College in 1842, and after further study in Philadelphia, became, in 1844, tutor and then professor of rhetoric at Delaware College, in Newark, Delaware. In 1847, he went abroad and studied agricultural chemistry for three years under Liebig at the University of Giessen. On his return he was an assistant at the Lawrence Scien-

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

tific School of Harvard, professor of chemistry at Brown, and in 1852 succeeded Professor John D. Norton in the chair of agricultural chemistry at Yale. In 1856, he was given charge of the department of organic chemistry and continued until 1864, when failing health led to his resignation. Professor Porter was particularly interested in the welfare of the Sheffield Scientific School and did much to insure its success. As the son-in-law of Joseph Earl Sheffield he was the first to interest him in the idea of founding such a school. Professor Porter was a member of numerous scientific societies and contributed many papers to the "American Journal of Science." He also established the "Connecticut War Record," a monthly periodical published during the Civil War. He published "Principles of Chemistry," "First Book of Chemistry and Allied Sciences," and "Selections from the Kalevals, the Great Finnish Epic." In 1871, the Scroll and Key Society of Yale, of which he was a member, established in his memory the John A. Porter university prize of two hundred and fifty dollars, which is awarded annually for the best essay on a given subject, and is the only prize open to all members of Yale University. Mr. and Mrs. Porter had two sons: 1. John Addison Porter, Jr., graduated at Yale College, and became owner and editor of the "Hartford Evening Post." He was appointed "Secretary to the President," by President McKinley. He married Amy Betts, of New York, and died at his country home in Pomfret, Connecticut. 2. Edgar Sheffield Porter, graduated at Sheffield Scientific School; deceased.

(H. P. Andrews: "The Descendants of John Porter, of Windsor, Connecticut," Vol. II, pp. 661-62. Appleton: "Cyclopedia of American Biography," Vol. V, pp. 77-78. F. S. Drake: "Dictionary of American Biography," p. 731.)

VIII. Ellen Maria Sheffield, daughter of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born August 4, 1838, and died August 31, 1920. She married, about 1859, William Walter Phelps, famous diplomat and statesman. Mr. Phelps was born in Dundaff, Susquehanna County, Pennsylvania, August 24, 1839, and died at his home in Teaneck, New Jersey, June 16, 1894. He was a descendant of William Phelps, who landed in Massachusetts in 1630, and the son of John Jay Phelps, prominent New York merchant and financier. William Walter Phelps was educated at Yale University and Columbia University Law School, and practiced law successfully until the volume of

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

his business interests compelled him to relinquish his profession. He served five terms in Congress, where he was noted as an orator and debater. A close personal friend of James G. Blaine, he was a zealous supporter of the latter's campaign for the Presidency in 1884. He took a prominent and useful part in the foreign affairs of the United States, being appointed Minister to Austria in 1881, and Commissioner to the Samoan Conference in Berlin in 1889. At this time he won the friendship and coöperation of Bismarck, and soon afterward was appointed Minister to Germany, which ministry he conducted with marked success for four years. Wishing to retire from the throes of political struggle, he accepted, in 1893, appointment as Judge of the New Jersey Court of Errors and Appeals, his last public office. Mr. Phelps' career as a statesman was characterized by high achievement and spotless integrity, and his personality was an ornament to the brilliant circles of society in which he moved. In New Jersey, where he lived for many years, he was a public-spirited and popular citizen, and his home at Teaneck Grange became one of the most noted estates in that section. Mr. and Mrs. Phelps had three children: 1. John Jay Phelps, born in Paris; graduated at Yale; married Rose Hutchinson, and resides in Hackensack, New Jersey. In 1917, he built and equipped a submarine chaser, which he presented to the government, and became the commander. Later he was placed in command of a larger boat. He was promoted to lieutenant, and made commander of a division in Squadron XI. 2. Sheffield Phelps; graduated at Yale; married Claudia Wright, and died at his winter home in Aiken, South Carolina, in 1902. 3. Marian; married Excellency Carl Von Rottenburg, of the German Government Corps, and later Curator of the University of Bonn; deceased. She returned to America, and died in New York.

(Herrick: "William Walter Phelps, His Life and Public Services." Family data.)

VIII. Florence Sheffield, daughter of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born July 4, 1840, and married, in December, 1859, William Jarvis Boardman, son of Henry Mason and Sarah Hall (Benham) Boardman. Died, Washington, District of Columbia, April 25, 1928.

Samuel Boreman, the original ancestor of the Boardman family, emigrated to this country from Banbury, Oxfordshire, England, about

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1638, and settled in Wethersfield, Connecticut. The Hon. Elijah Boardman, grandfather of William Jarvis Boardman, was a United States Senator from Connecticut. General John Mason, the famous Indian fighter, was also an ancestor of Mr. Boardman.

Boardman Arms—Argent, a chevron vert bordered gules.

Crest—A lion sejant, collared and lined or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

William Jarvis Boardman, son of Henry Mason Boardman, of Boardman, Ohio, was born April 15, 1832, and died in Washington, District of Columbia, August 3, 1905. He was a graduate of Trinity College, Hartford, and one of its trustees for many years. He was graduated from Harvard Law School in 1856 and went immediately to Cleveland, Ohio, where he practiced law with great success. He was also connected with numerous financial institutions in and around Cleveland. He was director and general counsel of the Valley Railway Company; director of the Commercial National Bank of Cleveland; and likewise held many other positions connected with philanthropic institutions. He was president of the Case Library, and trustee of Kenyon College, Adelbert College, and Western Reserve University. He received the honorary degree of Master of Arts from Kenyon College in 1859. In all charitable endeavor he was especially interested. He was chairman of the board of directors of the Emergency Hospital in Washington, and also chairman of the Orphanage Board of St. John's Episcopal Church. In Cleveland Mr. Boardman was always identified with the church, serving as trustee and member of the standing committee of the diocese of Ohio, and as a warden of Trinity Church in Cleveland.

Among the children of William Jarvis and Florence (Sheffield) Boardman was Mabel Thorp Boardman, who has become famous through her work for the American Red Cross.

Mabel Thorp Boardman was born in Cleveland, Ohio, and educated in private schools there and in New York, later spending some time in European study. In 1894, her family moved to Washington, where she has since resided, though she has made frequent trips to Europe and the Far East.

Without being consulted, Miss Boardman was placed on the Board of Incorporators of her country's official humanitarian organization in 1900, the year the American Red Cross was first incorporated by Congress. She was elected a member of the active governing body in



General Historical Pub. Co.

Copyright © 1905 by G. P. O. C.

Mabel J. Boardman

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1901, and very soon saw the necessity of a complete reorganization of the Red Cross on a more business-like basis.

Miss Boardman was largely responsible for the reorganizing act passed by Congress in 1905, which provides for the auditing of all Red Cross accounts by the War Department, and for representation on the Central Committee for five Government Departments, the State, Treasury, War, Justice, and Navy departments.

At the first meeting of the society after the passage of this law, William Howard Taft, then Secretary of War, was elected president of the American Red Cross. For a year thereafter, the national headquarters of the organization was one small office room in the Colorado Building in Washington, virtually under the charge of Miss Boardman, who could give more time to Red Cross affairs than other members of the Central Committee, and Charles L. Magee, the first national secretary of the reorganized Red Cross.

With practically no inheritance from the old Red Cross—there were about three hundred members on paper and a paltry sum of money derived from a piece of real estate—it was important to begin developing an organization and membership and preparing generally for emergency relief work. Miss Boardman did most of this pioneer organizing single-handed. She traveled extensively over the country, paying her own expenses always, and spoke in many places in the interest of organizing Red Cross branches.

The Great San Francisco fire and earthquake of 1906 followed close upon these efforts in development. A small Red Cross organization had been established in San Francisco, and through its coöperation and the careful selection of personnel by national headquarters, this first large disaster relief undertaking became a distinct credit to the Red Cross. It was a marked demonstration of confidence in the new Red Cross. Responsible authorities were handling the funds and supplies, and there were strict accountings. Furthermore, the good work done after this disaster showed the emergency need of a Red Cross in peace time.

One of the lasting monuments to Miss Boardman's early organizing genius was her success in getting the American Nurses' Association to affiliate with the Red Cross, and to form a National Committee on Red Cross Nursing Service, with a chairman selected from the membership of that committee. This took place in 1901, Miss Boardman

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and Isabel Hampton Robb, formerly superintendent of Johns Hopkins School for Nurses, president of the American Nurses' Association, working on the plan together. The result of this affiliation was the bringing into the Red Cross of Jane A. Delano and her subsequent splendid achievements in organizing the American Red Cross Nursing Service, which had 11,000 graduate nurses ready for service on America's entry into the European War.

In 1910, with Miss Boardman as author of the idea, the movement for a Red Cross endowment fund was begun, the plan being to devote the interest from this fund to operating expenses and thus obviate to a great extent the necessity for diverting any part of relief funds for this purpose. It was in connection with this activity that Henry P. Davison, of New York, who was chairman of the War Council of the American Red Cross and a member of the Executive Committee, undertook his first Red Cross responsibility. Mr. Davison was made chairman of New York Red Cross Endowment Committee. Over \$1,000,000 was raised in peace time for this purpose.

Another testimonial to Miss Boardman's creative energy in Red Cross affairs is the beautiful white marble structure which is the permanent national headquarters of the American Red Cross, and the entire block of city property which is its site in Washington. The late Captain James A. Scrymser, a New York philanthropist and veteran of the Union Army, offered to raise \$300,000 if Congress would appropriate an equal sum, to be devoted to a memorial to the "loyal women" of the Civil War and turned over to the Red Cross as a permanent headquarters. Congress declined to respond to this offer, whereupon Miss Boardman proposed the building of a memorial to the heroic women of both the North and the South of the Civil War period. Captain Scrymser agreed to contribute \$100,000 to such a memorial, to be used by the Red Cross.

Then Miss Boardman renewed importunities to Congress for an appropriation and finally in person persuaded the Senate Appropriations Committee to provide \$400,000 for the memorial and Red Cross headquarters, engaging at the same time to raise \$300,000 by popular subscription for the same purpose. By further personal efforts she procured through Captain Scrymser, Mrs. Russell Sage, Mrs. E. H. Harriman, and the Rockefeller Foundation, not \$300,000, but \$400,000. She also induced the Women's Relief Corps of the North and

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the United Daughters of the Confederacy to place three beautiful stained glass allegorical windows in the memorial assembly hall for the finishing and furnishing of which Mrs. Adolphus Busch gave \$15,000. The American Red Cross headquarters, Georgian-Colonial in architecture, was ready for occupancy just on the eve of America's participation in the World War.

From August 1, 1914, when the European War broke out, until April 6, 1917, when the United States declared a state of war with Germany, the American Red Cross not only aided with all its means in the relief of suffering peoples in the war area, but steadily prepared itself to meet all possible needs of the Army and Navy of the United States. American Red Cross units of surgeons and nurses were distributed in all the belligerent lands abroad during the period of American neutrality and numerous cargoes of relief stores were shipped abroad for as impartial distribution as war conditions would permit. Miss Boardman was an early and insistent advocate of broadening the relief activities of the American Red Cross to include civilian relief in the war-swept countries, especially in Belgium immediately after its invasion.

By the spring of 1917 the American Red Cross had grown from 300 members to over 300,000; had participated in about seventy-five relief undertakings in all parts of the world involving expenditures in money and supplies of approximately \$15,000,000; had developed a military relief department which organized and financed some thirty mobile base hospitals; had a nursing corps of over 10,000 carefully selected trained nurses; a civilian relief department, with the country divided into four grand divisions, and had a headquarters home in perpetuity.

Throughout these pre-war years of preparation, Miss Boardman was identified as a very active member of the governing body of the Red Cross. It was her steadfast desire to have a man of large affairs at the head of the Red Cross. She sought eagerly at one time to have General George W. Goethals, builder of the Panama Canal, accept the chairmanship of the Central Committee, which he consented to do, but was prevented by further complications on the Canal, and through her efforts such men as the late General George W. Davis and Mr. Taft have served as chairman of that body. Miss Boardman was chairman of what was called The National Relief Board, during the pre-war

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

years, this board having the direction of civilian relief work in the United States. As a member of the executive committee, a committee composed of members of the Central Committee, Miss Boardman has frequently been in the position of acting chairman of the governing body of the American Red Cross, but has ever maintained that a man of broad business training and humanitarian proclivities should fill that office. She once declined flatly the chairmanship of the Central Committee. She served continuously as a member of the Executive Committee from 1905 until 1918. During the war period Miss Boardman devoted herself eagerly to the organization of the Women's Corps of the District of Columbia, and had perfected a smoothly-running, uniformed organization when many parts of the country were still unorganized.

In 1906, Mr. Elihu Root, then Secretary of State, appointed Miss Boardman a delegate to the convention to revise the Treaty of Geneva, but she declined the appointment, saying that military men and governmental officials should represent the United States. Miss Boardman attended the international conferences of the Red Cross in London in 1907 and in Washington in 1912 as a delegate of the American Red Cross. Following the 1912 conference, a handsomely bound souvenir record of the conference, bearing the coats of arms in color of all the countries participating, and the autographs of all the delegates, was prepared by the International Committee of the Red Cross in Geneva and dedicated to Miss Boardman. This beautiful volume has been placed in the American Red Cross Museum in Washington by its recipient.

Some time after the end of the World War Miss Boardman thought that another memorial should be erected in Washington, to be placed beside its sister memorial to the women of the Civil War, the new memorial to commemorate the sacrifices and services of American women in the World War. Toward this memorial Congress granted part of the square on which the Memorial to the Women of the Civil War now stands as a site, and appropriated \$200,000 as a contribution towards the building. In addition, approximately \$375,000 have been contributed, the contributions being raised by Miss Boardman, who paid all expenses of raising the fund. The cornerstone of the building was laid by President Coolidge on May 31, 1928. Chief Justice Taft presided at the ceremony, and the Hon. Dwight Davis, Secretary of

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

War, received the contributions on the part of the government. The Hon. Robert Luce, chairman of the Library Committee of the House of Representatives, spoke on the Government's participation, and Miss Boardman for the contributors on the purposes of the building. The building will be used as a "workshop, laboratory demonstration station and school of chapter activities." Among the subjects on which experimentation will be conducted with a view to increasing the efficiency of the local chapters as well as of the national organization will be disaster relief, home service for disabled ex-service men, instruction in hygiene, first aid, etc., production of garments and surgical dressings, transcription of books into Braille for the use of the blind, and many others. In addition to broadening the service of the Red Cross the building will be a beautiful and fitting memorial to the heroic women of America in the World War, particularly those who as nurses gave their lives in war service.

Among the decorations and honors conferred upon Miss Boardman are the following: Personal Order of Merit of the King of Sweden, 1909; a Gold Crown, made like a victor's crown, from the Government of Italy; a Gold Medal of Reconnaissance from the President of the French Republic; Red Cross Decorations from Portugal, Serbia and Japan. She has received honorary degrees from Yale, Western Reserve, Smith College, Converse College, and George Washington University.

Miss Boardman has made a valuable contribution to Red Cross world literature in her book, "Under the Red Cross Flag at Home and Abroad" (J. B. Lippincott Company, Philadelphia), which was first published in 1915. This book is now in its second edition. Children of William Jarvis and Florence (Sheffield) Boardman: 1. Mabel Thorp. 2. William Henry, born in 1862; married, April 3, 1883, Augusta Wick Bissell, of Cleveland, where he resided. He died in August, 1917. 3. Joseph Sheffield, deceased. 4. Florence Sheffield; married Frederick Keefe, of Chicago. He died in Paris. She lives in Washington, District of Columbia. 5. Elijah George, graduated at Yale and at Harvard Law School, and practiced his profession in New York. He died in 1900. 6. Josephine Porter; married the late United States Senator Winthrop Murray Crane, of Dalton, Massachusetts, where she has a home.

(Goldthwaite: "Boardman Genealogy," pp. 410, 545. Family data.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

VIII. George St. John Sheffield, son of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, April 2, 1842, and died in Providence, Rhode Island, December 14, 1924. He received his early education at Churchill Academy, Ossining, New York, and the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven. Matriculating at Yale University, he was graduated from that institution in 1863 with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. Three years later, in 1866, the university conferred upon him the degree of Master of Arts. While an undergraduate he was prominent in a number of college activities, being a member of his class crew; of Delta Kappa Epsilon, one of the foremost of the national Greek letter fraternities; of Delta Kappa, Alpha Sigma Phi, Skull and Bones, and Linonia, and serving as president of the last named society in his senior year. Immediately following his graduation Mr. Sheffield spent two years abroad, studying medicine in the best hospitals of Paris. Upon his return to America, in 1865, he matriculated at the Columbia Law School, which he attended until June, 1866. Thus fortified with an unusually well-rounded and comprehensive education, he engaged in commercial activities for three years, organizing the firm of Smith, Henry and Sheffield in 1868. When the firm was dissolved in 1871, Mr. Sheffield became a member of the firm of Grant and Company, bankers, of No. 33 Wall Street, New York City, continuing that association until his retirement in 1882, when he removed to New Haven in order to attend to the duties devolving upon him as an executor of his father's estate.

In 1889, he settled at Twin Elms Farm, Attleboro, Massachusetts, living there until 1916, when he took up his residence in Providence, Rhode Island, where he lived until his death. At various times in his career Mr. Sheffield was prominently identified with important business interests. He was president of the Prospect Hill Land Company, of Staten Island, New York; president of the Chester Mining Company of Arizona; vice-president of the Canal or Northampton Railroad; a member of the New York City Produce Exchange since 1880, and a trustee of the Attleboro Public Library.

Politically, Mr. Sheffield was a staunch Republican from the days of his majority. His active membership in learned societies and social and civic organizations was wide and varied. To him all subjects and all people were interesting. He was a member of the American Museum of Natural History, New York City; the American Associa-



American Historical Society

Harold A. Miles & Co.

G. S. Messier

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

tion for the Advancement of Science; a Fellow of the American Geographical Society; a life member of the New England Society; a member of the Providence Chamber of Commerce; the Union League Club of New York City; the University Clubs of New York, Boston, and Providence; the Hope Club, of Providence; and the Larchmont Yacht Club.

In December, 1900, the Pilgrim Church of Attleboro was formed, and Mr. Sheffield became a charter member and continued his membership throughout his lifetime. He donated the land and paid about half the cost of construction and furnishing of the edifice, as well as contributing generously toward the yearly expenses. In April, 1917, he affiliated with the First Congregational (Unitarian) Church of Providence, Rhode Island, continuing his membership until his death.

Like his father, Mr. Sheffield was a patron of Yale University, and carried on the family tradition of interest in this institution. In particular he was interested in the development of rowing into a major sport, and what he did for Yale's prestige in this line can not be overestimated. From his undergraduate days he was a rowing enthusiast, and for more than forty years he was of material assistance to both the rowing authorities and the crews with advice, encouragement, and funds. He took an active part each year in shaping the Yale crews for the intercollegiate regattas; and for many years he served ably as official referee and time-keeper of the big races. The summers of 1884, 1888 and 1889 were spent abroad, but with these exceptions he attended every race at New London from the first meet in 1878 to 1924, inclusive. In 1872, the famous Yale coach, Bob Cook, made a trip to England in the interests of intercollegiate athletics. This trip, a distinct departure in American intercollegiate athletic circles, was made possible by Mr. Sheffield, who bore half the expenses of the trip. A quarter of a century later, in 1896, the Yale crew made its initial trip to England. Mr. Sheffield won for himself the title of "The Grandfather of Yale Rowing" from the appreciative alumni and undergraduates, and as such his memory will continue in the hearts of Yale men the world over.

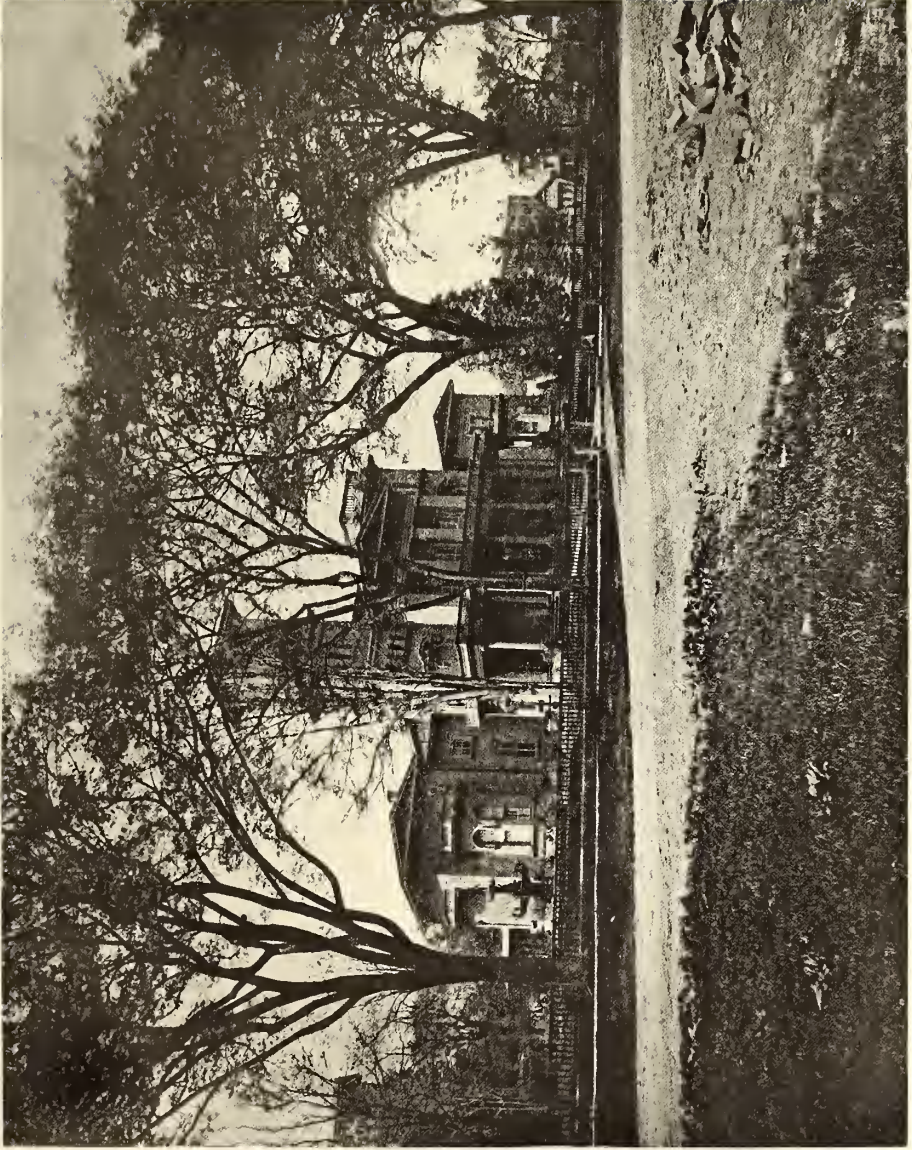
On Mr. Sheffield's death in 1924, it was found that he had left practically his entire fortune to Yale University. Two-thirds was in the form of memorial funds to his two sons, Joseph Earl and George, whose untimely deaths left Mr. Sheffield childless. His will provided

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

that almost the entire estate should be held in trust by George Parmly Day, treasurer of Yale University, and Frederick G. Mason, of Attleboro, Massachusetts, both of whom were named as executors of the testament. They were directed to pay the income to Mrs. Sheffield during her lifetime. Upon her death the residuary estate is to be divided into three parts of equal size. One part is bequeathed to Yale University to be used as a separate fund in memory of Joseph Earl Sheffield, and to be known as the "Earl Sheffield Fund." The net income is to be applied to the uses of Yale College, also known as the academic department of Yale University, in such manner as its authorities shall determine. The second part is left to the Board of Trustees of the Sheffield Scientific School to be held as a separate trust fund to be known as the "George Sheffield Fund." The income of this fund is to be used for the benefit of the Sheffield Scientific School. The third part of the estate is to go to Yale University absolutely for its general purposes with no restriction as to the use of the principal or income. A bequest of \$10,000 is made outright to the Russell Trust Association of New Haven (Skull and Bones Society of Yale College) for its general purposes. Another gift of \$2,000 is made to the Yale University Alumni Fund in memory of Mr. Sheffield's sons, Joseph Earl and George Sheffield, both of whom were Yale graduates.

George St. John Sheffield's life, viewed in perspective, shows him to have built up year by year a life-record of great usefulness and constructive endeavor. His chief interest was in his *alma mater*, and his many gifts to that institution have given a forward impulse to the cause of education. His passing lost to Yale University one of its best known alumni and one of its foremost benefactors and friends. In private life Mr. Sheffield was one whom the possession of riches mellowed but does not spoil. He engaged from time to time in business and capably administered the great funds entrusted to his care, but his deepest and most vital interests lay in other fields. To him money was a means of accomplishment, not an end in itself. His interest in rowing was the outlet of a hidden vein in romantic adventurousness in his nature. As he grew older in years, his association with young people and his interest in youthful activities kept him, too, young in spirit. He was unselfish, loyal to his friends, devoted to his family—a kind and courteous gentleman.

George St. John Sheffield married (first) in New York City, Janu-



SHEFFIELD RESIDENCE

NEW HAVEN, CONN.

1871

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ary 30, 1867, Mary Stewart, who died March 2, 1873, daughter of John Aikman Stewart, founder of the United States Trust Company. Mr. Stewart was born in New York City, August 22, 1822, son of John and Mary (Aikman) Stewart. His father was a native of Scotland and his mother of New York. He attended the public schools and Columbia College, and later, in 1899, received an honorary Master of Arts degree from Columbia. Mr. Stewart was a surveyor on the engineering construction corps of the N. Y., L. E. & W. Railroad from 1840 to 1842, when he was appointed clerk of the Board of Education of New York. After eight years in this position, he became an actuary in the United States Life Insurance Company, continuing until 1853. It was in that year that he organized the United States Trust Company, the first trust company in the United States. He became its secretary, Mr. Joseph Lawrence being made president, but on the death of Mr. Lawrence, about 1865, Mr. Stewart succeeded to the presidency. In 1902, he retired from this position to become chairman of the board of trustees. During the Civil War he had charge of the sub-treasury in New York until after the assassination of President Lincoln. Mr. Stewart was an outstanding figure in the financial world, and was a director of the Chicago, Milwaukee & St. Paul Railroad, the Merchants' National Bank, the Liverpool and London and Globe Insurance Companies of Liverpool and New York, the Globe Indemnity Company, etc. He was a trustee of the John F. Slater Fund and a trustee of Princeton University from 1868, serving in 1910 as president *pro tem* of the university. Mr. Stewart died in New York City, December 27, 1926, at the advanced age of one hundred and four. He was a member of the Scotch Presbyterian Church. He married (first) Mary Y. Johnson; (second), November 25, 1890, Mary Olivia Capron, of Baltimore. He had four children by his first marriage: 1. Mary; married George St. John Sheffield, and died March 2, 1873. 2. William A., deceased. 3. Emily; married Robert Waller, deceased. 4. John Aikman, Jr.

George St. John Sheffield married (second), in New York City, January 10, 1878, Amelia Maxcy Daggett. (Daggett VIII.) Children of first marriage: 1. Stewart, born October 11, 1868, died January 16, 1870. 2. Joseph Earl, born November 16, 1871; died October 16, 1903; graduated from Yale College in 1894. 3. George, born

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

February 26, 1873, died January 16, 1916; graduated from the Sheffield Scientific School in 1894.

(Family data. "Who's Who in America," 1916-17.)

VIII. Charles Joseph Sheffield, son of Joseph Earl and Maria (St. John) Sheffield, was born September 6, 1844, and died at Cleveland, Ohio, July 26, 1895. He married Laura Barnett, daughter of General James and Maria H. (Underhill) Barnett.

General James Barnett was one of the most enterprising, public-spirited and valuable Cleveland citizens of his time. His business career covered a period of more than seventy years in connection with various mercantile, financial, industrial and railway interests, and was distinguished by exceptional ability, marked success, and a most honorable personal reputation. He served with great credit and gallantry as an officer in the Civil War, rising to the rank of brevet brigadier-general. Though preferring the activities of private life, and never a candidate for purely political office, he held by appointment a number of responsible public positions, in which he discharged his duties with signal credit and efficiency. Upon the occasion of the presentation of his portrait by Mr. Samuel Mather to the Chamber of Commerce in 1907 he was characterized as "the first citizen of Cleveland."

General Barnett was born in Cherry Valley, Otsego County, New York, June 20, 1821, son of Melancthon and Mary (Clark) Barnett. His father was a native of the State of New York and came with his family to Cleveland in 1825. He was a successful and highly esteemed citizen and served as justice of the peace, member of the city council and county treasurer; he died in Cleveland July 1, 1881, aged ninety-two. The mother of General Barnett was the daughter of Captain Clark, who participated in the Battle of Bunker Hill and other Revolutionary battles.

James Barnett engaged first in the hardware business in Cleveland, becoming a partner of George Worthington and ultimately head of this firm. Its development as one of the leading establishments of Cleveland was largely due to him. He was director and later president of the First National Bank, serving from 1876 until 1905. He was also a director of the Merchants' National Bank and later of the National Commercial Bank; of the Society for Savings, the Cleveland, Columbus, Cincinnati, and Indianapolis Railway Company, and

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the Cleveland Iron Mining Company. As a business man he was far above the average in both ability and integrity.

His military career began in boyhood as a member of the "Cleveland Grays," and the outbreak of the Civil War found him a seasoned member of the militia with the rank of colonel of artillery. He was immediately called on to take his command into action and it was they who fired the first artillery shot on the Union side, at Phillipi, June 3, 1861. General Barnett was commissioned to raise a regiment of light artillery and became its colonel. He served in the ordnance department throughout the war, taking part in many of the chief campaigns in the West and serving under Generals Buell, Gilbert, A. McD. McCook, Rosecrans, and Thomas. On March 13, 1865, he was brevetted brigadier-general for gallant and meritorious service during the war.

After the war General Barnett resumed his business activities and took an increasing part in public and philanthropic work in Cleveland. He served one term on the city council, the only elective office he ever held. He was prominently connected with the Soldiers' and Sailors' Home at Xenia, the Cleveland Asylum for the Insane, and was on the board of managers of the National Homes for Disabled Soldiers. He was likewise active in the Grand Army of the Republic and the Loyal Legion, was president of the Garfield Memorial Association (having been a friend of President Garfield and having helped to nominate him), and was instrumental in the erection of the Cuyahoga County Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument. By a unanimous vote of the commission in charge of this work his bust was ordered placed over the north door of the interior. For many years General Barnett was president of the Associated Charities and the Cleveland Humane Society. He was distinguished for his public and private benevolence and no citizen of Cleveland has ever been held in greater esteem and affection by the community generally. Though refusing to run for office he was keenly interested in politics and was a staunch Republican. He died January 12, 1911.

General James Barnett married, June 12, 1845, Maria Underhill, daughter of Dr. Samuel Underhill, of Granville, Illinois. They had four daughters. Laura married Charles J. Sheffield. (Sheffield VIII.) They had one son, Henry Earl, who graduated at Yale and Harvard Law School, and resides in Cleveland, Ohio.

(Family data.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The St. John Line)

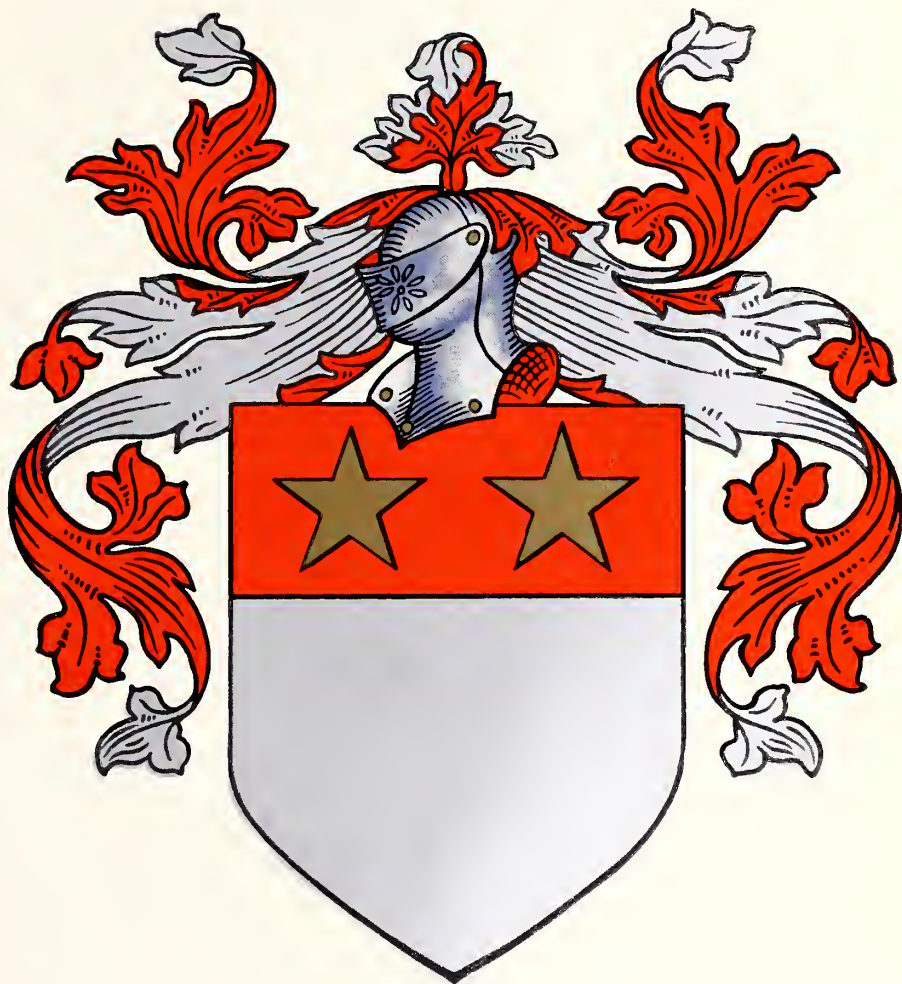
Arms—Argent on a chief gules two mullets or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Although this surname is without doubt derived originally from Saint John the apostle, its immediate source is Normandy, where several parishes of St. John gave their name to a noble family. Members of this family came to England during or soon after the Conquest. John de St. John (*temp.* William II), of Stanton St. John, County Oxford, had a son, Roger de St. John, whose daughter Muriel married Reginald de Aurevail, and left an only daughter and heiress who married Adam de Port, Lord of Basing, Hampshire. This Adam de Port was a descendant of the great baron, Hugh de Port, a famous knight of the time of William the Conqueror. William, son of Adam de Port (*temp.* King John), assumed the name of St. John. His son, Robert (*temp.* Henry III), had two sons: 1. John, whose son, John St. John, was summoned to Parliament as Baron St. John of Basing in 1299. 2. William, who was the ancestor of the Lords of St. John of Bletsho and the Viscounts and Earls of Bolinbroke.

In England the pronunciation of this name was corrupted to Sinjin, and that early members of the family in America used this pronunciation is shown by the fact that in the early records the name is spelled Sension or Sention. In 1706, the spelling Saintjohn appears, and not until 1725 was it first written St. John.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," p. 29. Lower: "Patronymica Britannica," p. 300. Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Burke: "General Armory," p. 888. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XIV, p. 61.)

I. Matthias St. John, the first of the family in America, was born in England and came to Dorchester, Massachusetts, where he was made a freeman, September 13, 1634. On January 14, 1635, he received a grant of twenty acres in Dorchester "at the bounds between Roxbury and Dorchester." Another record of him is dated January 16, 1636: "It is ordered that Matthias Sension and Thomas Sampford shall keepe the coves this yeere to begin the 17 day of Aprill and to continue the keepinge of them till the 15th of November to have for their pay in keepinge 5 shills the head for as many as are bro't in; the sayd 5 shill p'head to be payd 1-3 in hand 1-3 at halfe the tyme the other at the end of the tyme." On March 18, 1637, Matthias St. John owned three acres, two goads, and three rods in the neck at Dorchester, and



St John

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

two acres, one goad, four rods in the cow pasture. He removed in 1640 to Windsor, Connecticut, where he was granted a lot in the Palisades containing ten rods. He also had twenty-four rods of land in East Windsor. On November 19, 1643, he is recorded as a member of the grand jury, and in March, 1650, he was juryman in a particular court in Hartford. On June 4, 1654, "Matthias Sension of Weathersfield" was before a particular court at Hartford because he had "sold syder to Indians by which they was drunke." Apparently he lived for some time in Wethersfield, but removed to Norwalk, in 1654, and it is here that we find the last record of him, dated March 5, 1657: "Matthew Sention (and others) undertook to make and provide a good and sufficient wolfe pitt upon the other side in some convenient place." Thus ends the record of one of our early pioneers, who, even from the little which we have been able to learn about him, stands out as an active, diligent, and responsible member of society. Children: 1. Matthias, of whom further. 2. Mark, born in 1633-34; died August 12, 1693; married (first), before 1653-56, Elizabeth Stanley, born about 1635; (second) Dorothy Smith, died in 1706. 3. Samuel, born 1637-40; died January 14, 1685; married, in September, 1663, Elizabeth Hoite, died in 1686. 4. Mercy; married, June 8, 1665, Ephraim Lockwood, born at Watertown, Massachusetts, December 1, 1641, son of Robert and Susannah Lockwood. 5. James, born at Windsor, Connecticut, in 1649, died May 9, 1684; married, December 31, 1673, Rebecca Pickett, born June 30, 1650, daughter of John and Margaret Pickett, of Stratford, Connecticut; she married (second) Sergeant Andrew Messenger.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," pp. 3-6. Stiles: "History of Ancient Wethersfield," p. 296. Hall: "History of Norwalk, Connecticut," pp. 17, 23, 47.)

II. Matthias (2) St. John, son of Matthias St. John, was born in 1630, and died in December, 1728-29. He resided in Norwalk, Connecticut, where he owned lot No. 25, "near the cove." In 1665, his lands and accommodations were valued at one hundred and fifty pounds. He appears frequently on the town records; he was fence viewer in 1659, and also served as selectman. He is on record also as the owner of twenty-four acres of land in East Windsor, which he doubtless inherited from his father. The following is taken from the town records of Norwalk: "Cattle to be put in the plantinge fed and kept

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

there by Stephen that day, and every day for a month they are to be fetched up by one standinge man or another, to be ready at the soundinge of a horn to go along with him, and so to take their turnes until the month is out, the time to goe out and fetch the cattle is at noone; and it begins with Matthias Sention, Jr., and so long with Walter Hait, and none to goe except trained soldiers and if any neglect they are to forfeit 2s. to use of towne."

Matthias St. John married Elizabeth. Children: 1. Ebenezer, born about 1660, died in 1723-24; married Elizabeth Comstock. 2. Matthias, of whom further. 3. Mary, living in 1698; married, November 10, 1677, Thomas Hyatt, died intestate before March 29, 1698, and was a soldier in King Philip's War. 4. James, born in 1674, died in June, 1754; married, December 18, 1693, Mary Comstock, born February 19, 1671-72, died October 17, 1749.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," p. 17. "Norwalk Town Records," Vol. I, p. 33. Stiles: "Ancient Windsor," p. 545.)

III. Matthias (3) St. John, son of Matthias (2) and Elizabeth St. John, was born in Norwalk, Connecticut, in 1667-68, and died August 17, 1748. Like his father, he served as fence viewer, an important office in those early days when cattle might stray into the wilderness and be lost forever. He also performed numerous commissions for the town, among them being to secure clapboards for the schoolhouse (1699); to beat the drum on Sabbath days; and to sweep the meetinghouse. On January 4, 1702, the town granted liberty to dwellers outside the town "for to erect shelter for their horses for the Sabbaths and publique occasions, by Matthias Sention Jr's lott, in the common—but not to hinder or obstruct his passage to his barns and yard and shoppe." In a later record the proprietors of Ridgefield granted a lot to Matthias St. John.

Matthias St. John married Rachel Bouton, born December 16, 1667, daughter of John and Aibgail (Marvin) Bouton, of Norwalk. Children: 1. Ebenezer. 2. John, born about 1685, died in March, 1773; married (first), April 29, 1724, Eunice Hayes, born May 2, 1702, died in Wilton, in 1747; (second), in 1749, Sarah Scribner. 3. Matthew, born in 1686, died August 3, 1785; married, October 13, 1709, Anne Whitney, born in 1690, died May 9, 1772-73. 4. Samuel, died in 1755; married Rebecca Olmstead, born about 1681. 5. Nathan, born in 1692, died March 10, 1749; married, June 7, 1721,

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Hannah Seymour, died August 22, 1768. 6. Matthias, born in 1695, died in 1732; married, about 1723-24, Elizabeth Trowbridge, born March 1, 1703; she married (second) Nehemiah Gregory. 7. Benjamin, of whom further. 8. Rachel, born about 1700, died in 1774; married, April 27, 1721, John Marvin, born September 2, 1678, died February 25, 1724, son of Matthew Marvin. 9. Hannah, born about 1700; died in Sharon, Connecticut, February 5, 1774; married, in 1721, Ebenezer Carter, son of Samuel and Lois (St. John) Carter. 10. Elizabeth, born about 1717-18; married Ezra Hickok, born about 1716, son of Benjamin Hickok.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," pp. 29-31. "Town Proceedings of Norwalk, Connecticut," p. 215.)

IV. Benjamin St. John, son of Matthias and Rachel (Bouton) St. John, was born in Norwalk, Connecticut, about 1700, and died in 1782. He was fence viewer, 1726-40; surveyor of highways, 1730-1736; grand juror, 1732; tything man, 1749. In 1744, he moved to New Canaan with his family, and, with his wife, joined the New Canaan Church, October 17, 1744. Benjamin St. John married (first), in 1729, Mary, born in 1708, died in New Canaan, December 3, 1774; (second), March 9, 1775, Elizabeth Everett, widow of Richard Everett. Children of first marriage: 1. Benjamin, born in Norwalk, about 1730, died before 1764; married Eunice Hyatt. 2. Caleb, born in Norwalk, about 1731-32; died in New Canaan, February 20, 1805; married, March 10, 1757, Mary Seeley, born June 18, 1733, died July 26, 1821. 3. Elizabeth, born in Norwalk, about 1733, died in New Canaan, June 3, 1786; married, in New Canaan, June 30, 1748, Moses Comstock, died January 18, 1776, son of Moses and Abigail (Brinsmade) Comstock. 4. Matthias, of whom further. 5. David, born in 1735 (?), died April 14, 1796; married, March 9, 1758, Jemima Pennoyer, born in 1738, died April 4, 1813. 6. Mary, born in 1736 (?) died November 4, 1778; married, in Norwalk, November 4, 1756, Wix Seeley, born September 16, 1736, son of Eliphalet and Sarah (Holly) Seeley, of Stamford, Connecticut. 7. Sarah. 8. Deborah, born in 1740, died March 25, 1785; married, in New Canaan, January 28, 1760, Caleb Benedict, born December 28, 1740, died in 1812; he married (second), in January, 1786, Hannah Pennoyer, died in 1806.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," pp. 67-69.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. Matthias (4) St. John, son of Benjamin and Mary St. John, was born in Norwalk, Connecticut, in 1734, and died in New Canaan, March 20, 1819. He and his wife were admitted to the church in New Canaan, March 25, 1759. He is mentioned as surveyor of highways in 1773, grand juror in 1778, and ensign of the 9th Company Alarm List, 9th Regiment of Connecticut, in October, 1779. He was a corporal in Lieutenant Curtis' company, 9th Regiment Connecticut Militia, October 25, 1776, to January 25, 1777, and thus is numbered among those who fought in the Revolution. Apparently he owned considerable land in Connecticut, as his name occurs frequently in records of land transactions. He lived on "ye upper Canoe Hill," according to the old deeds, in a house on the south side of the road a little west of Moses Comstock's place; his house was later known as Deacon Ferris' place on Ferris Hill. On March 4, 1806, Matthias gave a deed to his son, Matthias, for thirty-three acres at Kellogg's Ridge, New Canaan; he also gave lands in New Canaan to his sons, Samuel and Enoch. Some time after the Revolution he moved to Walton, New York, where in 1802 "a library was established for the benefit of the few pioneers and their families," including the St. Johns.

Matthias St. John married (first), June 28, 1758, Naomi Weed, born in 1738, died in New Canaan, August 27, 1780, daughter of Abraham and Naomi (Pond) Weed, of New Canaan; (second) Anna Ferris, or Bishop. Children of first marriage: 1. Abraham, born in New Canaan, March 25, 1759, died September 13, 1803; married, September 23, 1779, Anna Hoyt, born July 22, 1761. 2. Sarah, born June 15, 1760, died in New Canaan, April 24, 1793; married, September 24, 1779, Captain Isaac Keeler, born in New Canaan, July 25, 1750, died there in January, 1854; he married (second) Catherine Tuttle. 3. Matthias (5), born August 29, 1762, died January 4, 1836; married (first), April 4, 1784, Esther Raymond, born in 1762, died March 12, 1792; (second), November 2, 1792, Esther Abbott, born May 8, 1763, died October 17, 1805; (third), September 17, 1806, Sarah Bishop, born September 30, 1770, died February 1, 1835. 4. Esther, born July 8, 1764, died in 1777. 5. Enoch, born October 14, 1765, died April 23, 1846; married (first), November 17, 1788, Sybil Seymour, born August 3, 1765; (second), March 9, 1790, Sarah Carter-Downs-Powers, born January 12, 1760, died March 14, 1808; (third), September 20, 1808, Lydia Chapman, born February 22,



Maria St. John Sheffield

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1774, died April 30, 1840; (fourth), December 2, 1840, Maria Thompson, born April 1, 1790. 6. Benjamin, born June 8, 1767, died June 2, 1855; married, June 20, 1792, Dorcas Bouton, born June 20, 1773. 7. Samuel, born October 22, 1769, died December 4, 1844, in New Haven. 8. Anne, born November 18, 1770, died in Walton, New York, April 24, 1846; married, January 12, 1791, Matthew Benedict, born October 29, 1770, died September 2, 1846, son of James and Thankful (Lockwood) Benedict. 9. John Trowbridge, of whom further. 10. Nathan, born in 1775, died March 15, 1842; married Anna Bump, born April 8, 1775, died August 6, 1856. 11. Esther, born March 15, 1777; married, in New Canaan, August 30, 1798, Benjamin Bates, of Darien, Connecticut.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," pp. 122-29. Munsell: "History of Delaware County, New York," p. 325.)

VI. John Trowbridge St. John, son of Matthias (4) and Naomi (Weed) St. John, was born July 26, 1772, and died at Walton, New York, July 19, 1850. He married, October 1, 1795, Mary Stockton. (Stockton VI.) Children: 1. Eliza, born March 28, 1797. 2. Martha, born September 28, 1798; married, October 21, 1818, John C. Bassett. 3. Maria, of whom further. 4. Charles W. S., born April 9, 1803, died July 18, 1806. 5. John Trowbridge, born August 18, 1805, died June 7, 1806. 6. George, born July 15, 1809; married, August 10, 1835, Rachel Eliza Waterman. 7. Thomas, born February 12, 1812; removed to New Orleans. 8. Samuel Henry, born July 31, 1814; married twice. 9. Erastus Root, born August 3, 1820.

(Alexander: "The St. John Genealogy," p. 124. Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," p. 94. "The Will of Samuel St. John," p. 21.)

VII. Maria St. John, daughter of John Trowbridge and Mary (Stockton) St. John, was born May 22, 1801, and died April 21, 1889. She married, August 12, 1822, Joseph Earl Sheffield. (Sheffield VII.)

According to the will of her uncle, Samuel St. John, of New Haven, Maria (St. John) Sheffield received Mr. St. John's house at No. 2 St. John Place, New Haven. This bequest, given in addition to her share of the large fortune which Mr. St. John divided among his family, was bestowed "in consideration of my niece . . . having been a member of my family for a number of years, . . . and . . . in testimony of my regard and affection."

(*Ibid.* "The Will of Samuel St. John," p. 7.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Stockton Line)

Arms—Gules, a chevron vair, sable and argent, between three mullets of the last.

Crest—A lion rampant, supporting an Ionic pillar.

Motto—*Omnia Deo pendent.*

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

From two Old English words, *stoc* and *tun*, the surname Stockton is derived. The former means "the stock or stem of a tree," and the latter, "an inclosure," is the root from which the word "town" is taken. The family is of Saxon blood, having been settled in England long before the Norman Conquest. The spelling was originally de Stoctun, later Stockton, and some members of the family, as Governor Stoughton, of Massachusetts, have changed it to Stoughton. There are numerous small towns of the name in the English countryside, from which the family name arose about the eleventh century. The branch from which the American family traces its descent sprang from David de Stockton, who lived in Chester, England, in 1250. This family lived at Stockton Manor in the town of Malpas on an elevation near the River Dee, not far from the city of Chester. In 1311, William Stockton inherited the manor from his father. He was the last of the family to hold the manor, which passed out of the family through his daughter, Isabella. Other branches, however, continued the name, and in time sent representatives to aid in the foundation of America. Richard Stockton, who came over in 1650, was among the earliest immigrants, and the line which he founded has been distinguished in the history of America. In the middle of the nineteenth century Commodore Stockton was prominent in the occupation of California during the Mexican War, and the city of Stockton was named for him. Richard Stockton was a signer of the Declaration of Independence.

(Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," pp. 17-21. Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." North: "The Founders and Founding of Walton, New York," p. 50. Stockton: "A History of the Stockton Family," p. 11.)

I. Richard Stockton, a descendant of John Stockton, Esquire, of Kiddington, parish of Malpas, County Chester, England, was born in Malpas Parish in 1606, and died in September, 1707. He came from England to America in 1650, and settled in Flushing, Long Island. On November 8, 1656, his name appears in Flushing on a petition of some of the inhabitants requesting the release of William Wickenden, who had been fined and imprisoned for preaching without a license.

When Colonel Richard Nichols came from England to take over

STOCKTON

Arms—Gules, a chevron vair, sable and argent, between three mullets of the last.

Crest—A lion rampant, supporting an Ionic pillar.

Motto—*Omnia Deo pendent.* (Crozier: "General Armory.")

FROST

Arms—Argent a chevron sable between three trefoils slipped vert.

Crest—An old man's head proper between two sprigs of laurel vert.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

KING

Arms—Sable, on a chevron between three crosses crosslet or, as many escallops of the field.

Crest—An escallop or. (Crozier: "General Armory.")

STOCKING

When taking a chevron with a single bar, the bar is placed between the middle of the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.

ROST

When a chevron is placed between three slipped feet, the bar is placed between the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.

KING

When a chevron is placed between three crossed feet, the bar is placed between the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.
Cross—A horizontal bar appearing in the middle of the feet.



Storkton



Frost



King

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

New York, he commissioned Richard Stockton as a lieutenant of horse, in 1665. In 1675, Richard Stockton's estate at Flushing consisted of twelve acres of land, one negro slave, five horses, five cows, and five swine; and in 1683, it was inventoried at ten acres of land, one slave, two horses, four oxen, seven cows, four swine, and twenty sheep. By 1690, his property had increased, for in that year he proposed for sale seventy or more acres of land in addition to two ten-acre lots and two twenty-acre lots. His reason for selling his property in Flushing was that he had purchased of George Hutchinson, January 30, 1690, about two thousand acres in West Jersey, comprising Mr. Hutchinson's home and plantation called Oneanick, or Annanickan. This was apparently in or near Princeton, New Jersey. Mr. Stockton removed there and disposed of his property in Flushing, March 12, 1694. He was a member of the Society of Friends.

Richard Stockton married, in England, Abigail. Children: 1. Richard, of whom further. 2. John, born in 1674. 3. Job, inherited the plantation. 4. Abigail. 5. Mary. 6. Sarah. 7. Hannah. 8. Elizabeth, born in 1680.

(Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," pp. 1-4. Lee: "Mercer County, New Jersey," p. 174. North: "Founders and Founding of Walton, New York," p. 50. Stockton: "A History of the Stockton Family," p. 25.)

II. Richard Stockton, son of Richard and Abigail Stockton, was born in England, and died in July, 1709. He came to America with his parents and accompanied them to New Jersey, but settled first at Piscataway, in Middlesex. In 1696, he purchased a tract of four hundred acres on the north side of Stony Brook, which included all the present campus of Princeton University and the theological seminary. It is supposed that the "Barracks," an old stone house on Edgehill Street, Princeton, was the original dwelling place of Richard. In 1701, he purchased from William Penn an estate of six thousand acres on Stony Brook, of which the present town of Princeton is the center. A portion of his estate has remained in the family to this day. During the French and Indian wars and the Revolution the house known as the "Barracks" was used for quartering soldiers, hence its name. Richard Stockton may have lived here originally, but he later built a mansion called "Morven," which became the family homestead. This house, a dignified structure of white brick, was famous in the old days, and

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

many distinguished guests, including George Washington, were entertained there. Unfortunately it suffered a great deal during the Revolution. Richard Stockton was in 1709 a trustee of the Friends' Meeting.

Richard Stockton married, November 8, 1691, at the Chesterfield Friends' Meeting, Susanna (Witham) Robinson, born November 29, 1668, daughter of Robert and Ann Witham and widow of Thomas Robinson. She married (third) Judge Thomas Leonard, of Princeton, who died in 1749. Children: 1. Richard, born in 1693. 2. Samuel, of whom further. 3. Joseph, born May 10, 1697. 4. Robert, born in 1699. 5. John, born August 8, 1701; inherited "Morven"; his son, Richard, was a signer of the Declaration of Independence. 6. Thomas, born in 1703; died unmarried.

(Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," pp. 5-6.)

(III) Samuel Stockton, son of Richard and Susanna (Witham) Stockton, was born in 1695 and died in 1739. He married (first), in 1718, Amy Doughty, daughter of Jacob and Amy Doughty; (second) Rachel Stout, daughter of Colonel Joseph and Ruth Stout; she died in 1771. Children of first marriage: 1. Samuel, born in 1724, died in 1767, probably unmarried. 2. Amy, born in 1725, died in 1777, unmarried. Children of second marriage. 3. Joseph. 4. Richard Witham, of whom further. 5. Jacob. 6. Rachel; married John Riddell. 7. Ann. 8. Ruth; married John Vorhees.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 7, 21-22.)

IV. Major Richard Witham Stockton, son of Samuel and Rachel (Stout) Stockton, was born in July, 1733, and died in New Brunswick, May 8, 1801. He was a major in the British Army during the Revolutionary War, and was taken prisoner and confined in Philadelphia. After the war he removed to New Brunswick, Canada, together with other loyalists.

Major Richard Witham Stockton married, December 3, 1753, Mary Hatfield, born in January, 1732, died August 20, 1812, daughter of Joseph Hatfield, of Elizabethtown, New Jersey. Children: 1. Rachel, born November 22, 1754. 2. Charles Witham, of whom further. 3. Ann (Nancy), born May 25, 1758. 4. Andrew Hunter, born January 3, 1760. 5. Phœbe Harriet, born October 4, 1761, died, unmarried, December 26, 1821. 6. Richard Sybran, born May 26,

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1763, died, unmarried, June 2, 1837. 7. William Johnston, born October 18, 1766; married late in life. 8. Jean (Jane) Parker, born March 31, 1769. 9. Samuel Hatfield, born November 18, 1771.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 23-31. Sabine: "Sketches of Loyalists of the American Revolution," p. 335.)

V. Ensign Charles Witham Stockton, son of Major Richard Witham and Mary (Hatfield) Stockton, was born July 16, 1756, and died at Walton, New York, December 1, 1822. He served in the British Army during the Revolution as an ensign, and according to tradition took part in the battle of Long Island. He was taken prisoner, but released on parole, and it was apparently during this period that he went to Newtown, Long Island, where he met Elizabeth North, whom he married in spite of the opposition of her family and friends. Her father, brother and brother-in-law were with the American Army at Peekskill.

After the war Ensign Stockton remained a British subject, and although continuing to live in this country, received a pension for his military service. He became reconciled, however, with his wife's family, for he accompanied them to Walton, New York, where they were among the first settlers. On December 1, 1787, he arrived in Walton with his wife, three children, his mother-in-law, and a negro girl, and they lived that winter with Gabriel North, Mrs. Stockton's brother. The next spring Mr. Stockton built a log home for himself and his family, and purchased several tracts of land. He was one of the settlers who had a vat and contrivances for curing and tanning leather. A few years later he built what was considered a very fine house, a story and a half high, which was torn down in 1857, when Henry St. John and his brother, George, built a country house on the site. Mr. Stockton was a very well informed man and is said to have kept abreast of current events with unusual thoroughness.

Charles Witham Stockton married (first), January 14, 1779, Elizabeth North, born at Newtown, Long Island, January 13, 1764, died at Walton, New York, July 18, 1805; (second), January 8, 1807, Elizabeth Coleman, born December 26, 1776, died April 14, 1848. Children of first marriage: 1. Mary, of whom further. 2. Abigail, born August 13, 1781. 3. Richard, born September 13, 1785; became a physician. 4. Elizabeth (twin), born October 25, 1788. 5. Martha (twin), born October 25, 1788. 6. Charles Witham, Jr., born Janu-

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ary 20, 1792, died January 13, 1798. 7. Benjamin North, born February 13, 1795, died January 5, 1797. 8. Margaret Juliann, born April 23, 1798, died October 13, 1801. 9. William Severyn Bruyn, born December 14, 1799. 10. Son (triplet), born January 25, 1803, died February 8, 1803. 11. Son (triplet), born January 25, 1803, died February 8, 1803. 12. Son (triplet), born January 25, 1803, died February 8, 1803. 13. Thomas Baylis Whitmarsh, born June 18, 1805. Children of second marriage: 14. Harriet Elizabeth, born November 28, 1807, died February 17, 1810. 15. Ann P., born July 14, 1810. 16. Daughter, born February 5, 1813, died February 10, 1813. 17. Daughter, born December 15, 1814, died December 30, 1814. 18. Charles Lewis, born January 15, 1816. 19. Henry P., born June 5, 1818.

(Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," pp. 60-62. North: "The Founders and Founding of Walton, New York," pp. 31-47. Munsell: "History of Delaware County, New York," p. 330.)

VI. Mary Stockton, daughter of Ensign Charles Witham and Elizabeth (North) Stockton, was born September 19, 1779, and died January 15, 1853. She married, October 1, 1795, John Trowbridge St. John. (St. John VI.)

(Stockton: "The Stockton Family of New Jersey," pp. 62, 93.)

(The Thorp (Thorpe) Line)

Arms—Gules, a chevron between three stags' heads erased argent.

(Arms in possession of the family.)

The name Thorpe is of local origin, being derived either from "the thorp," or village (this word is still used, especially in poetry, as in Tennyson's "The Brook"), or from some particular village named Thorpe, of which there are many in England. The name is variously spelled Thorp, Thorpe, Thripp, Thropp, Thrupp, Throop, and Throup. Adam de la Thrope is found in Wiltshire, Augustinus de Thorpe in Suffolk, and Warin de Thorpe in Cambridge in 1274.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. William Thorpe, the original ancestor of this family in America, was born in England about 1605 and died in Connecticut about 1684. He came to New England about 1635, and was one of the founders of New Haven, Connecticut. He married (first) Elizabeth, who died October 9, 1660; (second) Margaret Pigg, widow of Robert Pigg.



Thorp
(Thorpe)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Children of first marriage: 1. Nathaniel, baptized May 24, 1640, died about 1684. 2. Elizabeth, baptized in April, 1643. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Samuel, born in 1644, baptized June 14, 1646, died February 2, 1728. 5. Eleazer, born January 12, 1649, died February 20, 1649.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIX, p. 392.)

II. John Thorpe, son of William and Elizabeth Thorpe, was baptized in July, 1643-44, and died before October 17, 1720. He resided in Fairfield, Connecticut, and married, in 1684, Hannah Frost. (Frost III.) Children: 1. John, died March 1, 1741-42. 2. Samuel, of whom further. 3. Peter, died September 27, 1769. 4. Daniel, died February 26, 1748-49; married Hepzibah.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 392-93.)

III. Samuel Thorpe, son of John and Hannah (Frost) Thorpe, was born in 1685, and died April 26, 1758. He resided in Greenfield Hill, Connecticut, and married Margaret, born in 1687, died November 3, 1767. Children: 1. Abigail, baptized May 22, 1709. 2. Samuel, baptized December 16, 1711, died in 1786-87. 3. David, of whom further. 4. Gershom, baptized December 1, 1717-19. 5. Anne, baptized June 11, 1721. 6. Jemimah, baptized January 17, 1724-25.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 393-94.)

IV. David Thorpe, son of Samuel and Margaret Thorpe, was baptized July 4, 1714, and died about 1793-94. He married (first), about 1735, Mary, who died in Redding, Connecticut, in October, 1741; (second), in October, 1744, Naomi Williams, died January 19, 1768, daughter of Benjamin and Rebecca Williams, of Redding, Connecticut; (third), June 23, 1768, Rebecca Hall. Children of first marriage: 1. Stephen, baptized March 5, 1737, died July 10, 1807. 2. Eliphalet, of whom further. Children of second marriage: 3. Naomi, baptized December 21, 1746, died December 21, 1746. 4. Mary, baptized in 1748-49. 5. Ruthamah, baptized in May, 1751. 6. Ester (twin), baptized September 13, 1758. 7. Amy (twin), baptized September 13, 1758. 8. Ezekiel, baptized September 28, 1760. 9. Aaron, baptized January 23, 1763.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 394-95.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. Captain Eliphalet Thorpe, son of David and Mary Thorpe, was baptized February 3, 1740, and died September 1, 1795. He was a captain in the Revolutionary War, 1st Battalion, Samuel Whiting, colonel, in Connecticut and Rhode Island State regiments, under Generals Spencer and Wooster. In 1776, he was captain in the 4th Regiment of Militia. He also owned the privateer "Broome," which carried on naval operations during the war, and was ordered by the Committee of Safety to transport powder. Eliphalet Thorpe married, in 1760, Eunice Perry, born in 1743, died in 1780. Children: 1. Mabel, of whom further. 2. Walter; married Ruamah Sherwood. 3. Molly, born in 1760, died September 15, 1834; married (first) Jonathan Darrow; (second) William Pike. 4. Eliphalet, Jr., born in 1761, died in 1804; married, in 1788, Esther Jennings.

(*Ibid.*, p. 395. "Record of Connecticut Men in the War of the Revolution, etc.," p. 424. "Daughters of the American Revolution Lineage Books," Vol. V, pp. 7-8; Vol. VI, p. 91; Vol. XXI, p. 279; Vol. XXV, p. 341. Hurd: "History of Fairfield County, Connecticut," p. 339. Schenck: "History of Fairfield, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 426.)

VI. Mabel Thorpe, daughter of Captain Eliphalet and Eunice (Perry) Thorpe, married, June 19, 1793, Paul King Sheffield. (Sheffield VI.)

(Schenck: "History of Fairfield, Connecticut," Vol. II, pp. 426-427.)

(The Frost Line)

Arms—Argent a chevron sable between three trefoils slipped vert.

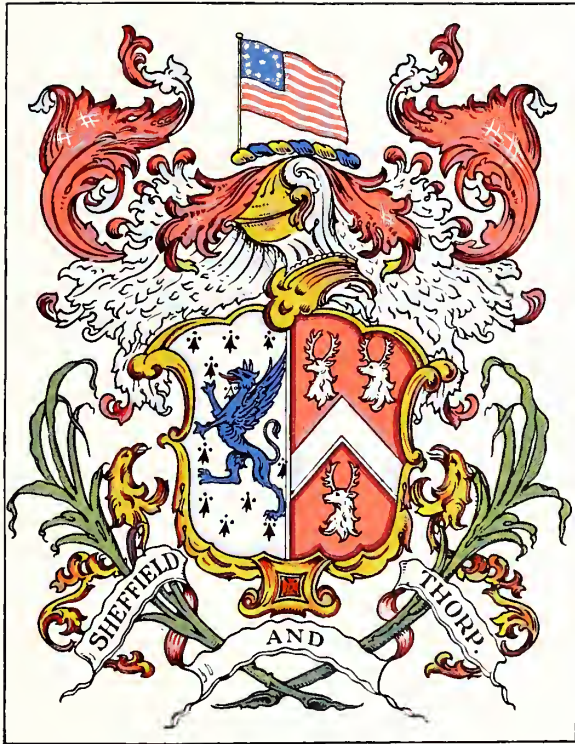
Crest—An old man's head proper between two sprigs of laurel vert.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Originally a personal or baptismal name, Frost is Scandinavian in derivation, although it was early introduced into England in the various invasions of that country. In the same way the names Christmas, Nowell, Winter, etc., arose. Henry Frost, of County Norfolk, and Robert Frost, of County Lincoln, are recorded as early as 1273.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. William Frost, the earliest ancestor of this family to settle in America, is said to have come from County Nottingham, England, when advanced in years, and settled in Fairfield, Connecticut, in 1639. He died in 1645. Children, born in England: 1. Daniel, of whom further. 2. Rebecca. 3. Sarah. 4. Abraham. 5. Elizabeth; mar-



SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ried (first) John Watson; (second) John Gray. 6. Lydia; married Henry Gray. 7. Mary; married, in England, a Mr. Rylie.

(Schenck: "History of Fairfield, Connecticut," Vol. I, p. 368.)

II. Daniel Frost, son of William Frost, died in 1684. He settled near his father in Connecticut, and later removed to Bankside, Long Island, on the east side of Frost Point. He married Elizabeth Barlow, daughter of John and Ann Barlow, of Fairfield. Children: 1. Rebecca, born in 1640; married, January 5, 1664, Simeon Booth. 2. Daniel; married Mary Rowland. 3. Joseph. 4. Isaac, died in 1685. 5. Sarah; married, about 1663, Samuel Smith. 6. Rachel; married Robert Rumsey. 7. Hannah, of whom further. 8. Esther; married Samuel Cooley.

(*Ibid.*, p. 368. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. II, p. 210. Frost: "The Frost Genealogy," p. 391.)

III. Hannah Frost, daughter of Daniel and Elizabeth (Barlow) Frost, married, in 1684, John Thorpe. (Thorpe II.)

(Schenck: "History of Fairfield, Connecticut," Vol. I, p. 368.)

(The King Line)

Arms—Sable, on a chevron between three crosses-crosslet or, as many escallops of the field.

Crest—An escallop or.

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

As might be expected, this surname originated in the title of King, but it seldom if ever indicates descent from a monarch. The reason for its widespread popularity must be sought elsewhere. The fact is that the progenitors of our many King families acted in that capacity in one of the medieval plays or festivals. These were given in every village at Christmas, Easter, and other holiday periods, and participation in them was a signal honor which was often handed down from father to son. The Nativity celebrations would often include the "Three Kings of the East," and "King Herod" was an even more conspicuous figure. In the spring the "King and Queen of the May" held the center of the stage. It is not surprising that he who played the King in one of these shows was afterward known among the villagers as "the King," and the sobriquet in many cases became crystallized into a patronymic. John le Kyng is mentioned in 1273 in County Norfolk, and Walter le Kyng in County Cambridge.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. William King was born in England about 1595 and died in Massachusetts in 1650. He came from Weymouth, England, in the ship "Abigail," in March, 1635-36, accompanied by his wife and five children, and settled at Salem, Massachusetts. On March 25, 1636, he was made a freeman of the colony, and the same year received a grant of forty acres of land at Jeffrey's Creek, now Manchester. In 1638, he received another grant of thirty acres at Royall Side, at the head of Basse River, now Beverly, where he planted his homestead. He was on the list of Salem Grand Jurors in 1637, and also on the roll of members of the First Church of Salem. William King took an active part in the religious controversies of the time, and in 1637 identified himself with the Antinomians, which placed him under the ban of the Salem authorities. In 1659, he was sentenced to whipping and banishment for having shown kindness to the Quakers; two years later the decree of banishment was rescinded.

William King married Dorothy (possibly Hayne), who after his death bought land on South River and South Field and received commonage of one acre in Southold, Long Island. There is a record in the Register of the Abbey Church of St. Mary at Sherburne, Dorset, England, of the marriage of "Williami Kinge et Dorotheiae Hayne," which may be a record of the marriage of William King, the immigrant. Children: 1. Mary, born in 1623; married, about 1642, John Scudder. 2. Katheryn, born in 1625; married John Swasy. 3. William, born in 1627; married, about 1642, Katherine Shefflin. 4. Hannah, born in 1629; married Lieutenant Richard Brown. 5. Samuel, of whom further. 6. Mehitable, born in 1636. 7. John, born in 1638; married, in September, 1660, Elizabeth Goldthwait. 8. Deliverance, baptized in 1641; married, February 17, 1657, John Tuthill.

(Harris: "Ancient Long Island Epitaphs," p. 37. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XXXIII, pp. 71-73. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 27. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 271.)

II. Samuel King, son of William and Dorothy (Hayne?) King, was born in England about 1633, and died November 29, 1721. He removed from Salem to Southold, Long Island, where he was ultimately joined by his mother, and owned nearly a thousand acres of land, much of which he gave to his sons during his lifetime. He evidently shared the religious opinions of his father, as he was brought

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

into the court in 1663 for not paying his church rates and not attending public worship.

Samuel King married, October 10, 1660, Frances Ludlam, died January 14, 1692, daughter of William and Clemence Ludlam, of Matlock, England, and Southampton, Long Island. Children: 1. William, of whom further. 2. Dorothy, born July 11, 1664, died March 22, 1750; married (first), May 8, 1683, Richard Brown; (second), August 21, 1705, Samuel Dayton. 3. Hannah, born January 26, 1666, died December 22, 1742; married, in 1688, Captain William Booth. 4. Mary, born August 7, 1669, died July 4, 1707; married, in 1691, John Gardiner. 5. Samuel, born in 1675, died May 6, 1725; married, January 1, 1697, Hannah. 6. Captain John, born January 26, 1678, died January 19, 1741-42; married, August 22, 1704, Katharine Osborne. 7. Abigail, born December 19, 1682.

(Harris: "Ancient Long Island Epitaphs," pp. 32, 35, 37, 301. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XXXII, p. 89; Vol. XXXIII, pp. 73-74. "The Long Island Traveller, January 14, 1898-January 21, 1905," p. 1.)

III. William (2) King, son of Samuel and Frances (Ludlam) King, was born January 10, 1661-62, and died May 12, 1740. He was collector for Southold in 1710 and his lands are described in the town records. He married (first), January 17, 1686-87, his first cousin, Abigail Brown, daughter of Lieutenant Richard and Hannah (King) Brown; (second), January 20, 1716, Susanna Crook, who died May 10, 1741. Children of first marriage: 1. William, of whom further. 2. Hannah, born January 1, 1691, probably died young. 3. David, born October 22, 1693, died September 26, 1749; married (first), September 5, 1715, Hannah Beebe; (second), in 1731, Deborah Glover. 4. Daniel, born April 13, 1697, probably died December 20, 1768. 5. Jonathan, born April 10, 1699, died August 29, 1753; probably married, in February, 1722, Eliza Patty. 6. John, born August 27, 1702, died March 17, 1740; married, August 30, 1727, Anne Edwards. 7. Bazaleel, born January 23, 1703-04, died February 12, 1725. 8. Abner, born March 22, 1705-06, died, unmarried, about 1780. 9. Abigail, born June 6, 1709, died February 10, 1749; probably married Richard Shaw.

(Harris: "Ancient Long Island Epitaphs," pp. 31, 34. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XXXII, p. 89; Vol. XXXIII, pp. 74-75, 147.)

SHEFFIELD, ST. JOHN, AND ALLIED FAMILIES

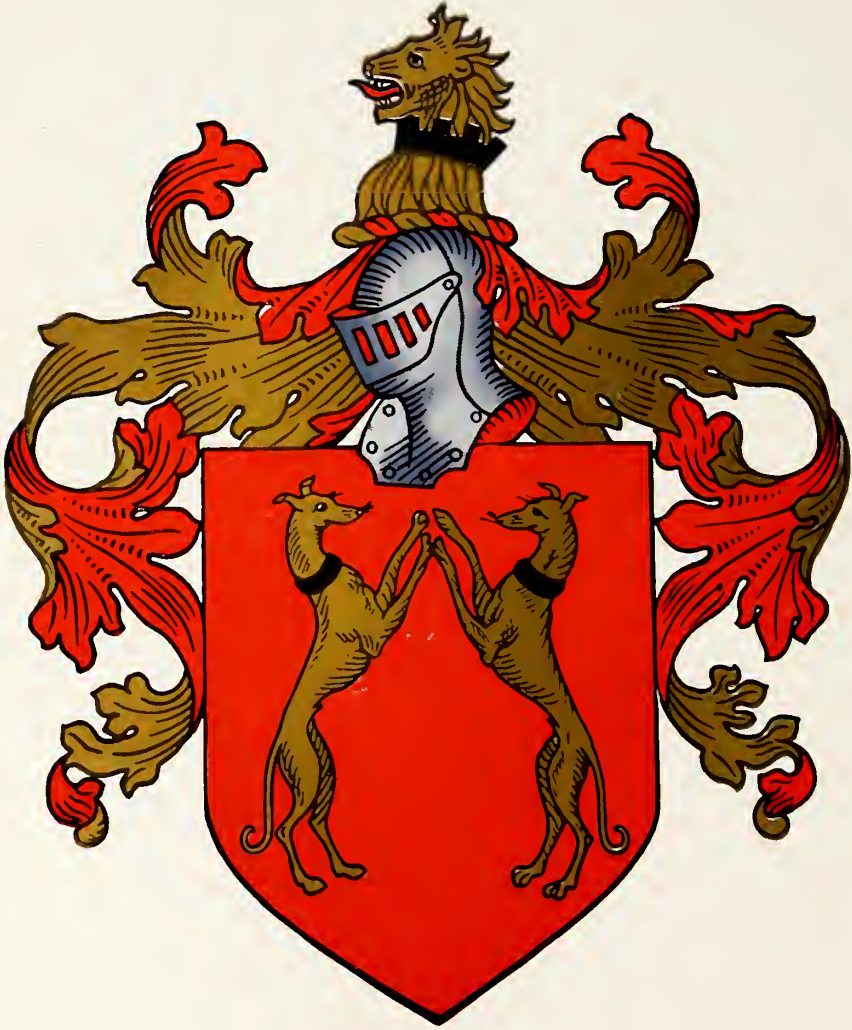
IV. William (3) King, son of William (2) and Abigail (Brown) King, was born February 14, 1687-88, and died April 23, 1775. Residing in Southold, Long Island, he was on the list of freeholders in 1737. On November 11, 1714, he received land from his father, William King, and his father-in-law, Samuel Beebe. He married Bathsheba Beebe, born May 16, 1688, died May 7, 1764, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth (Rogers) Beebe. Children: 1. William (4), born April 6, 1710; married, July 26, 1738, Elizabeth Beebe. 2. Richard, born November 5, 1711, died May 20, 1735. 3. Hannah, died March 12, 1811; married, June 29, 1740, Richard Baxter. 4. James, born July 16, 1718; married, October 30, 1751, Katherine Sheffield. 5. Bathsheba, born December 18, 1721; married (?) a Sheffield. 6. Susannah, of whom further. 7. Bezaleel, born March 31, 1727, died April 24, 1735.

(*Ibid.*)

V. Susannah King, daughter of William and Bathsheba (Beebe) King, was born May 29, 1723, and died May 1, 1766. She married, June 22, 1749, Robert Sheffield. (Sheffield V.)

(*Ibid.* "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIII, pp. 333-34, 418.)





Dogget
(Daggett)

Daggett and Allied Families

BY E. C. FINLEY, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



DAGGETT is an old English name, the prevalence of which indicates that it probably had its origin in a personal name. In all probability it is the Thurgod of the Domesday Book, found early as Toged, now Toogood. In the same way Doget became Doggett, Dugget, Dugood, Duguid, Dochet, Dogget, and Dogood. Families of the name were established in the counties of Yorkshire, Cambridge, Oxford, Kent, Somerset, Norfolk and Suffolk. The ancestral branch of the family to which John Doggett, of New England, belonged, was established in Suffolk in 1526, the head of the family at that time being Richard Doggett, a wealthy inhabitant of Groton, County Suffolk. From him the line carried through John, William, to John of Boxford, understood to be the John Doggett who went with John Winthrop to New England in 1630.

Arms—Gules, two greyhounds saliant combatant or, collared sable.

Crest—A lion's head or, gorged with a mural coronet sable.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Many of the descendants of John Doggett, the immigrant ancestor, settled in Attleborough, Massachusetts, and they have for generations been intimately associated with life in this town. In Connecticut, also, the family has been prominent. Among its distinguished members was Judge David Daggett, Chief Justice of the Supreme Court of Connecticut.

David Daggett was born at Attleborough, Massachusetts, December 31, 1764, and died at New Haven, Connecticut, April 12, 1851. He was the son of Thomas and Sibulah (Stanley) Daggett. He resided in Attleborough until the fall of 1779; graduated from Yale in 1783 with high honor and, when he received his master's degree (M. A.) he gave an oration of such marked excellence that it received the honor—quite unusual in that day—of publication. After college he studied law, was admitted to the bar of New Haven County, Connecticut, at the age of twenty-one, and at once began practice. In 1791 he was chosen as Representative in the General Assembly and was

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

reelected six times, after which, in 1797, he was transferred to the Senate, and was chosen a member of the Council. He resigned in 1804, but was elected in 1805 to the House of Representatives and was again chosen a member of the Upper House and held office until May, 1813, when he resigned to become United States Senator.

After this term expired he resumed law practice, and in 1824 he became associate instructor of the Law School in New Haven and in 1826 the Kent professor of law in Yale College. He continued these positions until a very advanced age. In 1826, Yale College conferred the degree of LL. D. upon him. In May, 1826, he was made an associate judge of the Superior Court of Connecticut, and six years later (May, 1832) Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. He continued this office until December 31, 1834, when he reached the age limit of seventy years. During the years 1828-29 he also served as mayor of New Haven.

Judge Daggett was married twice; (first) to Wealthy Ann Munson, on September 10, 1786. She was born March 3, 1767, and died July 9, 1839, the daughter of Dr. Eneas Munson, of New Haven, Connecticut. He married (second), on May 4, 1840, Mary Lines, the daughter of Major and Susanna (Mansfield) Lines. She was born March 31, 1788, and died December 26, 1854. He had nineteen children, five of whom died young.

Other Daggetts who have rendered distinguished public service are Naphtali Daggett, president of Yale University, and John Daggett, "The Historian of Attleborough." Further mention of them will be found below.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Daggett: "A History of the Daggett Family," pp. 4-5. Muskett: "Suffolk Manorial Families," p. 344. Doggett, S. B.: "History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," pp. 153-56. "National Cyclopedia of American Biography," Vol. IV, p. 31. Appleton: "Cyclopedia of American Biography," p. 53.)

I. John Doggett was born in England and died in Massachusetts, in May, 1673. He came to this country with Governor John Winthrop's fleet in 1630, and was a proprietor and original settler of Watertown, Massachusetts. His name is on the list of applicants for admission as freeman, October 19, 1630, and he was one of the first of those who took the oath on May 18, 1631. His homestead in Watertown contained about fifteen acres adjoining Fresh Pond, and his entire



SHEPPARD (SHEPARD)



JOHNSON



CHICKERIN (CHICKERING)



PEPPER



BROCK

WILLIAM CARPENTER

MARY (MAXCY)

Thomas Bacon m. John Bacon	Elizabeth Brock	John Daggett	Abigail	Rich. Everett	Capt. John Everett	Nicholas Ide	Nicholas Ide	William Carpenter	Nicholas Ide
John Bacon m. Margaret	Henry Brock	Thos Daggett	Alex. Maxcy d. Sept. 20, 1723	Mary Pepper	Elizabeth Pepper	Mary Ide	Martha	Richard Carter	Rich Ormsbee
Michelle Bacon m. Elizabeth Wylie	Rebecca Hall	John Daggett	Josiah Maxcy bapt. June 19, 1709; m. 1737-8	Robt Pepper	Mary Fuller	Nicholas Ide	Sarah	William Carpenter	Mary Ormsbee
Michael Bacond Alice - d. 1644	Hannah Fales b. 1672-3, m. 1800	Thos Daggett	Lt. Benj Maxcy b May 11, 1740	Eliz Johnson	Nathaniel Ide	Mary Ide	Anthony Perry	William Carpenter	Nathl Perry
Ann Grosse	Barnab. 1672-3, m. 1800	John Daggett	Mary Everett b. Dec. 17, 1711	Robt Fuller	John Daggett	Jacob Ide	Elizabeth	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	Hannah Fales b. 1672-3, m. 1800	John Daggett	John Daggett	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry
Thos Shepherd	John Bacon b. 1703-4, d. 1809	John Daggett	Amy Ide	Ann	Nathaniel Ide	Jacob Ide	Sarah Perry	William Carpenter	Sarah Perry

MARY (MAXCY)

SARAH (MAY)



PERRY



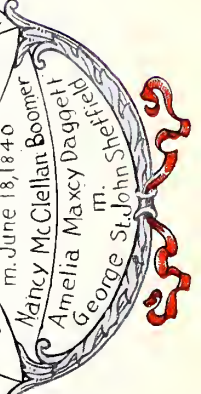
MAXCY (MAXCY)



EVERETT



BACON



MARY (MAXCY) Daggett
m. June 18, 1840
Maisy McClellan Boomie
Amelia Maxcy Daggett
George St. John Sheffield
m. John Daggett

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

grant of land included eighty acres. He seems to have been actively engaged with Governor Mayhew, who was then a resident of Watertown, in getting up a company to occupy Martha's Vineyard, and about 1648 he removed to that island. He settled at Edgartown, and is said to have been intimately associated with the Mayhews in the government of the colony, as were many of his descendants.

John Doggett's first wife's name is not known, but they had five children, all except the first probably born in Watertown. He married (second), August 29, 1667, at Plymouth, Bathsheba Pratt, a widow, and he apparently spent most of the rest of his life in that town. Child: 1. Thomas, of whom further.

(Doggett: "History of Attleborough," pp. 7-8.)

II. Thomas Doggett, or Daggett, son of John Doggett and his first wife, died between the middle of March and the middle of September, 1691. It is said that he changed the spelling of the family name to Daggett, but probably not until near the end of his life. He was clerk and later justice of the county courts, his prominence in the affairs of the island being partly due to the fact that he had married the favorite daughter of Governor Mayhew. The latter speaks of him in a letter to Governor Winthrop as "my son Doggett, that hath more *language* than any other Englishman upon the Island, and is a considerable young man." At the time of his marriage Thomas Doggett promised that whatever his wife received from her father should be hers to do with as she liked; and the records of Dukes and Bristol counties contain many references to transfer of land by Thomas and Hannah Doggett.

Thomas Doggett married Hannah Mayhew. She married (second) Samuel Smith. (Mayhew II.) Children: 1. Thomas, born about 1658. 2. Samuel, born about 1660, died February 26, 1717-18. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Joshua, born about 1664. 5. Jemima, born in 1666; married, November 27, 1682, Thomas Butler. 6. Mary, born in 1668; married, about 1693, Jeremiah Howe. 7. Patience, born in 1670; married, April 11, 1695, Samuel Annable. 8. Martha, born in 1672; married, May 25, 1695, John Crane. 9. Israel, born in 1674; married, January 31, 1701, Ruth Norton. 10. Ruth, born in 1676; married, November 11, 1696, Nathaniel Bacon.

(*Ibid.* Banks: "History of Martha's Vineyard," Vol. III, pp. 127, 441. Doggett, S. B.: "History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," pp. 83-84.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Deacon John (2) Daggett, son of Thomas and Hannah (Mayhew) Doggett, or Daggett, was probably born in Edgartown in 1662, and died September 7, 1724. After his marriage he settled in Chilmark (or Prudence, a part of Tisbury), and owned property there, which it is said he sold in 1711 for £300, a considerable sum for that day. In the same year he bought the Woodcock Garrison House and several hundred acres of land in Attleborough, removing to that town in 1711 or 1712. His eldest son, Mayhew Daggett, had preceded him to Attleborough. John Daggett became an innkeeper in the old Garrison House, and soon became interested in town and church affairs. His lands being located on the road from Boston to Rhode Island, and his tavern a convenient stopping place *en route*, he soon became well known, not only to the people of Attleborough, but to all travelers between Boston and Rhode Island. He became a deacon, and was a representative to the General Court. In 1722, he sold his inn property, and two years later, on September 7, 1724, he died. He was buried in the old "Hatch burying ground." He married Sarah. Among his children were: 1. Ebenezer, of whom further.

(Daggett: "History of Attleborough," p. 9.)

IV. Ebenezer Daggett, son of Deacon John and Sarah Daggett, was born in Martha's Vineyard, August 29, 1690, and died in Attleborough, August 30, 1740. It was he who bought the farm on the East Bay Road, leading from Bristol and Providence to Boston, which was long known as "the old Daggett place." He is spoken of as husbandman, tanner, and inn-holder. The sign of the old inn, with its royal crown of England, and date of 1725, was preserved by descendants as a curious memorial of the olden days. It is now owned by the Attleboro Chapter, Daughters of the American Revolution, and is in their Chapter House.

Ebenezer Daggett married, November 9, 1721, Mary Blackinton. (Blackinton II.) Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Reverend Naphtali, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 9-10, 454.)

V. Reverend Naphtali Daggett, son of Ebenezer and Mary (Blackinton) Daggett, was born at Attleborough, Massachusetts, September 8, 1727, and died at New Haven, Connecticut, November 25, 1780.

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

His father died while he was young, but his mother gave him excellent training; he soon began studies preparatory to Yale and graduated from that institution in 1748. He settled as minister of Smithtown, Long Island, in 1751, and four year later was elected first Professor of Divinity in Yale. He held this position for life. After resignation of Mr. Clap, in 1766, he officiated as president of Yale for eleven years.

Dr. Daggett was very active in the Colonial cause both by his speeches and writings; after the crisis came, he put his principles into action, shouldered his musket and saw active service. He was taken prisoner by the British and very shamefully treated; he bore all this with great dignity but died from wounds received a short time after this.

Dr. Daggett presided over the university about eleven years and held the office of Professor of Divinity twenty-five years. He was possessed of a strong, clear, and comprehensive mind and applied himself with assiduity and success to various branches of knowledge, especially to the learned languages and divinity.

He received the honorary degree of Doctor of Divinity from Yale and Princeton. Dr. Holmes, in his life of President Stiles, says: "He was a good classical scholar, well versed in moral philosophy, and a learned divine."

Rev. Naphtali Daggett married, at Smithtown, Long Island, New York, December 19, 1753, Mrs. Sarah Smith. He had five sons and three daughters.

(Doggett, S. B.: "A History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," pp. 112-21. Appleton: "Cyclopedia of American Biography," Vol. II, p. 43. "National Cyclopedia of American Biography," Vol. I, pp. 166-67.)

V. Colonel John (3) Daggett, son of Ebenezer and Mary (Blackinton) Daggett, was born September 2, 1724, and died January 20, 1803. He represented Attleborough at the General Court of Massachusetts from 1768 to 1776, and again in 1780. Previous to the Revolution he also served as a justice of the peace. During the events which led up to the Revolution he maintained a firm stand in favor of upholding the liberties of the American Colonists, and throughout the war was a strong supporter of the cause of independence. He and Colonel May were the leading men in Attleborough at this period,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and the two upon whom their fellow-citizens placed their reliance in the confusion of the time. John Daggett served on most of the town committees which were appointed at special emergencies in and after the war, and was a member of the convention of 1779, which formed the Constitution of the State of Massachusetts.

In 1758, he began his military career as an ensign in the second militia company in Attleborough, and won the rank of captain by promotion in the course of the next ten years. This company then belonged to the 3d Regiment of Bristol County; but about the time the Revolution commenced the regiment was divided, and the companies from the northern towns of the county were formed anew and constituted the 4th Regiment, of which John Daggett was commissioned colonel, in February, 1776. About a year before he had made an expedition to Assonet to break up a Royalist combination which had stored ammunition in that place. Colonel Daggett commanded the 4th Regiment in Spencer's and Sullivan's expedition on Rhode Island in 1777 and 1779.

In the "Providence Gazette" of February 5, 1803, is the following notice of him:

He bore a long indisposition with Christian fortitude, and died in the hope of a blessed immortality. He was a very respectable citizen, and highly useful in society; he served his town for many years as a representative to the General Court; he commanded a regiment of militia during the Revolutionary War, and sustained the office of a justice of the peace for many years to general satisfaction; he supported an unblemished character through life, and has furnished an example worthy of imitation.

(See "A History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," p. 117, Committee on U. S. Constitution.)

Colonel John Daggett married (first), November 19, 1751, Mercy Shepard, of Wrentham, who died in Attleboro, February 3, 1783 (Shepard V); (second), August 5, 1784, Mary Tucker, of Norton. Children of first marriage, all born in Attleborough, Massachusetts: 1. John, born October 1, 1752. 2. Joab, born October 19, 1754. 3. Jesse, born March 6, 1757. 4. Bathsheba, born April 28, 1759; married Zenas Cutting. 5. Marcy, born July 2, 1761. 6. Ebenezer, of whom further. 7. Levi, born April 4, 1766, died before 1793. 8. Hannah, born December 19, 1768. 9. Huldah, born January 27, 1771.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 462-63.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

VI. Ebenezer (2) Daggett, son of Colonel John and Mercy (Shepard) Daggett, was born April 16, 1763, and died in Boston, Massachusetts, March 4, 1832. Attleborough has boasted few citizens whose lives were more solidly useful or more genuinely inspiring.

Mr. Daggett possessed an intelligence well above the average, which enabled him to seize upon knowledge wherever it might be found, and an innate sense of his obligations to his community directed him to apply his abilities in ways of usefulness and service. The confidence which he inspired in others made him often the arbitrator in disputes, which position he filled with kindness, tact, and justice. His charity was liberal and unassuming. What he meant to his native town is well expressed in the following tribute by the Rev. Mr. Ferguson:

He was emphatically a public man. Twenty years of his life had been occupied in superintending the interests of the town. Twice he was elected to the Senate; and perhaps no man among us had been more called upon to administer the estates of the deceased and to act as the guardian of the orphan. The general character which he sustained through life was that of uniformity, uprightness, and moderation. In the hottest strife of parties, although a public and decided man, he never could be regarded as a partisan. He had been an actor and in some respects a public character from the time of the Revolution; but through all the changes of the eventful times in which he lived, he continued to the last to stand forth before his fellow-citizens, in the character of an honest, upright and consistent man. Happy would it be for our community, were our party divisions always controlled by men of equal mildness and moderation—happy would it be for our community, did all our public men manifest an equal regard for the maintenance of order, morals, and religion.

Ebenezer Daggett married, September 3, 1797, Sally Maxcy. (Maxcy IV.) Children: 1. John, born September 9, 1800, died July 5, 1803. 2. Lydia Maxcy, born October 16, 1802, died February 2, 1882; married Capron Peck, of Attleborough. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Ebenezer, born May 14, 1807, died at sea, November 17, 1831. 5. Harvey Maxcy, born June 10, 1809, died September 28, 1886. 6. Ama Ide, born November 24, 1811; married John McClellan, of Sutton, Massachusetts. 7. Marcy Shepard, born January 14, 1814, died November 23, 1843; married Erastus D. Everett, of Boston. 8. Handel Naphtali (twin), born January 27, 1821, died Feb-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

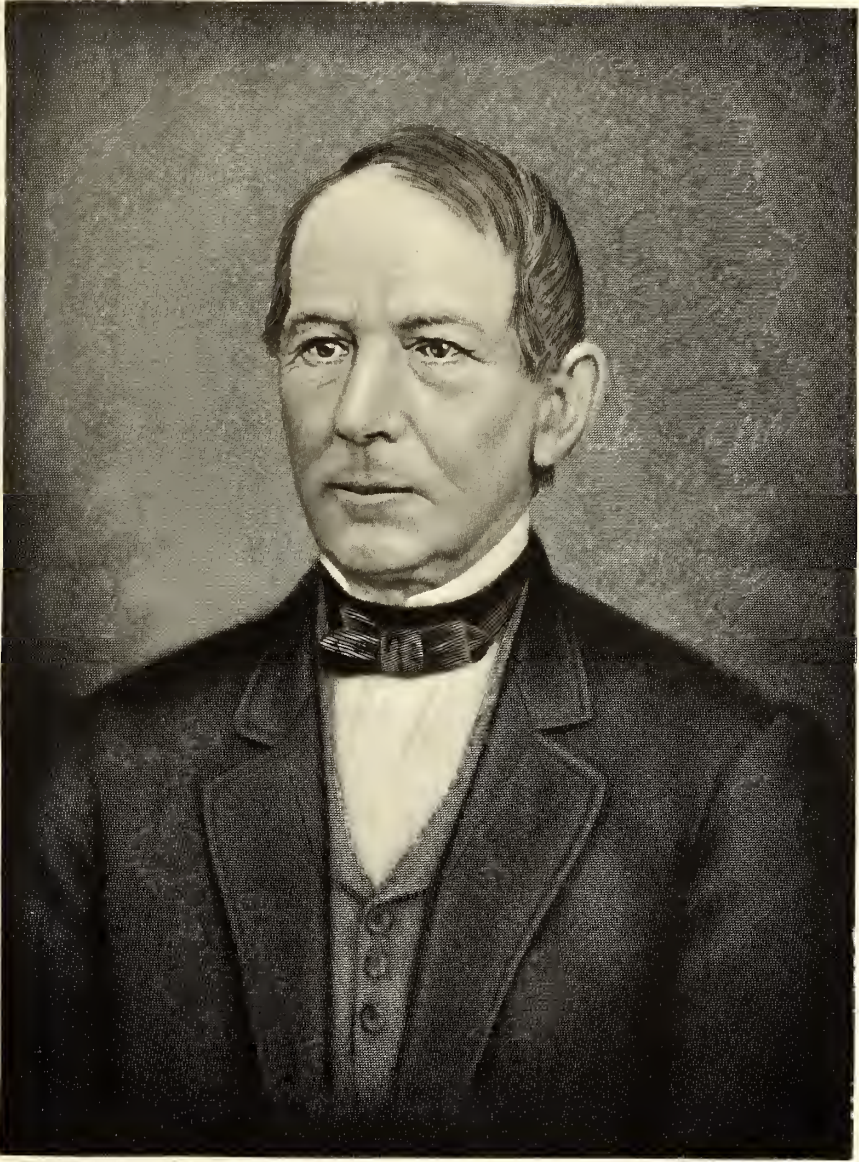
ruary 27, 1894. 9. Homer Micajah (twin), born January 27, 1821, died May 16, 1909.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 494-97.)

VII. *John (4) Daggett*, son of Ebenezer and Sally (Maxcy) Daggett, was born in Attleborough, Massachusetts, February 10, 1805, and died there December 13, 1885. He was brought up on the family homestead, and was from childhood quiet, serious, and fond of study. The illness which deprived him of a limb at the age of fourteen proved a blessing in disguise, for it settled that he should attend college and devote his life to intellectual pursuits, for which he was naturally fitted by talent and inclination. He entered Brown University in 1822, and was graduated in 1826 with high honors. His student days were among the happiest of his life, and he maintained his devotion to and keen interest in his *alma mater* throughout his career.

He studied law under the Hon. Joseph L. Tillinghast, of Providence, the Hon. J. J. Fiske, of Wrentham, and the Hon. Theron Metcalf, of Dedham. Admitted to the bar in 1829, he practiced his profession in his native town for the remainder of his life, with the exception of the years 1833-34, when he was editor of the "Dedham Patriot." He was a consulting rather than a trial lawyer, lacking the violent and partisan spirit necessary for success in the courts. Mr. Daggett's qualities of genuine worth, however, made him completely trusted by all who sought his aid. He never accepted a case which he did not believe to be in the right; he identified himself completely with the interests of his clients; he always sought to settle by arbitration rather than by litigation, and his well known fairness and integrity made him the arbiter of many disputes. He delighted in giving his services, while the collection of fees was to him a painful duty, and one which now and again his kind and self-forgetful heart induced him to neglect.

Although not ambitious for public honor, Mr. Daggett was four times elected to the State Legislature (1836, 1838, 1839, 1866), his first term being when he was only thirty-one years of age. He was a member of the Judiciary Committee in 1837, and chairman of the Committee on Railways in 1839. In 1850, he was elected to the State Senate and appointed a member of the Valuation Board. Two years later he was appointed Register of Probate and Insolvency for Bristol County, which office he filled for eleven years. No one bearing his



*Yours truly
John Daggett.*

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

name could have failed to take an interest in the local affairs of the town of Attleborough, and Mr. Daggett was especially interested in the question of education. He was a member of the school committee for fifteen years, chairman for much of that time, and labored long and earnestly for the advancement of public education. During the Civil War he took an active part in patriotic work in the town.

It was, however, his literary and historical labors which were the most absorbing pursuit of Mr. Daggett's life, and which furnished him with the title by which he is most often remembered, "The Historian of Attleborough." His occupation with the theme of town history dated from 1830, when, having occasion to deliver a lecture before the Attleborough Lyceum, he chose this for his subject. Finding that there was a prevailing interest in the early history of the town, he published four years later a "Sketch of the History of Attleborough." In later years he devoted much careful and painstaking work to research in his chosen field, with a view to publishing an enlarged edition of the "Sketch." He had the true antiquarian's spirit of persistence, finding no problem too large and no detail too small to engage his attention. His habits of thoroughness and accuracy made his work authoritative, while the traditions and anecdotes which he culled from old inhabitants showed the human side of history's page. He prepared the account of Attleborough in the "History of Bristol County," but was not spared to see a second edition of his own volume. After his death his daughter, Amelia M. (Daggett) Sheffield, undertook the imposing task of editing and completing the notes which he left, and in 1894 issued "A Sketch of the History of Attleborough from Its Settlement to Its Division." This volume, of particular interest to citizens of Attleborough, commands the attention also of all those engaged in research into the history of New England or of the Nation, as well as of those to whom the preservation of ancient traditions and hallowed memories is a sacred duty.

In 1854 the Old Colony Historical Society was formed in Taunton, Massachusetts, and two years later he was chosen its second president, continuing in that office for a period of nearly thirty years. Though during the latter part of his life advancing years and enfeebled health prevented regular attendance at meetings, the society retained him in this office until his death. In addition, for over twenty-five years, Mr. Daggett was a member of the New England Historic Genealogical

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Society. Though research was ever more congenial to him than authorship, yet when he chose to write he was gifted with a pleasant facility of expression. In his younger days he composed many short poems, and he did considerable editorial writing during his two years with the "Dedham Patriot." Throughout his life he was frequently called on to deliver addresses and orations, preside at meetings, and act as toastmaster at banquets, all of which functions he performed with admirable readiness and grace. A constant reader and possessed of a remarkable memory, he had a store of information equalled by few men in his generation, and his conversation, whether on history, literature, science, or current events, was a profitable pleasure to all who heard it. He was fond of conversing with his guests, of whom there were many at the hospitable Daggett fireside, and was equally at home with the young and old, the learned and ignorant.

In his personal habits Mr. Daggett was naturally methodical, and he adhered to the principle of temperance, setting a good example himself without attempting to dictate to others. On the subject of religion he was very reserved; but the pure morality of his life was a silent but eloquent witness to the brilliance of the inner light which guided all his movements. Although he never joined the church, he attended regularly and contributed to its support. He lived in accordance with the principle of "moderation in all things," and his quiet and peaceful end, his faculties being unimpaired to the very last, was both the result and the reward of a life devoid of excess.

John Daggett married, in Sutton, Massachusetts, June 18, 1840, Nancy McClellan Boomer. (Boomer VII.) Children, all born in Attleborough, five who lived but a short time, died in Attleborough. 1. Mary Boomer, born June 17, 1842, died September 9, 1842. 2. Marcia McClellan, born December 26, 1843, died August 19, 1854. 3. John Mayhew, of whom further. 4. Charles Shepard, born June 5, 1848, died June 27, 1855. 5. Amelia Maxcy, of whom further. 6. Henry Herman, born September 10, 1852, died August 13, 1854. 7. Herman Shepard, born September 6, 1855, died March 9, 1858.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 11-35.)

VIII. *John Mayhew Daggett*, son of John and Nancy McClellan (Boomer) Daggett, was born in Attleborough, Massachusetts, November 16, 1845, and died in Marianna, Arkansas, March 20, 1908. He

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

fitted for college at the "old Attleborough Academy," and graduated at Brown University in 1868. He resided in Attleborough for several years, engaging in business there, removing, about 1872, to Marianna, Arkansas. In that place he was engaged as an attorney-at-law; post-master for several years; was interested in real estate; acted as loan agent and was deputy clerk of Lee County for some twelve years previous to 1885. Of a special and important piece of work, which he started and continued during his life, a son, himself a leading lawyer of his city and State, thus writes:

Lee County, Arkansas, was formed by an Act of the Legislature in 1873. Father had been in the county but a short time at that date. Shortly after he located here, he went into the adjoining counties of Phillip, St. Francis and Crittenden, out of portions of which Lee was formed, and compiled a set of "abstract-books" of all the lands taken into the new county. These books are naught more than a complete history of the land titles of the county, beginning with the government title and continuing to date. These books have been continuously kept up to date by his descendants and are now in possession of John (a son of the writer and newly made lawyer), for the joint use of himself and William (a nephew), and any other descendants who enter the legal profession. We look upon them as an heirloom and propose to keep them in the family so long as any member of it is capable of handling them efficiently. They now consist, after about a half century, of 118 "take off" books, being a short "abstract" of each deed, mortgage, judgment or other instrument affecting the title to real estate that has been heretofore filed of record in this county; together with seven (7) "index books," which "show the way" to the title to each lot or subdivision of land in the county; and these "court records" which contain a verbatim copy of every judgment or decree affecting the title to real estate and the last will and testament of every person who has heretofore died intestate in the county. In other words our "abstract-books" are simply the history of land titles in this county.

We estimate that in the half century which has elapsed since the books were started twelve to fifteen years of actual labor have been expended on them. It would take one man working steadily at least ten years to duplicate the work that has been done in the preparataion of the books. They are "unique" in this respect that they are probably the only set of books in the State which have been handed down from generation to generation in the same family.

John Mayhew Daggett married (first), in Stonington, Connecticut, November 18, 1868, Ernestine Rose Brown, daughter of Thomas Moore and Ann Elizabeth (Chapman) Brown, born in Stonington,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Connecticut, March 20, 1849, died in Marianna, Arkansas, December 4, 1876; married (second), in Denton, Texas, October 14, 1879, Olive May Anderson, daughter of Jesse H. and Martha (Motley) Anderson, born in Lebanon, Tennessee, December 14, 1855, died in Marianna, Arkansas, September 25, 1898; married (third) Mrs. Hattie Dancy Bruce, widow of Rev. Dr. H. T. Bruce; she died in Marianna, Arkansas, December 28, 1912. Children of first marriage: 1. John Mayhew, Jr., born in Attleborough, Massachusetts, December 31, 1869, died in Marianna, Arkansas, October 11, 1891. 2. Ernestine Rose, born in Attleborough, October 14, 1872, died in Attleborough, February 26, 1873. Children of second marriage: 3. Samuel Anderson, born in Marianna, January 19, 1881, died in Marianna, August 23, 1885. 4. Jesse Boomer, born in Marianna, Arkansas, August 24, 1882; married, at Helena, Arkansas, March 26, 1907, Lyda Jackson, daughter of Joseph Haywood and Sallie B. (Moore) Jackson, born in Helena, Arkansas, August 12, 1885; children: i. Mary Jessamine, born in Marianna, April 10, 1908. ii. William Haywood, born in Marianna, November 17, 1909. iii. Jimason Jackson, born in Marianna, September 15, 1915. 5. Charles Eben, born in Marianna, April 28, 1885; married, in Kiowa, Kansas, July 19, 1905, Ruby Lockwood, daughter of Emerson Bennett and Mary Ellen (Johnston) Lockwood, born in Fall River, Kansas, December 29, 1884. Children: i. John Lockwood, born in Kiowa, Kansas, August 22, 1906. ii. Margaret Cunningham, born in Marianna, December 3, 1908. iii. Maxcyne Motley, born in Marianna, April 23, 1912. iv. Nancy Walker, born in Marianna, June 11, 1921. 6. Maxcy De Witt, born in Marianna, February 28, 1887; married, in Marianna, November 6, 1912, Mary Virginia, daughter of John Eberle and Emmie (Upshaw) Stevenson, born in Marianna, February 28, 1890. Children: i. Eberle Stevenson (daughter), born in Marianna, November 20, 1917. ii. Maxcy De Witt, Jr., born in Marianna, August 18, 1921. 7. Amelia, born in Marianna, April 28, 1889; married, in Marianna, June 15, 1910, Griffin Smith, born in Laurel Hill, Tennessee, July 13, 1885, son of James Robert Napoleon and Ida (Griffin) Smith. Children: i. Sheffield (daughter), born in Paragould, Arkansas, May 12, 1913. ii. Griffin, Jr., born in Paragould, October 24, 1915. 8. Olive R., born in Marianna, May 23, 1892; married, in Marianna, June 26, 1912, Chester Augustus Howard, born

BULMER (BOOMER)

Arms—Gules a lion salient within an orle of billets or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

MAXY (MAXCY)

Arms—Gules a fesse argent between three talbots' heads erased of the second.

Crest—A talbot's head erased argent collared and ringed gules.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

SHEPPARD (SHEPARD)

Arms—Azure on a chevron between three fleurs-de-lis or, as many mullets gules.

Crest—A ram passant argent attired or, between two laurel branches vert.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

MARTIN

Arms—Argent two bars gules.

Crest—An estoile of sixteen points gules.

Motto—Sure and steadfast.

(Matthews: "American Armoury.")

MAYOW (MAYHEW)

Arms—Argent, on a chevron sable between three birds of the last five lozenges of the first.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

CHURCH

Arms—Gules a fesse or, in chief three sinister gauntlets proper.

Crest—An arm erect in armour proper garnished or, holding a baton of the last.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

HEATHER (BOONER)

...-Gales... in great hills and
...-General Army...

MARY (MAZCI)

...-Gales... these in both heads of
the second.
...-I call... head...
...-General Army...

SHEPARD (SHEPARD)

...-Gales... three...
...-General Army...

MARTIN

...-Gales...
...-General Army...

MAYOR (MAJEW)

...-Gales... three birds of the last
...-General Army...

BURCH

...-Gales... three sister...
...-General Army...



Pulmer
(Boomer)



Maxy
(Maxty)



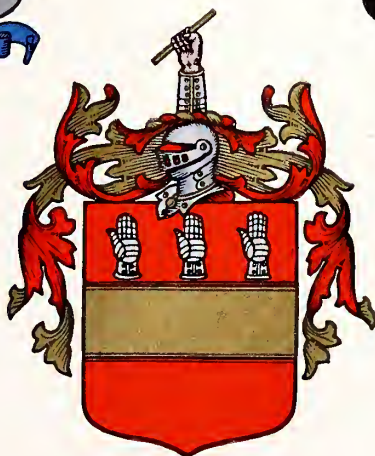
Sheppard
(Shepard)



Martin



Mayow
(Mayhew)



Church

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

in Attleborough, Massachusetts, April 17, 1886, son of Walter Francis and Mary Emma (Rhodes) Howard. Their children: i. Chester Augustus, Jr., born in Brooklyn, New York, July 1, 1913. ii. Daggett Horton, born in Brooklyn, March 20, 1917.

(Family data.)

VIII. Amelia Maxcy Daggett, daughter of John and Nancy McClellan (Boomer) Daggett, married, in New York City, January 10, 1878, George St. John Sheffield. (Sheffield VIII.)

(Family data.)

(The Bulmer (Boomer) Line)

Arms—Gules a lion salient within an orle of billets or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Very little information has come down to us regarding the early history of the Boomer family. The name appears to be a corruption of Bulmer, which may have been originally French. René Bulmer, a French Huguenot, fled from France after the revocation of the Edict of Nantes in 1685, and settled in the north of Ireland. He cannot, of course, have been the ancestor of the Boomer family of New England, but there is a Bulmer-Boomer family in Ontario, Canada, with which he may have been connected. The name Bulmer occurs in England as early as 1345, when Lord Bulmer was summoned to Parliament.

(Chadwick: "Ontarian Families," Vol. I, p. 87. Burke: "General Armory.")

I. Matthew Boomer, the immigrant ancestor of this family, was a freeman in Newport, Rhode Island, in 1665. He doubtless came from Massachusetts, as there is a record of Matthew Boomer, servant to Edmund Needham, of Lynn, Massachusetts, dated 1647, which probably refers to him. On March 6, 1676, he bought of Henry Brightman land on the east side of Taunton River for £45, the same land which sixteen years later he deeded to his son, Matthew. He built a house on this land and was probably the first settler of Fall River, Massachusetts, his home being located near the corner of Main and Brownell streets.

Matthew Boomer married Eleanor. Children: 1. Mary, died about 1715; married (first) John Lawton; (second), June 3, 1678, Gideon Freeborn. 2. Matthew, of whom further.

(American Historical Society: "Armorial Families," p. 210. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. I, p. 211.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 23. Fenner: "History of Fall River, Massachusetts," pp. 1, 8. Hutt: "History of Bristol County, Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 311. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 58.)

II. Matthew Boomer, Jr., son of Matthew and Eleanor Boomer, received, in 1692, a deed of his father's land in Fall River. He also owned land in Freetown, Massachusetts, and Westerly, Rhode Island, which he left to his sons by a will made October 8, 1732, and proved March 23, 1744. He (or perhaps his father) was constable of Freetown, Massachusetts, in 1692. He married, in Freetown, Hannah Church. (Church III.) Children, born at Assonet, Bristol County, Massachusetts (now part of Taunton): 1. Matthew, born September 20 or 29, 1689; married, at Freetown, in 1719-20, Hannah Haddaway. 2. Lydia, born December 3, 1690. 3. Hannah, born November 16, 1692; married a Jenks. 4. Mary, or Mercy, born March 16, 1694; married Nathaniel Luther. 5. Deborah, born May 1, 1696; married Elisha Mason. 6. Caleb, of whom further. 7. Ruth, born May 31, 1700; married Richard Salisbury. 8. Joshua, born October 8, 1702, died in 1772-73; selectman of Freetown in 1754-55. 9. Mary, or Mercy, married an Elsbury.

(American Historical Society: "Armorial Families," pp. 210-11. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 23 and supplement. "Genealogical Advertiser," Vol. IV, p. 33. Church: "Descendants of Richard Church of Plymouth, Massachusetts," p. 35. Pierce: "Colonial Lists," p. 26.)

III. Caleb Boomer, son of Matthew and Hannah (Church) Boomer, was born in Assonet (now Freetown), Massachusetts, March 16, 1698, and died before October 15, 1770, on which date his will was proved. To his children and grandchildren he left several parcels of land in Freetown, Dartmouth, and Tiverton. He married, August 19, 1725, Sarah Martin. (Martin IV.) Children: 1. Joanna, born June 30, 1726; living, unmarried, in 1770. 2. Caleb, born August 29, 1728; married Thankful Fox; made his will in 1770. 3. Sarah, born August 3, 1730; married Thomas West. 4. Martin, of whom further. 5. Joshua, mentioned in brother Caleb's will, 1770. 6. Matthew, mentioned in brother Caleb's will, 1770. 7. Daniel, named as executor in brother Caleb's will, 1770.

(American Historical Society: "Armorial Families," p. 211. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 23. "Genealogical Advertiser," Vol. IV, p. 34.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Martin Boomer, son of Caleb and Sarah (Martin) Boomer, was born in Freetown, Massachusetts, December 25, 1732, and died in Fall River, Massachusetts, June 13, 1804. ("Historical Collection of Worcester County, Massachusetts," Vol. II, p. 183.) In 1770 he was left £20 by his brother Caleb's will; and by the terms of his father's will, in 1774, of which he was named executor, his sister, Joanna, was to be provided for by him. The United States Census of 1790 gives to Martin Boomer, of Freetown, a family consisting of three males over sixteen, four males under sixteen, and four females. In 1778, Martin Boomer enlisted as a private in Captain Durfee's company, and he served, in 1780, in Captain Brightman's company, Colonel Hathaway's regiment, in the Rhode Island alarm.

Martin Boomer married Jemima Shepard. Child: 1. James, of whom further.

(American Historical Society: "Armorial Families," p. 211. D. A. R. Lineage Books, Vol. LXXVIII, pp. 52-53.)

V. Reverend James Boomer, son of Martin and Jemima (Shepard) Boomer, was born in Freetown, Massachusetts, May 26, 1759, and died in Charlton, Massachusetts, February 24, 1837. He served in 1779 as a private in Captain Seth Talbot's company, Colonel John Hathaway's regiment, at the Rhode Island alarm. He was baptized in April, 1780, and joined the Second Baptist Church at Tiverton. He was one of two young men chosen in 1788 by the Baptist Society of Fall River, Massachusetts, "to improve their gifts in public and to attend meetings whenever they shall be requested"; and in May, 1795, he, with Job Borden, was ordained a minister in the Baptist Church of Sutton, Worcester County, Massachusetts. He remained there until 1804, when he went to Charlton, and was pastor there until his death, covering a period of thirty-three years. In 1805, Elder James Boomer, by letter from Freetown, Massachusetts, was taken into church at Charlton, Massachusetts. Susan Boomer, wife of James Boomer, was taken into church June 10, 1809. Rev. James Boomer helped to found the Baptist churches at Ward, New Auburn, and later the church at North Oxford.

Rev. James Boomer married, October 12, 1792, Susannah Borden. (Borden VI.) Children: 1. Job B., of whom further. 2. James, Jr., died in November, 1876; married, April 9, 1822, Lucy McClellan. 3. William Borden, born in 1799, died in 1874; married, in

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1823, Sarah Marble. 4. Charles T., born November 15, 1804. 5. Susannah, born September 16, 1806; married, May 22, 1828, William Knight Blanchard.

("Historical Collection of Worcester County, Massachusetts," Vol. II, p. 179. American Historical Society: "Armorial Families," p. 212. Boston Historical Society: "Our County and Its People, Bristol, Massachusetts," p. 476. "Vital Records of Charlton, Massachusetts," pp. 20, 242. D. A. R. Lineage Books, Vol. LXXVIII, p. 53. Weld: "Borden Genealogy," p. 146. Benedict Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," p. 697.)

VI. Reverend Job B. Boomer, son of the Rev. James and Susannah (Borden) Boomer, was born September 8, 1793, and died August 18, 1864. He built the home occupied in 1878 by the Rev. Joseph P. Burbank, on top of "Boomer Hill" in Sutton, Massachusetts, in 1829. He was ordained pastor of the South Sutton Baptist Church, June 9, 1819, and continued as such for thirty years. He married, April 21, 1818, Nancy McClellan. (McClellan IV.) Children. 1. Nancy McClellan, of whom further. 2. Mary Amelia, born June 19, 1823; married, September 9, 1846, Andros B. Stone. 3. Lucius B., born July 4, 1826; married (first), September 20, 1848, Elizabeth Messenger; (second), September 5, 1855, Mary A. DeForest. 4. George Boardman, born July 26, 1832; attained rank of brigadier-general and was killed in the Civil War, May 22, 1863.

("Vital Records of Sutton, Massachusetts," pp. 22, 214-15. Benedict and Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," pp. 472, 547, 694-96. "Worcester County Historical Collection," Vol. II, p. 183 (Bristol Section).)

VII. Nancy McClellan Boomer, daughter of the Rev. Job B. and Nancy (McClellan) Boomer, was born in Sutton, Massachusetts, September 29, 1819, and died June 22, 1886. She married, June 18, 1840, at Sutton, John Daggett. (Daggett VII.)

("Vital Records of Sutton, Massachusetts," p. 215. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XL, p. 223. Daggett: "History of Attleborough, Massachusetts," pp. 16, 30.)

(The Maxy (Maxcy) Line)

Arms—Gules a fesse argent between three talbots' heads erased of the second.

Crest—A talbot's head erased argent collared and ringed gules.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Like so many other English surnames, Maxcy, Maxy, Maxie, Maxey, or Maxcey, is of local origin, being derived from the parish



Nancy M. (Boomer) Daggett

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

of Maxey in Northamptonshire, England. There was a flourishing family of the name in County Essex, from which it is possible that Alexander Maxcy was descended, as most of the founders of Wenham came from Essex.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Alexander Maxcy, the founder of this family in America, died in Attleborough, Massachusetts, September 20, 1723. Around his name have grown up several romantic traditions which are briefly given herewith. The story goes that Maxcy, the son of a gentleman of rank and wealth in England, fell in love with the pretty daughter of his father's lodge-keeper. When his father forbade the match, young Maxcy ran away to America. Later his father, relenting, sent a ship to bring his son back to England; but the young man, liking the independent spirit of the colonies, declined. Before long he had another love affair on this side of the water, but, by his tact and persistency overcoming an older suitor, he succeeded in marrying the maiden of his choice.

The first historical reference to Alexander Maxcy occurs in 1659, when he paid £1 13s. toward the salary of the new minister in Wenham, Massachusetts. It is not unlikely that he was one of the original settlers of the town. In 1690, he served in Captain Sam Gallup's company in Sir William Phipp's expedition against Quebec. Some time before April 16, 1722, the family had moved from Wenham to Gloucester, Massachusetts, for on that date John Doggett, of Attleborough, sold to Alexander Maxcy, of Gloucester, a homestead farm in Attleborough for £550. A year later Alexander Maxcy died at Attleborough.

Alexander Maxcy married Abigail. Children: 1. David, born January 2, 1662. 2. Mary, born June 15, 1664. 3. John, born February 1, 1670. 4. William, born November 9, 1675; married, in 1696, Sarah Knowlton, of Ipswich. 5. Sarah, baptized in 1676; married, March 12, 1712, Thomas Kellem, of Topsfield, Massachusetts. 6. Elizabeth, baptized in 1680; married, January 19, 1715, Samuel Tarbox, of Beverly. 7. Benoni, baptized in 1682; married, March 8, 1706-07, Mary Herrick. 8. Abigail, baptized in 1694; married, December 31, 1716, Jacob Haskell. 9. Alexander, baptized in 1698, died April 2, 1724. 10. Mary, born March 19, 1700-01; married,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

May 4, 1726, William Ware. 11. Joseph, born July 29, 1703. 12. Esther, baptized in 1705; married, in December, 1728, Nehemiah Ward. 13. Josiah, of whom further. 14. Benjamin, baptized in March, 1711.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XLI, p. 398; Vol. LXII, pp. 34-35, 37-39, 41, 44. “Gloucester Vital Records,” Vol. II, p. 38. Daggett: “History of Attleborough,” pp. 10-11, 627.)

II. Josiah Maxcy, son of Alexander and Abigail Maxcy, was baptized in the Congregational Church at Wenham, Massachusetts, June 19, 1709. He married, February 3, 1737-38, Mary Everett. (Everett IV.) They had eleven children. A grandson, Rev. Jonathan Maxcy, was the second president of Brown University, assuming that office at the age of twenty-four. Child: 1. Benjamin, of whom further.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XIV, p. 216; Vol. LX, p. 43. Sibley: “History of the Town of Union, Maine,” p. 469.)

III. Lieutenant Benjamin Maxcy, son of Josiah and Mary (Everett) Maxcy, was born in Attleborough, Massachusetts, May 11, 1740, and died July 26, 1791. He served in the Revolutionary War, marching on the alarm of Bunker Hill in 1776. He married (first) Sarah Fuller; (second) Amy Ide, of Attleborough. (Ide V.) Children of first marriage: 1. Joseph, born March 12, 1764, died December 14, 1810; married Hannah Page, of Attleborough. 2. Josiah, born July 25, 1766; married (first) Chloe Daggett, born in 1769, died in May, 1793, daughter of Mayhew Daggett; (second), in 1794, Sally Pickering. 3. Benjamin, born July 16, 1772; married Esther Fuller. Children of second marriage: 4. Sally, of whom further. 5. Lydia, born March 26, 1780, died in 1793. 6. Hervey, born April 30, 1782-83; married Sally Eastman, born February 15, 1785, daughter of John and Hannah (France) Eastman. 7. Amy, born October 26, 1784; married Joel Reed.

(Sibley: “History of the Town of Union, Maine,” pp. 469-71. Daggett: “History of Attleborough,” app.)

IV. Sally Maxcy, daughter of Lieutenant Benjamin and Amy (Ide) Maxcy, was born in Attleborough, Massachusetts, November

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

20, 1778, and died in Saundersville, Massachusetts, April 30, 1867. She married, September 3, 1797, Ebenezer Daggett. (Daggett VI.)

(Doggett: "History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," pp. 116, 145.)

(The Sheppard (Shepard) Line)

Arms—Azure on a chevron between three fleurs-de-lis or, as many mullets gules.

Crest—A ram passant argent attired or, between two laurel branches vert.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

Clearly of occupational origin, and meaning "the shepherd," this surname is found in an almost unlimited assortment of spellings: Shepard, Sheppard, Shephard, Shepherd, Shepperd, Sheheard, etc. No one family can lay any original claim to the name, for it sprang up all over England wherever the occupation of shepherd was at all prominent. Of the many families of the name which settled in New England, that founded by Ralph Shepard was one of the earliest.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Ralph Shepard, of Stepney Parish, London, England, was born in 1603, and died in Charlestown, Massachusetts, September 11, 1693, his burial being in Malden, Massachusetts. He was a tailor by trade and probably an officer in the Draper's Guild. He sailed for New England on June 30, 1635, in the ship "Abigail," Robert Hackwell, master, accompanied by his wife and daughter, Sarah. On arriving in Massachusetts he became one of the original settlers of Dedham, later removing to Malden, and he is recorded also in Weymouth and Concord. He purchased a farm in Concord of Joseph Wheeler in 1666. He was made a freeman of the colony in 1650-51.

Ralph Shepard married Thanklord. Children: 1. Sarah, born in England about 1633. 2. Thomas, of whom further. 3. John, died December 15, 1699; married Sarah Goble, daughter of Thomas Goble, of Concord. 4. Isaac, born June 20, 1639, killed by Indians, February 12, 1676; married Mary Smedley, daughter of Baptiste Smedley. 5. Trial, born December 19, 1641, died February 22, 1708; married, March 11, 1661, Walter Powers. 6. Abraham, died February 22, 1715-16; married Judith Philbrook. 7. Thanks, born February 10, 1651; married Peter Dill. 8. Jacob, born June 16, 1653. 9. Walter, of Sudbury, Massachusetts.

("Dedham Historical Register," Vol. XIV, pp. 27-28.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Thomas Shepard, son of Ralph and Thanklord Shepard, was born about 1635, and died September 26 or 29, 1719, at Milton, Massachusetts. He was a member of the church at Charlestown, Massachusetts, and later at Malden. He owned land at Charlestown in 1657-58. He married Hannah Ensign. (Ensign II.) Children: 1. Thomas; married Hannah Blanchard. 2. John; married, March 26, 1690, Persia Peirce. 3. Jacob, of whom further. 4. Hannah; married Joseph Blanchard. 5. Ralph; married Marah. 6. Isaac, born in May, 1682.

(*Ibid.*, p. 28. Wyman: "Charlestown, Massachusetts, Genealogy and Estates," Vol. II, p. 860.)

III. Jacob Shepard, son of Thomas and Hannah (Ensign) Shepard, died in 1717. In 1703, he purchased four or five hundred acres of land from Captain William Hudson, a trader from Boston, Massachusetts, and was the first permanent settler of the town of Foxborough, Massachusetts. He married, November 22, 1699, Mercy Chickering. (Chickering IV.) Children: 1. Jacob, born August 22, 1700, died about 1718. 2. John, of whom further. 3. Thomas, born March 24, 1706, died October 19, 1774. 4. Joseph, born February 9, 1708. 5. Benjamin, born December 24, 1710.

(Wyman: "Charlestown, Massachusetts, Genealogy and Estates," Vol. II, p. 860. Daggett: "History of Attleborough," p. 655. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. VI, p. 128.)

IV. John Shepard, son of Jacob and Mercy (Chickering) Shepard, was born February 25, 1703-04, and died April 5, 1809, at Attleborough, Massachusetts. At the time of his death he resided with his grandson, Ebenezer Daggett, and was famed for his longevity, living to the great age of one hundred and five. In youth he served under Captain Samuel Moseley in King Philip's War; was wounded in the Narragansett campaign; and was under the command of Captain Turner in the famous "Falls Fight," May 19, 1676.

John Shepard married (first) Eleony Pond, who died September 3, 1727, daughter of Ephraim Pond, of Wrentham, Massachusetts. He married (second) Abigail Richardson, of Attleborough, who died August 23, 1730. He married (third) Martha Bacon. (Bacon IV.) Children, born in Wrentham, Massachusetts: 1. Mercy, of whom further. 2. Sarah, born September 2, 1734. 3. Hannah, born February

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

16, 1736-37. 4. Martha, born January 27, 1739-40. 5. Ann, born July 15, 1744. 6. John, baptized August 2, 1747.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. VI, p. 128. Daggett: "History of Attleborough," p. 656. Bodge: "Soldiers of King Philip's War," pp. 72, 74, 100. "Wrentham, Massachusetts, Vital Records," Vol. I, pp. 187-88; Vol. II, p. 496.)

V. Mercy Shepard, daughter of John Shepard, was born August 21, 1732, died February 3, 1783. She married, November 19, 1751, Colonel John Daggett. (Daggett V.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Blackinton Line)

Blackinton as a surname does not appear in the early registers of England, but since we find Blackston, Blakiston, and Blackstone recorded as belonging to the same individual, William Blackstone, it is very possible that Blackinton is another form of the same name. Bardsley, in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," claims a local origin for these names from Blaxton, a township in the parish of Finningley, West Riding of Yorkshire, and doubtless from other places of the same name in the southern part of England.

I. Pentecost Blackinton is the earliest ancestor to whom the history of this family can be traced. The date of his birth is not known, but he was in Marblehead, Massachusetts, prior to 1688, and may have been born there. He removed from Marblehead to Attleborough, Massachusetts, between 1701, the date of his marriage to Mary Fickett, at Marblehead, and 1702, the date of the baptism of his daughter, Hepsibeth, at Attleborough. He owned land and a house on Seven Mile River, and died at Attleborough, September 24, 1715.

Pentecost Blackinton married (first), at Marblehead, January 30, 1688-89, Ann Barrett; (second), at Marblehead, January 1, 1702, Mary Fickett. Children of first marriage, born at Marblehead: 1. Elizabeth, baptized December 15, 1689. 2. Benjamin, baptized April 24, 1692; removed to Attleborough. 3. Pentecost, Jr., baptized January 26, 1693; married, at Marblehead, Rebecca Figgett; removed to Attleborough. 4. Miriam, baptized March 22, 1695-96; married, at Marblehead, October 31, 1716, Samuel Saunders. 5. John, baptized November 28, 1697. 6. Mary, of whom further. 7. Sarah, baptized March 31, 1700. Children of second marriage, born at Attleborough:

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

8. Hepsibeth, born in December, 1702. 9. John (twin), born in 1705, died in 1706. 10. Penelope (twin), born in 1705.

(Daggett: "History of Attleborough," p. 623. "Marblehead Vital Records," Vol. II, pp. 36, 44-45.)

II. *Mary Blackinton*, daughter of Pentecost and Ann (Barrett) Blackinton, was baptized in Marblehead, Massachusetts, November 25, 1698, and died December 1, 1772. She married, November 9, 1721, Ebenezer Daggett. (Daggett IV.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Mayow (Mayhew) Line)

Arms—Argent, on a chevron sable between three birds of the last five lozenges of the first. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Mayhew, Mayho, Mayow, or Mayo, means "baptized the son of Matthew," and is of English origin. Due to the liquid pronunciation of the name, it has undergone many variations in spelling. Governor Thomas Mayhew, of Martha's Vineyard, was a descendant of the family of Dinton, Wiltshire, England, a county family of considerable distinction. It is noteworthy that he named two towns in the Vineyard, Tisbury and Chilmark, for towns in the near neighborhood of Dinton, Wiltshire. The earliest known ancestor of this family was one "Simon Mayow, gent., of Dynton," and from him the line descends through his grandson, Thomas, to Matthew, father of Governor Mayhew. Matthew Mayow, yeoman, probably married Alice Barter, of Wiltshire, in 1587. He died when his son, Thomas, was twenty-one years old and ten or twelve years before the latter came to New England.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Banks: "History of Martha's Vineyard," Vol. I, pp. 104-17.)

I. *Governor Thomas Mayhew*, son of Matthew and Alice (Barter) Mayhew (Mayow), was born in England and died in Martha's Vineyard, March 25, 1682. It is believed that the record of the baptism of "Thomas, son of Mathew Maho" on April 1, 1593, in the parish register of Tisbury, Wiltshire, England, may be that of Governor Thomas Mayhew. He came to Medford, Massachusetts, in 1631, as business representative of Matthew Cradock, a London merchant. In 1634, he was made a freeman and was thenceforth an active member of the colony. He was one of a committee purchasing commodities from vessels coming to Boston; in 1636, he was representative to the General Court. Two years later he removed to Watertown,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Massachusetts, where he was chosen selectman, deputy to the General Assembly, and a local magistrate. In 1641, he built the first bridge over the Charles River, at a great financial loss, receiving land west of Boston as compensation. About this time he acquired the title and sovereignty of Martha's Vineyard and other islands from Sir Ferdinando Gorges and Lord Stirling, and in 1645 he founded a colony on the island. As chief executive he kept the reins of government in his hands and those of his family despite many difficulties and conflicting claims. In 1663 the Earl of Clarendon, on behalf of the Duke of York, purchased the title of Martha's Vineyard and other lands in America. Thomas Mayhew was made Governor of the Vineyard under the Duke of York and ruled until his death.

Governor Thomas Mayhew married (first), about 1619, in England, Abigail Parkus (?); (second), in 1633, Jane Paine, widow of Thomas Paine, of London. Child of first marriage: 1. Thomas, born in England, about 1621; lost at sea in November, 1657. Children of second marriage: 2. Hannah, of whom further. 3. Bethiah, born December 6, 1636; married (first) Thomas Harlock; (second), in 1675, Richard Way. 4. Mary, born January 14, 1639-40; probably died young. 5. Martha, born in 1642; married Thomas Tupper.

(Banks: "History of Martha's Vineyard," Vol. I, pp. 108-72; Vol. III, p. 301.)

II. Hannah Mayhew, daughter of Governor Thomas and Jane (——— Paine) Mayhew, was born at Medford, Massachusetts, in 1633, and died at Edgartown, Massachusetts, before 1731. She married (first) Thomas Doggett, or Daggett. (Daggett II.) She married (second) Samuel Smith.

(*Ibid.*, Vol. III, pp. 127, 441.)

(The Church Line).

Arms—Gules a fesse or, in chief three sinister gauntlets proper.

Crest—An arm erect in armour proper garnished or, holding a baton of the last.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

For many years the name of Church has figured prominently in the history of New England. This distinction dates from the latter half of the seventeenth century, when the deeds of Colonel Benjamin Church, the "Conqueror of Philip," shed a lustre upon the name which his descendants in subsequent generations have not allowed to grow

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

dim. Massachusetts and Rhode Island have been the principal seats of the family throughout its history.

(American Historical Society: "American Families," Vol. XIII, p. 187.)

I. Richard Church, the immigrant ancestor and progenitor of this family in America, was born in England and came to this country with Governor Winthrop in 1630. He was admitted a freeman October 19, 1630, and removed from Weymouth to Eel River, in Plymouth, shortly after that date. He was admitted a freeman of Plymouth Colony October 4, 1632, and was taxed at Duxbury as early as 1637. He was a carpenter by trade, and with John Thompson was engaged to build the first meetinghouse and the first gun carriage at Plymouth in 1637. In 1649, he sold his land at Plymouth and removed to Eastham, Massachusetts. In 1653 he was at Charlestown, and four years later appears at Hingham. While at Sandwich in 1664 he deposed that he was fifty-six years of age. Richard Church served often at inquests and was frequently a referee in disputes. He was a man of standing and prominence in the communities in which he lived. He was sergeant of his military company, and served in the Pequot War. He died at Dedham, Massachusetts, December 27, 1668, and was buried at Hingham, where his wife also is buried. His will, drawn at Hingham, bears the date December 25, 1668.

Richard Church married, in 1635-36, Elizabeth Warren. (Warren II.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, died young. 2. Joseph, born in 1637. 3. Benjamin, born in 1639, died January 17, 1718; conspicuous in King Philip's War. 4. Elizabeth. 5. Nathaniel. 6. Caleb, of whom further. 7. Charles. 8. Richard, died young. 9. Abigail, born June 22, 1647. 10. Hannah. 11. Mary. 12. Sarah. 13. Lydia. 14. Priscilla. 15. Deborah, born in 1657.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 187-88.)

II. Caleb Church, son of Richard and Elizabeth (Warren) Church, was a millwright by trade, and resided in Watertown, Massachusetts. He was a freeman in 1690, served many times as a selectman, and was a representative to the General Court in 1713. He married, December 16, 1667, Joanna Sprague. (Sprague II.) Children, first six born in Dedham: 1. Richard, born December 26, 1668, died young. 2. Hannah, of whom further. 3. Ruth. 4. Lydia, born July

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

4, 1671. 5. Caleb, born December 16, 1673. 6. Joshua, born June 12, 1675. 7. Deborah, died young. 8. Isaac (twin), born June 27, 1678. 9. Rebecca (twin), born June 27, 1678.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. I, p. 385. "Descendants of Richard Church of Plymouth," p. 35.)

III. Hannah Church, daughter of Caleb and Joanna (Sprague) Church, was born at Dedham, Massachusetts, December 26, 1668(?). She married, in Freetown, Matthew Boomer. (Boomer II.)

("Descendants of Richard Church of Plymouth," p. 35.)

(The Martin Line)

Arms—Argent two bars gules.

Crest—An estoile of sixteen points gules.

Motto—Sure and steadfast.

(Matthews: "American Armoury.")

Martin was a popular font or baptismal name in early times, and was widely adopted as a surname. It is said to mean "martial or war-like." Many places in France were dedicated to St. Martin, apostle of the Gauls, and from one of these in Normandy came the family whose advent into England dates from the time of the Conquest. De Sancto Martino, a Latinized form of the name, is recorded, and also Le Sieur de St. Martin on the Battle Abbey Roll. The family of our immigrant ancestor is said by some authorities to have been of Devonshire, England, by others of Somerset.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." Matthews: "American Armoury." C. W. Francis: "Genealogy of Martin Family.")

I. Richard Martin was born in England and died May 2, 1694, or March 2, 1694-95. He is recorded in Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1669. It is said that he came to America to take possession of his brother Robert's estate. With him came his son, John, probably. It is thought also that they came in 1663 with Elder John Myles, a preacher, who established the Baptist church of Wannamoiset, Plymouth Colony. Robert Martin, the brother of Richard, had come to Weymouth, Massachusetts, in 1635, with the Rev. Joseph Hull. He was later of Rehoboth and mentioned in his will his brother, Richard, as "now in England." Other brothers were Abraham and Isaac.

Richard Martin married, probably in England, but the name of his

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

wife is not known. Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Francis. 3. Richard, Jr. 4. Annie. 5. Eleanor.

(C. W. Francis: "Genealogy of Martin Family," pp. 14, 15. "Vital Records of Rehoboth, Massachusetts," p. 848.)

II. John Martin, son of Richard Martin, was probably born in England and died in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, August 28, 1720. He is supposed to have come to New England with his father about 1663 or 1665. They settled in that part of Rehoboth known as Swansea. He was apparently a weaver by trade, like his uncle, Abraham, but like all the early settlers devoted most of his time to the cultivation of the soil. On June 5, 1671, the General Court of Plymouth appointed him constable of Swansea, and on June 3, 1673, he was made surveyor of highways. He is called one of the founders of the Baptist church in Plymouth Colony.

John Martin married, April 26, 1671, Joanna Esten. (Esten II.) Children: 1. Jemima, born May 29, 1672; married, intention published October 28, 1699, Samuel Salisbury. 2. Melatiah, born in April, 1673; married, November 6, 1696, Rebecca Brooks. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Ephraim, born February 7, 1676; married, intention published October 28, 1699, Thankful Bullock. 5. Ann, born November 14, 1678; married, in 1701, Richard Round. 6. Manasseh, born February 2, 1681; married, October 6, 1706, Hannah Carpenter. 7. Joanna, born February 15, 1682-83; married, December 5, 1711, Philip Short. 8. Ebenezer, born February 16, 1684-85; married, November 29, 1716, Abigail Wheeler. 9. Judith; married, December 24, 1713, John Luther.

(H. J. Martin: "Notices of the Martin Family," pp. 63-64, 187. "Representative Men and Families of Rhode Island," Vol. III, pp. 1732-33.)

III. John Martin, Jr., son of John and Joanna (Esten) Martin, was born March 15, 1674, and died November 3, 1757 (or 1759), at Swansea, Massachusetts. His will was dated July 9, 1757. He removed from Rehoboth to Swansea in 1728. He married (first), October 11, 1701, Mercy, or Marcy, Hayward. (Hayward III.) He married (second), intentions published April 4, 1713, Mrs. Marcy Thurber, died November 26, 1748, widow of Richard Thurber. Children of first marriage: 1. Sarah, of whom further. 2. Hannah; mar-



Borden



Maclellan
(McClellan)



Everett



Chickerin
(Chickering)



Spragg
(Sprague)



Warren

BOARD

Board—A group of officials in charge of a government's affairs.
Board—A group of officials in charge of a government's affairs.
Board—A group of officials in charge of a government's affairs.

MAJESTIC (MAGNETIC)

Majestic—Of the character of a king.
Majestic—Of the character of a king.
Majestic—Of the character of a king.

EVILRYT

Evilryt—A name for a demon or evil spirit.
Evilryt—A name for a demon or evil spirit.
Evilryt—A name for a demon or evil spirit.

CHICKERING (CHICKERING)

Chickering—A name for a type of bird.
Chickering—A name for a type of bird.
Chickering—A name for a type of bird.

SPRAGG (SPRAGG)

Spragg—A name for a type of bird.
Spragg—A name for a type of bird.
Spragg—A name for a type of bird.

WARREN

Warren—A name for a type of bird.
Warren—A name for a type of bird.
Warren—A name for a type of bird.

BORDEN

Arms—Azure, a chevron engrailed ermine, two pilgrim's staves proper in chief, a cross-crosslet in base or.

Crest—A lion rampant holding a battle-axe proper, above the crest the word "Excelsior."

Motto—*Palma virtuti.* (Crozier: "General Armory.")

MACLELLAN (McCLELLAN)

Arms—Or, two chevrons sable.

Crest—A naked arm supporting on the point of a sword a Moor's head.

Motto—Think on. (Burke: "General Armory.")

EVERETT

Arms—Gules a chevron paly of eight or and azure between three mullets argent.

Crest—A griffin's head erased sable collared gemel of three pieces, the middle or, the others argent.

(Burke: "General Armory." Bolton: "American Armory.")

CHICKERIN (CHICKERING)

Arms—Argent on a chevron vert, three cockerels of the first, membered gules.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

SPRAGG (SPRAGUE)

Arms—Or, three rose leaves in pale vert between two palets azure, a chief gules.

Crest—A sword in pale proper on the point thereof, suspended, a crown of olive or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

WARREN

Arms—Gules, a lion rampant argent a chief chequy or and azure.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet a demi-wivern wings expanded.

Motto—*Pro patria mori.* (Crozier: "General Armory.")

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ried, January 14, 1753, Thomas Lewis. 3. Joanna; married Joseph Barney. 4. John, born June 26, 1709, died February 6, 1770; married, February 21, 1734-35, Mary Andrus. 5. Marcy; married, November 12, 1730, Squire Bullock. Children of second marriage: 6. Barbara, born March 13, 1714; married, March 1, 1730, Obadiah Bowen. 7. Mary, born March 17, 1715 (1718); married, December 23, 1735, Hezekiah Horton. 8. Hezekiah, born September 7, 1719, died March 25, 1779; married (first), March 28, 1741, Hannah Andrus, died May 18, 1765; (second), September 10, 1766, Huldah Luther. 9. Elizabeth, born October 1, 1722; married, August 6, 1741, William Seamans. 10. Anna, born March 22, 1725; married, February 23, 1769, John Mason. 11. Jemima; married, November 14, 1745, Valentine Bowen. 12. Benjamin, born July 5, 1734; married, January 6, 1750, Sarah Kingsley.

(H. J. Martin: "Notices of the Martin Family," pp. 87-88. "Vital Records of Rehoboth, Massachusetts.")

IV. Sarah Martin, daughter of John and Mercy, or Marcy (Hayward) Martin, died after July, 1757, when her father made his will. She married, August 19, 1725, in Freetown, Massachusetts (intentions published May 11, 1725), Caleb Boomer. (Boomer III.)

("Vital Records of Freetown, Massachusetts," p. 473. "Genealogical Advertiser," Vol. IV, p. 34.)

(The Borden Line)

Arms—Azure, a chevron engrailed ermine, two pilgrim's staves proper in chief, a cross-crosslet in base or.

Crest—A lion rampant holding a battle-axe proper, above the crest the word "Excelsior."

Motto—*Palma virtuti.*

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

Kent seems to have been the earliest home of the Borden family in England and of all the places in that county—known as the garden county of England—none are more beautiful than the parish of Borden (from which locality the family takes its name). The family of Borden was possessed of good estates in this part of Kent and were distinguished persons among the landed gentry of that county. A Simon de Borden, of Borden Manor, resided here, and was among the beneficiaries of the parish church. The record of the owners of this manor extends over a period of several hundred years.

In America nearly all of the name are descended from the one ancestor mentioned hereafter, but there is mention of the name a few

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

times in Boston and once in Pennsylvania—the latter, John Bordinghe—came there by way of Holland as his name indicates. The early generations of the family of Richard and Joan were all members of the Society of Friends, known as Quakers, and from them the offspring received a love of peace, freedom of conscience and the other principles that this society stands for. Their history is written in the congenial pursuits of agriculture and the unostentatious works of Christian charity.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of the Descendants as far as known of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 24-25.)

I. Henry Borden was born about 1370-80 in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, and is mentioned as dead in 1469. He appears to have held land both in the parish of Hedcorn and at Borden, and was doubtless a descendant of the Bordens of Borden. His grandson, John, left a request that a priest sing in the church of Hedcorn for the souls of Henry and his wife, Robergia, for two years.

Henry Borden married, in Hedcorn, Robergia. Children: 1. Thomas, of whom further. 2. Robert, died prior to 1479; married Emma Dorr.

(T. A. Glenn: "Pedigree of Richard Borden," pp. 3-4.)

II. Thomas Borden, son of Henry and Robergia Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, and died before April 26, 1469. He is mentioned in the will of his son, John, who desired that a priest sing in the church of Hedcorn, wherein he was buried, for the soul of his parents, Thomas and Isabella Borden. This Thomas was, without doubt, identical with that Thomas Borden of Hedcorn, yeoman, who joined the Rebellion of Kentishmen under Jack Cade in the year 1450, and who was subsequently pardoned therefor. (Pat. Rolls, 28 Henry VI, Parts 2, 13. *Archæologia Cantina*, Vol. VII.)

Thomas Borden married Isabella.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 4-5.)

Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Henry; married and left issue. 3. Richard, died about October, 1490; married and left issue.

III. John Borden, son of Thomas and Isabella Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, and died there; will made

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

April 26, 1469. John Borden, yeoman, in his will left sum of money to all of his grandchildren, and also a sum of money for an "honest priest" to sing for the souls of his parents and grandparents, as well as for one Thomas Saunder, for two years. (Archæologia Cantina, Vol. II, folio I, Latin.)

John Borden married Benet Tornor, daughter of Thomas Tornor. Her will is dated October 15, 1518, and was proved November 16, 1518.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 5-7.)

Children: 1. Roger. 2. William, of whom further. 3. Joan. 4. Roberga. 5. Alice. 6. Isabella. 7. John.

IV. William Borden, son of John and Benet (Tornor) Borden, is recorded as under age April 26, 1469. He died in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England; will dated February 11, 1531, and proved September 25, 1531. He left quite a good sized estate to his wife and children, both in money and in land. In his will he mentions Sir Edward Wotten, knight, as his overseer. (Archæologia Cantina, Vol. XIX, Section 10.)

William Borden married (first) Joan; (second) Thomasin; (third) Rose, who survived him. Children: 1. Edmund, of whom further. 2. Edward, had issue. 3. Thomas, died young. 4. Elizabeth. 5. Anne. 6. Katherine.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 7-10.)

V. Edmund Borden, son of William Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, and died there, in 1539, probably in or about the month of June. His will is dated April 13, 1539, and was proved June 18, 1539. His wife and children are all mentioned as well as a request to be buried in the churchyard at Hedcorn, where many generations of his family had been buried. ((Archæologia Cantina, Vol. XXI, Section 9.)

Edmund Borden married Margaret. Children. 1. Edward. 2. John. 3. William, of whom further. 4. Joan. 5. Maryon. 6. Margaret. 7. Alice. 8. Julian.

VI. William Borden, son of Edmund and Margaret Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, and died in or about the month of June, 1557. His will was proved June 8, 1557, and by it he left

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

over £60 in money to his wife and children, as well as considerable real and personal property. (Archæologia Cantina, Vol. III, Section 3.)

William Bordon married Joan. Children: 1. Stephen. 2. Thomas, of whom further. 3. Edward, died about 1560; married Margaret. 4. John, buried November 15, 1581. 5. Edmund. 6. Elizabeth, living in 1592. 7. Agnes. 8. Thomasin. 9. Agnes.

(T. A. Glenn: "Pedigree of Richard Borden," pp. 10-11.)

VII. Thomas (2) Borden, son of William and Joan Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, and died there and was buried April 21, 1592. The will of Thomas Borden is dated April 13, 1592, and was proved April 26, 1592; his family is mentioned and a request made that he, too, be buried in the churchyard at Hedcorn. (Archæologia Cantina, Vol. XLVIII, folio 279.)

Thomas Borden's first wife was buried May 20, 1581. He married (second) Margaret, who was buried September 25, 1589. Children: 1. Matthew, of whom further. 2. Thomas, buried April 30, 1580. 3. Joan, buried April 5, 1571. 4. Agnes; married, August 2, 1585, Jonas Gorham.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 11-12.)

VIII. Matthew Borden, son of Thomas Borden, was born in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, and died there October, 1620. He was church warden of Hedcorn in 1598. His will is dated September 26, 1620, and proved October 27, 1620. He was a very well-to-do man, having several farms, quite a number of houses, and leaving over £116 in money to three of his children.

Matthew Borden married Joan. Children: 1. Mary; married, May 4, 1620, John Rowe. 2. Joan, baptized April 29, 1593, buried June 11, 1593. 3. John, baptized April 28, 1594, died an infant. 4. Richard, of whom further. 5. William, baptized June 1, 1600. 6. Amie, baptized April 26, 1603. 7. Edward, baptized April 14, 1605. 8. John, baptized February 22, 1606-07; married Joan, and removed to New England in 1635.

(The Family in America)

I. Richard Borden, son of Matthew and Joan Borden, was baptized in Hedcorn Parish, County Kent, England, February 22, 1595-1596, and died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, May 25, 1671. He

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

may have arrived from England with his brother, John, in 1635, but this has not been proven. When the proposition of forming a settlement on Rhode Island was made to him he entered into it with all his heart and to it devoted all his energies. The first place selected was about one-half mile southeast from Bristol Ferry and south end of a pond that opened into Mount Hope Bay. Settlers called it Portsmouth Harbor. In 1639, settlers moved one and one-half miles south to Newtown.

On June 10, 1638, Richard Borden was granted five acres at Bristol Ferry, in which to place his cottage and his cabbage and turnip yard. In 1638, he was appointed to survey town lots and lay out farming lands in Portsmouth, Rhode Island. Together with thirty others on January 2, 1637, he was appointed to map out and survey surrounding lands, and again in 1640 he was appointed with forty others to lay out lands in Portsmouth. Richard Borden was made freeman, March 16, 1641. He held many important official positions: In 1653-54, he was assistant treasurer; in 1654-55, he was general treasurer; in 1654-56-57, he was commissioner, and in 1667-70, he was Deputy. He bought sixty acres of land in Providence, near Newtonkonut Hill, and in 1667 was one of the original purchasers of land in New Jersey. He was a Quaker, and as a devout Christian gained high esteem.

Richard Borden married, September 28, 1625, Joan Fowle, born February 15, 1604, died July 16, 1688, "aged 84 years, 6 months." She was the daughter of Francis and Elizabeth Fowle.

(J. O. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 23. W. H. Jennings: "Genealogical History of the Jennings Families," pp. 545-47. T. A. Glenn: "Pedigree of Richard Borden," pp. 13-14.)

Children: 1. Richard, baptized July 9, 1626. 2. Thomas, baptized October 3, 1627, died November 25, 1676; married Mary Harris. 3. Francis, baptized December 23, 1628, died January 19, 1705-1706; married, February 12, 1677, Jane Vicars. 4. Mary, baptized January 13, 1633, died in 1691; married John Cooke. 5. Elizabeth, baptized May 25, 1634. 6. Matthew, born May 16, 1638, died July 5, 1703; married, March 4, 1674, Sarah Clayton. 7. John, of whom further. 8. Joseph, born July 3, 1643; married Hope. 9. Sarah, born in May, 1644; married Jonathan Holmes. 10. Samuel, born in July, 1645; married, in June, 1679, Elizabeth Crosse. 11. Benjamin, born in May, 1649, died in 1718; married, September 22, 1670, Abigail

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Grover. 12. Amey, born in February, 1654, died February 5, 1684; married, March 27, 1678, William Richardson.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of the Descendants as far as known of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 43-57. T. A. Glenn: "Pedigree of Richard Borden," p. 14.)

II. John (2) Borden, son of Richard and Joan (Fowle) Borden, was born at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in September, 1640, and died there, June 4, 1716. He was frequently associated with his brother, Matthew, in the performance of various duties assigned by the town and religious community of which they constituted two of the main pillars. The name of John Borden, of Quaker Hill, Rhode Island, was universally known. He became the owner of large tracts of land in Rhode Island, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, and Delaware. Also bought Hog Island and lands at Bristol Ferry, Swansea, Tiverton, and Freetown. He was associated with John Tripp in leasing and managing Bristol Ferry.

John Borden was an intimate friend of King Philip. The General Court at Plymouth asked him to use his influence with Philip, the latter having said that John Borden was the only honest white man he knew—he could not doubt the honesty of his intentions, but the memory of his wrongs was too deep seated. There can be no doubt that John Borden did all in his power to dissuade Philip from engaging in a war with the English at this time. A few years after the Indian War, John Borden was arrested in Bristol in the matter of Hog Island, which the Plymouth government claimed as part of their territory, although it had always been considered part of Portsmouth, and paid taxes as such. The island belong to John Borden, who refused to pay any tax to Bristol or Plymouth. The matter was taken up in his behalf by the General Assembly of Rhode Island. From 1680-1708 he frequently represented Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in General Assembly. He and seven other persons were associated in the erection of two meeting-houses for Friends, one in Newport, the other in Portsmouth.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 48-50, 52. J. O. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 23. W. H. Jennings: "Genealogical History of the Jennings Families," pp. 547-49.)

John Borden married, December 25, 1670, Mary Earle. (Earle III.) Children: 1. Richard, born October 25, 1671; married Inno-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

cent Wardell. 2. John, born in 1675; married Sarah. 3. Amey, born May 30, 1678; married Benjamin Chase, of Tiverton. 4. Joseph, of whom further. 5. Thomas, born December 3, 1682. 6. Mary, born in 1684, died April 2, 1741; married Thomas Potts. 7. Hope, born March 3, 1685; married William Almy, Jr. 8. William, born in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, August 15, 1689; died in North Carolina in 1748. 9. Benjamin, born in 1692, died in November, 1743.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 66-74. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," with Additions.)

III. Joseph Borden, son of John and Mary (Earle) Borden, was born December 3, 1680, and died in 1715. He settled in Freetown in that part now called Fall River, on the north side of the stream and on the west side of the country road. In 1714, the same year that the purchase of the mill lot and the stream was made from Colonel Benjamin Church, Joseph Borden erected a new sawmill near where the Pocasset upper factory now stands. It was afterwards moved farther down stream. His life being so short, he has left but little record. As it is quaintly phrased, "No tradition of him unfavorable to his character has come down to us."

(*Ibid.*, p. 69. G. G. Brownell: "Genealogical Descendants of Thomas Brownell," p. 41. Orin Fowler: "History of Fall River," chart facing p. 66.)

Joseph Borden married, February 24, 1703, Sarah Brownell. She married (second), John Read; (third) Peleg Thurston. (Brownell III.) Children: 1. Stephen, born August 10, 1705, died August 30, 1738; married, February 3, 1726, Penlope Read. 2. William, of whom further. 3. George, born in 1709, died in 1767; married Priscilla Wilcox. 4. Joseph, born in 1712, died in Tiverton in 1800; married, January 26, 1736, Susannah Read.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 69, 96.)

IV. William Borden, son of Joseph and Sarah (Brownell) Borden, was born in 1707. He lived in the vicinity of Fall River, Massachusetts, and raised a numerous family.

(*Ibid.*, p. 96. Orin Fowler: "History of Fall River," chart facing page 66.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Children: 1. Sarah, born in 1732; married, February 17, 1751, John Francis. 2. Joseph, born August 12, 1733, died in 1807; married Peace Borden. 3. William, of whom further. 4. Benjamin, born in Tiverton, Rhode Island, in 1738; married Patience Cobb. 5. Ruth, born in 1740; married, January 30, 1762, Nathan Durfee. 6. Stephen; married, November 3, 1763, Mary Church. 7. Anne; married, February 1, 1764, William Jameson. 8. Parker; married Susannah Jennings. 9. Thomas, born in 1751, died in Nova Scotia, in 1845; married (first) Susanna Cox, born in 1761, died June 27, 1826; married (second) Louise Lanford, born July 2, 1805, died in 1876. 10. George, born in Fall River; married Susannah Church. 11. Gideon; married (first) Joanna Barlow; married (second) Mary Pettice. 12. Job, born in 1756, died December 31, 1833; married Lois Tilton.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 96, 125-26.)

V. William Borden, Jr., son of William Borden, was born in Tiverton, Rhode Island, February 26, 1736, and died in 1813. He was a mariner of Fall River and was lost overboard off Point Judith from a vessel in which he was sailing, during a violent storm. William Borden served as a private in 1779 in Sergeant John Luther's company from Freetown, Massachusetts.

(*Ibid.*, p. 125. D. A. R. Lineage Books, Vol. LXXVIII, p. 53.)

William Borden married, July 5, 1761, Ruhannah Jennings. (Jennings V.) Children: 1. Avis, born March 25, 1763; married Shubael Hutchins, of Killingly, Connecticut. 2. Anna, born December 4, 1764; married Ashael Fisher. 3. Ruhannah, born March 4, 1767; married Samuel Sprague. 4. Susannah, of whom further. 5. Ruth, born March 17, 1771; married Nathan Durfee. 6. Rosannah, born May 26, 1773; married Dyer Ames, of Sterling, Connecticut. 7. Roby.

(H. B. Weld: "Historical and Genealogical Record of Richard and Joan Borden," pp. 125, 146-47.)

VI. Susannah Borden, daughter of William and Ruhannah (Jennings) Borden, was born February 3, 1769, and died in Charlton, January 28, 1827. She married, October 12, 1792, Rev. James Boomer. (Boomer V.)

(*Ibid.*, p. 146. D. A. R. Lineage Books, Vol. LXXVIII, p. 53.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Maclellan (McClellan) Line)

Arms—Or, two chevrons sable.

Crest—A naked arm supporting on the point of a sword a Moor's head.

Motto—Think on. (Burke: "General Armory.")

A quaint derivation reminiscent of the mediæval closeness to the church is to be found in the ascribed meaning of the Scotch surname McLellan with its variant form McClellan, MacClelland. It is a Galloway name signifying son of the servant of St. Fillan from Gillefhaolain, a servant of St. Fillan, showing close association with the monastery of St. Fillan. A place name in Galloway is "Balmaclellan" or MacLellan's town. Thomas MacLellan of Bombie (Bomby) was raised to the Peerage by Charles I as Baron Kircudbright, a peerage now dominant. The Maclellans in Scotland, however, were not confined to Galloway for another colony is to be found in Morar Inverness-shire. There are also MacLellans to be found in the Aberfeldy district of Perthshire.

(Harrison: "Surnames of the United Kingdom," Vol. II, p. 7. F. Adams: "The Clans, Septs and Regiments of the Scottish Highlands," p. 171.)

I. James McClellan came into New England about 1718, and settled in Worcester, Massachusetts. He married, in December, 1722 (one records says December 26, another December 22), Elizabeth Hall, daughter of Deacon Percival Hall, of Sutton. Children: 1. John, born December 6, 1723. 2. Rebecca, born April 23, 1725. 3. James, of whom further. 4. Mary, born January 17, 1730. 5. Moses, born July 9, 1733. 6. David, born August 19, 1735.

(W. A. Benedict and Rev. H. Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," p. 693. F. P. Rice: "Worcester Births, Marriages and Deaths," Part II, p. 383; Part I, p. 172.)

II. James McClellan, Jr., son of James and Elizabeth (Hall) McClellan, was born June 22, 1727, and died in Sutton, Massachusetts, September 11, 1794. He purchased a farm in the eastern part of Sutton, upon which he settled and where he and his wife lived until their death. The farm was occupied by his son, Deacon James McClellan, and his grandson, Deacon John McClellan, until 1855, when it was purchased by Reuben R. Dodge, in whose possession it now remains.

(W. A. Benedict and Rev. H. Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," pp. 693-94.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

James McClellan married, February 2, 1758, Sarah Axtell, of Grafton. (Axtell V.) Children: 1. James, of whom further. 2. Betsy, born in 1761, died June 20, 1766. 3. Sallie, born in 1763, died July 2, 1766. 4. Anna, born in 1765, died July 22, 1766.

(*Ibid.*, p. 694.)

III. Deacon James (3) McClellan, son of James, Jr., and Sarah (Axtell) McClellan, was born in Sutton, Massachusetts, August 8, 1759, and died there, June 26, 1841. He settled on the farm on which his parents had lived, and is known as "a farmer and one of the leading men of the county." He was for a number of years identified with the First Baptist Church, and was one of the principal members. Deacon McClellan had an ashery on his farm and made potash for the Boston market, which he himself carted. He owned much real estate besides his fine farm.

Deacon James McClellan married, in 1784, Beulah Bacon, daughter of Deacon Jonathan Bacon, then of Northbridge, afterwards of Dudley. She died August 9, 1837, aged seventy-three.

(W. A. Benedict and Rev. H. Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," pp. 373, 694. F. C. Pierce: "History of Grafton, Massachusetts," p. 531. "Biographical Review, Worcester County Wars, Vol. XXX, p. 861.)

Children: 1. Betsy, born in 1785; married Warren Marsh. 2. Sarah, born in 1787; married Rev. Jonathan Forbush. 3. James, born September 18, 1789; married Fanny Fletcher. 4. Patty, born in 1791, died February 2, 1816. 5. Nancy, of whom further. 6. Mary, born in 1796. 7. Benalah, born in 1798, died November 22, 1815. 8. Lucy, born December 4, 1800. 9. John, born December 13, 1806, died in Grafton, Massachusetts, March 21, 1886; married, at Attleborough, Massachusetts, October 14, 1834, Ama Ide Daggett. John McClellan was major in his State militia. While young he became deacon of the Baptist church, serving during his entire life. He filled the various offices of trust and honor which could be bestowed by his fellow-townsmen, and was especially active during the Civil War.

(F. C. Pierce: "History of Grafton, Massachusetts," pp. 531-32. S. B. Doggett: "A History of the Doggett-Daggett Family," p. 189.)

IV. Nancy McClellan, daughter of Deacon James and Beulah (Bacon) McClellan, was born January 13, 1794, and died October

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

26, 1864. She married, April 21, 1818, Rev. Job B. Boomer. (Boomer VI.)

(W. A. Benedict and Rev. H. Tracy: "History of Sutton, Massachusetts," p. 694.)

(The Ide Line)

Ide was an Anglo-Saxon proper name, later little found, although used by the Frisians even in modern times. Whether the present day surname came from the old proper name, or was derived from Hide, with the initial letter suppressed, is undetermined. A "hide" in the sense used in the Middle Ages was so much land, generally about one hundred and twenty acres, as "with its house and toft, right of common and other appurtenances, was considered to be sufficient for the necessities of a family." ("Archæologia," Vol. XXXV, p. 470.)

(M. A. Lower: "Patronymica Britannica," pp. 157, 167.)

I. Nicholas Ide, last English ancestor of the Ide family of America, died early in the seventeenth century. His widow married Thomas Bliss, of Belstone, near Okehampton, Devonshire, who died at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, in June, 1649. Thomas Bliss and his family were Puritans, and in 1636 they emigrated to America, the family consisting of his wife, two or three of his own children, and his stepson, Nicholas Ide. They resided first at Braintree, near Boston, then removed for a short time to Hartford, Connecticut. Later they returned to Massachusetts and located at Weymouth. About 1643, because of religious dissensions at Weymouth, they went to Rehoboth. Thomas Bliss made a will in which he mentions his stepson, Nicholas Ide. Child: 1. Nicholas, of whom further.

("American Ancestry," Vol. XII, p. 66.)

II. Nicholas Ide, Jr., son of Nicholas Ide, was born about 1624, and died at Rehoboth, October 18, 1690. He was brought to America by his mother and his stepfather, Thomas Bliss, and after residing in Braintree, Hartford, and Weymouth, went with the family to Rehoboth, where he resided for the remainder of his life. April 9, 1645, he took part in the first drawing of lands at Rehoboth, and probably became of age at that time. He participated in later divisions of land at Rehoboth and at Attleborough, a town lying to the north. In 1648, Nicholas Ide was admitted a freeman. In 1662, 1669, and 1674 he was surveyor of highways. Nicholas Ide married Martha, who died in November, 1654. Children: 1. Nathaniel, born November 11, 1647. 2. Mary, born December 10, 1649; married

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(first), December 12, 1673, Samuel Fuller, who died August 15, 1676; married (second), December 22, 1677, John Redaway. 3. John, born in December, 1652, died in December, 1676, probably buried at Rehoboth; served in King Philip's War in 1675-76, in the Narragansett Expedition. 4. Nicholas, of whom further. 5. Martha, born in October, 1656, died in August, 1700; married, November 11, 1681, Samuel Walker. 6. Elizabeth, born April 6, 1658. 7. Timothy, born in October, 1660, died April 5, 1735; married, December 20, 1687; ensign and representative to the General Court. 8. Dorothy, born May 14, 1662. 9. Patience, born May 25, 1664. 10. Experience, born in October, 1665.

(*Ibid.*, p. 67. "Rehoboth, Massachusetts, Vital Records," p. 649.)

III. Nicholas (3) Ide, son of Nicholas, Jr., and Martha Ide, was born at Rehoboth, in November, 1654, and died June 5, 1723. He was a soldier in King Philip's War in 1675-76, serving under Major Bradford. Later he became ensign and eventually a lieutenant. In 1682, Nicholas Ide was admitted a freeman. He removed to the neighboring town of Attleborough, where he was chosen surveyor in 1697, and which he represented in the General Court in 1713 and 1714. Nicholas Ide married (first), at Rehoboth, December 27, 1677, Mary Ormsbee, who died September 9, 1690, probably the daughter of Richard and Sarah Ormsbee, who located at Saco in 1641, removed to Salisbury and Haverhill, and in 1663 located at Rehoboth, where the inventory of the estate of Richard Ormsbee was taken July 3, 1664. Three sons of Richard Ormsbee resided at Rehoboth and were born between 1641 and 1647, thus being of the same generation as Mary Ormsbee, whose birth is not recorded. Nicholas Ide married (second) Eliza (or Elizabeth) Hewins. Children of first marriage: 1. Nathaniel, born November 4, 1678, died at Attleborough, March 4, 1703. 2. Jacob, of whom further. 3. Martha, born March 18, 1683; married, November 8, 1705, Zachariah Carpenter. (Carpenter IV—ninth child.) 4. Patience, born May 12, 1686, died in November, 1716; married, March 20, 1712. 5. John, born August 27, 1690; married, at Attleborough, May 14, 1719, Mehitable Robinson. Children of second marriage: 6. Nicholas, born July 21, 1697. 7. Nicholas, born at Marblehead, December 27, 1703.

("American Ancestry," Vol. XII, pp. 67-68. "Rehoboth Vital Records," p. 649. Hoyt: "Salisbury and Amesbury, Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 267.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Jacob Ide, son of Nicholas and Mary (Ormsbee) Ide, was born at Rehoboth, July 4, 1681, and resided at Attleborough, Massachusetts. He married, January 1, 1707-08, Sarah Perry. (Perry III.) Children: 1. Sarah, born March 10, 1709-10. 2. Nathaniel, of whom further.

("American Ancestry," Vol. XII, p. 67. "Rehoboth Vital Records," pp. 202, 649. "Attleborough Vital Records.")

V. Nathaniel Ide, son of Jacob and Sarah (Perry) Ide, was born at Attleborough, September 13, 1712. He married (first) Deborah Barrows. Nathaniel Ide married (second) Lydia Wellington. Children of first marriage: 1. Amy, born June 3, 1737, died in infancy. 2. Nathaniel, born December 19, 1738. 3. Nathan, born April 8, 1740. 4. Martha, born October 31, 1741. 5. Ezra, born July 4, 1743. 6. Timothy, born April 10, 1745. 7. Nehemiah, born November 24, 1746. 8. Ichabod, born June 29, 1748. 9. Lydia, born April 26, 1750. 10. Lucy, born May 7, 1751. 11. Amy, of whom further. Children of second marriage: 12. Deliverance, born April 14, 1753. 13. Lucy, born October 15, 1754. 14. Elizabeth, born April 8, 1757. 15. Martha, born January 16, 1762. 16. Nathaniel, born August 8, 1765. 17. Ebenezer, born July 30, 1767.

("Attleborough Vital Records.")

VI. Amy Ide, daughter of Nathaniel and Deborah (Barrows) Ide, was born at Attleborough, January 7, 1752, and died at Union, Maine, in May, 1793, where she was drowned. She married, as his second wife, Lieutenant Benjamin Maxcy. (Maxcy III.)

(*Ibid.* Sibley: "History of Union, Maine," pp. 69, 469.)

(The Everett Line)

Arms—Gules a chevron paly of eight or and azure between three mullets argent.

Crest—A griffin's head erased sable collared gemel of three pieces, the middle or, the others argent.

(Burke: "General Armory." Bolton: "American Armory.")

The surname Everard is derived from the baptismal name Everard, the *d* being easily sharpened into *t*. The Everards of England have come from the form Evards of the Domesday Roll after the Conquest. They are descended, it is believed, from the German Eberhard, who was abbot of Einsiedlen in 934—It is very probable that the Norman St. Eberhault is the same. "Eberhard hardly reaches the rank of saint in the Roman calendar, but his exertions in a great famine that rav-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

aged Alsace, Burgundy and Upper Germany in 942 account for the nationality of his name in that region."

(C. Yonge: "History of Christian Names," Vol. II, p. 272.)

It is not known from just what English locality Richard Everett, the American progenitor of the line of our interest, came. From the fact that he was for several years in the employ of William Pynchon and that Pynchon himself was connected by marriage with the Everard family of County Essex, England, and as Richard was a very common baptismal name in this English Everard family, it is surmised that Richard Everett was born in County Essex.

(E. F. Everett: "Descendants of Richard Everett, of Dedham, Massachusetts," p. 9.)

I. Richard Everett was born probably in County Essex, England. He died July 3, 1682. He was designated as a "farrier" of Cambridge, Massachusetts, before he removed to Dedham. Tradition says he first settled in Watertown, Massachusetts, but no record is found to prove this. He may have lived near the dividing line between the two towns and in changing his residence may have changed from one to the other. He mortgaged land in Cambridge, March 16, 1638-39. In 1636, Richard Everett was with William Pynchon, who with a party of settlers and their families went through the wilderness as far as the Connecticut River to a place called Agawam, now known as Springfield. Here on July 15, 1636, he made his mark as the one white witness to the Indian deed. The following month he was at a proprietor's meeting in Watertown.

From this time on his name appears first in Dedham, then in Springfield, Massachusetts, at various meetings. On January 6, 1638-39, he was granted his only land in Springfield—a lot one rod wide. Soon after, he left the town of Springfield. He was constable in 1652 and 1653. In 1655, he was elected surveyor. Richard Everett was on a committee in 1659, whose duty it was to lay out highways. In 1660-1661, he was elected selectman of Dedham.

(E. F. Everett: "Descendants of Richard Everett," pp. 9-10-11-13-14. C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 158. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XIV, p. 215.)

Richard Everett married (first) Mary. He married (second) Mary Winch, of Springfield, who came from Ipswich, England, in

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1634. Children of first marriage: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Mary, born September 28, 1638; married, in September, 1662, James Macker. 3. Samuel, born September 30, 1639; married, October 28, 1669, Mary Pepper; died March 26, 1717-18. 4. Sarah, born March 14, 1641, died April 1, 1641. 5. James, born March 14, 1643; died April 21, 1643. 6. Sarah, born June 12, 1644; married, July 24, 1665, Cornelius Fisher. 7. Abigail, born November 19, 1647; married, February 11, 1677, Matthias Puffer. 8. Israel, born July 14, 1651; married Abigail. 9. Ruth, born January 14, 1653. 10. Jedediah, born July 11, 1656, died about 1698-99; married Rachel.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XIII, p. 234; Vol. XIV, p. 215. “American Ancestry,” Vol. IV, p. 186.)

II. Captain John Everett, son of Richard and Mary Everett, was baptized at Dedham, Massachusetts, 15 d., 1 mo., 1646, and died in Dedham, Massachusetts, June 17, 1715. His name first appears in Dedham town records in 1662, when he is assessed “o-4-8.” In 1668 and 1674, he had small grants of land. He was chosen fence viewer eleven times between 1671 and 1700; was constable 1678, 1684, and 1698-99 on the following committees: 1. To run the line between Dedham and Dorchester in 1682, 1685-86, 1691, 1694, and 1697. 2. To buy of Josias, sachem, a right of land south of Neponset River. 3. A committee to lay out highways in 1685-86. He was a surveyor of highways in 1704 and 1705, and was tithing man in 1700. John Everett was first styled captain in 1693 in Dedham Town Records. During King William’s War he was called into active service to command a company of men stationed in New Hampshire and Maine to protect the inhabitants from the Indians.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XIV, p. 215. E. F. Everett: “Descendants of Richard Everett, of Dedham, Massachusetts,” p. 21.)

Captain John Everett married, May 13, 1662, Elizabeth Pepper. (Pepper II.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, born November 6, 1665; married John Newcomb. 2. Hannah, born November 14, 1670; married Simon Crosby. 3. Bethiah, born October 3, 1673, died October 19, 1694; married Peter Thorpe. 4. John, born June 9, 1676; married, January 3, 1700, Mercy Brown. 5. William, born January 20, 1678,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

died in 1765; married, February 24, 1703, Rachel Newcomb. 6. Israel, born April 8, 1681. 7. Richard, of whom further.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XIV, p. 215. E. F. Everett: “Descendants of Richard Everett, of Dedham, Massachusetts,” pp. 21-29.)

III. Richard (2) Everett, son of Captain John and Elizabeth (Pepper) Everett, was born at Dedham, Massachusetts, October 24, 1683, and died there in 1746. His name appears on the valuation list of Dedham in 1727 and 1730, and in 1738 it appears on a petition to have lands lying within the westerly precinct of Stoughton, annexed to Dedham. He was selectman from 1736 to 1741. His will, probated February 25, 1745-46, mentions buildings and land in Attleborough and Stoughton, and the homestead in Dedham. Richard Everett married, March 3, 1709, Mary Fuller. (Fuller III.) Children: 1. Joshua, born December 14, 1709, died August 31, 1786; married (first) Margaret Avery, who died March 3, 1755. He married (second) Patience. 2. Mary, of whom further. 3. Jeremiah, born November 12, 1713; married Rebekah. 4. Timothy, born October 14, 1715. 5. Jonathan, born August 3, 1717; married, September 5, 1744, Jemima Mann. 6. Israel, born December 3, 1719; married, October 13, 1743, Sarah Metcalf. 7. Bethiah, born November 18, 1721, died November 24, 1722. 8. Bethiah, born October 7, 1723; married, April 8, 1743, Jonathan Day. 9. Hannah, born December 4, 1725; married (first), November 30, 1748, Richard Seaver, born in 1710; married (second) a Mr. Dean, of Easton. 10. Abigail, born December 3, 1727; married George Robinson, of Attleborough, Massachusetts.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” pp. 215-216. E. F. Everett: “Descendants of Richard Everett, of Dedham, Massachusetts,” p. 37.)

IV. Mary Everett, daughter of Richard and Mary (Fuller) Everett, was born December 17, 1711. She married, February 3, 1737-38, Josiah Maxcy. (Maxcy II.)

(The Chickerin (Chickering) Line)

Arms—Argent on a chevron vert, three cockerells of the first, membered gules.
(Burke: “General Armory.”)

Seven variations of the name Chickering have been found in the literature relating to the manor of Chickering of the parish of Rings-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

field, between 1301 and 1545, as follows: Checkering, Checkeringe, Chikirynge, Ciccheliga, Cikelinga, Citiringe, and Chykeringg.

The English ancestors of the American family of Chickering seem to have originated in Norfolk County, England, the main points of settlement being Wymondham, Wicklewood and Ringsfield. Search in English records has led to the conclusion that the probable line of descent is: Thomas, of Wymondham, living in the reign of Henry VIII; Stephen, of Wicklewood, who died in 1576; Henry, of Ringsfield, who died in 1627, and was the father of Deacon Henry Chickering, of Dedham, Massachusetts.

(F. C. Torrey: "One Branch of the Chickering Family," pp. 4-5.)

I. Henry Chickering, yeoman, born about 1560, was living in the parish of Branfield, Suffolk County, England, from 1588-95, and probably much later. He removed to Ringsfield, where it is recorded that he was living July 11, 1626, at which time he made his will. Henry's widow, Mary, brought her sons to New England, and was a resident of Dedham, Massachusetts, November 20, 1646, on which date she relinquished her interest in a parcel of land belonging to the manor of Benacre Hall, County Suffolk, England.

Henry Chickering's will was dated July 11, 1626, and he died in 1627. ("Archdeaconry of Suffolk" (Ipswich), 1627-28, p. 1.) Mary, widow of Henry Chickering, died at Dedham, Massachusetts, January 27, 1668.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 6-7. "Dedham, Massachusetts, Vital Records," Vol. I, p. 11.)

Children (correct order not known. Names as given in Henry's will): 1. John, baptized December 28, 1593; married Thomazine Smyth. 2. Judith; married Robert Webster, of London. 3. Thomazine, buried at Wrentham, England, August 5, 1641. 4. Mary, baptized May 20, 1591; married, May 3, 1624, Thomas Aldred, of Brampton. 5. Symon, will dated July 8, 1674; proved August 22, 1674. 6. Reynold (or Reginald), baptized September 12, 1595; married Alice Thurton. 7. Francis, died October 10, 1658; married (first) Ann Fiske; (second), June 11, 1650, Sarah Sibbel. 8. Henry, of whom further.

(F. C. Torrey: "One Branch of the Chickering Family" (1919), pp. 6-7, and also chart opposite p. 10.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Deacon Henry Chickering, Jr., son of Henry and Mary Chickering, was born in County Suffolk, England, about 1589, baptized January 5, 1588-89. He was a proprietor of Salem, Massachusetts, in 1639. He removed to Dedham, and with his wife was admitted to the church 29 (11) 1640. Deacon Henry Chickering was called to the First Church of Dedham, Massachusetts, "upon ye 23d of ye 4th 1650." Henry Chickering was a yeoman and was made freeman June 2, 1641. He served as deputy 27 (8) 1647. He died July 21, 1671; buried 22d, 5m, 1671, being eighty-two years old; will dated 23 (3) 1670; probated 31 (6) 1671.

Henry Chickering married (first), May 4, 1622, Elizabeth Smythe, widow of Benjamin, buried May 12, 1626. He married (second), May 10, 1628, Ann Grosse.

(C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 98. "Record of Births, Marriages and Deaths, Dedham, Massachusetts," p. 12. "Church and Cemetery Records, Dedham, Massachusetts," pp. 35-39.)

Children (from Parish Registers of Wrentham, County Suffolk, England): 1. Elizabeth, baptized March 15, 1628-29, died November 10, 1629. 2. Elizabeth, baptized October 3, 1630. 3. John, of whom further.

(F. C. Torrey: "One Branch of the Chickering Family," p. 8.)

III. Doctor John Chickering, son of Deacon Henry Chickering, was baptized August 31, 1634 (Parish Registers of Wrentham, County Suffolk, England). He was admitted an inhabitant 8 (11) 1658-59. With his wife he was admitted to the church 6 (9) 1664. Land was allotted to Dr. Chickering, July 18, 1669. (Selectmen's records, p. 103.)

Dr. John Chickering married Elizabeth Hackburne, of Dedham, who after his decease, married (second) Thomas Graves. She died "28 (5) 1676."

(T. B. Wyman: "The Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 212.)

Children: 1. Katharine, born February 15 (baptized 15), 1662, died May 11, 1664. 2. Ann, born January 31 (baptized February 7), 1663-64, died May 16, 1664. 3. Katharine, born May 20 (21), 1665, died December 10, 1665. 4. Mercy, born April 5 (baptized 8), 1666,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

died May 16, 1667. 5. Elizabeth, born April 5 (baptized 7), 1667. 6. Mercy, of whom further. 7. Katharine, born April 18, 1669; married, in 1695, Jonathan Wardwell. 8. John, born August 20, (baptized 14(6), 1670); married Susanna Symnes. 9. Ann, born 1 (baptized 3), 10 mo., 1671; married Samuel Brackenbury. 10. Elizabeth, born March 22 (baptized 30), 1673, died April 19, 1673. 11. Elizabeth, born 18 (baptized 25), 8 mo., 1674, died 7 (6), 1675.

(*Ibid.*, Vol. I, pp. 212, 213. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. I, p. 376.)

IV. Mercy Chickering, daughter of Dr. John and Elizabeth (Hackburne) Chickering, was born in March, 1668. She married Jacob Shepard. (Shepard III.)

(T. B. Wyman: "The Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 212; Vol. II, p. 860.)

(The Ensign Line)

Arms—Sable three swords, erected argent pommels or, two and one.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

While the name Ensign is not found in usual sources in this spelling, it is probably of Frisian or Danish origin. Probably the first of the name was an invader of the British Isles, who settled in Kent, England, and was the progenitor of the Ensing family and probably the same family found in New England as Ensign. Early English records speak of the family as ancient and honorable, but small. Its seat was at Chilham, Kent County, England, not far from Canterbury. In the vicinity occur these names: Ensden Wood; Ensden, etc.; a village name, a contraction of Ensingden. Thus it would appear that the earliest came to make his home in a wooded vale called in Old England a "den." In the reign of Richard II (1394-95) Richard de Signe, son of William de Signe, held a manor called Ensigne's Manor. A younger branch of the family was seated at Windham in Norfolk County, an old Saxon locality. It is not a proved fact, but one highly probable that Thomas and James Ensign, of New England, were of this old line. We find in the lists of those bearing this name, men who have been of steady, dependable character, aiding in establishing colonial affairs, as well as active in later developments of the country. Inter-marriage with the Otis family brought a strong combination to the growth of the Plymouth Colony.

(W. I. Morse: "Genealogiæ," pp. 87, 88. "New England Register," Vol. II, pp. 284-85.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. *Thomas Ensign* was born in England and died in 1663 (inventory of estate, February 17, 1663—£71, 9s.). He purchased land in Scituate, Massachusetts, in 1640, and a house and additional acres in 1642. He was one of the Cohasset partners in 1646. Thomas Ensign was of Duxbury in 1656. It is thought that he was kinsman of James Ensign, who came with Rev. Thomas Hooker's company. While no proof exists, it is possible. In both families intermarriages were made with Shepherd families.

Thomas Ensign married, January 17, 1638, Elizabeth Wilder, daughter of widow Martha Wilder, of Hingham, Massachusetts. Widow Martha Wilder had a grant of land in Hingham in 1638 (five acres and other lots). She was from Shiplock, Oxfordshire, England, and brought her daughters, Mary and Elizabeth, with her, probably. "Widow Martha" died in Hingham, Massachusetts, April 20, 1652.

(G. Lincoln: "History of Hingham, Massachusetts," Vol. III, p. 312. S. Deane: "History of Scituate, Massachusetts," p. 266. J. Winsor: "History of Duxbury, Massachusetts," p. 257. "New England Register," Vol. VI, p. 185.)

Children: 1. John, died in 1676, killed in the Rehoboth battle by Indians. He married, before 1669, and his wife, whose name is unknown, died before him. John's only daughter, Hannah, married Stephen Otis, and had a son, Ensign Otis. Three Ensign Otises have occupied the original Ensign homestead in Scituate, Massachusetts. 2. Hannah, of whom further. 3. Elizabeth; married Nicholas Wade, of Scituate, Massachusetts.

(S. Deane: "History of Scituate, Massachusetts," pp. 266-70. "New England Register," Vol. II, pp. 284-85.)

II. *Hannah Ensign*, daughter of Thomas and Elizabeth (Wilder) Ensign, was baptized July 6, 1640, at Hingham, Massachusetts, and died March 14, 1697-98, aged fifty-nine. She married, November 19, 1658, Thomas Shepard. (Shepard II.)

(T. B. Wyman: "Charlestown, Massachusetts, Genealogies," Vol. II, p. 860. G. Lincoln: "History of Hingham, Massachusetts," Vol. II, p. 213.)

(The Spragg (Sprague) Line)

Arms—Or, three rose leaves in pale vert between two palets azure, a chief gules.

Crest—A sword in pale proper on the point thereof, suspended, a crown of olive or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

Spragg, or Spraggs, was the original form of this surname. It had its origin in a nickname, "the spragg," meaning the quick, the nimble,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

as did the name Sprake. Sprake seems to be an older form, as William Spraket is found in Somerset in the time of Edward III, while the earliest record of a Spragg available is of Ralph Spragg, of Knutsford, Cheshire, in 1632.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. William Sprague, the immigrant ancestor of this branch of the American family, was born in England and came to Massachusetts during the early period of the settlement of that colony. He is supposed to have been a younger brother of Ralph Sprague, of Charlestown, who came in 1629, bringing certainly a brother, Richard, and probably also William. They were probably sons of Edward Sprague, of Upway, in Devonshire. William Sprague is recorded in Hingham, Massachusetts, in 1636; he later removed to Marshfield, but soon returned to Hingham, and died October 26, 1675.

William Sprague married, in 1635, Millicent Eames, probably daughter of Anthony Eames; she died February 8, 1696. Children: 1. Anthony, baptized May 23, 1636. 2. John, born in 1638. 3. Samuel, born in 1640. 4. Elizabeth, born in 1641. 5. Persis, born in 1643; married John Doggett. 6. Jonathan, born in 1643, died at age of four. 7. Joanna, of whom further. 8. Jonathan, born in 1648. 9. William, born May 7, 1650. 10. Mary, born in 1652. 11. Hannah, born February 25, 1655.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. IV, pp. 154, 156).

II. Joanna Sprague, daughter of William and Millicent (Eames) Sprague, was born in 1644. She married, December 16, 1667, Caleb Church. (Church II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Warren Line)

Arms—Gules, a lion rampant argent a chief chequy or and azure.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet a demi-wivern wings expanded.

Motto—*Pro patria mori.*

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

In interest and antiquity the history of the Warren family is exceeded by that of no other in England. The surname Warren is of Norman-French origin and is derived from Garenne, or Gareme, a small river in the old county of Galilas, or Caux, in Normandy, which gave its name to the neighboring commune. There is at present a village called Garenne in the same district, and it is here that the

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

origin of the family has been fixed by historians. The ancient baronial seat of the de Warrenes stood on the west side of the River Garenne, and as late as the year 1832 some of the ruins were standing. The surname has assumed different forms from time to time—Gareyn, Warreyn, Waryn, Warin, Waring, Warynge, Waryng, and Warren. It first appears in England with William de Warrenne, a Norman nobleman, who came to England with William the Conqueror, and was related to him both by marriage and common ancestry. The Warrens of England stand high in the historic annals of the history of all periods, and are allied by intermarriage with many of the illustrious noble families whose valor and idealism have carried through the long years of English history.

I. Richard Warren came to the American Colonies in the historic "Mayflower" Company, which founded Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1620, although he was not of the Leyden company. The register at the end of Governor Bradford's folio manuscript gives him the honorable prefix of "Mr." He was mentioned by a contemporary as "grave Richard Warren, a man of integrity, justice and uprightness, of piety and serious religion"; and also "as a useful instrument during the short time he lived, bearing a deep share in the difficulties and troubles of the plantation." He received land grants in common with his associates, and one of these grants was at Warren's Grove. He was one of the influential members of the company, and as such was selected with nine others to cruise along the coast from Cape Cod Harbor in a shallop for the purpose of deciding a place of settlement. His death occurred at Plymouth in 1628. His wife, Elizabeth, whom he married in England, followed him to America in the ship "Ann," in 1623, bringing with her their five daughters. She occupied an important social position in the colony, and is usually mentioned in the records as Mistress Elizabeth Warren, a designation by no means common. Here is one of the rare instances in any early colony of continued widowhood. Upon the marriage of her daughters, she conveyed to their husbands certain lands, variously located at Eel River and Wellingsly. She died at Plymouth, October 2, 1673, aged about ninety years. Children: 1. Mary, born in England, came to Plymouth, Massachusetts, in the "Ann," in July, 1623, died after 1676. She married, in 1628, Robert Bartlett, a fellow passenger of the "Ann." 2. Ann, born in England, about 1612, came in the "Ann" to Plymouth; married, April 19, 1633,

On the 6th of September, 1620, in the Mayoralty of Thomas Fozner, after being kindly entertained and courteously used by divers Friends there dwelling, the Pilgrim Fathers sailed from Plymouth in the *Mayflower*, in the Providence of God to settle in **NEW PLYMOUTH** and to lay the Foundation of the **NEW ENGLAND STATES**. The ancient Causey whence they embarked was destroyed not many Years afterwards, but the Site of their Embarkation is marked by the Stone bearing the name of the **MAYFLOWER** in the pavement of the adjacent Pier. This Tablet was erected in the Mayoralty of J. T. Bond 1891, to commemorate their Departure, and the visit to Plymouth in July of that Year of a number of their Descendants and Representatives.



Engd by Campbell N.Y.

COMMEMORATIVE STONE AND TABLET ON THE BARBICAN,
PLYMOUTH, ENGLAND

IN YE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

We whole names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread fovereigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, etc., having undertaken for ye glory of God and advancement of ye Christian faith, and honour of our King and countrie, a voyage to plant ye first Colonie in ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly, and mutually, in ye presence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politik for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of ye end aforesaid, and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute and frame such just and equal lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and convenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witnes whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our fovereigne Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, ye eighteenth, and of Scotland ye fiftie-fourth. Ano Dom. 1620.

- | | | |
|------------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| 1. John Carver, | 15. Edward Tilley, | 29. Degory Priest, |
| 2. William Bradford, | 16. John Tilley, | 30. Thomas Williams, |
| 3. Edward Winslow, | 17. Francis Cooke, | 31. Gilbert Winslow, |
| 4. William Brewster, | 18. Thomas Rogers, | 32. Edmund Margeson, |
| 5. Isaac Allerton, | 19. Thomas Tinker, | 33. Peter Brown, |
| 6. Myles Standish, | 20. John Rigdale, | 34. Richard Britteridge, |
| 7. John Alden, | 21. Edward Fuller, | 35. George Soule, |
| 8. Samuel Fuller, | 22. John Turner, | 36. Richard Clarke, |
| 9. Christopher Martin, | 23. Francis Eaton, | 37. Richard Gardiner, |
| 10. William Mullins, | 24. James Chilton, | 38. John Allerton, |
| 11. William White, | 25. John Crackston, | 39. Thomas English, |
| 12. Richard Warren, | 26. John Billington, | 40. Edward Dotey, |
| 13. John Howland, | 27. Moses Fletcher, | 41. Edward Lister, |
| 14. Stephen Hopkins, | 28. John Goodman, | |



Engr'd by Campbell. N. 3.

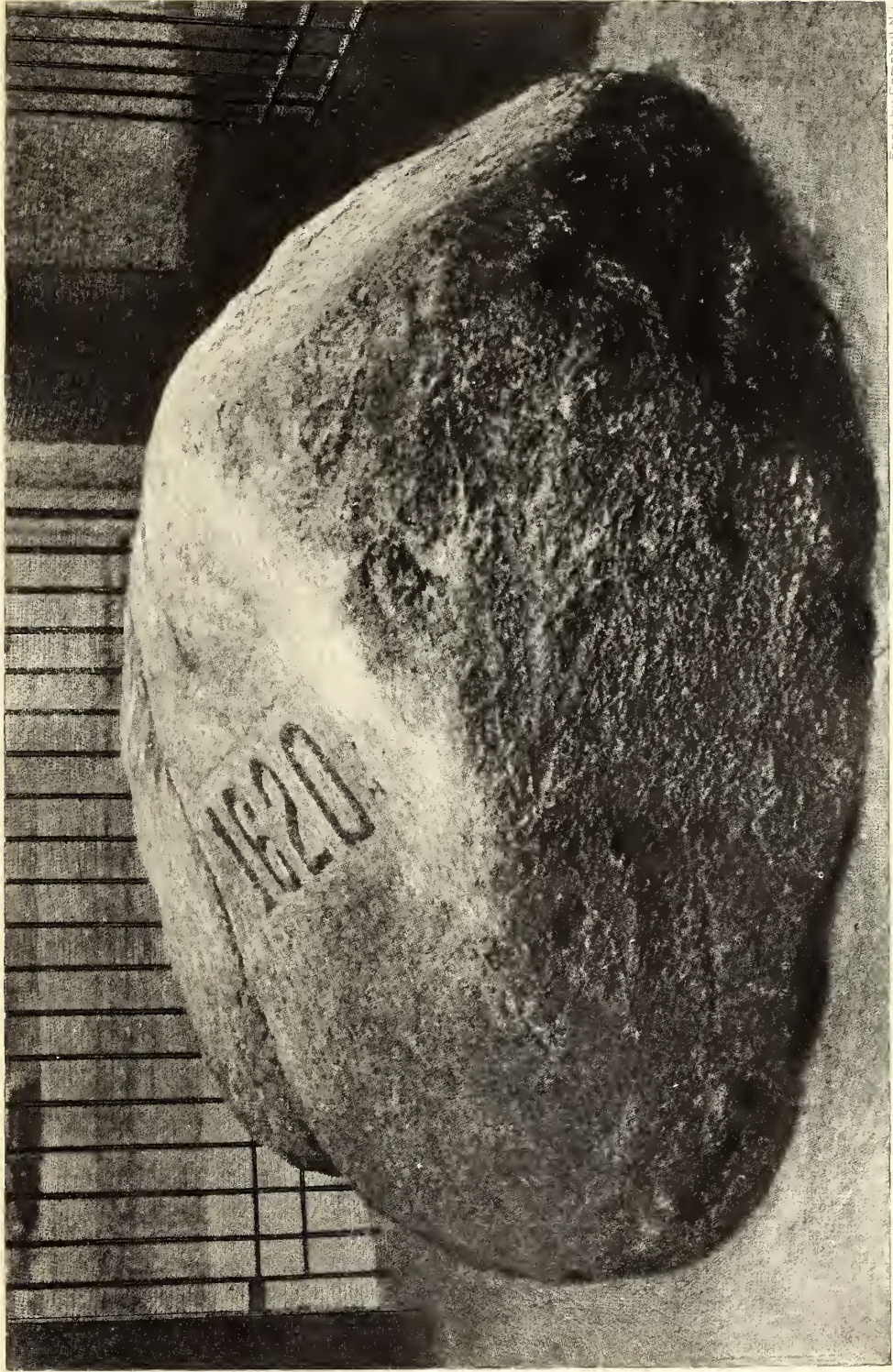
EMBARKATION OF THE PILGRIMS



SIGNING OF THE COMPACT
IN THE CABIN OF THE MAYFLOWER, 1620



LANDING OF THE PILGRIMS



Eng'd by Campbell N.

PLYMOUTH ROCK



International Photo

PILGRIM FATHERS WATCHING THE MAYFLOWER



STORE HOUSE.

P. BROWN. J. GOODMAN.

W. BREWSTER. J. BILLINGTON. I. ALLERTON. F. COOKE. E. WINSLOW.

GOV^R BRADFORD. OLD FORT.

PLYMOUTH IN 1622

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Thomas Little, of Plymouth, and lived in Marshfield. 3. Sarah, born in England, came to Plymouth in the "Ann"; married, March 28, 1634, John Cooke, who later settled at Dartmouth, Massachusetts, and was the last survivor of the "Mayflower" passengers. 4. Elizabeth, of whom further. 5. Abigail, born in England and came in the "Ann," died after 1685, or after 1692. She married, November 8, 1639, Anthony Snow, of Plymouth, and later Marshfield, Massachusetts. 6. Nathaniel, born in Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1624-25, and died (probably) there, in October, 1677. He married, November 19, 1645, Sarah Walker, who died in Plymouth, Massachusetts, November 24, 1700. 7. Joseph, born before March 22, 1627, at Plymouth, Massachusetts, died there, May 4, 1689; married, in 1651-52, Priscilla Faunce, daughter of John Faunce.

(Samuel Putnam Avery: "The Warren, Little, and Lothrop Pedigrees." John Collins: "The Warren Genealogy." Roebing: "Richard Warren of the Mayflower," pp. 4-5, 6, 8, 9-10, 12. Ames: "The Log of the Mayflower," pp. 149-65, 168-80. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LV, p. 7.)

II. *Elizabeth Warren*, daughter of Richard and Elizabeth Warren, was born in England, and came to America in the "Ann." She died in Hingham, Massachusetts, March 4, 1670. She married, at Plymouth, Massachusetts, about 1635-36, Richard Church. (Church I.)

(Roebing: "Richard Warren of the Mayflower," p. 8.)

(The Perry Line)

Arms—Quarterly, gules and or, on a bend argent three lions passant azure.

Crest—A hind's head erased or, holding in the mouth a sprig of pear tree vert, fructed proper. (Matthews: "American Armoury.")

Bardsley, in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," gives two possible derivations of this surname. First, Perry is a local name designating residence "at the pery," or pear-tree. This is substantiated by the fact that the name frequently appeared in the early records preceded by *atte* and *de la*. Chaucer contributes the following:

And thus I let him sitting in the pery,
And January and May roming ful mery.

The second possible origin of this surname may have been from the baptismal name Perry, "the son of Perry," a diminutive of Peter, from the old French Pierre, which was rendered popular in England as Perry. We find the following names registered in the old records:

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

In the Hundred Rolls of 1273, John Pery, of Oxfordshire; Richard de la Pirie and Walter atte Pyrie, also of Oxfordshire, and Roger de la Peyre, of County Cambridge.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Anthony Perry was born in England in 1615 and was buried March 1, 1682-83, leaving a will recorded at Plymouth. He came to America in 1640, and soon after his arrival located at Rehoboth, Massachusetts, where he acquired a large landed property, and represented the town in the General Assembly of the colony. In 1675, he contributed liberally to the support of King Philip's War. Anthony Perry married Elizabeth. Children: 1. Samuel, born December 10, 1648; married, December 12, 1678, Mary Miller (or Millard). 2. Elizabeth, born October 25, 1650; married, May 29, 1674, Stephen Burph. 3. Johaziel, born October 18, 1652; buried in September, 1676. 4. Mary, born December 9, 1654; married, July 17, 1681, Thomas Kendrick. 5. Mehitable, born September 23, 1657; buried in September, 1676. 6. Nathaniel, of whom further.

(G. H. Tilton: "Rehoboth, Massachusetts," pp. 371, 374. "Rehoboth Vital Records," pp. 301, 715, 865.)

II. Nathaniel Perry, son of Anthony and Elizabeth Perry, was born at Rehoboth, October 8, 1660. He married, May 17, 1683, Sarah Carpenter, born in 1663-64. (Carpenter V.) Children, double dating used in months affected by subsequent change in calendar: 1. Anthony, born March 7, 1683-84, buried January 29, 1685. 2. Anthony, born April 11, 1686, died April 23, 1703. 3. Sarah, of whom further. 4. Nathaniel, born April 2, 1691; married (intention), October 25, 1714, Patience Butterworth. 5. Patience, born January 21, 1695-96; married, March 1, 1715, Samuel Butterworth. 6. Jacob, born August 21, 1698. 7. John, born March 11, 1700-01; married, November 23, 1721, Mary Newsome.

("Rehoboth Vital Records," pp. 301, 489, 715, 865.)

III. Sarah Perry, daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah (Carpenter) Perry, was born at Rehoboth, October 6, 1688. She married Jacob Ide. (Ide IV.)

(*Ibid.*)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Carpenter Line)

Arms—Argent a greyhound passant, and chief sable.

Crest—A greyhound's head, erased per fesse sable and argent.

Motto—*Celeritas, virtus, fidelitas.*

(Amos B. Carpenter: "A Genealogical History of the Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family.")

In his volume, the "Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family," published in 1898, Amos Carpenter gives early ancestry for the Carpenter family, but later search seems to place much of this early material in the realm of conjecture. Daniel H. Carpenter, in his "Carpenter Family in America" (Providence, Rhode Island branch), published three years later than the book of Amos B. Carpenter, says: "Each of our three Carpenter families (Providence, Rehoboth, Philadelphia) has undisputed proof of at least one generation on English soil previous to the emigration to America; beyond that there is a hiatus of more than a century which can only be filled by conjecture." This would seem to allow the following as authentic:

I. William Carpenter, of England, had several children, namely:
1. James, who inherited the estate of his father. 2. Alexander, born about 1560, was a Dissenter and on account of religious persecution removed with his family to Leyden, Holland. His only son was probably William, of Cobham. 3. William, of whom further. 4. Richard, was the father of William Carpenter, who came to America in 1636, settled in Providence, Rhode Island, with Roger Williams, and is known as the progenitor of the Providence branch.

(Amos Carpenter: "Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family," p. 34.)

II. William Carpenter, Jr., son of William Carpenter, was born in 1576, and was a carpenter by trade. He rented certain tenements and gardens in Houndsdith in 1625 to him demised for forty-one years with a covenant to build within five years, which tenements and gardens were heretofore conveyed to the city's use for the support of the Carpenter Free School by John Carpenter, town clerk of London. This William, the progenitor of the Rehoboth family, came over in the ship "Bevis" with his son, William, son's wife, Abigail, and their children. The earliest record of unquestioned authenticity, relating to his family, is as follows: "Southampton.—The list of the names of Pas-seng^s Intended to shipe themselves, In the Beuis of Hampton of CL. Tounes, Robert Batten M^r for Newengland, And thus by vertue of the

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Lord Treasurers warrant of the second of may w^{ch} was after the restraynt and they some Dayes gone to sea Before the Kinges Mat^{es} Proclamacon Came Unto South'ton."

No. of persons	Ages
8 } William Carpenter 62
} William Carpenter, Jun. } of Horwell Carpent ^{rs}	33
} Abigail Carpenter and fower children 10 and under...	32
} Tho: Banshott, servt.....	14

Endorsed: "Southton, 1638. The Cert. and list of the Passeng^{rs} names gone for New England in the Bevis of Hampton, in May, 1638."

The statement was made, in 1860, that Horwell, above, probably should be Horil, and that "there is a Horil in Hamshire, near Lington."

That the aforesaid William Carpenter, aged sixty-two in 1638, and therefore born about 1576, was identical with William Carpenter, of Weymouth, Massachusetts, and that the aforesaid William Carpenter, Jun., aged thirty-three in 1638, and therefore born about 1605, was identical with William Carpenter, of Rehoboth, Massachusetts, is a genealogical fact of general acceptance. There is, however, a disagreement of opinion regarding the elder of the Williams. Mr. Savage, in his "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," states that he died in 1659-60, leaving children, John, William, Joseph, Abijah, Samuel, Hannah, Abigail, but the compiler of the "Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family" states, nearly two-score years after the publication of Mr. Savage's work, that William, the elder, born in 1576, "returned in the same vessel in which he came over." This author also, after many years of search and inquiry, assigns the will of 1659-60 to the younger William Carpenter, born in 1605, and gives his children as John, William, Joseph, Hannah, Abiah, Abigail, Samuel. According to the latter, and probably correct version, nothing further is known of the elder William or his descendants in the New World with the exception of his son, William, and the latter's descendants. William Carpenter, the elder, had a son: 1. William, of whom further.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XIV, p. 336; Vol. LXXIII (1919), p. 111; Vol. LXXVIII (1924), p. 105. J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. I (1860), p. 337. Amos Carpenter: "Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family," p. 38.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. William (3) Carpenter, son of William Carpenter, who at the age of sixty-two came to New England in 1638 and soon returned to England, was born, probably in England, about 1605, and died in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, February 7, 1659. He was admitted a freeman of Weymouth, Massachusetts, May 13, 1640; was representative of Weymouth in 1641 and 1643, and from the town of Rehoboth in 1645; in June of the latter year he was made a freeman of Rehoboth. In 1645, William Carpenter with others was chosen to look after the interests of the town; the same year he was chosen by the town to represent them in the Court at Plymouth. In 1647, he was chosen as one of the directors of the town, and again in 1655. In 1653, is the first time that his name was written as William Carpenter, Sr. His son, William, would be twenty-one at this date, and was a resident of the town. About 1642 he was commissioned captain by the General Court of Massachusetts.

The land of William Carpenter, of Weymouth, was described on the town records, about 1642-44, in considerable detail; it included two acres in the west field, four acres in the mill field, eighteen acres near the fresh pond, three acres, four acres, and four acres, all in "Harises Rainge," and two acres of fresh marsh.

"William Carpenter, Sr., of Rehoboth," made his will "10th month 10th day" (probably December 10, 1658); it was proved April 21, 1659. He bequeathed to his son, John, "one mare, being the old white mare, and my best dublet, and my handsomest coat, and new cloth to make him a pair of breeches," "twenty shillings to buy him a calf," and a number of books. Bequests to his other children included various parcels of land, a number of horses, colts, oxen, steers, sheep, also Latin, Greek and Hebrew books.

William Carpenter married, probably in England, Abigail, who died February 22, 1687; her husband's will shows clearly that she, "mother" of Joseph, who was born in England, was living in 1658. Children: 1. John, born in England, about 1628; died probably at Jamaica, Long Island, New York, May 23, 1695; married Hannah, probably Hannah Hope; title of captain when made captain of the Jamaica Fusileers, defended Fort James, New York, against the fleet of the Prince of Orange at the time of the recapture of New York by the Dutch. 2. William, born about 1631-32, died January 26, 1703; married (first), October 5, 1651, Priscilla Bennett; (second), Febru-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ary 10, 1663-64, Miriam Sale. 3. Joseph, born probably about 1633, died in May, 1675; married, May 25, 1655, Margaret Sutton. 4. Hannah, born at Weymouth, April 3, 1640; married Joseph Carpenter. 5. Abiah (twin), born at Weymouth, April 9, 1643, died before 1702. 6. Abigail (twin), born at Weymouth, April 9, 1643; married, in 1659, John Titus. 7. Samuel, of whom further.

(Amos Carpenter: "Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family" (1898), pp. 38-50. "Weymouth, Historical Society Publications," No. 2, pp. 254, 278. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LXV, p. 65.)

IV. Samuel Carpenter, son of William and Abigail Carpenter, was born in 1644, and died February 20, 1682-83. He was one of the purchasers in the North Purchase of Rehoboth, and land was allotted to him in the division of February 5, 1671. He gave £11 19s. 5d. towards the expense of King Philip's War. His estate was valued at £58 16s. 6d. Samuel Carpenter married, May 25, 1660, Sarah Readaway, of Rehoboth, who married (second) Gilbert Brooks. Children: 1. Samuel, born September 15, 1661, died January 17, 1736; married, January 8, 1683, Patience Ide; a lieutenant in the militia. 2. Sarah, of whom further. 3. Abiah, born February 10, 1665-66, died April 28, 1732; married (first), May 30, 1690, Mehitable Read; he married (second), June 7, 1702, Sarah Read; he married (third), July 16, 1726, Mary Ormsby; a wheelwright; an ensign in the militia. 4. James, born April 12, 1668, died April 27, 1738; married, June 26, 1690, Dorothy Bliss. 5. Jacob, born September 5, 1670, probably died while on the Canadian expedition of 1690. 6. Jonathan, born December 11, 1672, died August 23, 1716; married, March 13, 1699, Hannah French. 7. David, born April 17, 1675, died July 26, 1701. 8. Solomon, born December 23, 1677, died at South Kingston, in 1750; married, in 1696, Elizabeth Tefft. 9. Zachariah, born July 1, 1680, died April 8, 1718; married, November 8, 1705, Martha Ide. (Ide III—third child.) 10. Abraham, born September 20, 1682, died April 22, 1758; married, May 1, 1705, Abiall, or Abigail, Bullard.

(A. B. Carpenter: "Genealogical History of Rehoboth Branch of Carpenter Family," pp. 48-50, 59-60.)

V. Sarah Carpenter, daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Readaway) Carpenter, was born January 11, 1663-64. The following is a joint

PERRY

Arms—Quarterly, gules and or, on a bend argent three lions passant azure.

Crest—A hind's head erased or, holding in the mouth a sprig of pear tree vert, fructed proper.

(Matthews: "American Armoury.")

CARPENTER

Arms—Argent a greyhound passant, and chief sable.

Crest—A greyhound's head, erased per fesse sable and argent.

Motto—*Celeritas, virtus, fidelitas.*

(Amos B. Carpenter: "A Genealogical History of the Rehoboth Branch of the Carpenter Family.")

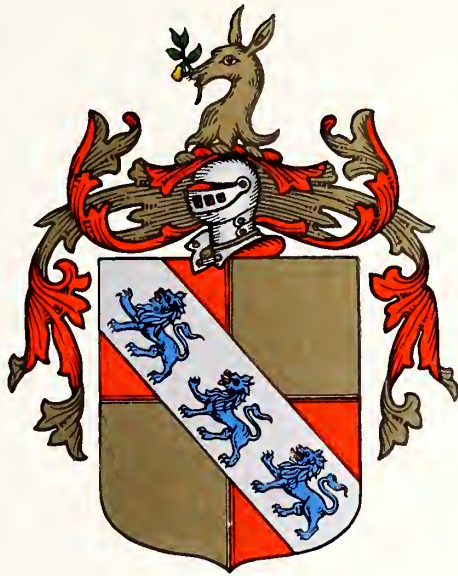
PLATE

Plate—Quarterly, gules and or, on a bend argent three lions pas-
sant guard.
Crest—A hand holding a sword, or holding in the mouth a spray of
pear tree root, fincted proper.

(Motto: "American Armour.")

CARPENTER

Coat—Argent a griffon passant, and chief sable.
Crest—A griffon's head, erased per fesse sable and argent.
Motto—(Latin) *corax castor fidelitas*.
(Amos B. Carpenter: "A Genealogical History of the Rehoboth
Branch of the Carpenter Family.")



Perry



Carpenter

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

claim to the estate of Samuel Carpenter, Nathaniel Perry's father-in-law:

Received of William Carpenter and my mother-in-law, Sarah Carpenter, and my brother-in-law, Samuel Carpenter, administrators to the estate of Samuel Carpenter, deceased, the full sum of 24 lbs. and 10 shillings in several goods and coin and money which was my wife's portion, of which I do hereby acquit and discharge them, their heirs, executors, or administrators. In Witness, I have set my hand this 21st day of December, Anno 1683.

NATHANIEL PERRY.

Sarah Carpenter married Nathaniel Perry. (Perry II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Bacon Line)

Arms—Azure, three boars passant or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Concerning the family name Bacon, M. A. Lower, in his "Patronymica Britannica," has the following account to give: "A seigniorie in Normandy. According to the genealogy of the great Suffolk family of Bacon, one Grimbald, a relative of the Norman chieftain William de Warenne, came into England at the Conquest, and settled near Holt. His great-grandson is stated to have taken the name of Bacon. This was only a resumption of an ancient Norman surname, which is still existing in the North of France. William Bacon, in 1082, endowed the abbey of the Holy Trinity at Caen—Taylor's 'Roman de Rou.' The name is in the Battle Roll, and in the H. R. it is written variously Bachun, Bacun, and Bacon. In some instances the surname may be a corruption of Beacon. From their connection with Bayeux, the Bacons were sometimes Latinized De Bajocis."

The name was early used, as John le Bacon is in Excerpta e Rotulis Finium in Turri Londinensi; Wymer Bacon is in the Hundred Rolls of County Suffolk, A. D. 1273, and Cecilia Bacon in those of County Norfolk at the same date.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. The will of Thomas Bacon was proved at Helmingham, County Norfolk, February 28, 1535, in which he makes bequest to "Johan my wyff," and children. His widow died in 1540; will proved December 12, 1540. Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Thomas, died in 1557; wife Agnes died in 1580. 3. Anne; married a Dow. 4. Elizabeth.

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(T. W. Baldwin: "Bacon Genealogy. Michael Bacon, of Dedham, Massachusetts" (1640), p. 14. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LVI, pp. 364-74.)

II. John Bacon, son of Thomas and Johan Bacon, was born at Helmingham, County Norfolk, England; will proved March 19, 1557. He married Margaret. Children: 1. William. 2. Thomas. 3. Michael (Mihell), of whom further. 4. Richard. 5. Barbara. 6. Rose. 7. William.

(T. W. Baldwin: "Bacon Genealogy" (1640), p. 14.)

III. Michael (Mihell) Bacon, son of John and Margaret Bacon, was born in Helmingham, County Norfolk, England, and was buried March 25, 1615. He lived at Winston, County Suffolk, and married (first), August 16, 1565, Elizabeth Wylie; he married (second), September 20, 1607, widow Grace Blowersis.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 16-17.)

Children: 1. John, baptized May 31, 1566. 2. William. 3. Thomas. 4. Michael, of whom further. 5. Elizabeth, baptized September 3, 1584. 6. Sarah; married Daniel Yorke.

(*Ibid.*, p. 17.)

(The Family in America)

I. Michael Bacon, Jr., son of Michael (Mihell) and Elizabeth (Wylie) Bacon, was born at Winston, County Suffolk, England, and baptized December 6, 1579. He died in Dedham, Massachusetts, April 18, 1648. In 1633, he is one of the signers of the Dedham, Massachusetts, agreement, but he returned to England, where he is a subscriber in the ship money returns for County Suffolk, March 27, 1640, but soon took passage by way of Ireland, and is mentioned in a vote in Dedham town meeting, May 26, 1640, and is promised a grant of upland and meadow at Bogastowe. Michael Bacon married Alice, who died April 2, 1648, at Dedham, Massachusetts. Children, born in England: 1. Michael, 3d, born about 1608, died July 4, 1688; on Charlestown Town Orders for proposed town of Woburn, Massachusetts, December 18, 1640. He married (first) Mary, who died August 26, 1655; he married (second), October 26, 1655, Mary Richardson, widow of Thomas Richardson. She died May 19, 1670, and Michael Bacon married (third), November 28, 1670, Mary (Hames)

BACON

Arms—Azure, three boars passant or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

VALE (FALES)

Arms—Per fess argent and azure, three lions passant counter-changed.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

HAYWARD

Arms—Argent, a bull's head gules between three mullets sable.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

BUTTERWORTH

Arms—Sable, a cross engrailed between four plumbs argent.

Crest—A sphere resting on a cloud proper.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

ESTEN

Arms—Or, a cross pattée azure five martlets argent on a chief of the second a fleur-de-lis of the first between two plates, each charged with a billet azure.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

BROWNELL

Arms—Ermine, on a chevron cotised sable, three escallops argent.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet a triple plume of feathers, five, four and three.

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

BACON

17m--A large three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")

VALL (BATES)

17m--A large arrow and eagle three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")

HAYWARD

17m--A large arrow and eagle three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")

BUTTERWORTH

17m--A large arrow and eagle three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")

ESTER

17m--A large arrow and eagle three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")

BROWNELL

17m--A large arrow and eagle three-pointed arrow
(Burke, "General Armory")



Bacon



Dale
(Fales)



Hayward



Butterworth



Esten



Brownell

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Noyes, widow of Thomas Noyes, and daughter of Walter and Eliza Hames. 2. Daniel, born about 1615, died in Newton, Massachusetts, September 7, 1691; original proprietor of Woburn, 1640. He married Mary Read, who died October 4, 1691. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Alice, died March 29, 1648; married, March 31, 1647, Thomas Bancroft, born in England, in 1622, son of John and Jane Bancroft, of Dedham, Massachusetts. 5. Sarah, died in 1652; married, April 14, 1648, Anthony Hubbard, of Dedham.

(T. W. Baldwin: "Bacon Genealogy" (1640), pp. 24-25, 28. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LVI, pp. 364-74.)

II. John Bacon, son of Michael and Alice Bacon, was born in England, and died in Dedham, Massachusetts, June 17, 1683. He was very prominent in public affairs of Dedham; chosen surveyor in 1656, and several times later; served in Captain Timothy Dwight's company in King Philip's War, and was stationed in a garrison at Wrentham. He was constable in 1677. John Bacon married, February 17, 1651, Rebecca Hall, of Dedham, who died October 27, 1694.

(T. W. Baldwin: "Bacon Genealogy" (1640), pp. 153-59.)

Children, born in Dedham, Massachusetts: 1. Mary; married, October 16, 1673, Nathaniel Kingsbury. 2. John, born July 17, 1656, died October 27, 1732; married, December 15, 1683, Lydia Dewing, daughter of Andrew Dewing, of Dedham. She married (second) Joseph Draper, Jr. 3. Rebecca, born December 10, 1658; married, February 13, 1678, John Gay. 4. Daniel, born March 10, 1660-61, died October 27, 1694; married, April 21, 1685, Elizabeth Martin, probably daughter of Richard Martin. She died April 21, 1700. 5. Sarah, born March 31, 1663; married John Ellis. 6. Samuel, born October 8, 1665, died in Needham, Massachusetts, November 26, 1743; married, July 3, 1705, Elizabeth Ackers, of Roxbury, Massachusetts, who died September 24, 1730. He married (second), July 26, 1732, widow Rebecca Boyden. 7. Thomas, of whom further. 8. Susanna, born January 18, 1668; married, January 7, 1692, Jonathan Dewing, born April 3, 1663. 9. Stephen, born August 21, 1677, died February 8, 1766; married, January 6, 1704, Mary Loker, daughter of John and Sarah (Rice) Loker. She died June 18, 1767.

(*Ibid.*, p. 163.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Thomas Bacon, son of John and Rebecca (Hall) Bacon, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, August 23, 1667, and died in Wrentham, Massachusetts, April 10, 1749. He removed to Wrentham soon after his marriage and is on record among the planters there, 1693. He married (first), January 22, 1691, Hannah Vales (Fales). (Fales II.) He married (second), July 16, 1746, Mary Fisher, who died March 25, 1750, aged seventy-five. Children of first marriage, born in Wrentham: 1. Thomas, born November 26, 1693, died April 10, 1749. He married, October 3, 1711, Esther Thurston, who died August 1, 1713. He married (second) Deborah (Fales) Pond. 2. Hannah, born April 25, 1697, died October 23, 1754; married, December 13, 1717, Robert Pond, who died April 3, 1755. 3. James, born October 28, 1700, died June 17, 1786; married, February 8, 1725-26, Mercy Man, daughter of Josiah and Zipporah Man. She died July 13, 1791, aged eighty-five. 4. Martha, of whom further. 5. Jacob, born September 9, 1706, died in Rowley, Massachusetts, August 14, 1787; married, June 27, 1749, Mary Wood, died February 17, 1772, daughter of Dr. David Wood. He married (second), in Dorchester, Massachusetts, October 25, 1774, Mary Whitney, who died March 6, 1815. 6. John, born April 22, 1710, died in 1806; married Mary.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 166-67.)

IV. Martha Bacon, daughter of Thomas and Hannah (Vales) (Fales) Bacon, was born October 8, 1703, and died April 3, 1800. She married John Shepard. (Shepard IV.)

(*Ibid.* "Wrentham, Massachusetts, Vital Records," Vol. II, p. 245.)

(The Vale (Fales) Line)

Arms—Per fess argent and azure, three lions passant counterchanged.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

The English surname Vale, or Fale, originated to designate a resident in a vale. John del Vale is in Freemen of York, 1291 A. D., Hugh and Robertus de Vale, in Placita de Quo Warranto, 1293. George Vale was baptized in London, in 1655.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. James Vales (Fales), of England, was settled in Dedham, Massachusetts, as early as 1651, when he is found in the selectmen's records

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

as an inhabitant to be called to the general town meeting. He received his first grant of land and built his first house in southeastern Dedham on the present Cedar Street, but as early as 1663 removed to what is now the centre of the town of Walpole, where he was the first settler. He died July 10, 1708. He married, July 28, 1655, Ann Brock, younger daughter of Henry and Elizabeth Brock, of Dedham. (Brock II.) The earlier spelling of the name is Vales. His signature of May 3, 1665, has Vayles, but in 1662 Fales; in his deed of July 14, 1705, to his son, Ebenezer, it is Fale; in the second and third generations the name settles to Fales. The Brock family, says Mather, came from Stradbrook in Suffolk, 1637. Children, born in Dedham, Massachusetts: 1. James, born July 4, 1656, died March 4, 1741-42; married Deborah Fisher. 2. John, born October 5, 1658; married Abigail Hawes. 3. Mary, born August 30, 1664. 4. Peter, born in 1668 (probably); married Abigail Robbins. 5. Hannah, of whom further. 6. Martha, born October 28, 1675; married, May 7, 1701, Joseph Cowell. 7. Rachel, born June 19, 1680. 8. Ebenezer, born March 1, 1681-82; married (first) Deborah; (second) Sarah.

(De C. Fales: "The Fales Family of Bristol, Rhode Island," pp. 9-22. "Dedham, Massachusetts, Records," Vol. I, Births, Marriages and Deaths, pp. 6, 7, 9, 13, 14, 16, 18.)

II. *Hannah Vales (Fales)*, daughter of James and Ann (Brock) Vales, was born in Dedham, Massachusetts, January 16, 1672-73, and died at Wrentham, Massachusetts, April 20, 1711. She married Thomas Bacon. (Bacon III.)

(The Hayward Line)

Arms—Argent, a bull's head gules between three mullets sable.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

In the days of simpler village life in Old England, many of the old time occupations, now long disused, were of particular value in the life of the community. Of such was the work of the hay-ward or hedge-watcher, from which the surname Hayward was adopted in that far off day when the assuming of surnames became general. The hay-ward or hedge-watcher kept the common or village herds from straying. The name was early found, as might be expected, in various sections. Adam le Hayward is in the Hundred Rolls of County Devon, A. D. 1273; Robertus Hayward in the Poll Tax of Yorkshire, 1379.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. *William Hayward* was born in England. He was in Braintree, Massachusetts, in 1648, with his wife Margery. He was drowned May 10, 1659. In abstracts from the earliest wills on record in the county of Suffolk, Massachusetts, by William B. Trask, of Dorchester, is found the following:

Inventory of the goods & lands of William Hayward, of Brantree, late deceased, taken 8 July 1659, by Henry Kingman, John Rogers, John French. Am^t £195.05.06. 14 June 1659. Power of Administracon granted to Margery, his late wife, in behalfe selfe & Children. Margery Heywood deposed.

Children of William and Margery Hayward, all, or most all, born in England: 1. Jonathan; married, May 6, 1663, Sarah Thayer, and had fourteen children at Braintree. 2. Hannah. 3. Huldah; married, 14, 11, 1652, Ferdinando Thayer. 4. Mary; married, in 1651, Samuel Deering, and died July 1, 1657. 5. Sarah. 6. William, of whom further. 7. Samuel, of Mendon, died July 29, 1713.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. IX, p. 346; Vol. XLI, p. 193; Vol. XLV, p. 313. "Records of Braintree, Massachusetts," p. 715.)

II. *William Hayward, Jr.*, son of William and Margery Hayward, died in Mendon, Massachusetts, December 17, 1717. He married, in Swansea, Massachusetts, Sarah Butterworth. (Butterworth II.) Children: 1. Jonathan, born April 8, 1672. 2. Margery, born September 10, 1673. 3. Sarah, born March 2, 1676. 4. Mary, born January 9, 1678. 5. William, born January 30, 1680. 6. Mercy, or Marcy, of whom further. 7. Samuel, born May 18, 1683. 8. Huldah, born March 13, 1685. 9. Oliver, born March 17, 1687. 10. Hannah, born March 11, 1689. 11. Benjamin. 12. Content.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XLI, p. 193.)

III. *Mercy, or Marcy, Hayward*, daughter of William, Jr., and Sarah (Butterworth) Hayward, was born in Swansea, Massachusetts, January 30, 1681, and died October 11, 1710. She married John Martin. (Martin III.)

(The Butterworth Line)

Arms—Sable, a cross engrailed between four plumbs argent.

Crest—A sphere resting on a cloud proper. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Butterworth, an English surname, originated to designate a native of Butterworth, an ancient division of Rochdale Parish, Lancashire.

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Reginald de Boterworth lived in the reign of Henry II, first of the Plantagenet Kings (1154-89.) The will of John Butterworth, of Butterworth, 1595, is among wills at Chester, and the will of Alice Butterworth, of Rochdale, 1587, is among the same.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. John Butterworth, born in England about 1630, died in Swansea, Massachusetts, in 1708. He was executor of the will of his uncle, Samuel Butterworth, who was a freeman of Massachusetts, May 13, 1640, and a proprietor in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, in 1645. He was buried there, in September, 1685. Samuel Butterworth's will mentions his cousins (used in the legal sense in this case as nephews), Abraham Butterworth, of Rhode Island; John Butterworth, of Swansea, and his sons, Samuel and Benjamin; William Hayward, of Swansea; his cousin, Mary Mason, and her sons, Noah and Samuel, and Ann Butterworth, daughter of Abraham Butterworth. John Butterworth was propounded for a freeman at Rehoboth, June 3, 1652, received a lot of land June 22, 1658, and was a jurymen in 1662. In 1663, a Baptist church of seven members was organized at his home, and he was for a long time its deacon. This congregation soon removed to Swansea, which was incorporated March 5, 1668, and he was made one of the five who had the ordering of the town affairs. In 1670 and 1677, he was surveyor of highways for Rehoboth. He was constable in 1688. At the time of his death he was called of Bristol, but his death is recorded in Rehoboth. His wife, Sarah, died before he did. Children, first four born in Rehoboth, the rest in Swansea: 1. John, born September 8, 1651, died March 30, 1730-31; married, September 4, 1674, Hannah Wheaton, born September 18, 1654, died October 7, 1724, daughter of Robert Wheaton. 2. Sarah, of whom further. 3. Nathaniel, born April 12, 1655. 4. Joseph, born May 15, 1657, died in Swansea, in 1746; married, July 22, 1691, Elizabeth Boomer. 5. Deborah, born May 2, 1659; married John Jenkins, of Rehoboth. 6. Mary, born September 8, 1661; married (first), November 1, 1681, Joseph Slade; (second) Samuel Thayer, son of Ferdinando and Huldah (Hayward) Thayer. He died December 19, 1721. 7. Mercy, born January 22, 1663; married, December 12, 1681, Joseph Sloud. 8. Hopestill, born in March, 1665; married (first), June 25, 1687, John Luther; (second) John Eddy, son of Zachariah

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and Alice Eddy. 9. Samuel (Rehoboth records, George), born middle of May, 1667. 10. Experience, born August 15, 1669. 11. Benjamin, born October 31, 1672; married, January 6, 1692, Huldah Hayward.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XLI, pp. 191-94. J. N. Arnold: “Vital Records of Rehoboth, Massachusetts,” p. 569.)

II. Sarah Butterworth, daughter of John and Sarah Butterworth, was born in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, May 28, 1653, and died at Mendon, Massachusetts. She married William Hayward, Jr. (Hayward II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Esten Line)

Arms—Or, on a cross pattée azure five martlets argent on a chief of the second a fleur-de-lis of the first between two plates, each charged with a billet azure.

(Burke: “General Armory.”)

While there is a tradition that the family of Esten was originally of Huguenot origin, there is also likelihood that the name Esten and Eston are the same. The French Huguenot De Estine family were driven from France in 1562 and first appeared in England near Manchester; the English form Eston, meaning belonging or living at the East Farm of village. However, while it is uncertain from just which family the first Thomas of the Esten line of our interest descended, it is most probable that he came from either Wales or a border county of England.

(Austin: “Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island,” Vol. III, p. 2226. Harrison: “Surnames of the United Kingdom.”)

I. Thomas Esten was born probably in the Welsh Herefordshire (now an English county), although other records say Hertfordshire, and died in Providence, Rhode Island, in 1691. He brought his family to America with Rev. John Myles in 1665. Myles had been the settled minister of the Baptist church in Rehoboth, Massachusetts, in 1663. It was doubtless the Rev. Myles' return visit to England which brought the company together in 1665, for in 1667 Rev. John Myles was pastor of Swansea church. Thomas Esten is recorded as “Astin Thomas the Welchman” in the land boundary grant in Providence, April 27, 1668. December 23, 1668, he sold two acres of land for

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

twenty shillings, then calling himself "husbandman," and signing "Estance Thomas." "Ann Thomas" signed with him. In a deed he signed himself Eustance Thomas and his son, Thomas Eustance, in 1674. He and his two sons were taxed six shillings three pence, on July 1, 1679. February 12, 1686, and 1688, Thomas Esten is recorded as giving land, etc., to his son, Henry, and Thomas is also mentioned. December 21, 1691, he deeded thirty acres to his son, Henry. His son, Thomas, swore allegiance in 1682.

Thomas Esten married, April 23, 1643, Ann, who died in Providence, Rhode Island, in 1686. Children, all born in England: 1. Joanna, of whom further. 2. Thomas, born February 17, 1647, died November 5, 1708; married Priscilla Harding. 3. Henry, born January 11, 1651, died March 23, 1711; married (first) Elizabeth Manton; he married (second) Sarah Harding, who died August 20, 1761.

(H. J. Martin: "Notes of the Martin Family," p. 208. J. O. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," pp. 294-96. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. II, p. 126. "Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island," Vol. III, p. 2226. "Vital Records of Providence, Rhode Island—Births, Deaths," Vol. II, p. 265.)

II. Joanna Esten, daughter of Thomas and Ann Esten, was born in Herefordshire, England, June 1, 1645, and died March 23, 1733, in Providence, Rhode Island. She married John Martin. (Martin II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Brownell Line)

Arms—Ermine, on a chevron cotised sable, three escallops argent.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet a triple plume of feathers, five, four and three.

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

Especially noticeable personal characteristics, either of looks or manners, often in the more intimate life of days past, gave use to nicknames, later adapted as surnames. Such a cognomen was Brownell derived from the Anglo-Saxon "brûn," meaning brown. Brownell was a diminutive form as was the French Brunel. Other forms of the names beside Brownell are Brunel, Brunnell, or Brunell.

(Ferguson: "Teutonic Name-System.")

What connection this American line has with the English Brownells is not definitely found. It is said that Thomas Brownell was from Derbyshire, although the form Burnell was most often found in that shire.

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

A family of Brownell were merchants at Sheffield, Yorks, and in London the name applied to certain cutlery merchants and cloth workers.

(J. Tilley: "The Old Halls, Manors and Families of Derbyshire," Vol. III, pp. 47, 68, 69. "The Genealogist," Vol. III, p. 259. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XLVI, pp. 154-56.)

In the will of Thomas Wilson, of Yorkshire, dated 1657, he refers to "my cousin, George Brownell, of London," and to "my cousin, Thomas Brownell, of Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in New England." No further connection seems to be found, but a clue is that Thomas Wilson was one time a citizen of London, and a cloth worker, resident in his later days in Rycroft, parish of Rawmarch, Yorkshire. The American records show that the Brownells were scholarly men, of sound faith, noted in the fields of science and literary life, as well as the military and civic of colonial days.

(Brownell: "Descendants of John Brownell," p. 5. "National Cyclopaedia of American Biography," Index, p. 413.)

I. Thomas Brownell was born probably in England in 1619, and died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, about 1665. It is thought that he came to New England about 1639, but the earliest record of him is at Aquidneck (Portsmouth), Rhode Island, 1647, when he witnessed the will of John Walker (one of a group of settlers at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, who had been driven, for religious views, to seek freedom from the rulings of the Boston, Massachusetts, church, in 1638). Thomas Brownell cast his lot with them, at Portsmouth, and was evidently a Quaker. In 1655, he was a freeman; in 1651-52-53, a member of the Court of Commissioners; and Deputy in 1664. He appears to have held surplus land, having sold, in 1658, thirty-five acres. He was appointed to serve as "water bailey," in May, 1647.

Thomas Brownell married, in 1638, Ann. Children: 1. Mary, born in 1639; married Robert Hazard. 2. Sarah, died in 1676; married, June 1, 1658, Gideon Freeborn. 3. Martha, born in May, 1643; married (first) Jeremiah Wait; (second) Charles Dyer. 4. George, of whom further. 5. William, born in 1648, died in 1715; married Sarah Smiton. 6. Thomas, born in 1650, died May 18, 1732; married, in 1678, Mary Pearce. 7. Robert, born in 1652, died July 22,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1728; married Mary. 8. Anna, born in 1654, died April 2, 1747; married Joseph Wilbur.

(G. Brownell: "Our Family (Brownell)," No. 1. "Representative Men and Old Families of Rhode Island," Vol. II, p. 732.)

II. George Brownell, son of Thomas and Ann Brownell, was born probably in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1646, and died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, April 20, 1718; will April 17, 1717, proved May 12, 1718. He served as deputy, 1699-1702, and assistant, 1706-1710. In April, 1708, he was on a committee regarding vacant Narragansett lands. Inventory showed an estate valued at £961 5s. 10d., a goodly sum at that time.

George Brownell married, at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, December 4, 1673, Susannah Pearce. (Pearce III.) Children, born at Portsmouth, Rhode Island: 1. Susanna, born January 25, 1675; married John Read, Jr. 2. Sarah, of whom further. 3. Mary, born December 8, 1683; married, February 25, 1702, William Hall. 4. Martha, born February 18, 1685-86; married, November 27, 1712, Samuel Furman (or Forman). 5. Thomas, born June 1, 1688. 6. Joseph, born December 5, 1690; married, January 5, 1716-17, Ruth Cornell. 7. Wait, born October 3, 1693; married Joshua Sanford. 8. Stephen, born December 3, 1695; married, December 12, 1726, Martha Earle.

(G. Brownell: "Our Family (Brownell)," Nos. 1 and 4. "Rhode Island Vital Records," Vol. IV, pp. 9, 59.)

III. Sarah Brownell, daughter of George and Susannah (Pearce) Brownell, was born June 14, 1681. She married (first) Joseph Borden. (Borden—American Line—III.) She married (second), October 31, 1719, John Read. She married (third), September 15, 1739, Peleg Thurston.

(G. Brownell: "Our Family (Brownell)," Nos. 1 and 4. "Rhode Island Vital Records," Vol. IV, p. 9. Weld: "Borden Family," p. 69.)

(The Pearce Line)

Arms—Gules on a bend between two cotises or, an annulet sable.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Families named Pearce (and its variants) were settled in Counties Essex, Gloucester, Kent, Devon, Norfolk, Suffolk, Bedford, Somerset, York, Warwick, etc., England. Probably the line under search is of the same stock as the Nicholas Pearse family of Devon in 1620, for

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the name Richard appears in more than one generation, although the line is carried by Nicholas. The claim by family historians to a definite lineage (not proven, however) with the illustrious Percy family in England is at once interesting and alluring, but this claim is not clear enough to incorporate such background with a degree of certainty. They say that Richard Pearce, of Bristol, Devon, England, American ancestor, was a descendant of Peter Perse, born 1447 (son of Ralph), said Peter being standard bearer to Richard III in 1485 at battle of Bosworth Field, thus back through a Yorkshire branch to the Percys (Earls of Northumberland) ancestry. The facts give us simply a family, of Devon probably, and resident at Bristol before embarking for America. The grandfather of the American immigrant Richard is reputed to have been a Richard and the father of a second Richard, who had beside Richard (3), a son William, who is supposed to have been William "the mariner," who commanded the "Mayflower" in 1629, the "Lyon" in 1630, 1631, 1632; also other ships. This William, who died in the West in 1641, was killed by Indians. It is claimed that he published the first almanac in America. This account, given in the Pierce Genealogy, in one place is contradicted in another family genealogy by the same author, where William the mariner is given no brother Richard; but in this he notes a John from Middlesex County, England, also "a mariner," who is established as brother of Robert Pearce, who does not appear to be connected with Richard Pearce. Actually no relationship with any other line has been proven for this one.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. VI, p. 276. Visitation of Devon, 1620, p. 209. F. C. Pierce: "Pearce Genealogy," pp. 7, 36, 39. "American Ancestry," Vol. IV, p. 97.)

I. Richard Pearce was born probably in Bristol, England, in 1590. He was a resident of Bristol, and, it is thought, came to America in the ship "Lyon"; commanded, it is said by some, by his brother, but little confirming evidence can be found for this statement. Richard Pearce married, in England, Martha.

(F. C. Pierce: "Pearce Genealogy," p. 36. "American Ancestry," Vol. IV, p. 97.)

Children: 1. Richard, of whom further. 2. John, died September 17, 1661; married (first), in England, Mary, who died in Boston,

PEARCE

Arms—Gules on a bend between two cotises or, an annulet sable.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

EARL (EARLE)

Arms—Gules on a chevron argent, three trefoils sable between as many escallops in chief and a dolphin in base, all within a double tressure engrailed of the second, the outer bordure or.

Crest—A nag's head erased sable maned or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

WALKER

Arms—Argent, on a chevron ringed at the point between three crescents sable, two plates. (Burke: "General Armory.")

FULLER

Arms—Argent, three bars gules, on a canton of the second a castle or.

Crest—A dexter arm embowed, vested argent, cuffed sable, holding in the hand proper a sword of the first, hilt and pommel or.

Motto—*Semper paratus.*

(J. F. Fuller: "A Brief Sketch of Thomas Fuller," p. 10.)

PEPPER

Arms—Gules on a chevron argent between three demi-lions rampant or, as many sickles sable.

Crest—A demi-lion rampant or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

JOHNSON

Arms—Gules, three spear heads argent; a chief ermine.

Crest—A spear's head argent between two branches of laurel vert crossing each other over the spear's head.

(Matthews: "American Armoury." Burke: "General Armory.")

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

PLATE

... ..
(B.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Massachusetts, July 12, 1647; married (second), August 10, 1654, Mrs. Rebecca Wheeler, and lived in Dorchester, Massachusetts. 3. Samuel. 4. Hannah. 5. Martha. 6. Sarah. 7. William. 8. Mary.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, p. 930.)

II. Richard Pearce, Jr., son of Richard and Martha Pearce, was born in England (probably in Bristol), in 1615, and died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1678. His will was drawn April 23, 1677, and proved October 28, 1678. As early as 1674 Richard Pearce was at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, where he witnessed a deed concerning Henry Piercy. January 14, 1657, he again witnessed a deed, and June 8, 1657, he was surveyor of cattle going from the town. May 18, 1658, he was admitted a freeman, and figures in land transactions, 1666 and 1669.

Richard Pearce married, at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1642, Susanna Wright. (Wright II.) Children: 1. Richard, born at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, October 3, 1643, died July 19, 1720; married Experience, and resided in Portsmouth and Bristol, Rhode Island. 2. Martha, born September 13, 1645, died February 24, 1744; married Mahershallalhashboz Dyer. 3. Ensign John, born September 8, 1647, died at Tiverton, Rhode Island, December 5, 1707; married Mary Tallman, who died in June, 1720. 4. Hon. Giles, born July 22, 1651, died at East Greenwich, Rhode Island, November 19, 1698; married, in April, 1676, Elizabeth Hall, who died in 1698. 5. Susannah, of whom further. 6. Mary, born May 6, 1654, died at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, May 4, 1736; married, in 1678, Thomas Brownell, Jr., born in 1650, son of Thomas and Ann Brownell. 7. Jeremiah, born November 17, 1656; lived in South Kingston, or Narragansett, Rhode Island. 8. Isaac, born in December, 1658; lived in South Kingston, Rhode Island. 9. George, born July 10, 1662, died at Little Compton, Rhode Island, August 30, 1752; married (first), April 7, 1687, Alice Hart, who died March 11, 1718; married (second), March 22, 1721, Temperance Kirby, who died February 25, 1761. 10. Samuel, born December 22, 1664.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 39, 40, 42, 43, 46.)

III. Susannah Pearce, daughter of Richard and Susanna (Wright) Pearce, was born November 22, 1652, and died December 24, 1743. She married George Brownell. (Brownell II.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Earl (Earle) Line)

Arms—Gules on a chevron argent three trefoils sable between as many escallops in chief and a dolphin in base, all within a double tressure engrailed of the second, the outer bordure or.

Crest—A nag's head erased sable maned or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

It is supposed by the Earl genealogist with no definite proof, however, that Ralph Earle, immigrant ancestor, came from Exeter in Devonshire, England. The name Earl, or Earle, in England goes back to a Saxon ancestor. In Somerset County in 1554, an Earle family lived at Beckington, when John de Erlegh paid five marks for the scutage of his lands. In the thirteenth century Henry de Erle was Lord of Newton in Somersetshire. The family had other holdings in that county as well. One branch went into Devon in the time of Edward the Third. Of that family was John Erle, of Ashburton (but twenty miles from Exeter). This line carried on until 1690, when the last of the family, an only daughter, carried the estate to her husband, Henry Drax, of Yorkshire. A large Earl family was established in east counties of England. From the Devonshire Erles were descended the Erles in these other counties, namely: Hants, Lincoln, Berks, Essex, and London. Sir Walter Erle was one of the first patriots of the English Revolution of 1649. His imprisonment, for refusing funds for the King, led to the recognition of that safeguard against illegal imprisonment—the right to the "writ of habeas corpus." Sir Walter was released in 1628. Ralph Earle, immigrant ancestor, who left England ten years later, was doubtless of this old Devon family.

(P. Earle: "Earle Family," Introduction, pp. iii-xxi.)

I. Ralph Earle was born probably in or near Exeter, Devonshire, England, and died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1678. He first appears on records at Newport, Rhode Island, on October 1, 1638, as an inhabitant of Aquidneck (now Portsmouth), Rhode Island. He, among twenty-nine men, signed a declaration there, April 30, 1639, a civil body politic, loyal subjects of King Charles. This settlement at Aquidneck was chiefly formed by followers of Anne Hutchinson's teachings—who left the Boston, Massachusetts, church. They were doubtless of the Quaker faith. Robert Earle's name appears often in town records; boundaries; land conveyances, etc., in 1651 and successive years. In 1654 he was one of a committee to "oversee the work

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

of the Prison"; May 5, 1655, juryman. He was appointed by the Court of Commissioners to keep a house of entertainment with a conspicuous sign to give notice to strangers. August 10, 1667, we find that Ralph Earle joined a troop of horse, of which later he was captain. June 7, 1672, he was named with others by the General Court to sit at a special court for trial of two Indians, imprisoned upon criminal charge. He seems to have owned considerable land, for his name appears in a lawsuit regarding possession of certain Dutch holdings (now Hartford, Connecticut).

Ralph Earle married, in England, Joan. ("Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Massachusetts," Vol. II, p. 1083, says her name was Joan Savage. No other reference gives this.) Children: 1. Ralph, died probably in 1716; married, October 26, 1659, Dorcas Sprague, of Duxbury, Massachusetts. 2. William, of whom further. 3. Mary, died in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, March 22, 1718; married (first) William Cory, who died in 1682; she married (second) Joseph Timberlake. 4. Martha; married William Wood. 5. Sarah, died in 1690; married (first) Thomas Cornell, who died in 1673; married (second) David Lake.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 17-21, 25-26.)

II. *William Earle*, son of Ralph and Joan Earle, died at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, January 15, 1715. Among the first records noted of William Earle was April 2, 1654, the sale of fourteen acres by himself and wife, said land having come to his wife, Mary, from her mother, the "widow Walker." May 11, 1658, William Earle was received a freeman, and was made juryman the same year. May 1, 1665, the town ordered that William Earle and William Cory should have about one and one-quarter acres of land on Bridges Hill or some other convenient place, for erection of a windmill, provided they should maintain the windmill for the town's use. In 1668, the mill had been erected. In 1684, the site was known as Windmill Hill. About 1670 William Earle removed to Dartmouth, Massachusetts, where he remained several years. He was a large landowner, holding 2,000 acres in Dartmouth. Many land conveyances were recorded in his name. May 6, 1691, the General Assembly of Rhode Island convened at his house in Portsmouth (because "of distemper" it was not convenient for them to meet in Newport). William Earle served as

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

deputy October 25, 1704, at Providence, and at Newport, May 1, 1706, and July 3, 1706.

William Earle married (first) Mary Walker. (Walker II.) He married (second) Prudence, who died January 18, 1718. Children of first marriage: 1. Mary, of whom further. 2. William, died in Springfield, New Jersey, about 1732-33; married Elizabeth, and lived in Dartmouth, Massachusetts, and New Jersey. 3. Ralph, born 1660, died at Leicester, Massachusetts, 1757; married Mrs. Mary (Carr) Hicks. 4. Thomas, died in Warwick, Rhode Island; married, before November, 1693, Mary Taber, of Dartmouth, Massachusetts. 5. Caleb; married Mary, who married (second) Joseph Hicks. Children of second marriage: 6. John, died August 12, 1759; married, February 27, 1700, Mary Wait, of Tiverton, Rhode Island. 7. Prudence, born in Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1681, died in Westport, Massachusetts, March 12, 1733; married, before 1701, Benjamin Durfee.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 23-25, 30, 31, 33-35.)

III. *Mary Earle*, daughter of William and Mary (Walker) Earle, was born in 1655, and died at Portsmouth, Rhode Island, in 1734. She married John Borden. (Borden II.)

(The Walker Line)

Arms—Argent, on a chevron ringed at the point between three crescents sable, two plates. (Burke: "General Armory.")

In these days of industrial machinery and commercial enterprise, an interesting study not only in the history of surnames, but likewise in industrial custom, may be found in the study of names, like Walker, derived by one-time occupations now no longer in use. Walker was the term applied to a fuller of cloth from his stamping or pressing it.

Cloth that cometh fro the wevyng
Is nought comely to wear
Til it be fulled under foot.

—*Piers Plowman*.

An Elizabeth Statute speaks of "cloth fuller, otherwise called Tucker or Walker."

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

We have no record of John Walker's English background. Whether he was related to Robert Walker, linen weaver from Manchester,

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Lancashire, a contemporary in Boston, Massachusetts, in 1634 (aged seventy-two in 1679), or a connection of the Peter of Taunton, Massachusetts, who intermarried with the Hutchinson family before 1689, we have no clue. It is possible that John Walker was a Yorkshireman, where the name was found as early as the fourteenth century. The Hutchinson family were from Alford in Lincolnshire, and no doubt many of their followers were from that or nearby counties. In 1475 the death is recorded of John Walker, archdeacon, East Riding, Yorkshire. A Dalison family of Lincolnshire intermarried with the Walker family of County Somerset, England. John is the name carrying that family line (John Walker of Stoway in Somersetshire Visitation, 1623). A Robert Walker was a legatee in a will dated 1591, Lincolnshire. The numerous Walkers appear in various early records of New England and the South. Men of that name have made notable records in almost every profession and office in our American public life.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 396. Musgrave: "Obituaries," Vol. VI, p. 185. "Miscellanea Heraldica et Genealogica," Series II, Part II, p. 241. "Lincolnshire Wills" (1500-1600), p. 117.)

I. John Walker was born in England and died in 1647. His will was dated March 18, 1647. His wife, Katherine, died in 1654. Both their wills were recorded December 16, 1671. John Walker probably came to Boston about 1633-34. He is listed as one of the first settlers of Rhode Island, and a follower of Mr. Wheelwright and Anne Hutchinson evidently, as November 20, 1637, he, with others, were warned to give up their firearms, since the "dangerous error" of the followers of the above dissenters might lead them into trouble. May 14, 1634, John Walker was made freeman of Boston, and March 7, 1638, he signed with eighteen others the compact at Portsmouth, Rhode Island. He names his wife, Katherine, and daughters, Sarah and Mary, in his will, 1647. The daughters are named also in widow Katherine's will. John Walker seems to have acquired several acres which he left to his daughters. Children of John and Katherine Walker: 1. Sarah, died in 1709; married James Sands. 2. Mary, of whom further.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. I, p. 291. J. O. Austin: "Genealogical Dictionary of Rhode Island," p. 214. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 394.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. *Mary Walker*, daughter of John and Katherine Walker, married, as his first wife, William Earle. (Earle II.) William and Mary (Walker) Earle deeded all rights in fourteen acres "from widow Walker" to their brother-in-law, James Sands.

(*Ibid.*)

(The Fuller Line)

Arms—Argent, three bars gules, on a canton of the second a castle or.

Crest—A dexter arm embowed, vested argent, cuffed sable, holding in the hand proper a sword of the first, hilt and pommel or.

Motto—*Semper paratus.*

(J. F. Fuller: "A Brief Sketch of Thomas Fuller," p. 10.)

The surname of this family has the following variations, La Fuller, Fuler, Ffooler, Fulwer, Fulwar. The name is occupational and means one employed in woolen manufactures to mill or scour cloths to full them, that is, to render them more compact, thick and durable. In the fifteenth and following centuries the Fullers are chiefly found in the southeastern counties of England. Perhaps the original home of this family was the county of Suffolk. This shire was the great seat of the woolen cloth manufacture, and the surname of Fuller would, in such a county, be of considerable importance.

(E. Abercrombie: "Fuller Genealogy," p. 5.)

I. *Robert Fuller* probably came to America during the second emigration, between 1635 and 1640. He was in Dorchester, Massachusetts, in 1640; later removed to Dedham, where he and his wife were received into the church, December 19 (11), 1648. He died December 14, 1688; will probated April 28, 1690. Robert Fuller married (first) Ann, who died probably in 1646. He married (second) Sarah, who died 2 (4), 1686. Children, recorded in Dorchester and Dedham, of first wife: 1. Jonathan, of whom further. 2. Benoni, born June 16, 1646, died September 5, 1646. Children of second wife: 3. Sarah, born September 21, 1647. 4. John, born November 26, 1649, probably died in Dedham, Massachusetts, November 8, 1678. 5. Patience, born February 22, 1651-52. 6. Mary, born March 1, 1655.

(W. H. Fuller: "Fuller Genealogy," Vol. III, p. 247. C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 178.)

II. *Jonathan Fuller*, son of Robert and Ann Fuller, was born in Dorchester, Massachusetts, June (or August) 15, 1643, and died in

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Dedham, Massachusetts, May 6, 1724 (date not certain). "Dedham, Massachusetts, Town Records," Vol. III, pp. 129-30, contains the following statements: "Granted to Robert Fuller and to his heyers for ever foure Acres of Land to be layed out for his devident upon the planting Field next to Joshua Fisher senior."

Jonathan Fuller married Mary, who died in Dedham, March 20 or 29, 1701. Children, all born in Dedham, Massachusetts: 1. Rachel, born December 3, 1673; married, October 27, 1698, Joseph Bent, of Milton. 2. Sarah, born May 4, 1676. 3. Mary, born April 20, 1679, died young. 4. Samuel, born February 15, 1681; married (first) Sarah Fisher; (second) Elizabeth Crane. 5. John, born December 3, 1684; married Mary Guild. 6. Mary, of whom further. 7. Joshua, born November 23, 1690, died young. 8. Joshua, born December 15, 1691; probably the Joshua Fuller who died February 25, 1765. 9. Jonathan, born August 19, 1694.

(W. H. Fuller: "Fuller Genealogy," Vol. III, pp. 247-48. "Dedham, Massachusetts, Town Records," Vol. I, pp. 13, 14, 18, 19, 22, 24, 26.)

III. Mary Fuller, daughter of Jonathan and Mary Fuller, was born February (or December) 21, 1687 ("Fuller Genealogy" says February, Dedham Records says December). She married Richard Everett. (Everett III.)

(W. H. Fuller: "Fuller Genealogy," Vol. IV, p. 212.)

(The Pepper Line)

Arms—Gules on a chevron argent between three demi-lions rampant or, as many sickles sable.

Crest—A demi-lion rampant or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Authorities differ as to the origin of the name Pepper. According to some it is a shortened form of Pepperer, a dealer in pepper, while others derive it from piper. An Anglo-Saxon family by the name of Piperinger is mentioned in an eighth century charter. Prior to the period of migration to New England, the name is found in both Leicestershire and Lincolnshire, England, and in both families the names Richard and Robert occur. The Lincolnshire family resided at Thoresby and came originally from Tenterden in County Kent. A visitation of Leicestershire in 1619 records a Robert Pepper aged thirteen, Thomas aged eleven, and Richard aged eight. This Robert may

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

be the Robert Pepper who located in Roxbury, Massachusetts. The three brothers, named above, were children of Robert Pepper.

(Harrison: "Surnames of the United Kingdom," Vol. II, p. 70. "The Genealogist," Vol. IV.)

I. Robert Pepper was an early inhabitant of Roxbury, Massachusetts, where he took the freeman's oath, May 10, 1643. Richard Pepper, who came to New England on the ship "Francis," in 1634, and also located at Roxbury, may have been his brother. Francis Pepper, a third member of the family to settle in the New World, was in Springfield, Massachusetts, as early as 1645, and died in 1685, but there is no record of his descendants. The family in eastern Massachusetts descend from Robert of Roxbury. Soon after his arrival in Massachusetts he joined those of the colonists who journeyed west and in 1645 appears in Springfield, Massachusetts. As he had several children baptized at Roxbury, not long after this, he could not have remained in Springfield for more than a short time. His home at Roxbury was west of Stony River, the homestead there consisting of four acres. Some of his property was in the nearby town of Dedham. He was among the signers of the petition to the General Court praying it "to be firm in its resolution to adhere to the Patent and the priviledges thereof," requesting the deputies "to stand fast in our present liberty's" and assuring them they would "pray the Lord to assist them to sterve right in these shaking times." The petition was due to the changes in colonial policy after the restoration of Charles II to the throne. In 1653, he was given permission to open an inn, at which he could sell "penny beare and cakes, and white bread."

Robert Pepper died at Roxbury, July 7, 1684, three days after making his will. He married, March 14, 1642, Elizabeth Johnson. (Johnson II.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, baptized March 3, 1643-44, died in April, 1644. 2. Elizabeth, of whom further. 3. John, born April 8, 1647, died in 1670; married Bethiah Fisher, of Dedham. 4. Joseph, baptized in 1648, died in infancy. 5. Joseph, born March 8, 1649-50; he was slain by the Indians April 21, 1675, at Sudbury, while fighting under Captain Wadsworth. Joseph married Mary. 6. Mary, baptized in 1651; married, in 1669, Samuel Evered, of Dedham. 7. Benjamin, baptized May 15, 1653, died in 1658. 8. Robert, born April 21, 1655; he was taken prisoner by the Indians at Northfield, Massachusetts, in September, 1675, and brought to Shoshanim, Saga-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

more of Nashaway; probably died in captivity. 9. Sarah, born April 28, 1657; married a Mason, of Boston. 10. Isaac, born April 26, 1659; married, October 7, 1685, Apphia Freeman; they resided at Eastham, Massachusetts. 11. Jacob, born July 25, 1661; married, in 1685, Elizabeth Paine; they resided at Framingham, Massachusetts.

(W. Barry: "Framingham, Massachusetts," p. 357. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, pp. 391-92. Ellis: "History of Roxbury," p. 127. Drake: "Roxbury, Massachusetts," pp. 14 and 164.)

II. Elizabeth Pepper, daughter of Robert and Elizabeth (Johnson) Pepper, was born at Roxbury, Massachusetts, May 25, 1645, and died at Dedham, Massachusetts, April 1, 1714. She married Captain John Everett. (Everett II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Johnson Line)

Arms—Gules, three spear heads argent; a chief ermine.

Crest—A spear's head argent between two branches of laurel vert crossing each other over the spear's head.

(Matthews: "American Armoury." Burke: "General Armory.")

The name Johnson is found in several European countries, including Norway, Sweden, Denmark, the Netherlands, Germany, England, Ireland, and Scotland. Like many surnames, it is derived from a Christian name to which son, sen, or s, is added to signify son. The name thus means son of John. The John from whom the family in England descends, if there was any one John who can be so described, is not known.

(Harrison: "Surnames of the United Kingdom," Vol. I, p. 238.)

I. John Johnson probably came to New England in the fleet of Governor Winthrop in 1630 and located at Roxbury, Massachusetts. In October, 1630, he became constable of that community, and in July, 1632, he was one of the founders of the church there, the Rev. John Eliot being the first pastor. John Johnson was deputy at the first General Court which met in 1634 and was reëlected a member for the next fifteen years. In 1638 he became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts, and for two years served that body as clerk. He was appointed surveyor general of arms and ammunition in 1644. The following winter his home in which these supplies were stored was destroyed by fire. The event is described by

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Winthrop thus: "John Johnson the Surveyor General of Ammunition, a very industrious and faithful man in his place, having built a fair house in the midst of the town with divers barns and outhouses, it fell on fire in the daytime, no man knowing by what occasion, and there being in it seventeen barrels of the country's powder, and many arms, all was suddenly burnt and blown up to the value of four or five hundred pounds, wherein a special providence of God appeared, for he, being from home, the people came together to help and many were in the house, no man thinking of the powder till one of the company put them in mind of it, whereupon they all withdrew, and soon after the powder took fire and blew up all about it, and shook the houses in Boston and Cambridge so as men thought it had been an earthquake, and carried great pieces of timber a good way off and some rags and such light things beyond the Boston meeting house. There being then a stiff gale south it drove the fire from the other homes in the town (for this was the most northerly) otherwise it had endangered the greatest part of the town." His estate consisted of ten acres upon the westerly side of the street including the house, barn and orchard, "with liberty to inclose the swamps and brook before the same, not annoying any highway." John Johnson operated one of the earliest taverns in the town. When the colony was disturbed by the controversy over the teachings of Anne Hutchinson, he was designated by the General Court as the one to whom the arms of her adherents in Roxbury were to be delivered. He died September 30, 1659.

John Johnson married (first), in England, Margery, who accompanied him to Roxbury, and died June 9, 1655. He married (second) Grace Fawer, widow of Barnabus Fawer. Children: 1. Isaac, born in England; resided at Roxbury and was captain of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company in 1667. He was killed at the head of his troops in the Narragansett fight, December 19, 1675. He married, January 20, 1637, Elizabeth Porter. 2. Humphrey, born in England; resided at Roxbury and Scituate; married, March 20, 1643, Ellen Cheney. 3. Elizabeth, of whom further. 4 and 5. Two daughters, names not given.

(O. A. Roberts: "Ancient and Honorable Artillery of Boston," Vol. I, pp. 66-67. C. Ellis: "Roxbury, Massachusetts," p. 122. F. Drake: "Roxbury, Massachusetts," pp. 49, 50, 88, 97, 290. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. II, pp. 551, 553, 554.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Elizabeth Johnson, daughter of John and Margery Johnson, was born in England and accompanied her parents to the New World. She resided at Roxbury, Massachusetts, and was a neighbor of Robert Pepper, whom she married. (Pepper I.)

(The Jennings (Jennings) Line)

Arms—Azure, a chevron or, between three bezants, on a chief ermine three cinque-foils gules.

Crest—A jay proper.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Anglo-Norman influence is shown in this familiar surname Jennings, which is derived from the form Jenin, which in turn comes from the like Christian name, a diminutive of Jean, earlier French Jehan, other variants being seen in the old English Jhon, later John, Jan and Janin. The early lists which provide much of our present day information show that a Janyn le Breton is in the Lay Subsidy of Lancashire, A. D. 1332; Janyn de Gynes and Jenyn de France are to be located in the Poll Tax of Yorkshire in 1379. We likewise find John Genens, or Jenens, citizen of Oxford in the Register of the University of Oxford in 1573.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Richard Jennings came from England and apprenticed himself in 1635 to Robert Bartlett, of Plymouth, for nine years; then settled in Sandwich, and in 1666 was in Bridgewater, Massachusetts, and had children; apparently one was John, who was in the list of freemen in Sandwich in 1675 and 1702, perhaps Richard, of Bridgewater, 1703. (Freeman: "History of Cape Cod," Vol. II, pp. 85, 87-88.)

("Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Massachusetts," Vol. I, p. 365.)

II. John Jennings, son of Richard Jennings, died after February, 1692. He married (first) Susanna, (second) Ruhannah. He took inventory of estate of Lydia Gaunt, of Sandwich, February 17, 1691-1692. Children of first marriage, born in Sandwich, Massachusetts: 1. Remembrance, born September 17, 1668. 2. Anne, born October 17, 1670. 3. John, born May 12, 1673. Children of second marriage: 4. Isaac, of whom further. 5. Elizabeth, born April 14, 1680, died September 13, 1682. 6. Samuel, born February 28, 1684, died in 1742; schoolmaster in 1710.

(*Ibid.* Freeman: "History of Cape Cod," Vol. III, p. 88.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Isaac Jennings, son of John and Ruhannah Jennings, was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, July 3, 1677, and died there. He married (first), July 10, 1700, Rose Goodspeed. He married (second) Hannah. Children of first marriage: 1. Elizabeth, born April 12, 1701; married Isaac Howland. 2. Experience, born March 10, 1703. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Rose, born in 1710; married, February 4, 1731, John Ellis. 5. Isaac, born April 24, 1714. 6. Mary, born September 1, 1717. 7. Benjamin, born December 12, 1720. Children of second marriage: 8. Hannah, born April 21, 1725. 9. Lois, born February 7, 1727. 10. Eunice, born May 25, 1729.

(“Mayflower Descendant,” Vol. XIV, pp. 173-74. “Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Massachusetts,” Vol. I, p. 365.)

IV. John (2) Jennings, son of Isaac and Rose (Goodspeed) Jennings, was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, July 31, 1706, and died in Tiverton, Rhode Island. He married, October 3, 1727, Anne Holway. (Holway IV.) Children, except the first, born in Tiverton, Rhode Island: 1. Avis, born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, April 11, 1730. 2. Rose, born March 24, 1732. 3. Anne, born May 21, 1734. 4. Ruhannah, of whom further. 5. John, born March 8, 1738; married, November 1, 1762, Deborah Stafford. 6. Mary, born February 3, 1740. 7. Isaac, born March 9, 1742; married, December 30, 1767, Ruth Estes. 8. Elizabeth, born May 30, 1744. 9. Susannah, born April 21, 1747.

(“Representative Men and Old Families of Southeastern Massachusetts,” Vol. I, p. 365.)

V. Ruhannah Jennings, daughter of John and Anne (Holway) Jennings, was born in Tiverton, Rhode Island, May 6, 1736. She married William Borden, Jr. (Borden—American Line—V.)

(The Holway Line)

Arms—Gules, a fesse between three crescents argent.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or, a greyhound's head sable.

(Burke: “General Armory.”)

The English surname Holway, Hollway and Holloway are variants of old English Holeweye. Holway usually in the southwest of England and Holloway in Oxfordshire; meaning the hollow way. Johannes de Holeweye is in the Hundred Rolls of Wiltshire, A. D.

JENNINGES (JENNINGS)

Arms—Azure a chevron or, between three bezants, on a chief ermine three cinquefoils gules.

Crest—A jay proper. (Burke: "General Armory.")

HOLWAY

Arms—Gules, a fesse between three crescents argent.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or, a greyhound's head sable.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

AXTELL

Arms—Azure, three axes argent, handles or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

SHERMAN

Arms—Or a lion rampant sable, between three oak leaves vert.

Crest—A sea lion sejant sable charged on the shoulder with three bezants, two and one. (Crozier: "General Armory.")

BROCK

Arms—Azure a fleur-de-lis or, on a chief argent a lion passant guardant gules.

Crest—An escallop or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

WRIGHT

Arms—Sable a chevron argent between three fleurs-de-lis or, on a chief of the second three spearheads azure.

Crest—A dragon's head coupé ermine.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

LENNINGS (LENNINGS)

Yams—A checker in between three boxes on a checker board.
Crest—A peacock.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

HOLLAY

Yams—A chess piece between three chess pieces.
Crest—A chess piece on a chessboard's head.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

AXTELL

Yams—A chess piece between three chess pieces.
Crest—A chess piece on a chessboard's head.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

SHERMAN

Yams—A chess piece between three chess pieces.
Crest—A chess piece on a chessboard's head.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

BROCK

Yams—A chess piece between three chess pieces.
Crest—A chess piece on a chessboard's head.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

WRIGHT

Yams—A chess piece between three chess pieces.
Crest—A chess piece on a chessboard's head.
(Burke: "General Armory.")



Jennings
(Jennings)



Holway



Axtell



Sherman



Brock



Wright

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1273; William de Holeweye in those of Warwickshire, and William Holeweye in Kirby's Quest, Somersetshire, 1327.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

(The Family in America)

I. Joseph Holway (Holley, Holiway), of Lynn, Massachusetts, 1636, was of Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, 1637, and bought there the home lot of Jerimy Gould, October 1, 1639. He died about December, 1647, his inventory being taken December 4, 1647. He left a wife Rose, son Joseph, Jr., and a daughter Rose, who married, May 18, 1648, William Nawland.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XLVI, p. 186; Vol. IV, p. 282.)

II. Joseph Holway, Jr., son of Joseph and Rose Holway, was born in England, probably about 1628, and died in Sandwich, Massachusetts, summer of 1692. He is one of the committee for dividing meadow lands, January 7, 1650, and among the owners thereof. He is in the list of freemen in 1675 and 1678. An agreement as to the division of his estate was made by his children, September 5, 1692, and a receipt of the shares of the daughters was signed January 31, 1693. The name of his wife, who died first, does not appear. The three youngest children were minors. Children, born at Sandwich, Plymouth Colony: 1. Joseph, of whom further. 2. Sarah, born April 25, 1664; married Joseph Allin. 3. Mary, born February 16, 1665-66; married Nathaniel Fitzrandal. 4. John. 5. Hannah. 6. Rose. 7. Samuel. 8. Benjamin; married Penelope; lived in Westerly and South Kingstown, Rhode Island. 9. Elizabeth. 10. Experience; married John Goodspeed. 11. Hopestill, died before her father; married Samuel Worden.

(Freeman: "History of Cape Cod," Vol. II, pp. 59, 68, 73, 161. "Mayflower Descendants," Vol. XIV, p. 167; Vol. XVI, pp. 60-61; Vol. XVIII, p. 137. "Plymouth Colony Records," Vol. IV, p. 88.)

III. Joseph (3) Holway, son of Joseph Holway, Jr., was born in Sandwich, Plymouth Colony, about 1662. He was admitted freeman in 1700. He married, about 1693, Anne. Children, born in Sandwich, Massachusetts: 1. Joseph, born November 6, 1695. 2. Reliance, born February 16, 1696-97. 3. Mary, born June 18, 1699. 4.

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Anne, of whom further. 5. Gideon, born October 5, 1704; married, May 26, 1732, Experience Wing.

(Freeman: "History of Cape Cod," Vol. II, p. 83. "Genealogical Advertiser," Vol. IV, p. 100.)

IV. Anne Holway, daughter of Joseph and Anne Holway, was born in Sandwich, Massachusetts, June 1, 1702, and died in Tiverton, Rhode Island. She married John Jennings. (Jennings IV.)

(The Axtell Line)

Arms—Azure, three axes argent, handles or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Axtell, as surname, is probably a variant of Axcill, Excell, Exall, originating to designate a resident of Exhall Parish, Warwickshire. Ralph Axcill is in Kirby's Quest, Somersetshire, A. D. 1327. Joseph Collyer and Elizabeth Axtell are in the Marriage Allegations at Canterbury in 1683, and John Axtell and Mary Drew in 1686. Richard Exall and Elizabeth Bushbey married, at St. James, Clerkenwell, London, in 1701. John Axstyl signs a deed 1535 from the monks of the Augustinian order in Gatesden, Hertfordshire, and at St. Peter's Church, Berkhamstead, Hertfordshire, is a record of the baptism of John, son of John Axtell, in 1539, and William, son of John, in 1541. There are two William Axtells having children baptized in this church, 1614 to 1628, as appears from a Thomas, baptized October 31, 1624, and Samuel, baptized December 15, 1624, the rule of the Church of England requiring baptism a few days after birth.

The baptisms of sons of William Axtell recorded are: 1. John, baptized August 14, 1614. 2. William, baptized December 1, 1616. 3. Thomas, of whom further. 4. Daniel, born May 26, 1622; may be the regicide colonel.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIII, p. 227.)

(The Family in America)

I. Thomas Axtell, apparently son of William Axtell, was baptized January 26, 1619, and died in Sudbury, Massachusetts, March 8, 1646. His widow, Mary, married, September 19, 1656, John Goodenow. He probably had sisters: Mary, married, June 16, 1646, John Maynard; and Hannah, married, June 18, 1659, Edward Wright. Children: 1. Mary, baptized, in Berkhamstead, Hertfordshire, Septem-

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ber 25, 1639. 2. Henry, of whom further. 3. Mary (twin), born in Sudbury, Massachusetts, June 1, 1644. 4. Lydia (twin), born in Sudbury, June 1, 1644.

("New England Register," Vol. LIII, p. 227. "Sudbury, Massachusetts, Vital Records.")

II. Henry Axtell, son of Thomas and Mary Axtell, was born in England, probably in Berkhamstead, in 1641, and was killed by Indians in Marlborough, Massachusetts, March 21, 1675-76. He obtained land in Marlborough in 1660; removed thither, and married there June 14, 1665, Hannah Merriam, daughter of George Merriam, of Concord, and lived in the eastern part of Marlborough. His widow married, July 16, 1677, William Taylor. Children: 1. Samuel, born March 27, 1666, probably died young. 2. Hannah, born November 18, 1667. 3. Mary, born August 8, 1670; married, May 24, 1698, Zachariah Newton. 4. Thomas, of whom further. 5. Daniel, born November 4, 1673, died in January, 1735; married, May 12, 1702, Thankful Pratt, daughter of Elder William Pratt, who led a colony from Dorchester, Massachusetts, and lived in South Carolina until 1707, when he settled in Berkley, Massachusetts. 6. Sarah, born September 18, 1675.

("New England Register," Vol. LIII, p. 228.)

III. Thomas Axtell, son of Henry and Hannah (Merriam) Axtell, was born in Marlborough, Massachusetts, April 16, 1672, and died at Grafton, Massachusetts, December 18, 1750. He settled, about 1735, in the tract Hassanamisco, named Grafton, in 1739, having married, November 2, 1697, Sarah Barker, of Concord, Massachusetts. Children, born in Marlborough, Massachusetts: 1. Thomas, born August 19, died December 22, 1698. 2. Sarah, born February 16, 1702-03; married, February 7, 1721, Josiah Hayden. 3. Joseph, born August 1, 1705; married, February 4, 1730, Abigail Hayden, of Sudbury, Massachusetts, and settled in Grafton, in 1746. 4. Hannah; married, July 20, 1738, Zedekiah Drury, of Sutton. 5. Thomas, of whom further. 6. John, born April 15, 1715, died April 20, 1742. 7. Abigail, born October 10, 1717; married, December 21, 1736, Benjamin Pratt.

("New England Register," Vol. LIII, pp. 228-29. "Marlborough, Massachusetts, Vital Records.")

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Thomas Axtell, Jr., son of Thomas and Sarah (Barker) Axtell, was born in Marlborough, Massachusetts, May 11, 1712, and died in Grafton, Massachusetts, May 28, 1798. He married (first), May 13, 1736, Elizabeth Sherman. (Sherman IV.) He married (second), October 6, 1760, Mary Sanger, but her children died young. Children, born in Grafton, Massachusetts, all by first marriage: 1. Sarah, of whom further. 2. Elizabeth, born April 26, 1739; married, November 27, 1760, Ephraim Lyon. 3. Hannah, born October 6, 1741; married Jason Waite. 4. John, born June 3, 1744, died in Grafton, about 1782; married, in 1776, a Daniels. 5. Thomas, born December 16, 1746, died in 1819; married, June 10, 1777, Deborah Jones, of Franklin; in the army in 1780. 6. Mary (Polly), born March 12, 1748. 7. Phebe (twin), born March 12, 1748; married Thomas Kidder.

(“New England Register,” Vol. LIII, pp. 228-29. “Sutton, Massachusetts, Vital Records.”)

V. Sarah Axtell, oldest daughter of Thomas, Jr., and Elizabeth (Sherman) Axtell, was born in Grafton, Massachusetts, April 25, 1737, and died in Sutton, Massachusetts, September 2, 1805. She married James McClellan, Jr. (McClellan II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Sherman Line)

Arms—Or a lion rampant sable, between three oak leaves vert.

Crest—A sea lion sejant sable charged on the shoulder with three bezants, two and one. (Crozier: “General Armory.”)

Strong, indeed, was the influence of everyday pursuits in the life of the people of early England, for many a surname derives its origin from the work of an early resident. Sherman can be numbered among these. It is derived from the occupation of shearer of the nap from cloth. Robert le Sherman is recorded in the Writs of Parliament, A. D. 1300; William le Sherman in Placito de Quo Warranto, time of Edward I through Edward III, and Oliver Sherman and Johannes Wykir, shereman, are to be found in the Poll Tax of Yorkshire, in 1379.

(Bardsley: “Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.”)

I. Thomas Sherman, of Diss, Norfolk, and Yaxley, Suffolk, will proved April 4, 1493; married Agnes. They had: John, of whom further; and Agnes, who married John Clerke.

(Sherman, T. T.: “Sherman Genealogy,” pp. 18-19.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. John Sherman, son of Thomas and Agnes Sherman, was born at Diss, County Norfolk, and died at Yaxley, Suffolk, will proved December 12, 1504. He married Agnes Fuller, daughter of Thomas Fuller. She married (second) Thomas Hendry. John and Agnes (Fuller) Sherman had: Thomas, of whom further; and Margery, who married Robert Lockwood.

(*Ibid.*, p. 20.)

III. Thomas Sherman, son of John and Agnes (Fuller) Sherman, was born in Yaxley, Suffolk, about 1490, will proved at London, November 16, 1551. He married, about 1512, Jane Waller, daughter of John Waller, of Wortham, Suffolk. She married (second) John(?) Gardiner, of Stoke Ash, Suffolk, and died a widow in 1573. Children, born at Yaxley, County Suffolk: 1. Thomas, born about 1514, buried at Yaxley, September 17, 1585; married (first) Elizabeth Yaxley, daughter of Anthony and Elizabeth (Garneys) Yaxley. She died after 1573. He married (second), about 1579, Barbara Wheatcroft, daughter of William and Alice Wheatcroft, of Eye, Suffolk. She died January 18, 1621-22. 2. Richard, buried at Diss, March 28, 1587; married Margaret (Lane?). 3. John, of Bramford, Suffolk, and Ipswich. 4. Henry, of whom further. 5. William, of St. Olave, Southwark, and Ipswich. 6. Anthony, of Roydon, Norfolk. 7. Francis, of Blownorton, Norfolk; married Sybil Grey. 8. Bartholomew; married Elizabeth. 9. James, of Yaxley, Suffolk.

(Sherman: "Sherman Genealogy," pp. 23, 26, 29, 30, 31.)

IV. Henry Sherman, son of Thomas and Jane (Waller) Sherman, was born at Yaxley, Suffolk, about 1520, will proved July 25, 1590, Colchester, County Essex. He was serving his apprenticeship as shearman or cloth maker, as stated in his father's will, 1551, apparently in Dedham, Essex, where he continued to live until after 1575. He married (first) Agnes, probably Butter, whose uncle, Thomas Butter, appointed Henry Sherman his executor in 1555. She was buried at Dedham, October 14, 1580. He married (second), June 5, 1581, Mrs. Marion (Smyth) Willson, widow of Edmund Willson. No issue by her. He married (third) Margery. No issue. Children, born at Dedham, County Essex, of first marriage: 1. Alice, born about 1542; married, before 1562, Nicholas Fynce. 2. Judith, born about 1545; married, October 27, 1566, William Petfield. 3. Henry, of

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

whom further. 4. Edmund, of Dedham, clothier. 5. John, buried in Dedham, October 16, 1576. Probably no issue. 6. Thomas, of Diss. 7. Robert, M. D., of Dedham, Colchester, and London.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 52-53, 59, 60.)

V. *Henry Sherman, Jr.*, son of Henry and Agnes (probably Butler) Sherman, was born in Dedham, Essex, about 1547, buried there, August 28, 1610. He married, at Moze, Essex, June 14, 1568, Susan Lawrence. She was buried at Dedham, September 13, 1610. Children, born at Dedham, County Essex: 1. Phebe, baptized May 1, 1570; married Simon Fenn, of Dedham. 2. Henry, baptized August 7, 1571. 3. Samuel, baptized January 11, 1573. 4. Anne, baptized August 7, 1575. 5. Daniel, of Dedham. 6. Nathaniel, baptized June 19, buried June 21, 1580. 7. Nathaniel, baptized July 11, 1582. 8. John, of whom further. 9. Ezekiel, clothier, of Dedham. 10. Edmund, of Colchester, Essex. 11. Mary, baptized July 27, 1592.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 79, 80, 81.)

VI. *John Sherman*, son of Henry, Jr., and Susan (Lawrence) Sherman, was baptized at Dedham, Essex, August 17, 1585, buried at Great Horkesley, Essex, January 24, 1616. He married, before May 14, 1610, Grace Makin, daughter of Tobias and Katherine Makin, of Fingringhoe, Essex. She married (second) Thomas Rogers; (third) Roger Porter and died at Watertown, Massachusetts, June 3, 1662, a widow. Children, born at Great Horkesley, Essex, England: 1. "Captain" John, of whom further. 2. Richard, baptized August 7, 1614, living in England in 1662.

(The Family in America)

I. "*Captain*" *John Sherman, Jr.*, son of John and Grace (Makin) Sherman, was baptized at Great Horkesley, Essex, September 3, 1612, and died at Watertown, Massachusetts, January 25, 1690-91. He came with his mother, stepfather, and half-sister, Elizabeth Rogers, to Watertown, Massachusetts, in 1634. He was made freeman, May 17, 1637; selectman, 1637, 1641-43, 1648-50, 1652-54, 1657, 1658, 1667-69, 1676-77, 1680, 1682. Clerk of writs, 1645, town clerk, 1664-66; sergeant of train band; ensign; lieutenant. Appointed captain by the General Court, June 11, 1680. Steward of Harvard College, 1660. He married, about 1637, Martha Palmer, daughter of William Palmer, of Watertown, Massachusetts, probably from Great

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Ormsby, Norfolk, England, about 1636. She died February 7, 1700-1701. Children, born in Watertown, Massachusetts: 1. John, born November 2, 1638, wounded in the Narragansett Swamp Fight, December 19, 1675, probably died from his wounds. 2. Martha, born February 21, 1639-40; married, September 26, 1661, Francis Bowman, son of Nathaniel and Anne Bowman. 3. Mary, born March 25, 1643, died November 6, 1667; married, January 16, 1666-67, Timothy Hawkins, Jr., son of Timothy and Hannah Hawkins. 4. Elishabah, died March 15, 1649-50. 5. Sarah, born January 17, 1647, died June 17, 1667, unmarried. 6. Joseph, of whom further. 7. Grace, born December 20, 1653, died February 21, 1654-55.

(Sherman: "Sherman Genealogy," pp. 118-19, 122, 123, 124.)

II. *Joseph Sherman*, son of Captain John and Martha (Palmer) Sherman, was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, May 14, 1650, and died there January 20, 1730-31. He was corporal, surveyor and constable, 1682, 1684; assessor, 1695; selectman, 1701-05, 1709-12; deputy to the General Court, 1702-05; soldier in King Philip's War, 1675-76, receiving pay September 23, 1676, as a soldier in Captain Jonathan Poole's company, and in Captain Thomas Brattle's company. He married, November 18, 1673, Elizabeth Winship, born at Cambridge, Massachusetts, April 15, 1652, died before 1731, daughter of Lieutenant Edward and Elizabeth (Parke) Winship. Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Edward, born September 2, 1677, died at Sudbury, December 4, 1766; married Sarah Parkhurst, born November 26, 1676, died October 4, 1756, daughter of John and Abigail (Garfield) Parkhurst. 3. Joseph, born February 8, 1679-80, surveyor of Watertown. 4. Samuel, born November 28, 1682; married Abiah Paine. 5. Jonathan, born February 24, 1684; married Elizabeth Centler, born in Charlestown, daughter of Timothy and Elizabeth (Hilton) Centler. 6. Ephraim, born March 16, 1685, died September 20, 1686. 7. Elizabeth, born July 15, 1687; married a Mr. Stephens. 8. Martha, baptized September 1, 1689; married Rev. Benjamin Shattuck. 9. William, born June 28, 1692. 10. Sarah, born June 2, 1694. 11. Colonel Nathaniel, born September 19, 1696; served in French War; married, March 31, 1726, Mary Livermore, born in December, 1702, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Coolidge) Livermore. They settled in Hassamimisco (afterward Grafton), Massachusetts.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 127, 129, 132-33.)

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. John (3) Sherman, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Winship) Sherman, was born at Watertown, Massachusetts, January 11, 1675, and died at Marlborough, Massachusetts, November 11, 1756. He settled in Marlborough, Massachusetts, about 1700. He married Mary Bullen, daughter of Ephraim and Mary (Morse) Bullen. She died May 5, 1761. Children, except the first, born in Marlborough: 1. Mary, born in Watertown, August 16, 1699; married a Mr. Lebarty. 2. Joseph, born March 25, 1703, died in Shrewsbury, October 10, 1778; married, December 25, 1728, Sarah Perham, born in 1703, died March 2, 1772. 3. John, born December 31, 1705, died April 15, 1711. 4. Grace, born September 13, 1707; married, at Sudbury, Massachusetts, November 2, 1741, Thomas Carr. 5. Ephraim, born March 31, 1710, died in Grafton, Massachusetts, July 9, 1775; married, May 16, 1733, Thankful Temple, born September 20, 1713, died February 27, 1805, daughter of Isaac and Martha (Joslyn) Temple. 6. John, born February 17, 1713, died in Grafton, April 9, 1785; married, December 12, 1739, Eunice Howe, born August 3, 1712, died July 3, 1772. 7. Elizabeth, of whom further. 8. Samuel, born May 12, 1718, died April 24, 1784; married (first) Lydia, who died August 1, 1756. He married (second) Hepzibah.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 129, 130, 131.)

IV. Elizabeth Sherman, daughter of John and Mary (Bullen) Sherman, was born in Marlborough, Massachusetts, October 15, 1715. She received as her marriage portion a tract of land in Grafton, where she died. She married Thomas Axtell, Jr. (Axtell IV.)

(The Brock Line)

Arms—Azure, a fleur-de-lis or, on a chief argent a lion passant guardant gules.
Crest—An escallop or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Locality appears to have a marked bearing on the origin of the surname Brock. In the southeast section of England, the name appears to have originated to designate a resident at the side of a brook (old English Broc), which was of apparent significance to the dwellers of the countryside. The early records show the name well established for William del Brok in the Hundred Rolls of County Essex, A. D. 1273, and Geoffrey de la Brok in those of County Kent. In the West of England, on the other hand, Brock as cognomen is often taken from the nickname bestowed on one who has, in the local imagination, the

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

characteristics of the animal brock or bodger. Here in the Western territory we find Henry le Brok in the Hundred Rolls of County Devon and in the list for Gloucestershire is to be found the name of Walter le Broc.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. *Henry Brock* was in Dedham, Massachusetts, in 1642, and died there in 1652, leaving a wife, Elizabeth, who died before October 19, 1652. Children, born in England: 1. Mary, probably daughter; married, March 5, 1639, Henry Phillips. 2. John, born at Stradbrook, County Suffolk, in 1620, says Mather. 3. Elizabeth; married, October 8, 1644, Robert Gowing. 4. Ann, of whom further.

("Dedham, Massachusetts, Records of Births, Marriages and Deaths," pp. 126-28.)

II. *Ann Brock*, daughter of Henry and Elizabeth Brock, was born in England, and died in Dedham, Massachusetts, December 22, 1712. She married James Vales (Fales.) (Fales I.)

(The Wright Line)

Arms—Sable a chevron argent between three fleurs-de-lis or, on a chief of the second three spearheads azure.

Crest—A dragon's head couped ermine.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Frequently used in conjunction with the name of some craft, the original noun wright often Latinized in mediæval rolls into "faber," meant a fabricant or skilled maker.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

The name is found in all parts of England, and in America it is found in various early settlements in New England, whether of related families, is not known. A famous line is that descended from Thomas Wright, *temp.* Henry VI (1422-61), represented by the Wrights of Oyster Bay, Long Island, from the American progenitors, the brothers Nicholas and Peter Wright. They were of an early line settled in the fifteenth century in Counties Suffolk and Norfolk, England. If George Wright, of the line herewith, was of the same family, no proof exists. Since John Winthrop was of County Suffolk, it is not unlikely that George Wright, who came into the Winthrop colony in America, was of this same section in England.

(H. D. Perrine: "The Wright Family of Oyster Bay, Long Island, with the ancestry of Peter Wright and Nicholas Wright.")

DAGGETT AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. *George Wright*, of Braintree, is the American immigrant of this line. A George Wright was of Salem, Massachusetts, as early as 1636. His wife Elizabeth was a member of the Salem church in 1636. All further record of this George seems to be lacking, but the author of the Pearce genealogy, herein quoted, believes him to be the same as the George Wright, who, with Richard Wright, were both granted land by the town of Boston in the section now known as Braintree, Massachusetts; the latter (Richard) was given water mill rights, February 18, 1639, and twelve acres of land for "3 heads." The same amount of land was granted George for "3 heads," January 27, 1640. Apparently neither remained many years in Massachusetts, although George Wright is freeman of Massachusetts, May 18, 1642. It is probable this George Wright went early to Rhode Island, as many of the name there were contemporaries, and his daughter's marriage there makes this removal likely.

(Pierce, F. C.: "Pearce Genealogy, being the record of the posterity of Richard Pearce, an early inhabitant of Portsmouth in Rhode Island," p. 39. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. III, p. 189. "Braintree, Massachusetts, Town Records, 1640-1793," pp. 1 and 16. Pattee, W. S.: "A History of Old Braintree and Quincy, with a Sketch of Randolph and Holbrook," p. 11. Savage, J.: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 656.)

II. *Susanna Wright*, daughter of George Wright, was born probably in England about 1620. She married Richard Pearce. (Pearce II.)



STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC.

REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUGUST 24, 1912.

OF AMERICANA, published quarterly at Somerville, New Jersey, for October 1, 1931.
State of New York, }
County of New York, }^{ss.}

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and County aforesaid, personally appeared Marion L. Lewis, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the President and Manager of the American Historical Society, Inc., publishers of Americana, and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 411, Postal Laws and Regulations, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, American Historical Society, Inc., Somerville, N. J., and 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Editor, Winfield S. Downs, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Managing Editor, Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Business Manager, Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City.

2. That the owners are: The American Historical Society, Inc.; Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Metcalf B. Hatch, Nutley, N. J.; Ed Lewis, Fifth Avenue Hotel, New York City; F. M. Keller, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Benj. F. Lewis, Jr., 180 N. Wacker Drive, Chicago, Ill.; Winfield S. Downs, 123 Glen Avenue, Glen Rock, N. J.; Louise M. Greuling, 59 North Spring Garden Avenue, Nutley, N. J.; Mrs. Andrew Payne, Pasadena, Calif.; Mabel E. Lewis, 501 Prospect Street, Nutley, N. J.; Myrtle M. Lewis, 119 Glen Avenue, Glen Rock, N. J.; Florence K. Parks, 550 McDonough Street, Brooklyn, N. Y.; Mrs. O. L. Clampitt, 908 Central Avenue, Wilmette, Ill.; Marion L. O. Clark, Valparaiso, Ind.; James A. Dailey, 12 Division Avenue, Belleville, N. J.; Ida E. de Murguiondo, 750 Westminster Road, Brooklyn, N. Y.; J. A. Ellis, 4433 N. Paulina Street, Chicago, Ill.; Harry S. Hatch, Madison, Ind.; Bruce M. Lewis, 19 Coeyman Avenue, Nutley, N. J.; Koradine Lewis, 501 Prospect Street, Nutley, N. J. (Mabel E. Lewis, trustee); Pauline Lewis, 491 E. De Mar Street, Pasadena, Calif.; Mrs. Ruth Lewis Brewster, Fresno, Calif.; E. G. Osborne, 503 Lincoln Way, Valparaiso, Ind.; L. Murray Ray, 287 Delaware Avenue, Toronto, Canada.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

M. L. LEWIS, President.

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 20th day of September, 1931.

(Seal.)

FREDA M. KELLER,

Notary Public Bronx County, No. 38,

Certificate filed in N. Y. Co., No. 354.

(Commission Expires March 30, 1932.)



Henry Bronson.

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

of Matthew Griswold. 6. Dorcas, died May 13, 1697; married Stephen Hopkins. 7. Sarah; married John or Ebenezer, Kilbourn.

(Henry Bronson: "History of Waterbury, Connecticut," pp. 137-41. Charles W. Manwaring: "A Digest of the Early Connecticut Probate Records," Vol. I, pp. 278, 415.)

II. Isaac Bronson, son of John Bronson, born in November, 1645, was baptized in Hartford, Connecticut, December 7, 1645, by the Rev. Thomas Hooker, and died, probably in Waterbury, Connecticut, about 1719. He was one of the twenty-six men who, on October 9, 1673, sent a petition to the court then in session at Hartford, "to make Mattacock a plantation." In 1686, this name was changed to Waterbury. Isaac Bronson was one of the first company in Waterbury, and was named in the first town patent. He was also among those to whom meadow land was allotted in 1679. On May 15, 1684, he joined the Farmington Church. When the train band was reorganized in Waterbury in 1689, Isaac Bronson was appointed corporal, and in 1695 became sergeant. He was deputy in 1697 and 1701 and also served in the capacity of townsman, school committeeman and town surveyor. Isaac Bronson married, about 1669, Mary Root, daughter of John and Mary (Kilbourne) Root, of Farmington. Children: 1. Isaac, born in Farmington, Connecticut, in 1670, died June 13, 1751; married, June 3, 1701, Mary Morgan. 2. John, born in Farmington, in 1673, died in January, 1746-47; married (first), in Waterbury, Connecticut, November 7, 1697, Mary Hikcox, daughter of Samuel and Hannah Hikcox; (second), in June, 1727, Mrs. Hannah (Upson) Richards. 3. Samuel, born in 1676. 4. Mary, born October 15, 1680; married (first) Thomas Hikcox; (second) Samuel Bull. 5. Joseph, born in 1682, died May 10, 1707. 6. Thomas, of whom further. 7. Ebenezer, born in December, 1688, died July 20, 1775; married, November 7, 1715, Mary Hull. 8. Sarah, born November 15, 1691, died in 1748; married, February 26, 1713, Stephen Upson, Jr. 9. Mercy, born September 28 or 29, 1694; married Richard Bronson, of Woodbury.

(Henry Bronson: "History of Waterbury, Connecticut," p. 142. Joseph Anderson, D. D.: "The Town and City of Waterbury, Connecticut," Vol. I, pp. 123, 184, 197, 206, 226, and Appendix, p. 25. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XXVIII, p. 395.)

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

III. Lieutenant Thomas Bronson, son of Isaac and Mary (Root) Bronson, was born January 16, 1686, and died in Waterbury, Connecticut, May 6, 1777. He was the fifth deacon of the Waterbury First Church, his son, Thomas, being the sixth. After the death of his father he bought of his brother, Ebenezer, the family homestead in Waterbury. He was a lieutenant and is so-called on his gravestone. Thomas Bronson married, December 12, 1709, Elizabeth Upson, born February 14, 1689-90, daughter of Stephen and Mary (Lee) Upson. Children: 1. Thomas, of whom further. 2. Stephen, born November 25, 1712, died December 30, 1712. 3. Elizabeth, born April 8, 1714, died in 1715. 4. Elizabeth, born April 24, 1716; married Ebenezer Warner.

(Henry Bronson: "History of Waterbury, Connecticut," p. 142. H. B. Sibley: "Bronson Lineage," p. 12.)

IV. Thomas Bronson, son of Lieutenant Thomas and Elizabeth (Upson) Bronson, was born January 5, 1710-11, and died June 25, 1759. He was the sixth deacon of the church at Waterbury, Connecticut. He married (first), September 25, 1734, Susanna Southmayd, born January 5, 1703-04, daughter of the Rev. John and Susanna (Ward) Southmayd. His second marriage, January 9, 1746, was to Anna Hopkins, daughter of Stephen Hopkins. She married (second) Phineas Royce. Children, of first marriage: 1. Stephen, of whom further. 2. Susanna, born December 7, 1736; married Reverend Elijah Sill. 3. Daniel, born March 8, 1739. 4. Samuel, born June 21, 1741, died in 1741. Children of second marriage: 5. David, born September 25, 1748, died in 1750. 6. Thomas, born March 10, 1751. 7. Anne, born September 28, 1752; married Joseph Upson. 8. Elizabeth, born October 30, 1755. 9. Ruth, born February 23, 1759; married Dr. Upson.

(*Ibid.*)

V. Deacon Stephen Bronson, son of Thomas and Susanna (Southmayd) Bronson, was born about 1735, and died December 15, 1809. He was a thrifty farmer of Waterbury, Connecticut. He married, May 17, 1764, Sarah Humaston, or Humiston, born December 9, 1742, daughter of Caleb and Susanna (Todd) Humaston, or Humiston. Children: 1. Mercy, or Marcia, born December 17, 1764, died March 21, 1813; married, November 6, 1794, John Kingsbury.

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

2. Jesse, born June 9, 1766, died February 4, 1782, or 1788, unmarried. 3. John, born August 14, 1768, died January 22, 1782. 4. Susanna, born December 26, 1770, died October 21, 1773. 5. Content Humaston, born May 14, 1773, died March 28, 1806, unmarried. 6. Bennett, of whom further. 7. Susanna, born April 6, 1780, died July 14, 1811; married, June 23, 1805, Joseph Burton.

(*Ibid.*)

VI. Bennett Bronson, son of Deacon Stephen and Sarah (Humaston) Bronson, was born in Waterbury, Connecticut, November 14, 1775, and died December 11, 1850. From an early period, his father had intended that he should go to college, but the death of his two elder brothers made it necessary for him to stay on the farm, and thus it was not until 1790 that he was sent to Cheshire to study with the Reverend John Foot. After six months he alternately worked on the farm and studied until May, 1793, when he returned to Mr. Foot's to complete his preparation for Yale College. In 1797, he graduated, having for classmates Lyman Beecher, Thomas Day, Samuel A. Foot, James Murdock, Horatio Seymour, Seth P. Staples, and other distinguished men.

The first year after graduation he spent in teaching school and working his father's farm. In September, 1798, he began teaching in a school at Derby Landing, but having received his appointment as first lieutenant in the provisional army of the United States, he left at the end of the first quarter and entered the recruiting service, in May, 1799. In June, 1800, the regiment was disbanded by act of Congress and the following week he took up the study of law under the Honorable Noah B. Benedict, of Woodbury. In April, 1802, he was admitted to the Bar in Litchfield County, and the next summer opened an office in his native town.

In May, 1809, Bennett Bronson was appointed a justice of the peace, and served until 1818, when the political revolution in Connecticut put all Federalists out of office. Some years later (1827) he was once again appointed to that position, but after serving for three years declined another reappointment. He was one of the assistant judges of the New Haven County Court, serving from 1812-14, and in this case, also declined to be reappointed. In May, 1824, he became chief justice of this same court, holding the office for six years. Only once, in 1829, did he represent his town in the Legislature.

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

Aside from his public life and law practice, he was also interested in commercial enterprises, and in 1823, became a limited partner in a company manufacturing brass and gilt buttons. In 1835, then at the age of sixty, having been an extensive landowner and cultivator of the soil from an early period, he gave up his law practice and devoted most of his time to the management of his farm. However, in 1848, when the Waterbury Bank was organized, he subscribed in a large measure to its stock and served as its president until his death two years later.

In politics he was a staunch Federalist; and his religious affiliations were with the Congregational Church, which he served as deacon for six years. He was thoroughly upright in all his dealings with his fellowmen and was known for his good judgment and admirable common sense.

Bennett Bronson married (first), May 11, 1801, Anne Smith, daughter of Richard and Anna (Hurd) Smith, of Roxbury, Connecticut. His second marriage, May 6, 1820, was to Elizabeth Maltby, who died June 12, 1840, daughter of Deacon Benjamin and Rebecca (Taintor) Maltby, of Northford Parish in Branford, Connecticut. Bennett Bronson married (third), May 27, 1841, his second cousin, Nancy Daggett, daughter of Jacob and Rhoda (Humiston) Daggett, of New Haven. She survived him, and died in New Haven, August 14, 1867, in her eighty-fourth year. Children of first marriage: 1. George, born February 27, 1802, died July 21, 1822. 2. Henry, of whom further. 3. Jesse, born February 8, 1806, died April 14, 1831. 4. Thomas, born January 4, 1808; died April 20, 1851; married Cynthia Elizabeth Bartlett. 5. Elizabeth Anna, born March 3, 1812, died April 6, 1845. 6. Susanna, born February 26, died August 12, 1814. 7. Harriet Maria, born September 13, 1815; married Zinah Murdock. Children of second marriage: 8. Rebecca T., born February 10, 1822; married D. F. Maltby. 9. Susan, born January 19, 1824.

(Franklin B. Dexter: "Biographical Sketches of the Graduates of Yale College with Annals of College History, June, 1792-September, 1805," Vol. V, pp. 265-67. Henry Bronson: "History of Waterbury, Connecticut," pp. 379, 469; "Appendix," p. 24.)

VII. Dr. Henry Bronson, son of Bennett and Anne (Smith) Bronson, was born in Waterbury, Connecticut, January 30, 1804. He

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

received his preliminary education in the schools of Waterbury and at the Hopkins Grammar School in New Haven. In the intervals like most other boys of New England, he helped his father in the operation of the home farm. It was the desire of his father that Henry should devote himself to agricultural pursuits. Two other sons of the family, who had gone to Yale to prepare for a professional career had died young, and the father thought that Henry Bronson, whose health was never robust, should not undertake the arduous studies which a university curriculum requires. But Dr. Bronson displayed the strongest natural inclination toward medicine, and when it was seen that the work of the farm was not suited to him, the father acquiesced in his desire to become a physician.

Accordingly, he entered Yale University, studying under many eminent men of medicine, including the famous Benjamin Silliman, until he was graduated in 1827 with the Doctor of Medicine Degree. Dr. Bronson began the practice of his profession at West Springfield, Massachusetts, quickly winning the confidence of those who came to consult him and gaining wide reputation. He was invited to enter into partnership at Albany, New York, with Dr. Alden March, one of the most celebrated surgeons in that part of the State, and for a period of years made that city the center of his professional activities. His numerous articles for the medical press marked him as a most gifted research worker and diagnostician. It was for this reason that when, in 1832, Asiatic cholera became epidemic in Canada, Dr. Bronson was commissioned by the mayor and citizens of Albany to proceed to that country to gather what information he could to be used to combat a possible outbreak of cholera in the United States. In spite of the serious danger involved, Dr. Bronson made his way to Montreal immediately. His letters from that city to the committee in Albany were immediately given to the press and copied by all newspapers on this continent and in foreign lands. They constitute the earliest study of the nature and treatment of Asiatic cholera in existence. Dr. Bronson's fund of information acquired at first hand was immense, and his interpretation of the pathology and treatment of cholera was everywhere incorporated into standard medical practice, remaining the basis of treatment for many years.

After returning from Canada, Dr. Bronson took up his residence at Waterbury, Connecticut, his native town, where he rose to pre-

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

eminent position among the men of his profession. In 1839, he made a visit to Europe for study as well as on account of his health. In 1842, he was elected to the chair of materia medica and therapeutics at Yale University, which he held for ten years, residing during this period at New Haven. Although failing health prompted him to retire, he was persuaded to continue with his classes until 1860, when he went to the Barbados to spend the winter, hoping to regain full constitutional vigor. Dr. Bronson's lectures were famous. Clear, decisive and interesting, they forcefully presented to the young students the fund of reliable knowledge which the medical sciences were gradually accumulating. Dr. Bronson was frequently called upon to lecture in other fields, historical, philosophical, economic and financial. On these subjects he also wrote many articles, and his trenchant pen won him a wide circle of readers. His papers on current topics were especially valuable as essays in interpretation during the approaching crisis of the Civil War. In the field of history, Dr. Bronson was the author of a "Chronicle of the Town of Waterbury," a vast undertaking resolutely pursued in the face of great difficulties, and extremely valuable in the study of the growth of New England society. He was also the author of a series of biographical and historical papers containing a record of leading Connecticut physicians in an earlier day.

Both during his stay at Yale, and afterwards, Dr. Bronson contributed generously to the support of the university. His gift was an important factor in the founding of a professorship of comparative anatomy and physiology. He also contributed to the New Haven and Waterbury hospitals, and maintained until the last a vital interest in the cause of educational progress. Dr. Bronson was an active member of the Connecticut Medical Society, serving as its president in 1870. He was also a member of the New Haven Colony Historical Society, before which he frequently read papers.

June 3, 1831, Dr. Bronson married Sarah Miles Lathrop, daughter of the Hon. Samuel Lathrop, of Springfield, Massachusetts, and granddaughter of the Rev. Joseph Lathrop, D. D., who was pastor of the Congregational Church in West Springfield from 1756 to 1818. He was an eminent divine of that period, and his sermons, published in seven volumes with his autobiography, were widely read. Dr. and Mrs. Bronson were the parents of four children: Samuel Lathrop,

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

of whom further; George, who died in infancy; Nathan Smith, and Stephen Henry, of whom further.

Dr. Bronson spent the last years of his life in New Haven, and there his death occurred on November 26, 1893, in the ninetieth year of his age. It is impossible to estimate, even now, the full value of a career such as his, but that which he accomplished will remain through the years an enduring monument to his fame.

Samuel Lathrop Bronson, eldest son of Dr. Henry and Sarah Miles (Lathrop) Bronson, was born in Waterbury, Connecticut, on January 12, 1834, and died in New Haven, on June 11, 1917. He was educated at General Russell's Military School in New Haven, and graduated from Yale in 1855 with the degree of Bachelor of Arts. He studied law at Yale, and was admitted to the bar in 1858. He practiced law in Seymour for three years, and then moved to New Haven in 1861. He was representative of Seymour in the State Legislature four times. He was judge of the city court of New Haven, 1865-67; recorder of the city court, 1866-67; corporation counsel for New Haven, 1873-78; counsel for the town of New Haven for many years; and a judge of the court of common pleas for a little over a year. In politics, he was a Democrat. At one time he declined a nomination to the office of mayor. In 1900, he was the defeated candidate for Governor of the State. In 1861, he married Fannie Stoddard, daughter of Dr. Thomas Stoddard, of Seymour. They had six children: Thomas Stoddard, born in 1864; Mary E., born in 1865, died in 1895; Joseph Harmar, born in 1867, married Harriett Jennings; Sarah F., born in 1878, died in 1927; Ezekial S., born in 1878, married Leila Carrington; and Marion de F., born in 1880.

Nathan Smith Bronson, son of Dr. Henry and Sarah Miles (Lathrop) Bronson, was born on November 20, 1837, at Waterbury, Connecticut. Both paternally and maternally he was a member of distinguished Connecticut families, and in his own useful career he continued the fine traditions always associated with the Bronson and Lathrop names. He attended General William H. Russell's famous military school at New Haven, and was graduated from the Sheffield Scientific School at Yale University with the degree of Bachelor of Philosophy in 1856. After the completion of his college course, Mr. Bronson entered business at New Haven, but failing health convinced him of the necessity of a change, and he purchased a farm in New

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

Britain, Connecticut, where he made his home. He was active, however, in financial affairs of New Haven and Waterbury. Mr. Bronson married (first) Charlotte Pond, who died early in life, leaving one daughter. Mr. Bronson married (second), in 1874, Jane Camp, of Plainville, Connecticut, who died in 1875. Of this second marriage one daughter, Jane Camp, was born. In 1879, Mr. Bronson married Sarah S. Brown, of New Britain, Connecticut, who survives him. They became the parents of four children, three sons and one daughter: 1. Stephen Henry. 2. Howard Kirkham. 3. Margaret Lathrop. 4. Theodore Leffingwell, born May 3, 1890. After the death of his father, in 1893, Mr. Bronson removed to the old family home in New Haven, which was to be his residence thereafter until his death, on May 1, 1911. He lived a quiet and retired life, partly because ill health forced him to do so, partly because he was by nature quiet, modest, and retiring. To quote from a previous biographer:

Mr. Bronson was always a silent man; always a man with few friends. He lavished upon his family affection and devotion. He was a man of broad humanity and simple habits, delighting to be out of doors in all weathers. He was unassuming and only those who knew him closely were aware of his generous influences and quiet benefactions. He gave liberally, and always generously to what he believed to be deserving objects of charity. He read, he observed, he thought—sometimes very deeply and seriously. Such was his life. . . .

Stephen Henry Bronson, youngest son of Dr. Henry and Sarah Miles (Lathrop) Bronson, was born in Waterbury, Connecticut, on February 18, 1844, and died in New Haven on August 19, 1880. He graduated from Yale Medical School in 1866. He was selected as class orator, but with his usual modesty declined the honor. The following year he studied comparative anatomy in Cambridge, Massachusetts, with Professor Jeffries Wyman. In 1867, he went to Europe and pursued his medical studies in Paris for three years. On his return he started practice in New Haven. As a physician, his skill and conscientious devotion to his work won him an enviable position. His interest in improving the general public health and in increasing the facilities for the treatment of the sick were shown by his tireless efforts for the establishment of the New Haven Dispensary, which was opened December 1, 1871. In 1874 he was appointed physician at New Haven Hospital, and in 1880 was made

HENRY BRONSON, M. D., PHYSICIAN AND EDUCATOR

a member of its Prudential Committee. He was a lecturer in Physiology in the Yale Medical School, and was a member of the city board of Health. He was a member of the Connecticut Medical Society. By reason, not only of his natural gifts and his high professional attainments, but also of his wisdom and good judgment, his association was highly valued. His patients loved him and his colleagues respected him. His early death was a great loss not only to society, but to the medical profession.



April 1932



McMILLAN LOG COLLEGE
Built About 1780—Still Standing at Canonsburg, Pennsylvania

VOL. XXVI

APRIL, 1932

NUMBER 2

AMERICANA

ILLUSTRATED



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.
SOMERVILLE, NEW JERSEY
AND
NEW YORK CITY

Entered at the Post Office in Somerville, N. J., as Second Class Matter, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

Copyright, 1932
The American Historical Society, Inc.

Contents

	PAGE
Washington and Jefferson, the Oldest College West of the Alleghanies	181
By Maurice E. Wilson, D. D., Sometime Pastor of the College, Washington, Pennsylvania.	
Founding of the Leland Stanford Junior University	194
By George E. Crothers, of the Class of 1895, San Francisco, California.	
Rhode Island's Contribution to California	232
By Eileen M. MacMannus, Ed. B., of Providence, Rhode Island.	
Edgar Cowan, United States Senator, from Pennsylvania During the Civil War	247
By John Newton Boucher, Greensburg, Pennsylvania.	
Devenpeck, Schermerhorn and Allied Families	261
By E. D. Clements, Providence, Rhode Island.	
Henry Bronson, M. D., Distinguished Physician and Educator	304
By Herold R. Finley, Providence, Rhode Island.	

AMERICANA

April, 1932

Washington and Jefferson, the Oldest College West of the Alleghanies

BY MAURICE E. WILSON, D. D., SOMETIME PASTOR OF THE COLLEGE,
WASHINGTON, PENNSYLVANIA

THE pioneers who ventured into the wilds of Western Pennsylvania were naturally hardy, stalwart men. Otherwise they would never have undertaken such an enterprise. They could have stayed at home in the East, and enjoyed the comparative ease and luxuries of that part of the world. The discomforts and dangers of the wilderness were such as citizens of today can only imagine.

The journey over the mountains, not less than one hundred and twenty miles, was beset with constant perils, by reason of the character of the road, over rocks, skirting precipices and through marshes. As though this were not enough, these early settlers had also to face the red man, tomahawks and scalping knives. The Indians obliterated more than one family that had dared to take the journey, and the scenes of those atrocities are still known as "The Burned Cabins," "Bloody Run," and by other grewsome names.

The first of the founders of Washington and Jefferson to visit this western country was the Reverend John McMillan, D. D., in 1775. He was the father of classical education in the Pennsylvania backwoods. He gives in his journal a minute account of his first trip over the mountains. "There was no wagon road at that time," he says, "and we could bring nothing with us but what we carried on our pack horses." When the first night overtook him and his companion they were far from any habitation, and were forced to "entertain" themselves in the woods. Finding a spot where there was water, they

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

unsaddled their horses, hobbled them with hickory bark, and turned them loose. "We then made a fire and roasted for our supper part of a deer we had shot, and about ten o'clock composed ourselves for rest. I wrapped myself in my great coat and laid me on the ground, with my saddle bags for a pillow." After another day on horseback, the next night's lodging was not much better, . . . "sleeping on a deer skin, with a great coat under his head." "Friday," continues the journal, "the day being wet, the road difficult and houses scarce, I often lost my way." That night he spent in a deserted cabin, getting into it by way of a hole in the roof which served for a chimney.

McMillan and his companion came into the wilderness not only to preach the gospel to the pioneers and their families, but to seek out and educate young men for the ministry. Indeed, it was primarily for this purpose that the log schoolhouses, and the later academies and colleges were founded. The men settled down to their work actually within sound of the Indian's war whoop and within sight of the smoke of his wigwams.

McMillan founded a log cabin school, at Chartiers, about two miles west of the settlement which has become Canonsburg. The log cabin is still preserved, on the old campus of Jefferson College, under the custodianship of the Phi Gamma Delta Fraternity. The modern visitor, accustomed to modern educational development, realizes forcefully how small, how insignificant, how infinitesimal were the beginnings of education in frontier Pennsylvania, and of the college which derives directly from that log school.

The beginning made by McMillan was paralleled by the work of two other men, the Reverend Thaddeus Dodd and the Reverend Joseph Smith. They all sprang from that sturdy, earnest, godly, and liberty-loving race, the Scotch-Irish. They were all graduates of Princeton. Dodd came first to Western Pennsylvania two years after McMillan, "to investigate conditions and inquire into the needs of the growing population from the point of view of religion and of education." He founded his school at Amity, about ten miles south of Washington. Smith followed shortly after, and founded a similar log school about eight miles west of Washington. They were in no sense rival institutions, and it does not appear that the founders at first intended that they should grow into academies, and later into colleges. They were temporary expedients, to be supported until

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

the work could be undertaken by more permanent institutions. The date of the opening of these schools is uncertain, but Dr. McMillan's and Dodd's schools were certainly in operation by 1782, and Mr. Smith's by 1785.

The first chartered academy west of the Alleghanies was established by the united efforts of McMillan, Dodd, Smith, and others, and located at Washington, Pennsylvania. The Charter bears the date September 24, 1787. The interest that the establishment of this institution aroused farther east is attested by the fact that Benjamin Franklin contributed the sum of fifty pounds for the establishment of its library. The new school did not begin its work, however, until April 1, 1789, when it was opened in the building known as the "Court House," with twenty or thirty students, under the principalship of the Reverend Thaddeus Dodd. Two years later the Court House was burned, and the school closed. The Washington citizens were dilatory about providing a suitable building for the infant institution, and as in the case of Rip Van Winkle, while they were asleep, things happened. Colonel John Canon, a Revolutionary War veteran and the founder of Canonsburg, was wide awake. He provided a site and advanced money for the erection of a stone academy in that town. The citizenry of Canonsburg and the clergy of the region, especially McMillan, Dodd and Smith, gave every support to the institution. It was soon opened, and immediately received the hearty endorsement of the local Presbytery and the Synod of Virginia.

The opening exercises of the Academy into which McMillan's log school had grown took place in July, 1791, in surroundings which the record is very specific in referring to as of the humblest sort: "in a fence corner under the shade of some sassafras bushes on the banks of the Chartiers Creek, half a mile from the village, near Canon's Mill." There was one student only, Mr. Robert Patterson, who recited a lesson in Latin to Mr. David Johnston, a graduate of the University of Pennsylvania. Mr. Patterson was himself later graduated from the same university, and entered the ministry.

At this time George Washington owned a tract of land about five miles north of Canonsburg, consisting of three thousand acres. When he came West to look after his interests, there were thirteen or fourteen farmers settled there, with their families. Among these were the paternal ancestors of United States Senators David A. Reed, of

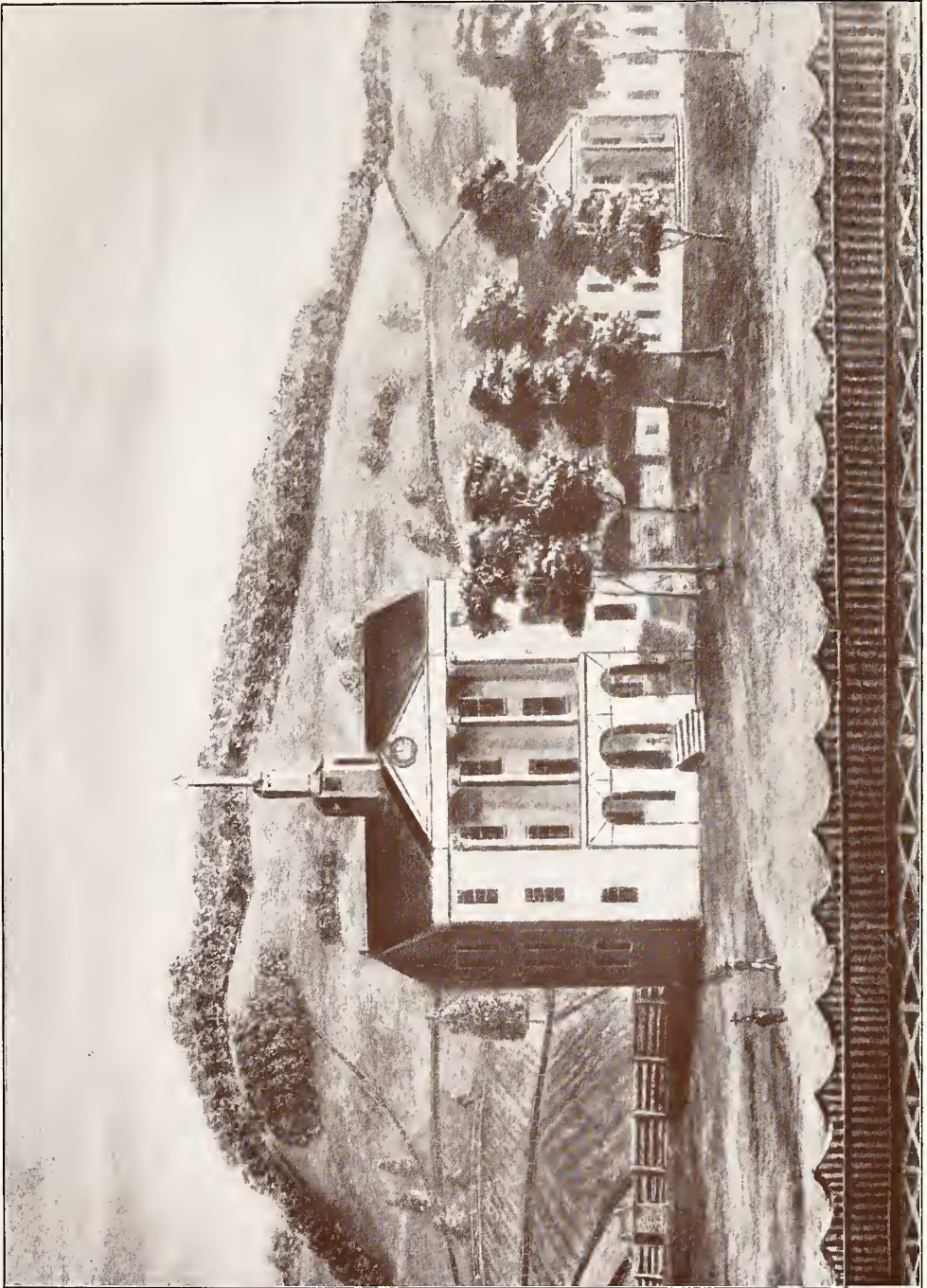
WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

Pennsylvania, and James A. Reed, of Missouri. Families of that type and fertility could in themselves furnish with students the schools of McMillan, Dodd and Smith. They could also, later, as they did, contribute to the memberships of Washington and Jefferson colleges. Dr. George P. Hays, an early president of Washington and Jefferson College, was on his mother's side of the house a product of that community, Miller's Run.

When Washington took the oath of office as President of the United States, Dr. McMillan's log cabin academy, near Canonsburg, had been doing its good work for six or eight years. Some historians have suggested that this log academy was not a "classical" institution at all, but simply an English school to train young men in "readin', writin', and countin'." The fact is that McMillan began training his young ministers in Greek and Latin as early as 1782. If there were no other evidence, an old copy of "Ovid" in the possession of the writer is ample proof of this fact. This copy was used in a class at Princeton in 1758, was brought over the mountains on a packhorse, and was used by Dr. McMillan's students in his log academy. The margins are full of scribblings, one of which, by James McGready, in Latin, is translated as follows: "James McGready read this book in 1783." And on another page: "James McGready read this book under the direction of John McMillan, Chartiers Theologian." Classical education was, of course, pursued in Jefferson Academy.

Among the archives of the college is a list of subscriptions taken in one of the churches in 1794 for the erection of the stone building for the academy. The list includes: James Ewing, 5 bu. of wheat; Robert Moore, 2 bu. of wheat; Samuel Riddle, 7 shillings 6 pence; Mrs. Vallandingham, 6 yds. linen; Mrs. Nesbit, 3 yds. linen. Those good women made that linen, of course, with their own hands. Such was the local interest in the project; such the nature of the assistance given.

The academy at Canonsburg secured as its principal the Reverend John Watson, a young man of brilliant promise, a Princeton graduate, who, in the estimation of that college, was regarded as the most brilliant scholar of that period. In 1802, almost immediately after his election as principal of the academy, he obtained from the Legislature the Charter of Jefferson College. By that decree, Jefferson



WASHINGTON COLLEGE, 1836

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

became the first college from the Alleghanies West; Watson, its first president.

The citizens of Washington had refused to coöperate in the establishment of the Canonsburg academy. But, aroused by the success of that institution, they purchased, instead, a piece of ground which is now a part of the campus, and erected the stone building which is now the administration building of Washington and Jefferson College. The Reverend Dr. Matthew Brown became principal of the Washington Academy. He was a man of commanding personal appearance, and was widely known for his originality, his vigorous intellect, his commanding power as a public speaker, his strongly marked character and tireless energy. He was an outstanding scholar, not only in the department of ancient languages, but also in rhetoric, logic, moral philosophy, and metaphysics, all of which he taught with phenomenal success. It was during his principalship, and chiefly through his influence, that the academy secured its charter as Washington College in 1806, four years after Jefferson College was chartered.

From this time until the union of the colleges, the records are exasperatingly meager, so meager indeed, as to present an almost uninterrupted series of disappointments. The records which portray living conditions at the two institutions are, however, most interesting. The prices of living in that by-gone period seem to us incredible. If they were not printed in catalogs of the early years, I should hesitate to quote them; they seem so utterly preposterous. Boarding per week cost from one dollar to one dollar and eighty-seven and one-half cents. On the farm and in the college the average price of board was one dollar and thirty-seven and one-half cents. Coal cost three cents per bushel, candles twelve and one-half cents per pound, and washing, two dollars and a half per academic session, that is, for five months. An impecunious student at this time found it necessary to practice economy. "I rented a room on the edge of town," he writes, "for twenty-five cents a week, boarded myself for thirty-seven and one-half cents, coal costing thirty-one and one-fourth cents, and light six and one-fourth cents. Thus passed the winter happily, for I had much time to study and no fear of hurting myself with rich diet." Certainly that boy's chief hunger and thirst must have been for education.

The boarding houses of the colleges were known as "The Forts,"

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

by such names as Fort Job, Fort Hunt, Fort Slack, Fort Emery, Fort Maximus, and Fort Death. At this period the boys wore class uniforms: sack coats made of flannel, the Freshmen of green, the Sophomores of blue, and the Juniors of red. What an appearance this assemblage of colors must have made. The seniors decorated themselves with top hats.

It is an interesting fact that in 1807, one year after Washington College received its charter, an effort was made to unite the two institutions. Similar negotiations were attempted in 1815, 1817, 1843, 1847, 1852, and 1857, with, of course, like failure. At length, in 1865, the union was effected. The feeling among the students and citizens of the two communities ran high. The hostile camps were exceedingly hostile. Some of the most earnest and noblest Christian men of Washington were regarded by the citizenry of Canonsburg as the very incarnation of iniquity. The compliment was returned by the citizenry of Washington without any loss of either vocabulary or accent. A well-known alumnus who was at the college at that time, after serving as a soldier during the Civil War, declared that the feeling over this local fight was as intense as that over slavery and secession.

The controversy was of such a character that some of the staid and self-respecting citizens both of Washington and Canonsburg well nigh lost all their religion. A good Presbyterian minister in Canonsburg, in the course of his prayer in pulpit one Sunday morning offered this petition: "Let thy favor now abide, as in the past, upon this college; O Lord, thou knowest that we mean Jefferson College." Divine favor upon Washington College? Perish the thought!

It was a savage fight, in which no quarter was asked and no feelings spared. Epithets hot and sizzling filled the air. But the union was a case of stark necessity. Both institutions were spending more than their incomes. As a result of the Civil War, the patronage of the South was gone. No longer could these colleges expect to draw from those states that once yielded a large percentage of their support. The catalog of 1836 shows that at that period more than one-sixth of the student body hailed from the South. During the Civil War the interregional character of the college was especially manifest. In the two armies, Washington and Jefferson College men had many curious experiences. Northern and Southern soldiers who had been

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

classmates at the college, and who were devoted friends, met in combat, in prisons, and lying among the wounded and dying. These friendships obliterated the enmities of the battlefields. Boys who had sung the college songs together, who had pledged themselves to one another in fraternity meeting rooms, who had strolled the banks of the Char-tiers, and had loafed on the hilltops like gods together, could not forget. In the later histories of those pre-war classes we come upon occasional mention of guns thrown down and arms thrown round one another in the old affection, and assistance rendered that sometimes snatched a classmate from death. At the siege of Vicksburg no less than four members of the Jefferson class of '59 met together and fraternized like college boys of other days. This class sent eleven men into the Union Army and six into the Confederate Army.

The representation from the South, especially in Jefferson College, was notable. A few years ago the Reverend Dr. Hemphill, of Louisville, told the writer of a case in his own family. His father and uncle were sent to Jefferson College from South Carolina. The father of the two boys bought a horse and saddlebags for each one and started them off to Canonsburg. There they sold the horses, remained for four years, and were graduated in the class of 1833. Then their father sent them the money to buy some more horses, and they rode back to South Carolina with their sheepskins in their saddlebags. Probably this large Southern patronage was due in some degree to the many Jefferson graduates who went South to teach and who lived very frequently in the homes of the people. One biographer says of a classmate: "He followed the crowd and went South to teach." Another says of a fraternity brother: "He did the fashionable thing—went South to teach." The diminution in attendance from the Southern States, and the wish of the schools to take advantage of a bequest of fifty thousand dollars by the Reverend C. C. Beatty, of Steubenville, brought about the union of the colleges in the year in which the Civil War ended.

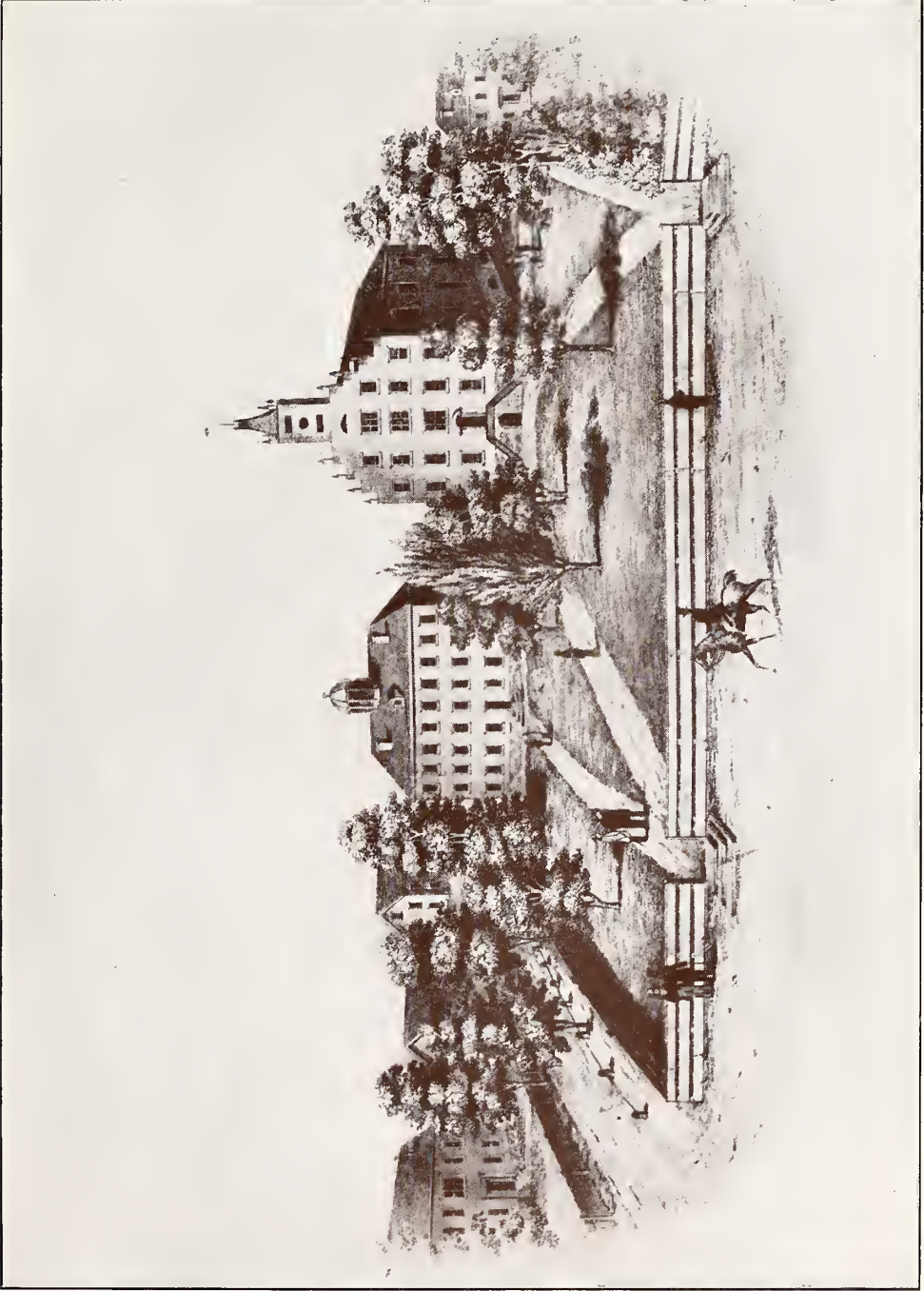
Without the men who have gone from Washington and Jefferson colleges, and from other institutions of a similar character, our Nation would be poor indeed. On the roll of honor of Washington and Jefferson are statesmen of every degree; cabinet ministers, United States Senators, Congressmen, Governors of states, legislators, presidents of colleges and universities, ministers, moderators of general

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

assemblies, bishops, judges on the bench, judges of both higher and lower courts, lawyers, doctors, engineers, teachers, scientists, artists, missionaries, business men. Certainly very few institutions with no larger enrollment can boast of so many men of eminence and power among their alumni.

Curtin, Beaver and Geary, Governors of Pennsylvania, were graduates of Jefferson College. James Gillespie Blaine, Maine editor, Member of Congress, Speaker of the House, United States Senator for twenty years, Secretary of State and candidate for the Presidency, which he lost by only one thousand votes, was a Washington College graduate of the class of 1847. Henry H. Bingham, brigadier-general during the Civil War; Benjamin F. Bristow, Secretary of the Treasury in the cabinet of President Grant; Matthew Stanley Quay, United States Senator from Pennsylvania; Stephen Collins Foster, that genius of the world of song, the writer of such familiar songs as "My Old Kentucky Home"; Henry C. McCook, brilliant minister of the gospel, Civil War officer and eminent scientist; Bishop David H. Greer and Dr. John R. Paxton, of New York City; William A. Passavant, the founder of the Pittsburgh Infirmary, now Passavant Hospital, of the orphans' homes of Rochester, Zeligopolis and Mt. Vernon, New York, the Milwaukee Hospital at Chicago, and Theil College at Greenville, Pennsylvania; William Holmes McGuffey, pioneer educator and author of the famous McGuffey readers; the Hon. Chauncey H. Black, of Pennsylvania; William L. Alden, editor of the "New York Times"; Col. John Nevin, famous Pittsburgh editor; Sir James Rhea Ewing, of India, knighted by the British Government for distinguished civic and religious services—these are representative of the generations of men who have gone, year after year, into all walks of life, into all parts of the world, inevitably bearing and imparting in their distinguished careers influences of Washington and Jefferson colleges.

The two literary societies, Philo and Franklin, which for almost three-quarters of a century figured very prominently in Jefferson College life, were founded in 1797 by the Reverend John Watson, and by Dr. James Carnahan, respectively. They were modeled after the Cliosophic and Whig societies at Princeton. Not long after, similar societies called the Union and the Washington, were founded at Washington College. Almost immediately after the establishment



JEFFERSON COLLEGE, 1840

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

of these societies the annual "Contest" was inaugurated, a feature of college activity which had not obtained at Princeton. "Contest" meant battle for literary honor, and in character and importance it was second to commencement only. The whole community was enlisted on one side or the other. The judges were usually imported from Pittsburgh, or elsewhere, for everyone in both towns was already committed and could not be trusted, according to the opposition. When the decision was announced, pandemonium broke loose. The victors and their friends, of course, created the pandemonium.

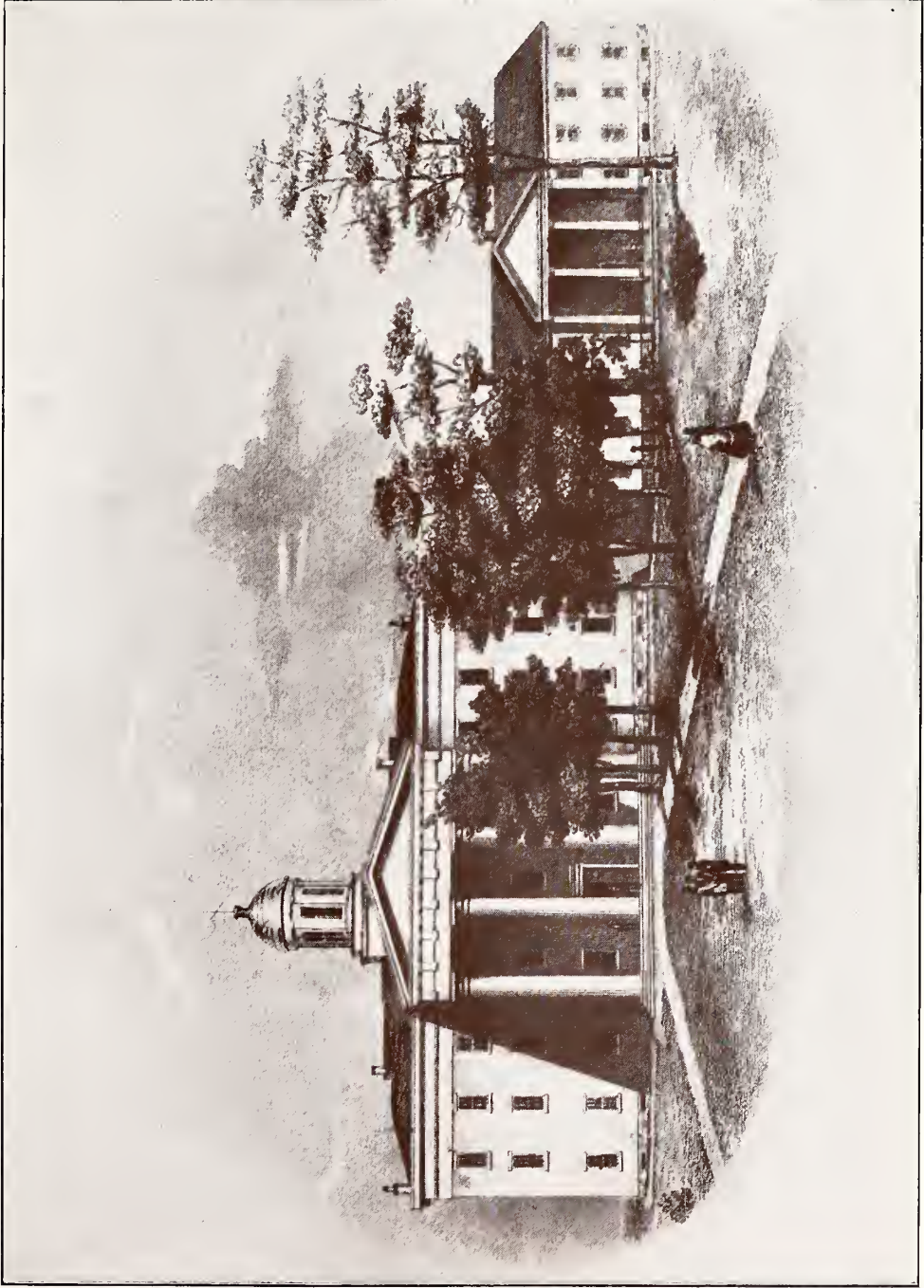
In addition to the former "Contest" days, the great annual events of the college have been Commencement day, and "The Twenty Second," which means, of course, Washington's Birthday. Nothing can compare with the celebrations of these three days as evidence of the great part which the colleges have played in the life of the entire region for over a century. In Washington, the former date was celebrated by a huge parade, under the leadership of Major Ewing, a Mexican War veteran. The parade left the campus by way of Beau Street, and moved to the town hall, formerly located on the lot where the courthouse now stands. Major Ewing served in this capacity for fifty-four years. He had a stentorian voice, and when he gave an order, only those in the last article of death failed to hear it. The same enthusiastic occasion was observed at Canonsburg, under the direction of another Mexican War veteran, General Calohan, a devout and meticulous imitator of General Winfield Scott. The importance of the "Twenty Second" to a student is seen in an extract from a soldier's diary of the year 1863, which says: "Spent the day in my tent jumping up and down to keep my feet warm. A great way to spend the twenty second!" Just the "Twenty Second." For a student of Washington and Jefferson College February was the only month that had a twenty-second. The day was spent at the colleges in indulgence in all kinds of jests and jokes at the expense of other students, the members of the faculty, the citizens. In the afternoon the students took to horseback and rode through the town, masked, singing and shouting like so many Comanche Indians. Then in the evening, still masked, they visited the homes in the community, in small groups, usually the homes of particular friends. The game was for the citizens to discover the identity of their variegated callers, without disturbing the masks.

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

As to the size of the colleges, Jefferson was always the larger. Its graduates from the date of organization until the union in 1865 numbered 1,946, while Washington graduated 865. Mr. W. F. Chamberlain, the historian of the Phi Gamma Delta fraternity, makes the statement that Jefferson College, in 1848, had as many students as Princeton or Harvard. In spite of Mr. Chamberlain's well-known accuracy, this seems extravagant. The catalogs show, however, that in 1848 Harvard had 275 undergraduates, Princeton 243, Jefferson 207. In 1850, Harvard had 297, Princeton 271, Jefferson 234. Princeton's gain for the two years was 28, Harvard's 24, Jefferson's 27. This growth continued, and ten years later the class of 1858 at Jefferson was graduated with an enrollment of 75, within eleven of the class of 1931, with its 84. It was after this that the Civil War broke out, and in 1873 the faculty numbered only eight, including the president, and the student body 140.

The first president of the united college, after its location in Washington, was the Reverend Dr. George P. Hays, a member of the Jefferson class of 1857. Elected in 1870, he served his *alma mater* for eleven years. He was one of the most prodigious workers that ever trod academic halls. His versatility was phenomenal. Carlyle spoke of one of the men of his day as a "steam engine in breeches." George P. Hays was a human dynamo. He could turn from one task to another with such rapidity as to make an onlooker's head swim. In his farewell address to the community and the college, he suddenly paused, and with a quizzical smile that was characteristic of him, he remarked that some citizens wondered why he was leaving Washington. He answered his own question by saying: "To make room for four men." This was literally true. The college had to find a president and a financial secretary, both of which offices Dr. Hays had filled. The second Presbyterian Church had to secure a pastor, and the Pittsburgh Southern Railroad had to find a president. In addition to these positions with their responsibilities, Dr. Hays did more class room work, in respect to variety of subjects, than any other member of the faculty. The writer's own class had with him Political Economy, International Law, Evidences of Christianity, Constitutional Law, Natural Theology, and Logic.

It goes without saying that the administration of Dr. Hays was a highly critical period for the institution, the most critical in its history.



WASHINGTON COLLEGE, 1850

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

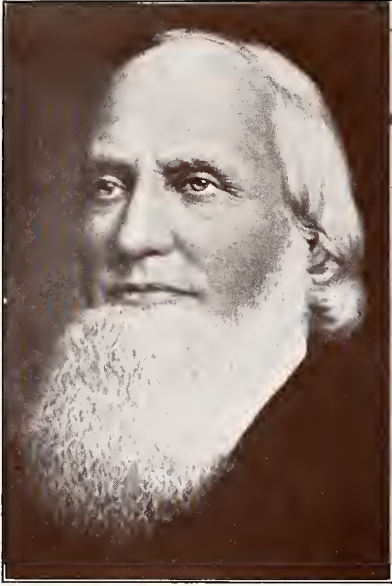
Lost ground had to be recovered; the tide had to be turned. The Jefferson Alumni, almost to a man, were bitterly alienated, declaring that in the union of the two colleges the whale had been swallowed by the minnow. They were particularly hostile because one of their number had accepted the presidency. They regarded Dr. Hays as a traitor to his *alma mater*, and they threw every obstacle in his way. The result of it was that the number of students was reduced almost to the vanishing point. While the class of 1869 had 59 seniors, the class of 1870 had only ten. The class of 1871 had 18 and the two following classes had only 8 each. But the president was not a man to be cowed by enemies, or discouraged by conditions. His smile never faded. His radiant good humor, so far as observers could discern, was never ruffled. What the average man would have considered a defeat, he regarded as only one more opportunity for victory. "God's in his heaven; all's right with the college," was his motto. Dr. Moffat, the following president, referred in his inaugural address to this period as one "of bitterness and opposition which darkened the prospect when my predecessor entered upon his work with the courage and energy which the crisis demanded." In addition to all else he accomplished, President Hays rebuilt the main hall, adding the entire front, as it stands today, from the vestibule to the main towers, and the top story of the main section.

As a public speaker, Dr. Hays was as extraordinary as he was in other respects. One of the two greatest oratorical achievements which the present writer ever witnessed was by Gladstone in the House of Commons, when, as Chancellor of the Exchequer, he made a report and defended it against the heckling of the opposition. The other was by Dr. Hays in the old Horticultural Hall in Philadelphia. It was on the occasion of a popular meeting one evening during a General Assembly. It was ten o'clock. The assembly and visitors were weary after a long day of business, discussions and debates. The man who preceded Dr. Hays had triumphantly put the four thousand auditors to sleep. The reporters had stopped taking notes, and were leaning back in their chairs, twiddling their thumbs and yawning. Dr. Hays stepped to the edge of the platform with a smile on his face, shot forth a sentence or two with that piercing voice of his, and within three minutes he had that great audience in his grip. The reporters dropped their chairs onto their four legs, drew up to their tables, and

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

picking up their pencils began to take notes. After the death of Dr. Hays, brought about at the age of fifty-nine by his almost superhuman labors, Sir Robertson Nicoll, of London, famous editor of the "British Weekly" and other well-known publications, had this to say of the ex-president: "Dr. Hays was one of the representatives of his Church at the Pan Presbyterian Council held in Belfast, and certainly no man at that great gathering produced a deeper impression. . . . He was possessed of such originality and power as are given to very few men. It has been our good fortune to know many brilliant Americans, both ministers and laymen, but none on the whole who seemed to be as brilliant as Dr. George P. Hays." Some writer has declared that to have one's name mentioned by Gibbon was like having it inscribed on the dome of St. Paul's Cathedral. That is what befell Dr. Hays when Sir Robertson Nicoll published his tribute in the "British Weekly."

The successor of Dr. Hays was that distinguished Christian statesman, the Reverend Dr. James D. Moffat. He had been graduated in the class of 1869, capturing all the honors within sight. The wisdom of the trustees in their choice of Dr. Moffat was never questioned; it was apparent from the beginning. Dr. Moffat faced his responsibilities with faith in his *alma mater* and devout consecration to his task. Throughout his administration of thirty-three years he became more and more widely admired and beloved. He directed the institution with such wisdom and power as raised it to its present high rank. His students loved him, even the wildest of them, due to the depth of heart which never failed to prove him their friend. It was during his administration that the college field was purchased, and the library, the physics building, the gymnasium and the dormitory were added to the campus building group. Dr. Moffat was honored by the church in his elevation to the moderatorship of the general assembly after his power and finesse as an ecclesiastical statesman had been fully demonstrated. He must be numbered among the most notable American churchmen as well as among the outstanding educators of his day. In his classroom he revealed his breadth and depth of scholarship. Some of his students have told the writer, with eyes that fairly danced, of the pleasure they derived from his courses, so rich and rare were they in material and manner. His style was at times peaceful and limpid as a brook, and again hurtling as if he were rushing to combat. This was equally true of his conver-



WILLIAM A. PASSAVANT
Washington, 1840

Founder; Passavant Hospital; Rochester Orphans' Home; Zellenople Farm School; Theil College, Greenville, Pennsylvania.



JAMES G. BLAINE
Washington, 1847

Speaker of the House; United States Senator Twenty Years; Secretary of State; Presidential Candidate



JAMES D. MOFFAT

Washington and Jefferson, 1869

Editor, Presbyterian Banner; Moderator, General Assembly; President, Washington and Jefferson, 1882-1915



STEPHEN COLLINS FOSTER

Jefferson Student, 1841-42

Famous Composer

WASHINGTON AND JEFFERSON COLLEGE

sation. What an exquisite privilege it was to sit beside an evening fire with Dr. Moffat in one of his best moods. His innate honesty, in dealing with himself, as in dealing with others, was revealed in a frank statement which he made to a friend after his resignation. He said that he had found himself growing irritable at times, more and more so. And the position he occupied as president was no place for an irritable man.

Dr. Ralph C. Hutchison, who was elected to the presidency of the college in 1931, came to Washington and Jefferson, like Dr. Moffat, as one of the youngest college heads in the country. Like Dr. Moffat he studied for the ministry, but turned to teaching and educational administration as his life work. An alumnus of Washington and Jefferson's sister college, Lafayette, the holder of Master of Arts and Doctor of Philosophy degrees from Harvard and Pennsylvania, respectively, a graduate of Princeton Theological Seminary and recipient of the Doctor of Divinity degree from his *alma mater*, Dr. Hutchison was for six years a teacher and dean of the American University of Teheran, Persia, and follows in the great line of McMillan, Hays and Moffat as one of the most scholarly executives in the history of the institution.

Such, in brief, is the record of Washington and Jefferson College. Its foundation was in the spread of earliest settlement on the frontier, beyond which was the Northwestern Territory, in times more remote from the present than any mere chronological terms can possibly represent. Its foundation was a chapter in the Christianization and civilization of the region. Its development has been a persistent and increasing continuation of Christian and cultural influences, which, directed by outstanding educators of the century, has been extended through its Alumni and continues to go forth today to all parts of the world. Its life has been the life of the region, the feud which prevented the union of the colleges no less than the conditions of the Civil War and reconstruction period which consummated their union. The cultural history of America cannot be written without a stronger emphasis than is commonly accorded on the history of such institutions.

Founding of the Leland Stanford Junior University*

BY GEORGE E. CROTHERS, OF THE CLASS OF 1895, SAN FRANCISCO,
CALIFORNIA



ALTHOUGH Stanford University was founded by a grant which was dated November 14, 1885, it was on October 1, 1891, just forty years ago this month, that the doors were formally opened.

The Stanfords retained complete control over the properties conveyed in the Founding Grant, and over the University, including all of the powers eventually to vest in the Trustees upon the death of the survivor of the founders. While the three California ranches constituting the original endowment were expected by Senator Stanford eventually to produce a large and certain income for the University, they were not upon an income-producing basis. He was, consequently, obliged to pay all of the expenses of the construction and maintenance of the University out of his private funds until his death on June 21, 1893. Thereafter the burden was cast upon his widow, Jane Lathrop Stanford, who carried it until her resignation of all powers over the University, its trusts and its properties, on June 1, 1903, shortly after which she was elected a member and president of the Board of Trustees, and continued to function as such until her death at Honolulu on February 28, 1905.

* This article upon the Founding of the Leland Stanford Junior University appeared, in part, in the recent Fortieth Anniversary number of the "Stanford Illustrated Review," official organ of the Stanford Alumni Association, Volume XXXIII, No. 1.

Owing to the importance and public interest in this article, and particularly in those portions of it which were not in the original publication, the article as a whole is presented here, as the first and only authoritative history of the founding of the Leland Stanford Junior University, and the first adequate presentation of the unique provisions of the trusts or "charter" of the institution.

As stated in the "Stanford Illustrated Review": "This article of Judge Crothers is the first published statement reviewing the various hazards from which these two alumni (referring to himself and his brother) saved the University. . . . Judge Crothers, even in his undergraduate days, was close to Mrs. Stanford, who insisted that she saw in him a resemblance to her son, Leland. From then on until her death she regarded him as almost the personification of the alumni, and turned to him for advice and counsel at all times. Because of this relationship and his position as first alumnus member of the Board of Trustees, he has in his possession facts of unlimited value to everyone interested in Stanford."—EDITOR.



SENATOR LELAND STANFORD

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

Leland Stanford's purpose was not to create a university upon the model of any existing educational institution. He was familiar with the efficiency of Johns Hopkins University, the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, the Engineering School of Cornell, and certain departments of Harvard, in preparing students for success in their chosen vocations. The presidents of all of these institutions were his personal friends and advisers, but he firmly believed that a new institution, free from any of the outworn traditions of the older colleges and universities, could establish new standards of efficiency in the production of cultured and useful citizens especially prepared for personal success in their chosen vocations. He recognized that the development of the proposed institution would require much time and experimentation, but he was certain of the correctness of his appraisal of the deficiencies of existing educational institutions and of the ultimate success of any institution which would faithfully adhere to his ideal of combined culture, personal efficiency, and public service. He expressed the object, nature, and purposes of the institution in the Founding Grant as follows:

Its nature, that of a university with such seminaries of learning as shall make it of the highest grade, including mechanical institutes, museums, galleries of art, laboratories and conservatories, together with all things necessary for the study of agriculture in all its branches, and for mechanical training, and the studies and exercises directed to the cultivation and enlargement of the mind;

Its object, to qualify its students for personal success, and direct usefulness in life;

And its purposes, to promote the public welfare by exercising an influence in behalf of humanity and civilization, teaching the blessings of liberty regulated by law, and inculcating love and reverence for the great principles of government as derived from the inalienable rights of man to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness.

In the Founding Grant he further provided that it shall be the duty of the Trustees "to establish and maintain at such University an educational system which will, if followed, fit the graduate for some useful pursuit, and to this end to cause the pupils, as early as may be, to declare the particular calling which in life they may desire to pursue; but such declaration shall not be binding if, in the judgment of the President of the University, the student is not by nature fitted for the pursuit declared."

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

That American education is still open to Stanford's criticism of more than forty-five years ago is evidenced by the declaration of President Ray Lyman Wilbur in an address delivered in June, 1931, that "the lack of knowledge of the ordinary boy and girl of the vocations and of the professions is appalling. A large number of our youth have found themselves dislocated in an economic sense at the very beginning of their life career." Mrs. Stanford became aware that much of this educational inefficiency is the deliberate result of organized opposition to practical vocational training of the young lest they crowd out the old vocational workers.

Much fiction has been written concerning the motives and purposes of the Stanfords in founding the University, but it can truly be said that the lives and public services and benefactions of Leland Stanford and his wife were in a peculiar way the result of their ancestral background and their own experiences. They inherited the sturdy character of an old Colonial ancestry inured to the hardships of pioneering and inspired by the piety and idealism which led their early American ancestors to lay the foundations for their colleges before they had provided for themselves or their families the simplest of luxuries. The education of both Mr. and Mrs. Stanford was limited to that received in small local schools. After this preliminary schooling Stanford received the customary legal training of his day by reading law in an Albany law office, and Mrs. Stanford graduated from a female seminary. Judged from the standpoint of high schools and colleges of today, their education was comparatively meager; but judged by its patriotism, idealism, and seriousness of purpose, it would stand high in any period. It prepared him for the vision of building a great railroad to unite the remote parts of his divided country; and, as a personal friend and supporter of Lincoln and lover of his country, it gave him the strength to save California to the Union, when he, as the California War Governor, turned the trembling balance in favor of the Union, though most of the influential leaders in California belonged to old Southern families and were confident of California's secession.

But Stanford's scholastic and legal training did not prepare him adequately for success in his chosen profession. He left Albany and went to Port Washington, Wisconsin, in 1848, when even Chicago was little more than a village. There he brought his bride in 1850.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

After struggling two years more to get a foothold in the legal profession, he was burned out in 1852. He then decided to go to California while the mining boom was still on, and, not being able to assure her a comfortable living until he made a start in the Far West, he was obliged to submit to the humiliation of sending his wife home to her parents, who were in comfortable circumstances. Because her father was ill, she remained several years with him, until his death. This experience had never been forgotten by Stanford. It was so painful to them both that neither of them cared to discuss it. Of their reunion in California Mrs. Stanford said shortly before her death that the happiest days of her life were when they lived in a rude cottage with meager and cheap furnishings and she did all her own housework. To Stanford it seemed like failure, but to her it meant happiness.

Like so many American parents who suffer every privation in mature life to give their children college educations, for the purpose of freeing them from the necessity of going through the painful experiences of their own early lives, so Senator and Mrs. Stanford were hopeful that an educational system might be devised under which the young of future generations would not suffer the distress to which they had been subjected during their young manhood and womanhood. Stanford's views as to the inefficiency of college education were confirmed again and again by his experience with graduates of the leading universities of the country, who applied to him as president of the Central Pacific and Southern Pacific Railway companies for employment. Their training, like his own, was not adequately related to practical life. After their long academic preparation, and after they had advanced in years to a point where they should be ready to undertake the responsibility of raising young families, they were obliged to lay aside the dignity of their age and academic training to learn the rudiments of their proposed calling. Many of them had to commence with the crudest form of manual labor, under physical and social conditions which frequently resulted in loss of enthusiasm and idealism and the general defeat of their high purposes. Stanford was a firm believer in the necessity of alternating or combining academic training and actual experience as manual workers in their chosen fields, for all students whose professions or vocations have to do with industry, trade, or commerce. Moreover, he believed that this experience and practical training should be had during the early years of the student,

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

and not after he has finished in mature years a prolonged academic course of instruction.

But personal success was but one of the purposes of education as visioned by the Stanfords. In all declarations they place personal character and public service side by side with practical training. Stanford also urged the teaching of harmony and coöperation of capital and labor in the common interest of all. He provided in the Founding Grant that it shall be the duty of the Trustees "to have taught in the University the right and advantages of association and coöperation." In his letter to the Trustees accompanying the Founding Grant he said: "When we consider the endless variety of the wants and the desires of civilized society, we must fully appreciate the value of labor-aiding machinery and the necessity of having this of the best character. Too much attention, therefore, cannot be given to technical and mechanical instruction to the end that from our institution may go out educators in every field of production."

"Out of these suggestions grows the consideration of the great advantages, especially to the laboring man, of coöperation, by which each individual has the benefit of the intellectual and physical forces of his associates. It is by the intelligent application of these principles that there will be found the greatest lever to elevate the mass of humanity, and laws should be formed to protect and develop coöperative associations. Laws with this object in view will furnish to the poor man complete protection against the monopoly of the rich, and such laws properly administered and availed of, will insure to the workers of the country the full fruits of their industry and enterprise."

Not for more than a generation after the University was opened did the fundamental importance and correctness of this principle become generally acknowledged by capital and labor, producer and consumer.

Recognizing that excellence in any institution cannot be maintained without adequate compensation, Stanford inserted a clause in the University trusts requiring the Trustees "to fix the salaries of the president, professors and teachers, and to fix them at such rates as will secure to the University the services of men of the very highest attainments." In this respect Stanford University has always led all Western universities, but its legal and financial difficulties prevented it from leading the whole country. Recognizing that excellent instruction

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

would not produce successful and useful citizens without spiritual development, he further directed them "to prohibit sectarian instruction, but to have taught in the University the immortality of the soul, the existence of an all-wise and benevolent Creator, and that obedience to His laws is the highest duty of man."

After making his decision as to the nature of the institution to be founded shortly after Leland, Jr., died, Stanford was next confronted with the question as to the legal form which it should take. Under the constitution of California the life of all corporations was limited to fifty years, after which the Legislature might specify any terms and conditions as to reincorporating or dissolution. No specific law provided for perpetual trusts, though the court decisions had supported perpetual eleemosynary trusts. Stanford, however, deemed it necessary or desirable that he and his wife retain greater control over the proposed institution and over any grant he might make for the founding and endowment than was permissible under existing laws relative to trusts. Accordingly, he is said to have formulated with his own inexperienced hand the so-called Enabling Act, which became a law on his sixty-first birthday, March 9, 1885, just four days before the first anniversary of his son's death. The Act was not, and under the State Constitution could not be made, broad enough to authorize the creation of a legal entity adequate to accomplish Stanford's purposes. The Act merely provided for the founding of the institution by an ordinary deed and trust. It required the property to be located in California and to be given by a founder in his lifetime. It completely failed to, and could not constitutionally, provide for the creation of a legally constituted Board of Trustees, or other workable body constituting a legal entity, capable of receiving and administering gifts and conducting the University. Only educational corporations could do that. Any subsequent grants would create entirely independent trusts and should comply with the general law relative to eleemosynary trusts as laid down in the decisions. Even a trust for scientific research or to advance knowledge is not considered eleemosynary by the California Supreme Court, and no trust provision for either purpose was made until a foundation was laid therefor by amendment of the trusts in the general trust revision of October 3, 1902. In drawing the Enabling Act it did not seem to occur to Stanford that his proposed gift to the Trustees for the endowment of the

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

institution would ever prove to be inadequate, or that others might wish to supplement the endowment, or add to the scope of the institution, although he attempted to remedy this in the Founding Grant. The Act did not even provide for or permit Stanford's own bequest of two and a half millions to the Trustees for the endowment of the University which went to the University only with Mrs. Stanford's consent as residuary legatee and subject to her right to make such disposition of it as she saw fit during her lifetime, without accountability by her or her representatives.

Although the reservations and conditions of the trust provided for in the Enabling Act were such as were not permissible under the other general laws then in force, Stanford should have made this Founding Grant of November 11, 1885, conform to the terms of the Act. But he did not do so; nor did Mrs. Stanford make her important grants and her attempted amendments to the trusts executed in the late 'nineties conform to either. For example, the Founding Grant expressly declared that the property conveyed thereby, being the three great ranches, were community property, which, under the California law, at that time "belonged" to and were vested in the husband alone, making Mrs. Stanford not a joint grantor or founder, but merely an assenting spouse. Stanford reserved no powers to himself alone as founder, or to Mrs. Stanford as surviving wife, as provided for in the Act; but all the reservations and conditions were made by and to both of them as purported co-founders, and the one who might succeed the other as purported surviving founder and not as surviving spouse, as provided for in the Act, which made no provision for the reservation of the power of management, etc., or the power to amend the trusts to the survivor of joint founders. The Act authorized the founder to reserve the power of management of the properties and of the University to himself for his life, and then to a surviving wife, but did not permit the reservation of the power to amend the trusts to a founder's surviving wife, or even to a surviving co-founder. Notwithstanding the foregoing, Mrs. Stanford reserved, in all grants by her, and exercised all powers permitted to be reserved to a founder, and made many attempted amendments beyond even the scope of the power so reserved. Not until five years after Senator Stanford's death, when these defects and deficiencies came to light in connection with another task which I undertook for Mrs. Stanford,



MRS. STANFORD

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

were steps taken to remedy them. In the meantime the attention of Mrs. Stanford was concentrated upon her financial problems and those of the University.

Unconscious of the defects and deficiencies in the Enabling Act and Founding Grant, Senator Stanford went forward with great earnestness and devotion in putting his cherished plan into operation, leaving the virtual refounding of the institution upon a broader and more workable basis to Mrs. Stanford with the aid of future alumni. He selected the great architectural firm of Shepley, Rutan, and Coolidge to design the buildings, and Frederick Law Olmsted to lay out the grounds, and proceeded with speed in preparing the buildings and grounds. So far as the plans of the original architects have been followed, the result is as charming as it is practical. The colonnaded quadrangles have always been a joy to both students and faculty.

In addition to interviewing many of the leading university presidents before founding Stanford, Senator Stanford thereafter sought their advice before appointing Dr. David Starr Jordan as the first president of Stanford University. Jordan was opposed to the traditional rigidly prescribed entrance requirements and courses of study, as impractical and out of harmony with the best in modern scientific knowledge, and tending to shackle the mind with traditional prejudices and unscientific modes of thought in an age calling for men with open and inquiring minds, trained to advance practical knowledge as well as to apply it in their chosen vocations. Dr. Jordan was a great scientist, but above all he was a great national preacher of clean living and high thinking, and had the gift of clothing his ethical messages in such brilliant and easily remembered phrases as to cause them to be telegraphed throughout the country as news.

Under President Wilbur and Acting President Swain further steps have been taken to accomplish Stanford's purposes, though long before Ray Lyman Wilbur became president of Stanford University and advocated the dropping of the two lower classes, the University of California, under the leadership of Professor Alexis Frederick Lange, and the Stanford Trustees by resolution adopted in the interest of greater efficiency, had approved of the separation of the upper division, or professional and vocational work, from the lower college classes doing work preparatory to the professional and other vocational instruction. It was believed that the first two years of college

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

work could be done adequately in local public junior colleges and under home conditions more favorable to students of immature years. But as Stanford University was required, by a provision in its trusts inserted by Mrs. Stanford on October 3, 1902, to keep in touch and harmony with the free public school system, the creation of a system of free public junior colleges was a condition precedent to the putting into effect of the recommendation of President Wilbur. To facilitate the eventual dropping or subordination of the lower-division work from the two California universities, legislation was formulated and advocated by Professor Lange, of the University of California, and myself authorizing the creation of public junior colleges, with the same State aid as was theretofore given for the support of high schools. It has required the delay of nearly a quarter of a century for the establishment of a sufficient number of junior colleges, pursuant to this legislation, to justify Stanford University in even considering taking the lead in carrying out the plan to subordinate or drop the first two years of college work.

Senator Stanford was permitted to see but the first experiment in education at the University directed toward the accomplishment of his educational ideal. On being informed that the great panic of 1893, which placed in receivership every Western railway excepting the Southern Pacific, would break in Wall Street the following morning, Leland Stanford went up early to his bedroom, and after calling down to Mrs. Stanford, "I just want to say I love you," he went to sleep on June 21, never to awake. The troubles which his enfeebled heart could not stand were thrown upon the inexperienced widow.

Stanford's death left the University with very little income. Mrs. Stanford was allowed by the Probate Court ten thousand dollars per month, which was approximately the amount she had been accustomed to expend in the maintenance of her household. She reduced her personal retinue from seventeen to one cook, one maid, and a secretary, the payment of whose salary was deferred almost a year, and her total household expenses to three hundred and fifty dollars per month, or about the equivalent of a professor's salary. When she went East she traveled in her private car free of railroad expense and lived in her car while in New York to save hotel expenses. To keep the University open she sold at a sacrifice her six magnificent strings of choice pearls, and carried with her and tried in vain to sell her other jewels.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

All income and receipts not necessary for her bare necessities were turned over to President Jordan to keep the University open and in operation as best he could. He succeeded in doing so by curtailing new appointments and reducing certain salaries ten per cent., but the total faculty salary roll remained as before Stanford's death. This was rendered possible by the sudden fall in living expenses and smaller increase in students incident to the great panic, and to the fact that the total cost in salaries of the faculty per student was still second only to Columbia University with Harvard a close third.

In a conference with attorneys and bankers Mrs. Stanford was advised by all but her brother, Charles Lathrop, to close the University at least temporarily, but the latter said to her, "Jennie, you are not up against the wall yet. I advise you to keep the University open until you are." She followed his advice, which was in accord with her own strong desire.

The estate was in a precarious financial condition for many reasons. It was indebted to the Pacific Improvement Company for overdrafts amounting to about a million and a half, for money withdrawn by Senator Stanford with the consent of his three associates to construct the University buildings, and there was a stockholder's liability of seven million dollars on account of Stanford's quarter ownership of the company, which was indebted to the extent of twenty-eight million dollars. The finances of the Southern Pacific Company, in common with those of every other Western railroad, were in a critical condition and did not improve greatly for seven years.

It happened by chance that my brother, Thomas Graham Crothers, a graduate of the first class at Stanford in 1892, was an executor of the estate of James G. Fair, which held nearly six million dollars in one bond issue guaranteed by the Southern Pacific Company. Being in close touch with other large San Francisco estates owning railroad bonds, he aided in securing their coöperation in withholding the presentation for payment of their bond coupons until the company indicated that it was ready to honor them together with interest thereon from their due date. This and other expedients prevented the complete loss of the equity of the stockholders in the Southern Pacific Company, while those of all their competitors were sacrificed in receivership, as they would have been unable to find new money to re-finance the road in the face of a threatened suit by the government

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

against the Stanford estate and the other owners of the Central and Southern Pacific companies for their respective shares of the government loan made to the Central Pacific. This government loan was secured by a mortgage given pursuant to an Act of Congress of 1862, passed to aid in the construction of the Central and Union Pacific railroads to save California and the Far West to the Union, a reason suggested by the latter's name. The Central Pacific was at the time not believed to have a market value sufficient to pay the bonds when they should fall due. The suit when brought was based upon stockholders' liability for Stanford's proportionate share of corporate debts under a California statute, the government erroneously claiming the right to its benefits without being bound by the express statutory limitation of liability to three years from the creation of the liability. John Garber, the leader of the San Francisco Bar, presented the case of the Stanford estate most ably and successfully in the Circuit Court of Appeals in San Francisco, and Joseph Choate presented it with equal ability and success in the Supreme Court, which decided unanimously against the government.

The government's appeal in its \$15,237,000 suit against the estate of Leland Stanford was submitted to the Supreme Court of the United States on January 29, 1896, and decided in favor of the estate by a unanimous decision on March 2, 1896. The decision of the court by Justice Harlan held that under the terms of the Pacific Railway Acts of 1862 the only security the government contemplated or obtained was the obligation of the company and a mortgage upon the railroad, and that the construction now placed by the government upon the Act under which the loan to the Central Pacific Railway was made was not only contrary to the intent of Congress but would have tended to defeat its purpose. The government loan was eventually paid in full when due.

The winning of the government suit against the Stanford estate permitted the distribution to the University of two and a half million dollars in bonds by an agreement, dated April 29, 1896, between Mrs. Stanford and the Trustees, in liquidation of Stanford's bequest of that amount made to the Trustees for the support of the University. But the income from these bonds, which amounted to one hundred and twenty thousand dollars per year, or exactly the equivalent of the ten thousand dollars per month which the court had been allowing

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

Mrs. Stanford as widow during administration, but which stopped upon distribution of the estate, fell far short of meeting the minimum expenses of maintaining the University, whose faculty salary roll, aside from the compensation of assistants, cost of equipment, and general expenses, was one hundred and fifty thousand dollars.

After paying the bequests to the University and Stanford's relatives, and receiving the balance of Stanford's estate on final distribution, Mrs. Stanford had in her own right about two millions in bonds, of which one million bore only four per cent. interest, fragments of unproductive real estate in some fourteen different counties, 28,468.25 shares of the Southern Pacific Railroad (of California), and 284,780.50 shares of the capital stock of the Southern Pacific Company (of Kentucky), the latter being about a one-quarter interest of the entire capital stock issued at the time, a one-quarter interest in the Pacific Improvement Company, 13,218 shares of the capital stock of the Market Street Railway Company, 7,274 shares of the capital stock of the Oakland Water Front Company, and stock of little value in other companies. None of the stock received by her was upon a dividend-paying basis, and it required about all of Mrs. Stanford's income to make up the monthly deficit of the University, with the ever present fear that the assessment of the taxable stocks might force their sale at sacrifice prices.

Neither the winning of the government suit nor the distribution of Stanford's estate relieved Mrs. Stanford and the University from financial difficulties. In July, 1898, Mrs. Stanford wrote: "If I am able to keep the University in the condition it is now, I shall be more than thankful. Fifteen thousand dollars a month is a great expenditure, and exhausts my ingenuity and resources to such an extent that had I not the University so close to my heart I would relieve myself of this enormous burden and take rest and recreation for the next year. But I prefer to see the good work going on in its present condition, and I am not promising myself anything further for the future until the skies are brighter than they are now." Notwithstanding Mrs. Stanford's heroic efforts the University had reached a state of stagnation with a fixed appropriation of one hundred and fifty thousand dollars for faculty salaries every year from the death of Senator Stanford. Increased income or decreased expenditures for taxes was urgent.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

The beginning of my work for the University was the result of a purely business call upon Mrs. Stanford. Shortly before the graduation period in 1898, while these and other matters were worrying Mrs. Stanford, William H. Harrelson, also of the Pioneer Class, and I called on her relative to the proposed removal of the Sigma Nu house and the transfer of the lease to another location. Mrs. Stanford kept us for hours discussing the needs of the University and the fight she was making to support and endow it. Among other things she spoke with feeling of C. P. Huntington's attitude in presuming to name a director of the Southern Pacific or Central Pacific Railroad Company to fill a vacancy theretofore filled by a Stanford representative. She said she had told Huntington that when her Stanford University boys grew up they would settle with him for his treatment of her. His reply was that she would never see the day when one of her boys would ever lift a little finger in her defense. In telling this Mrs. Stanford broke into tears. As we were about to leave, Mrs. Stanford made me promise to make a second call, as she wished to discuss certain problems with me further.

In driving back to the fraternity house to report the result of our interview relative to the lease, I said to Harrelson that Mrs. Stanford only pretended she did not believe what Huntington said, and that she was too shrewd a woman to doubt Huntington's knowledge of human nature. I told Harrelson that we must do something to convince Mrs. Stanford that the students, faculty, and alumni were really back of her and desirous of aiding her in any way possible. I suggested that we work up a mass meeting of students, faculty, and alumni to secure the exemption of University property from taxation, and have it announced in the San Francisco papers as well as those at the University, for the greater effect upon Mrs. Stanford. The mass meeting took place and the little chapel was nearly filled with really interested Stanford people. The movement had started, and though the total collection raised to finance a constitutional amendment campaign was but \$17.55, of which I acted as treasurer, those present made up in earnestness for what they lacked in money.

My second call on Mrs. Stanford made after the graduation exercises of 1898, pursuant to her request at the first interview, was but one of scores, if not hundreds, which continued to be made at her request down to the date of her departure for Honolulu in February,

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

1905, whence she never returned. In one of the early interviews Mrs. Stanford informed me that she could not safely convey the Southern Pacific Company stock to the Trustees unless it were exempt from taxation, as it could not be done without publicity, and that she was advised that the Assessor would be liable upon his bond under a California Supreme Court decision if he did not assess property he knew to be taxable, and that it would take more than the entire income of the University to pay the taxes upon that stock alone. She confided to me that she desired to convey this stock and other securities to the University, and would do so if the University were granted exemption from taxation. She did so shortly after the adoption of the constitutional amendment by the Legislature, upon my assurance that it would be adopted by the people.

In starting the movement for a constitutional amendment to exempt Stanford from taxation, I neither thought that the movement would succeed nor had the slightest idea that I should be asked by Mrs. Stanford to frame the amendment, and should thereafter find myself, contrary to my wishes and the urgency of other work, particularly that involved in the extensive and prolonged litigation over the Fair estate, both heading and financing the movement, and writing its literature, with no official status, or authority, or approval, and practically no other support than that furnished by my brother, Thomas G. Crothers, Francis V. Keesling, who had just graduated from the Law Department, and John F. Sheehan, all of whom devoted a large part of their time for many months during the two campaigns for the amendment. Both Sheehan and Keesling made State-wide trips, traveling in all manner of conveyances and at strange and inconvenient hours as they marshaled alumni, political, and newspaper support.

Pursuant to Mrs. Stanford's request I attempted to frame a constitutional amendment to exempt the property of Stanford University from taxation. I was shocked to find the legal status of the University in the condition which I have already outlined, and considered that, however important exemption from taxation might be, infinitely more important was the laying of entirely new and different legal foundations for the University, and its creation into a legal entity with all necessary powers legally granted to the Trustees, and all hampering restrictions and limitations removed. Nothing short of a constitutional amendment would accomplish or authorize these

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

essential things. I found that neither the Board of Trustees nor the University had a legal name or identity by which it could be designated, and, like any other trust created by deed or will, the Stanford trust could only be designated by reference to the Founding Grant.

When I found that the latter did not follow the terms of the Enabling Act, and the bequest and subsequent grants and amendments did not conform to either the Enabling Act or the Founding Grant, it became of the utmost importance that the Founding Grant should be referred to in the proposed amendment not only for the purpose of identifying the University properties and trusts, but for the purpose of its confirmation as well as the confirmation of any supplementary grant. I accordingly concluded that it was absolutely necessary to broaden the scope of the proposed constitutional amendment, and entirely on my own initiative I drafted three additional clauses. The first of these provided for the ratification of the trusts and estate created by the Founding Grant under and in accordance with the Enabling Act. The second permitted the Trustees to receive property by any form of conveyance, and declared that, unless otherwise provided, the property should be held upon the trusts so ratified. The third clause authorized the Legislature to grant to the Trustees corporate powers and privileges.

These three provisions were necessary to the creation of the Board of Trustees into a legal entity, with necessary powers for the performance of their duties, and were deemed by me of so much greater importance than the exemption of University property from taxation that I subordinated the matter of tax exemption, and merely left it to the Legislature to make such exemption as it saw fit within narrow limitations. The President of the University and a faculty committee called me to the University repeatedly to persuade me to insert a broad clause directly exempting the University property from taxation, but I was confident that this would defeat the entire amendment, because it would deprive one county of one-eighth of its taxable property, and, as Mrs. Stanford claimed the right to change the object, nature, and purposes of the institution, I could not consistently ask that a practically unchangeable exemption in the State Constitution itself should be adopted. Even Mrs. Stanford was given to understand that the amendment was worthless, as not exempting any property from taxation, and held that view until I explained its other purposes



ADMINISTRATION BUILDING



LAYING OF THE CORNER STONE OF THE UNIVERSITY

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

and necessity after it had been adopted by the Legislature. In the Senate it passed by but one spare vote, notwithstanding months of preliminary work, during which Keesling and Sheehan visited every nook and corner in the State, and the three of us spent two and a half months of day and night work on the Legislature. I told only one Trustee, Judge Leib, the purposes of the amendment before it was filed at Sacramento, and he said: "If those are your purposes I think it will accomplish them."

This is not the place to even outline the history of the two long and arduous campaigns, first to secure the approval of the constitutional amendment by the Legislature, and subsequently to secure its ratification by the people, but it is only fair to say that, aside from letters which Judge Leib sent to his clients and friends in Santa Clara County, neither Mrs. Stanford nor the University took any official action, nor was she or any of the other Trustees aware, at least during the first campaign, of any of the other purposes of the amendment than those relating to tax exemption. My brother and I advanced all of the money expended in each campaign, and in the case of the last one did so after being warned by Judge Leib that Mrs. Stanford, before leaving on a protracted trip, had informed him that she would not bear any expense of the campaign, but would leave it to the people of the State to approve or reject the amendment, which was intended to confirm the gift to them. However, after the passage of the amendment and after Mrs. Stanford came to realize its importance, she sent us checks covering certain expenditures which we had brought to the attention of Judge Leib, who reported the facts to her, as she had previously done as to certain expenditures made during the first campaign. These funds were advanced by us without promise or expectation of reimbursement. Both campaigns were primarily and almost exclusively alumni campaigns, and if the existence and present form of the University are dependent upon the constitutional amendment, it is the result of alumni initiative, followed by persistent alumni effort, inspired by Mrs. Stanford's needs as originally expressed to Harrelson and myself.

Of course our time, and that of Keesling, Sheehan, and other alumni, was given without compensation. This conduct of the alumni had a most important bearing upon Mrs. Stanford's attitude toward them and the University for which they were working.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

The mere adoption of a constitutional amendment "permitting, approving and confirming" the trusts and estates created by the Founding Grant under and pursuant to the Enabling Act would not in itself transfer the title to the University endowment from Mrs. Stanford to the Board of Trustees, although I had hoped that the courts might take that view in case of Mrs. Stanford's death before she reconveyed the University endowment under the second clause of the constitutional amendment. Fortunately Mrs. Stanford lived, and directed my brother and myself to prepare deeds of reconveyance of such of the property previously conveyed to the University as she had not theretofore withdrawn under the reserved power expressed in each of her previous conveyances.

Pursuant to her instructions we drew three deeds of reconveyance. The first was the deed to the Stanford residence in San Francisco, on a special trust to be used to house a school of history and political science. The other two covered the real estate and personal property, respectively, which Mrs. Stanford desired to reconvey to the Trustees under the second clause of the constitutional amendment. These had the important effect of consolidating properties theretofore conveyed to the Trustees under one general University trust described and ratified in the first clause of the amendment. The consolidation of all of the endowment of the University, with certain specified exceptions, into a single trust fund upon one uniform trust in identical Trustees, with identical provisions as to the number, term of office, quorum, number necessary for affirmative action, etc., of the Trustees, was accomplished by the confirmatory grants of December 9, 1901, the general revision of October 3, 1902, the resignation and grant of June 1, 1903, and the assumption of corporate powers by the Trustees, all drawn by us to conform to, and render effective, the various provisions of the constitutional amendment. In other words, these new conveyances superseded all previous conveyances, and brought the titles to the University under and pursuant to the second sentence of the constitutional amendment, which provided for subsequent conveyances of title to the University.

In all her previous deeds to the University for the augmentation of the endowment, Mrs. Stanford reserved the right to withdraw, sell, or otherwise dispose of the properties conveyed thereby. She exercised this right to withdraw properties for her personal use and dispo-

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

sition. Her only withdrawal of property for her personal use and other disposition under the reserved powers referred to consisted of two millions in bonds and a one-quarter interest in the Pacific Improvement Company.

The following reservation made in her great deed of May 31, 1899, not only authorized her withdrawal of the properties referred to, but raised serious doubt as to whether the deed conveyed any title whatever, particularly in view of Mrs. Stanford's continued right of possession under the terms of the deed itself and those of the Founding Grant. The clause is as follows:

"I do hereby reserve to myself, during my life, all the rights, powers and authority that were reserved by or to said Leland Stanford and myself, or either of us, in, or by means, or by virtue of, said grant made and executed by us to said Lorenzo Sawyer and others as Trustees as aforesaid, on the eleventh day of November, A. D. 1885; and also the further right, power and authority to grant, bargain, sell, convey or lease the real property herein described, and hereby granted to said Trustees, in trust, and to deal with said property as fully, in all respects, during my life as I could do were this indenture, grant, conveyance and transfer not made or executed. And I shall not, nor shall my executors or administrators, or my estate be responsible to, or be required to account to, said Trustees, or to the Board of Trustees, or any person whomsoever, for, or on the account of, the said personal property, or the rents, issues, income or profits thereof, or for or on account of the proceeds arising from any sale or other disposition as aforesaid, of said real or personal property, or from the rents, issues, income or profits of said real or personal property."

Neither the deeds of December 9, 1901, nor any other instruments drawn by us contained the foregoing, or any other reservation whatever. Mrs. Stanford depended entirely upon such powers, if any, as she had under the Founding Grant, as confirmed by the constitutional amendment, with the distinct understanding that her power to amend the trusts might not come within the terms of the confirmatory provision of the amendment as possibly not being "in accordance with" the Enabling Act.

After the questions as to the possible illegality of the Stanford titles and trusts became a matter of general comment as a result of the campaign before the people for the passage of the constitutional

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

amendment, and prior to the execution of the deeds of December 9, 1901, Mrs. Stanford executed a deed covering the entire endowment of the University, without any trust terms or conditions, and delivered the same to an old friend of herself and Senator Stanford, with the understanding that he would convey the property to the Trustees in case her previous conveyances to them should be contested and overthrown. She executed this deed upon the erroneous assumption that it could only take effect if the previous grants to the University Trustees should be found not to be valid. On the contrary, she had expressly reserved the right to sell or convey all but the original ranches to others without accountability, and this new absolute deed, made without our knowledge, merely threw new doubts upon the University titles, though it was given and received in perfectly good faith.

Immediately after executing the three deeds of December 9, 1901, prepared by us, covering such property as Mrs. Stanford desired to reconvey to the Trustees, upon the trusts confirmed by the constitutional amendment, Mrs. Stanford requested me to go over all of the trusts and amendments and recommend any changes thought necessary or desirable. In compliance with that request I framed, with minor exceptions, the amendments of October 3, 1902, which constituted a radical general revision of the trust provisions. Many of Mrs. Stanford's early amendments of doubtful legal or practical value were withdrawn or modified by the clauses of this general revision, as were certain restrictions upon the powers of the Trustees in the Founding Grant.

The number and fundamental importance of the changes required to free the University from the perpetual shackles of previous undesirable restrictions and directions now seem incredible. The first twenty clauses were required in whole or in part by technical legal considerations, some of which were almost essential to the practicable transaction of business by the Trustees. Six clauses were required to correct trust imperfections and undesirable directions and restrictions previously existing relative to the management of the University properties. Nineteen questions of educational policy were covered in twenty-two paragraphs. Nine questions of combined directions as to educational policy and public service and public duty are covered in the last twelve paragraphs of the revision and require the public interest to be placed above that of the University in case of any conflict. Some of these

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

latter clauses require in substance and effect the elimination from the University of spendthrifts and others lacking in seriousness of purpose and character, or not seeking their own improvement or permitting that of others, and whose education Mrs. Stanford believed would not be to the public interest. It is almost incredible that not one of the many technical, business or educational defects written into the everlasting charter of the University in previous addresses and grants, had ever been pointed out to Mrs. Stanford, or to us, by anyone within or without the University. It was fortunate that Mrs. Stanford's wonderful intuitive knowledge that she had fallen into many errors, lead her to ask me to seek out and report upon any such defects.

This general revision had many aspects. It removed the Founding Grant limitation of the University to the Palo Alto Farm and its prohibition upon the sale of any of the great ranches and other property of the University, which soon became a burden upon the University revenues. It revoked the requirement that the University must forever maintain the great running and trotting stables, both because it was not an eleemosynary purpose and was a great source of expense. It withdrew Mrs. Stanford's previous impracticable and legally questionable provisions concerning the management of the University and its finances, by which the essential powers of the Trustees were to be delegated to officers and committees, and concerning the organization of the Board of Trustees. It removed the obligation, of doubtful validity, to maintain a ten-acre cemetery park around the mausoleum of the Stanfords. It permitted the Trustees to improve any real estate held by them as part of the endowment with capital funds. It provided for the validation of the reduction in the term of office and number of the Trustees and corresponding quorums and number necessary for affirmative action, and withdrew inconsistent and unworkable previous amendments on these subjects. It amended the trusts to conform with the provision of the constitutional amendment giving the Trustees power to receive donations of property by any form of conveyance and wherever located.

The trust revision further provided that "the University must be forever maintained upon a strictly non-partisan and non-sectarian basis," and that "it must never become an instrument in the hands of any political party or any religious sect or organization." It removed a prohibition upon instruction during the summer months, and author-

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

ized the maintenance of such elementary and other schools upon the Palo Alto Farm as may be found necessary to experimental instruction in the department of education of the University. It removed specific directions requiring the charging of certain small registration fees and fees for admission to the Museum as possibly affecting the eleemosynary character of the trust, and left such matters to the discretion of the Trustees, subject to such power as vested in the Legislature under the constitutional amendment. It modified a previous direction concerning the future use of the Stanford residence site on the Palo Alto Farm with the intent of permitting the Trustees in their discretion to maintain a girl's college thereon. It provided for the organization of the faculty and Trustees, and for just and equitable rules of student discipline and rules governing the appointment and removal of members of the faculty. It required the Trustees to maintain facilities for the physical and spiritual as well as the intellectual life of the students. It added a provision for original research and for the advancement of useful knowledge, purposes not embodied in the Founding Grant, and provided for the maintenance and endowment of a great library to facilitate advanced instruction and research. It declared in this connection that "while its chief object is the instruction of students with a view to producing leaders and educators in every field of science and industry, the University was also designed to advance learning, the arts, and sciences; and to this end the institution should assist, by experimentation and research, in the advancement of useful knowledge and in the dissemination and practical application of the same."

Another practical interpretation of the University trusts relates to the much abused subject of academic freedom.

Before signing the general revision of the trusts of October 3, 1902, Mrs. Stanford, at my request, submitted it to President Leib of the Board of Trustees for his approval. Aside from two interlineations, one relating to the minimum cost of buildings upon the Campus, and the other relating to the undesirability of leaving a "gap" in the necessary education of a student between the free public schools and the University, he added three consecutive paragraphs relative to academic freedom, of which the following is the third, and shows on its face that they were all intended as expressions of personal sentiment and opinion:

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

“If the professors of this University believe the above to be the true reason why professors of other universities have nearly altogether abstained from entering upon the public rostrum in the discussion of political and other questions upon which public feeling runs high and upon which the public is itself divided, then I indulge in the hope that they will follow their example.”

These paragraphs, however sound, being merely expressions of opinion and personal wishes, should probably not have been incorporated in the trusts as set forth in the decree in the special proceeding, and when the Trustees again seek advice as to the interpretation of the trusts from the court of equity, they might ask that these clauses be so declared lest they be misconstrued by laymen.

The general revision of the trusts closes with the nine clauses emphasizing the original purpose of the Stanfords to make the University an instrument for the advancement of the public welfare. One of them provides that “The Founding Grant provides that the Trustees shall establish and maintain at the University an educational system which will, if followed, fit the graduate for some useful pursuit, and to this end, cause the pupils, as early as may be, to declare the particular calling which they may desire to pursue. The purpose of this requirement is not only to assure the practical character of the instruction, and to prevent such instruction as will not tend directly ‘to qualify students for personal success and direct usefulness in life,’ but to protect the University from the cost of instructing and from the baneful influence of a class, bound to infest the institution as the country grows older, who wish to acquire a University degree or fashionable educational veneer for the mere ornamentation of idle and purposeless lives.”

Among the nine clauses with which this revision closes are also several provisions in the interest of worthy students of limited means in conformity with the more informally declared purposes of Senator and Mrs. Stanford in previous letters and addresses. Among these is the following:

“The University has been endowed with a view of offering instruction free, or nearly free, that it may resist the tendency to the stratification of society, by keeping open an avenue whereby the deserving and exceptional may rise through their own efforts from the lowest to the highest stations in life. A spirit of equality must accordingly be

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

maintained within the University. To this end it shall be the duty of the University authorities to prohibit excessive expenditures and other excesses on the part of students, and the formation or growth of any organization, custom or social function that tends to the development of exclusive or undemocratic castes within the University, and to exclude from the institution any one whose conduct is inconsistent with the spirit of the foundation."

Inasmuch as the income of the University has not kept pace with the growth in the number of students, the increase of general expenses, the necessary construction of buildings, and the corresponding increase in the number and salaries of instructors, it has become necessary for the Trustees to greatly increase the tuition fees, but, to comply as nearly as the funds permitted with the directions of the Stanfords concerning nominal tuition fees, the Trustees have provided for loan funds and scholarship funds, of which about one-sixth of the most deserving students take advantage. A much larger endowment and income for this purpose is most desirable.

In the interest of students of limited means the further amendment governing the University was inserted at the same time requiring that "it should be kept, as far as practicable, in harmony with the public educational system, and that, in the matter of entrance requirements as well as in every other relation of the University with the general public, the University authorities should take into consideration the welfare of those who do not attend the University as well as those who do, and adopt the policy which, in their judgment, is in accord with the spirit of the foundation, as *above* defined." (This should read "below," as it refers to the last paragraphs of the address which were originally at the opening of the address, but were put at the end because Mrs. Stanford, who considered them the best expression of the Founders' purposes, wished them to be her last binding word concerning the Founders' wishes.) The amendment continues: "Without necessarily lowering the standard of regular admission to the University, concessions may be made in admission upon partial or special standing, or otherwise, in favor of students coming from high schools which cannot afford to maintain a separate course of study for the benefit of the small minority of high school students who go to universities, but offer a reasonable number of practical studies for the preparation of their students for an immediate entry into the



MEMORIAL COURT AND MEMORIAL CHURCH

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

active walks of life. So long as the public maintains an efficient high school system, the education given by the University to a student should commence where that given to him by the high school ends; and there should be no gap in his necessary education between where the high school ends and the University begins and which omitted part of his education could only be supplied by private schools—the latter not being generally accessible to the students of limited means. The University authorities are, however, the sole judges of the qualifications of applicants for admission to any department of the institution.” The intent of the clause is indicated by the explanatory words which were inserted upon the suggestion of Judge Leib. Probably notwithstanding the last sentence of the clause, it requires the University to keep in touch with the public high schools or other publicly supported schools of higher learning, such as junior colleges, as are adequate in number and location for the reasonably convenient accommodation of students desiring to prepare for entrance to Stanford University.

The “spirit of the foundation” alluded to in the preceding paragraph was expressed in these inspiring valedictory clauses expressive of the purposes and ideals of the founders of the Leland Stanford Junior University:

“The moving spirit of the Founders in the foundation and endowment of the Leland Stanford Junior University was love of humanity and a desire to render the greatest possible service to mankind. The University was accordingly designed for the betterment of mankind morally, spiritually, intellectually, physically and materially. The public at large, and not alone the comparatively few students who can attend the University, are the chief and ultimate beneficiaries of the foundation. While the instruction offered must be such as will qualify the students for personal success and direct usefulness in life, they should understand that it is offered in the hope and trust that they will become thereby of greater service to the public.

“As stated in the letter to the Trustees, accompanying the Founding Grant, ‘the object is not alone to give the student a technical education, fitting him for a successful business life, but it is also to instill into his mind an appreciation of the blessings of this Government, a reverence for its institutions, and a love of God and humanity, to the end that he may go forth and by precept and example spread the great

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

truths by the light of which his fellowmen will be elevated and taught how to obtain happiness in this world, and in the life eternal.'”

Although few people ever enjoyed their work as much as Mrs. Stanford enjoyed hers as surviving founder, shortly before or after January 1, 1903, she expressed the opinion to me that it was to the best interest of the University for her to resign all her powers as surviving founder, including her power to amend the trusts. She had come to realize that she had about finished the laying of the physical and spiritual foundations of the University, and that the time had come for what she characterized as radical action in building the important departments up to the standard of the very best in America and drawing graduate students and throwing emphasis upon advanced instruction and the elimination of students and others not seriously seeking self-improvement, and not likely to stand for integrity and service in the community. She felt from her own experience that it was not appropriate for a woman to stand alone as the sole trustee of a University about to enter upon new and controversial policies, and whose building program was nearing completion, thereby permitting it to enter upon such a rapid development as it had never yet experienced. Moreover, as she wished to initiate the Trustees into their work in her lifetime, and to make their responsibility and power complete, she planned and later took a prolonged trip abroad. She further confided to me that she feared that with advancing age she might be led to make unwise changes. I told her that in the absence of an amendment to the Enabling Act providing for the immediate succession of the Trustees, their powers would not commence until her death, even if she did resign.

Mrs. Stanford's proposed resignation presented the technical problem of meeting the necessity for the legal determination of the validity of Mrs. Stanford's amendments, without jeopardizing the University titles, and of judicially establishing the titles to the University endowment without a contest. This was accomplished by devising and drafting a special proceeding different from any theretofore existing, in which the competence of Senator Stanford and of Mrs. Stanford at the times of all grants and amendments, and their freedom from duress, fraud, and all other disabilities, and the validity and legal effect of all University trusts, as well as the titles to the University endowment, could be judicially determined in a single suit brought

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

against Mrs. Stanford and all the world, without the necessity of the Trustees being called upon to risk the validity of the University titles by being obliged to take a stand in an ordinary suit as to the validity of any or all of the scores of clauses in the Stanford trusts. As already indicated, we believed that, barring possible contests, based upon the competence and freedom of action of the Stanfords, we had absolutely secured the title to the University endowment by our previous measures, regardless of what view the courts might take as to whether any or all of Mrs. Stanford's amendments came within the confirmatory clause of the constitutional amendment, or whether the courts should hold that the clause in the Founding Grant reserving to Mrs. Stanford the power of amendment was itself confirmed as being created "under and in accordance with" the Enabling Act. Most urgent of all was the question as to whether she had exceeded her reserved power to amend the trusts, in reducing the number of Trustees from twenty-four to fifteen, and the quorum from fifteen to eight, and the number necessary to affirmative action from thirteen to eight. It is obvious that the Trustees could not safely transact any business until these questions were determined.

There was also the question whether the effect of the confirmatory clause of the constitutional amendment related only (1) to amendments made prior to its passage by the Legislature in March, 1899, or (2) related only to those made prior to its final adoption by the people on November 6, 1900, or (3) whether the constitutional amendment confirmed the reservation of the power to amend the trusts and permitted and approved any amendments not in themselves unlawful, whether made before or after its final ratification. If the first should be the decision, the Trustees would have little or no power over the University under the almost unlimited powers of the President of the University under an amendment of June 1, 1897. If the second view should be taken, all of the prior amendments withdrawn or modified by the general revision of October 3, 1902, would still be in effect, excepting possibly in so far as they conflicted with the law. We hoped (and my brother succeeded in so doing by the special proceeding) to establish the third or broadest of the three constructions of the confirmatory clause, under which all important amendments conforming with general law were held to be valid. The confirmatory clause of the constitutional amendment applied to the titles as well as the trusts

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

set forth in the original Founding Grant and any supplementary grants, and was open to similar constructions as to the titles in supplementary grants of various dates, but the deeds of reconveyance of December 9, 1901, rendered that unimportant.

Early in 1903 I volunteered to draft the necessary acts and caused them to be passed by the Legislature. Mrs. Stanford designated and requested my brother to represent the individual Trustees as such and the Board of Trustees in bringing the suit under the proposed special proceedings, and, pursuant to letters from her to each of the absent Trustees, my brother received through the mail uniformly worded written authority to represent each of them as individual Trustees and to represent the Board of Trustees in bringing the proceeding and in any other matter affecting the University trusts. Subsequently, and upon the date of her resignation as surviving founder, June 1, 1903, she reported her action to the Board of Trustees, and at her request a resolution was adopted by the Board authorizing my brother to bring said proceeding and to represent the Board and the individual Trustees as such in that and any other matter.

In the meantime I had formulated and caused to be passed the act which was approved March 13, 1903—the nineteenth anniversary of the death of Leland Stanford, Jr.—providing for the immediate succession of the Trustees upon Mrs. Stanford's resignation, and the act of February 10, 1903, authorizing the special proceeding. My brother had spent several months in preparing the 511-page petition in the special proceeding, setting forth the competence and freedom from all disabilities of the Founders, and analyzing all documents and alleging all facts necessary to be alleged and proved to establish "the existence and terms of, and for the determination of the validity and legal effect of grants or other instruments creating, changing or affecting trusts and estates for the founding, endowment and maintenance of the Leland Stanford Junior University." He had also outlined in advance the 172-page decree, which is, in effect, the charter of the University, and supersedes all prior grants and amendments and other instruments affecting the University titles and trusts.

At the time that the special proceeding came up for hearing, Mrs. Stanford appeared in court bringing with her the Founding Grant and each of the subsequent grants and amendments of the trusts, and testified fully as to the founding of the University and the

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

due execution of each and all of the grants and the amendments of the trusts. She testified that all of the acts performed by her and Senator Stanford relative to the founding and endowing of the University were their voluntary acts, and that they were both competent and free from undue influence at the time, and she thereupon informed the court that she wished the Founding Grant and the subsequent grants and amendments confirmed, including her resignation and surrender of powers, and wished it determined that the title of the properties and the power of management and control of the University and its properties was then, and was to continue, in the Trustees and the Board of Trustees. At the same time further evidence was introduced proving the competence of Senator and Mrs. Stanford at all times during the founding and establishing of the University, and particularly Mrs. Stanford's competence and freedom from undue influence at all times.

Neither space nor the nature of this Outline of the Legal History of Stanford's founding will permit a discussion of the technical nature, scope and effect of the Decree and various other measures taken in regular sequence to place the Stanford titles out of danger and render the trusts workable, and give the Trustees the powers essential to the proper management of the finances and the supervision of the University.

We framed Mrs. Stanford's resignation in the form of a combined resignation and grant of the entire endowment and educational plant at the time under her control as surviving founder, or surviving wife of the founder. No reservation of power was expressed in any of the previous deeds of December 9, 1901, and certain minor transfers of personal property theretofore framed by us, including a donation of the Stanford jewels to constitute the "Jewel Fund" to assure the adequate accumulation of books for the library, but in every case they were made upon the assumption, or at least upon the hope, that Mrs. Stanford was still entitled to exercise all of the powers reserved in the Founding Grant, including the power of amendment. For that and other reasons we concluded that Mrs. Stanford's resignation should be drafted not merely as a surrender and resignation of all powers vesting in her, including the power of amendment, but also as a grant to the Trustees and to their successors forever, for the benefit of the University, of all of the right, title, and interest in or to any

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

and all property she then held as surviving founder by operation of law or otherwise. No comment is necessary upon the unselfish devotion to the University and faith in the wisdom and fidelity of the Trustees which prompted this self-effacement of Mrs. Stanford, when her interest in, and intelligent understanding of, the needs of the institution were at their peak.

Shortly before the resignation of Mrs. Stanford various people claiming to be interested in more rigid discipline at the University or opposing the maintenance of the University as a co-educational institution brought disparaging reports to her of the number of men and women students alleged to have been seen promenading the walks and drives upon the Campus in the late evening hours. Knowing that I did not share her fears and that I doubted the correctness of the reports, Mrs. Stanford wrote two separately bound addresses to the Trustees for delivery upon the occasion of her resignation as surviving founder. One of these was shown to me in advance. It contained no reference to the subject of co-education, and I had received no intimation from her that she would bring up the subject of co-education upon the presentation of her resignation.

At her request I sat beside her at the table in the bay window of her library in her home in San Francisco, while the Trustees sat in rows at the other side of the table. She arose and read the address which she had submitted to me, and then, to my surprise, took up the other address which dealt with many matters of detail and many personalities at the University, and ended with the statement that she had caused Senator Stanford to provide for the admission of and equal advantages for women at the University, that she had theretofore limited the number to five hundred, and now expressed the hope that if the Trustees should ever conclude that co-education was a failure they should abolish it. Knowing that the Trustees had no such power unless she should amend the trusts before she presented her resignation, which lay before her and which she was about to take up and read, I stated that I believed that there was a misunderstanding, and requested a five-minute recess, during which time I explained to Mrs. Stanford that, if she really desired the Trustees to have the power to eliminate women students from the University, it would be necessary for her to execute an amendment to that effect before presenting her resignation. At the same time I expressed doubt as to the wisdom of

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

making such a radical change in the charter of the University, in view of the fact that it had been given extraordinary privileges under and pursuant to the constitutional amendment without the public being aware of the fact that she possessed the power to make such a radical change in the character of the University. She thereupon said that she would allow the trusts to stand as they were in that regard, and took up her resignation and read it to the Trustees. I felt that even if co-education should prove to be a failure there was nothing in the charter that prohibited the maintenance of a separate college for five hundred women, the only problem being the matter of expense "to afford equal facilities and give equal advantages in the University to both sexes." But I also felt that her fears were not well founded, as the relationship between men and women at the University during my college generation seemed to me to be little short of ideal. I had in mind, but did not mention the fact, that it might be held in the proposed judicial proceeding, or in a possible contest, that the confirmatory clause of the constitutional amendment might not be construed to validate her power to make such an amendment.

After Mrs. Stanford's resignation of her powers as surviving founder, she consulted my brother and myself concerning desired changes in her will. Under its terms she bequeathed three million dollars to her relatives, and the rest and residue to the University, but inasmuch as her estate consisted of about three millions in bonds and cash and a one-quarter interest in the Pacific Improvement Company, which she valued at about six million dollars, we advised her that, under the law then existing, she could not give by will more than one-third of her estate to education or other eleemosynary purposes, whereas she apparently desired to leave approximately two-thirds of the value of her estate to the University. She said she did not wish to give the Pacific Improvement Company stock to the University during her lifetime, as she hoped to sell it and had other plans for the disposition of some of the proceeds, but she did wish to have it in such form that in case it were not sold it would go to the University. She consulted Judge Leib as to whom she should appoint as trustee to hold the stock in trust for her during her lifetime, with her right to receive both income and liquidating dividends, with a provision for transfer of her stock to the Trustees upon her death. Judge Leib advised her that if she desired someone to carry out her wishes regard-

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

less of consequences she should appoint me as such trustee. When this was suggested to me by Mrs. Stanford, I advised that more than one trustee be appointed, and suggested that Judge Leib and Mr. Lathrop be appointed co-trustees. Fearing that Judge Leib would not outlive her, as his health was not good at the time, and not desiring any publicity concerning the trust in case of his death, Mrs. Stanford insisted on my acting as sole trustee with her brother, Charles G. Lathrop, as my alternate in case of my death or disability.

Although I held Mrs. Stanford's power of attorney from shortly after her resignation until the date of her death, as trustee of the Pacific Improvement Company Trust I directed the company to send Mrs. Stanford's one-quarter of all dividends directly to Mr. Lathrop at the business office of Stanford University, and his receipt was obtained for all of such payments. At the time of Mrs. Stanford's death I was at Tucson, Arizona, on my way to Mexico on business, and immediately returned and tendered the Pacific Improvement Company stock to the Trustees, with a request that they accept the same subject to the claim of Mrs. Stanford's estate for about one hundred thousand dollars in dividends declared and due, but not yet paid. The Trustees expressed an unwillingness to accept the stock subject to any conditions, and, although they passed a resolution expressing approval of my attitude, I expressly waived my request that they protect me from liability to Mrs. Stanford's estate or others by reason of my immediate delivery of the stock without awaiting the ascertainment or determination of their rights. This trust enabled the University to receive several million dollars which it could not have received under the terms of Mrs. Stanford's will. Based upon the relative value of the Pacific Improvement Company stock and that part of Mrs. Stanford's estate which was administered under her will, the extent of my waiver of trustee's fees and my brother's waiver of attorney's fees represented a saving to the University of more than one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. The California law provides, relative to such a trust, that "the trustee is entitled to the same compensation as an executor." The attorney for the trustee is allowed the same compensation as the attorney for an executor.

The dividends on the Pacific Improvement Company stock paid to Mrs. Stanford and the University from September, 1902, to November 1, 1906, amounted to \$3,527,780.24. During the exist-



ARCHWAY THROUGH ARCADES

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

ence of the Pacific Improvement Company Trust, the dividends paid to Mrs. Stanford were \$775,000.00. The dividends paid to the University from the date of Mrs. Stanford's death to November 1, 1906, were \$1,262,500.00. I have not the record of subsequent dividends or other returns from the stock. In a letter from A. D. Shepard, manager of the Pacific Improvement Company, to General Hubbard, owner of a half-interest therein, dated August 6, 1908, he valued the remaining assets of the Pacific Improvement Company at \$17,617,961.23. On this basis the University's interest at that date would have still been worth \$4,404,490.30.

After the report by me of the Pacific Improvement Company trust to the Trustees and their acceptance of the same, the Board of Trustees, on March 29, 1905, adopted the following resolution:

"Upon motion of Trustee Reid, seconded by Trustee Lathrop, Trustee Crothers was instructed to appear for the Trustees and the Board of Trustees in the matter of the Estate of Mrs. Stanford."

Thomas G. Crothers, one of the executors of the estate of Mrs. Stanford, designated S. F. Leib, one of the old friends of the Stanfords, as one of the attorneys for the executors and the estate.

In anticipation of a possible contest of both the will and the trust, it was informally agreed, upon the suggestion of Judge Leib, as one of the attorneys for the executors, that in case of a contest I should conduct it. We hastened the settlement of the estate to avoid liability of the estate for interest upon bequests, amounting to three millions of dollars, to enable the University to secure a small residuary distribution to the Trustees, and to enable the University to benefit from the technical implications arising from a "rest and residue" clause in the decree of final distribution which would render a contest of any gift of Mrs. Stanford's futile, as the property involved therein would go to the University under the decree in case the gift were defeated.

One of the first and most important problems presented to the Organization Committee of the Board of Trustees was the reconciliation of the University trusts with the best practice of American universities, relative to the appointment and removal of professors and instructors at the University. The plan worked out granted to the President of the University the sole power to initiate appointments to the faculty so long as he made no removals without the consent of the Board of Trustees.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

While Stanford University has always been singularly free from any interference by the Trustees in the orderly selection and removal of members of the faculty, its trust provisions have undergone several important changes. The Founding Grant provides, in subdivisions 9, 10, and 11 of Article Four, that the Trustees shall have power, and it shall be their duty:

“9. To appoint a President of the University, who shall not be one of their number, and to remove him at will.

“10. To employ professors and teachers at the University.

“11. To fix the salaries of the President, professors and teachers, and to fix them at such rates as will secure to the University the services of men of the very highest attainments.”

On the other hand it provided that it shall be the duty of the Trustees to give to the President of the University the power to remove professors and teachers at will. These provisions virtually reversed the practice based upon the wisdom of experience elsewhere in such cases. Universal experience has demonstrated that trustees should scrupulously refrain from taking the initiative in making either appointments or removals of members of a university faculty, and no president could remove many trustee appointees and retain his position. These provisions were superseded by Mrs. Stanford's amendment of June 1, 1897, in which she explicitly directed “that the selection and removal of the professors and teachers, and all questions relating thereto, shall be determined by the President and by him alone.” This went too far in the other direction and virtually provided for a presidential dictatorship.

A few years after making the amendment to the trusts just quoted, giving the President virtually dictatorial powers, Mrs. Stanford was persuaded that in practice it would be unwise and inconsistent with the spirit of freedom which should exist in the modern university, and I framed the amendment of October 3, 1902, in which she withdrew all directions theretofore made by her inconsistent with the above-quoted subdivisions 9, 10, and 11 of Article Four of the Founding Grant. At the same time she added the following:

“The Board of Trustees shall adopt such a plan for the nomination and appointment of professors and teachers, and the determination of their salaries, as experience of this and similar institutions may prove to be desirable.”

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

In wording this provision I used merely section and division numbers in the clause to avoid any publicity as to the curtailment of the President's powers.

Pursuant to the authority contained in the clause last quoted, the Organization Committee, on the work of which President of the Board Horace Davis and I held either noonday or evening meetings almost daily for nine months, prepared, and the Board of Trustees adopted, on March 30, 1906, with the assent of the President of the University, the following standing resolution, under which the Trustees virtually surrender the power to initiate appointments of members of the faculty, a power they scrupulously had refrained from exercising, upon condition that the President surrender the power of dismissal without the consent of the Board of Trustees:

“Resolved, That the following resolution presented by the Organization Committee relative to the appointment, promotion and dismissal of professors and teachers at the University be adopted by the Board of Trustees, subject to amendment or repeal by the Board:

“WHEREAS, It is desirable that all nominations for appointments and promotions of members of the teaching staff at the University and all recommendations for dismissals be made by or through the President of the University, the Board of Trustees taking no initiative in these matters; and

“WHEREAS, It is undesirable that either the power of appointment or removal should vest absolutely in the hands of a single person,

“It is resolved and agreed by the Board of Trustees and President of the Leland Stanford Junior University that so long as nominations for appointments and promotions of members of the teaching staff at the University are made by or through the President of the University, no dismissal shall be made without the concurrence of a majority of the Trustees present at a meeting of the Board of Trustees at which a quorum shall be present;

“That in the case of the recommendation of the removal of a member of the teaching staff involving any question affecting his honor or moral character, he shall be furnished by the President, upon application, with a specific written statement of all charges and evidence reflecting upon his honor or moral character, and be given an opportunity to present a written statement of his answer and of any evidence he may wish to offer in defense, and a copy of all such charges and

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

evidence, together with any answer and evidence offered by the accused, and the recommendations of the Advisory Board, shall be attached to the recommendation of the President of the University, and the action of the Board of Trustees shall be based solely upon the recommendation of the President of the University and the record attached thereto, there being no further hearing before the Board of Trustees or any member thereof, unless the Board in its discretion shall elect to receive other evidence in aid of its decision, and any such recommendation and information affecting the honor or character of a member of the teaching staff shall be presented to and acted upon by the Board of Trustees separately from anything which may involve his competency or fitness in any other respect. The members of the Board shall not in any case or in any event listen to or receive any statement concerning such matter except in open meeting."

To the foregoing resolution President Jordan unhesitatingly gave his written assent. It gave him all the powers any university president could wish for and assured him the backing of the Trustees as to all proper removals. I never heard of a case where a professor to be removed ever appealed to the Board of Trustees and informal appeals to individual Trustees were not permissible.

Aside from the amendment of the trusts quoted above requiring the Board of Trustees to adopt rules governing the nomination and appointment of professors and teachers at the University, and the amendment previously quoted requiring the Board of Trustees to adopt by-laws governing the powers and duties of its officers and committees, the General Revision also required the board "to make general laws providing for the government of the University, and to provide for just and equitable rules of discipline."

Accordingly, at the request of Mrs. Stanford upon her resignation as surviving founder, the Board of Trustees created the Organization Committee as a permanent standing committee to work out, and from time to time recommend changes in, the organization of the University and the Board of Trustees. From its inception the committee has been a most important agency of the board in harmonizing and coördinating the work of the various branches of the University and that of the officers and the other committees of the board. On many subjects the views of the members of the Organization Committee, as well as those of the board, have differed and from time to time changed. For example, Trustee Davis and I, as the Sub-Committee



THROUGH THE ARCHES

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

of the Organization Committee, outlined a plan governing the organization of the financial management along theoretical lines, which was not acceptable on certain points to the majority of our associates, and the following extract from the minutes of the board of February 22, 1905, alludes to the adoption of a different plan submitted by another special sub-committee appointed for that purpose. This action was taken shortly before Mrs. Stanford's death, and at that time, in addition to being secretary of the board, I was also assistant treasurer and business manager, without honorarium:

The report heretofore presented by Trustee Sloss upon the organization of the financial management of the University was taken up. Trustee Crothers, on behalf of Trustee Davis and himself, constituting the sub-committee which drafted the former reports of the Organization Committee, stated that he had assented to the report in an incomplete condition, but presented the following objections to the report in its present form:

That the requirement that future treasurers should be elected from the members of the board needlessly restricted the selection of a person to fill that office, also rendering the simultaneous selection of an outside person as a trustee and as treasurer practically impossible against opposition on the part of the friends of a candidate on the board.

That the provision under which the board will place the securities in the possession of a single trustee upon the death of the present treasurer, is not customary in such cases and exposes the securities to the danger of loss or destruction through the possible dishonesty, temporary insanity or duress of the single custodian, and

That the report is inconsistent with the terms of the by-laws respecting the powers and duties of certain officers and committees, without being in form to, or attempting to amend such by-laws in the manner provided.

Upon motion of Trustee Eells, seconded by Trustee Hopkins, the report presented by Trustee Sloss was adopted.

The minutes of the meeting of the board of March 29, 1905, show the following upon the same subject:

Upon motion of Trustee Reid, seconded by Trustee Gray, the portions of the report of Mr. Sloss, adopted at the last meeting relative to the selection of the treasurer and the custody of the funds, were referred back to the Organization Committee to investigate and report thereon.

The next important step taken by Stanford University since the death of the founders was the assumption of the burden of maintaining a medical school.

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

On August 1, 1906, I was appointed chairman of a committee of the Trustees of Stanford University, created to consider the desirability of the proposal of the authorities of Cooper Medical College to turn the institution over to the Trustees of Stanford University, to be operated as a University Department. About two years' time was given to a study of the problem before final action was taken by the Board of Trustees. The final decision of the trustees to assume the enormous burden of maintaining a medical school, and the consequent curtailment of desirable expenditures in other directions, has had and will have, such an important bearing on the future of the University as to justify an outline of the reason which impelled them to believe that the maintenance of a high grade medical school in the West by Stanford University was a duty which, under the trusts, the University owed to the public.

As chairman of the committee to report upon the proposal of the Cooper Medical College, I made a study of medical education in San Francisco and elsewhere throughout the country. I found that only two medical schools of the country required graduation from college or its equivalent for admission—those of Johns Hopkins and Harvard Universities, and that only two others, the Universities of Chicago and California, required the equivalent of two years of college work as conditions for entrance. In the report of President Harper, of Chicago University, for the year 1902-04, he congratulates the University upon the raising of the standards of entrance requirements of the Rush Medical College for the first year medical work to include a course of at least two full years of the regular college curriculum. In that report he said: "This important step was taken with grave apprehension on the part of some of the friends of Rush Medical College. It was evident that a great risk was incurred in adopting a policy which was not supported by any institution within a thousand miles. Rush Medical College, including its first two years, as conducted in the University of Chicago, now stands as one of four institutions in the United States which require more than a high school training for admission."

During the years 1904 to 1908 a few other medical schools gradually worked entrance requirements up toward the standard set by the University of Chicago and the University of California, with the ideals of Johns Hopkins and Harvard as their final goal; but at the time that the Stanford trustees were called upon to determine whether or not

FOUNDING OF LELAND STANFORD UNIVERSITY

they should undertake the herculean task of maintaining a medical school there was not a single medical school in the Western or Southern half of the United States having adequate standards of admission and scholarship on the one hand, and endowment and educational equipment on the other. It was the almost universal view of educators that medical schools should be self-supporting, whereas under the new conditions of advanced scientific knowledge in medicine, it is now an accepted doctrine that medical schools are the most expensive, and, therefore, the least capable of maintaining themselves on anything like a self-supporting basis. I had correspondence with President Wheeler, of the University of California, who expressed his dislike of Stanford entering the field of medicine, and as my apprehensions concerning the cost of the department were even greater than his fear of Stanford's rivalry, I offered to recommend that Cooper Medical College affiliate with the University of California if the regents of the University of California would undertake to maintain a first rate medical school and to accept the principle of supporting it in part from their general funds by making an initial appropriation of as little as \$25,000.00 per year. As the regents had refused theretofore to undertake the support of its medical school out of general funds, President Wheeler could not give any assurances that general funds would be used for the maintenance of a medical school in the future. I was obliged most reluctantly to recommend that Stanford University take over Cooper Medical College and assume the crushing burden of maintaining a medical school. Stanford had scarcely completed taking over Cooper Medical College properties and selected Dr. Ray Lyman Wilbur as dean, when the regents of the University of California commenced to make appropriations far beyond the minimum amount suggested by me toward the maintenance of the medical department of the University of California. I then suggested that we recede from our position, if that could be done with the consent of the Cooper people, and yield to the University of California the maintenance of medical education in this region, but Stanford had gone so far that my associates did not feel it could in honor and dignity recede from its position.

Rhode Island's Contribution to California

BY EILEEN M. MACMANNUS, ED. B., OF PROVIDENCE,
RHODE ISLAND



LESS than two years after California became part of the United States, the first inklings of the famous Gold Rush of 1849 were heard.

James Marshall, a foreman employed on Sutter's settlement at the junction of the Sacramento and San Joaquin rivers accidentally discovered gold on January 24, 1848.

At first, little enthusiasm could be aroused because gold had previously been discovered in small quantities in that vicinity. General publicity was given to the discovery by Sam Brannan, an official in the Mormon Church, who had recently resigned as a result of some irregularities and who was trying to eke out a living by keeping a general store and publishing a newspaper.

One day he strode from Sutter's settlement, where he kept his store, taking with him a small quantity of gold dust and a few nuggets, shouting, "Gold! Gold! Gold, from the American River." Immediately a crowd gathered; new interest was awakened and people in the surrounding territory soon rushed to the scene thrilled with the bally-hoo of a new get-rich-quick scheme.

Brannan's "California Star" then carried a sensational and exaggerated account of the whole affair which was somewhat of the nature of propaganda on his part as he hoped to attract people to the district and so book his sales.

Sailors deserted their ships and took their chances with the rest who were digging with pick and shovel.

Strange as it may seem, the first news of the discovery of gold reached the East through vessels from the Sandwich Islands. A short item appeared in a Baltimore paper, but people in the conservative East laughed at the rumor until an official letter sent to the War Department convinced them that there was some truth attached to the reports.

Governor Mason wrote, "There is more gold in the country

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

drained by the Sacramento and San Joaquin rivers than would pay the cost of the late war with Mexico a hundred times over."

The "Providence Journal" published the following on September 18, 1848:

THE GOLD FEVER IN CALIFORNIA.

The correspondent of the "Philadelphia North American," writing from Upper California, July 2, gives the following glowing account of the gold fever which is raging in that region:

The sands which border Feather River and the American Fork abound in particles of gold, resembling in shape snowflakes. These are separated from the sand by stirring them in water in a basin or bowl. A person will collect by this simple process from one to two ounces of gold a day—some have gone as high as six or eight ounces.

I have just been conversing with a man who in six days gathered five hundred dollars' worth. He has one piece which weighs an ounce. There are probably now not less than five thousand persons, whites and Indians, gathering this gold. San Francisco, Sonoma, Santa Cruz and San Jose are literally deserted by their inhabitants; all have gone to the gold regions. The farmers have thrown aside their ploughs, the lawyers their briefs, the priests their prayer books, and all are now digging gold. The diamond-broached gentlemen and the clouted Indian work side by side, lovingly, as if they had been rocked in the same cradle. Tin pans, to wash the sparkling sand in, have sold as high as eight dollars apiece, shovels for ten, and wooden bowls for five! A trough scooped from a hollow tree, ten feet long, and with a willow sieve attached, sells for a hundred and twenty-five dollars.

Nobody thinks of fighting any longer, the natives have gone for gold, the sailors have run from the ships, and the soldiers from their camps for the same purpose. The last vessel that left the coast had to find a new crew and pay each man fifty dollars a month.

Stories of life in the gold regions were soon published, many or most of them based on the imagination of newspaper writers. They conveyed the idea that gold nuggets lay on the ground and one only had to stoop and fill his pockets.

People from all sections of the United States and even from foreign countries began to investigate the various means of transportation to the gold region.

There were three routes to California. That by way of Panama was the shortest and, therefore, the most crowded. It also was the most expensive, but to the untraveled person it seemed the easiest.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

Since the "luxuries" of the sailing vessels were well advertised, this means of travel attracted many persons of means and culture.

The "Shipping News" advertised a direct booking through Panama from the Eastern ports to the gold region. Men who were promised a through passage found that they had been badly hoodwinked. They sailed up the Chagres River to Gatun, where they reëmbarked in small boats and continued to Gorgona, which they reached in three days. Here they had to hire mules and as there were never animals enough available, many persons had to walk a distance of about twenty miles to Panama City. At this port they boarded another ship, which took them to San Francisco, but it often happened that the ships were without a crew and sometimes the passengers attempted to sail them in order to avoid the cholera which was rampant in the unhealthy climate. Of course, many were forced to leave their goods and equipment at Gorgona.

Another route was overland by ox train or "prairie schooner." This journey across the continent required a great deal of grim determination for the Indians were hostile and there were also the dangers of thirst and starvation.

St. Joseph and Independence, Missouri, were the gathering places for overland routes from all sections East. From these points the caravans followed the route of the Old Santa Fé Trail.

Rhode Island sent many of her sons to California in the Gold Rush of '49. Most of them sailed in vessels which left Rhode Island ports and took the route around Cape Horn. In the fragile and musty Rhode Island Custom House papers and newspapers, which have been carefully preserved, is a record of many men who went to the coast in those early exciting days.

The interest of the people of Providence was quickened when they read the following news items in the "Providence Journal" of January 1 and 18, 1849:

California Gold—Mr. Whipple Brown has received a specimen of California gold, in scales. It presents a very tempting sight.

And—

Startling Gold Rumors—It was extensively rumored in this city yesterday, that the steamship "Falcon," now on her return from Chagres, brings \$1,000,000 in gold dust; this, however, is generally

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

doubted, as it is scarcely possible that so much of the precious material could have already accumulated at Panama.

A more reliable rumor, which is also current, states that a merchant in this city has received a letter from the captain of the ship "John Parker," at San Francisco, which vessel was entirely deserted by the crew. It is said that she has been manned by volunteers from the mining districts, who are coming home with their earnings, amounting to the total value of \$800,000. If the half of this be true, there will be work enough for the mints next summer.

Of the many vessels which cleared from the ports of Rhode Island, from Providence, Bristol and Newport, the story of the bark "Nahumkeag" is typical.

In the shipping news of the "Providence Journal" of January 23, 1849, there appeared the following advertisement:

For San Francisco, Upper California and the Gold Regions—To sail with dispatch an A-1 coppered and copper fastened first-class packet ship of 650 tons burthen, commanded by one of the most experienced captains ever in the Pacific trade, will sail from Providence to the port of San Francisco, Upper California, if a sufficient number of passengers should offer. The number of passengers will be limited and the accommodations will be ample. Passengers and freight will be taken as low as any vessel of the same class and accommodation. An agent will go out in the ship who will receive on consignment any goods directed to his charge at a reasonable commission. Those wishing to organize to go out in this ship in companies will be afforded every facility for meeting each other and exchanging news. Any one wishing passage or freight will call on W. Whipple Brown, West Water St., Union Buildings, Providence, R. I.

It is interesting to note that not only were Providence people lured by the gold rush, but Providence merchants were lured by the profit of the growing new market.

In the shipping news in the "Journal" there appeared later the following item:

For San Francisco and the Gold Regions—February 20th—the A-1 coppered and copper fastened clipper built bark "Nahumkeag," Capt. Henry Champlin, having splendid accommodations, has a full poop, and will take a limited number of passengers. The bark is two years old, a beautiful model and a remarkably fast sailer. Capt. Champlin is an accomplished officer, having been in the Pacific trade. Passengers going in this vessel will be sure of a comfortable passage. For freight or passage apply to W. Whipple Brown.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

This bark cleared from the port of Providence on March 2, 1849. Her shipping papers read as follows:

It is Agreed between the Master and Seamen or Mariners, of the Bark "Nahumkeag" of Providence, whereof Henry Champlin is at present Master, or whoever shall go for Master, now bound from the Port of Providence, R. I., to Rio Janeiro and a market including San Francisco and other ports on the Pacific Ocean for the term of two years and back to a port in the United States on the Atlantic Ocean.

Her clearance papers read "for Rio Janeiro and a market."

The "Journal" on March 5 published the following:

The "Nahumkeag" sailed last Saturday for San Francisco with twenty-nine passengers and a full freight. The Collector of this port refused to give her a coastwise clearance and she was compelled to clear for Rio Janeiro and a market. We believe that vessels for San Francisco are cleared coastwise at Boston and New York. We do not know why the same facilities are not extended to the commerce of this city.

This manner of clearance is explained in the following letter from the Secretary of the Treasury to the Collector of Bristol, a copy of which may be found in the Custom House papers at the Rhode Island Historical Society:

TREASURY DEPARTMENT

SIR:

January 22d 1849

In reply to the inquiries submitted in your letter of the 16th instant relative to the requisite papers for vessels bound for California, I have to state that all vessels destined for California should be provided with "Registers" and as they will doubtless touch at some foreign port or ports during the voyage they should take a clearance for some designated foreign port "and a market."

In answer to your other inquiry respecting the Act of 11th May 1848. To provide for the ventilation of passenger vessels and for other purposes, I would state that said act does not apply to vessels carrying passengers to California.

Very respectfully,

R. JR. WALKER
Secy of the Treasury.

WM. J. MILLER Esquire
Collector of the Customs,
Bristol R. Island

Vessels sailing after March 10 were allowed to clear directly for a California port, the next letter states:

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

TREASURY DEPARTMENT

March 7th 1849

SIR:

In reply to your letter of the 1st instant I have to state that Congress having at the recent session passed a law extending the revenue laws over Upper California & established a Collection District therein to go into operation on the 10th of the present month, American registered vessels may take coastwise clearance for the District of Upper California after said date.

Very respectfully

M. C. YOUNG

Secretary of the Treasury

The bark "Nahumkeag" was of about 266 tons burthen. She was built in Pittston, Maine, in 1846, and was owned by Messrs. James T. Rhodes, Peleg A. Rhodes, Samuel G. Arnold, Seth Padelord, Earl P. Mason, Truman Beckwith, Tully D. Bowen, of Providence; Henry Champlin and Wheaton Allen, of Warren, Rhode Island.

She sailed on March 2 from the port of Providence with a crew of thirteen men and one boy, whose monthly wages ranged from \$0.05 to \$40. According to his son, Mr. Walter C. Allen, of Philadelphia, Henry M. Allen, "the boy," reached his sixteenth birthday in March just after the "Nahumkeag" sailed.

The "Nahumkeag" took the route around the Horn, stopping at Rio de Janeiro and at Valparaiso. She arrived in the port of San Francisco, California, on November 19, 1849, 255 days from Providence, Rhode Island, where she was run on shore and turned into a store ship.

Henry Allen did not go immediately to the mines, but remained to help with the sale of the sixty-nine items of merchandise which the bark had carried.

Besides great quantities of food stuffs her cargo included sixteen hundred feet of lumber, two bags of shot, one hundred kegs of powder, twenty reams of writing paper, forty reams of wrapping paper, five bales of ticking, ten boxes of smoking pipes, thirty boxes and one hundred half boxes of soap, twenty boxes of candles, five cases of shirts and one barrel of Macaboy snuff. The total value of the goods was \$15,801. Certainly a goodly number of necessities to start a general store.

Henry M. Allen afterwards became a member of the Society of California Pioneers.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

A list of the "Nahumkeag's" passengers as well as the passengers on most of the vessels sailing for California was published in the contemporary issues of the "Providence Journal." These lists have been reprinted in C. W. Haskins' "The Argonauts of California." Haskins, however, has merely listed the passengers under the name of the State, although in the newspapers the passengers are listed by the towns and cities in which they resided. This additional detailed information is of very great value to genealogists. A typewritten list, including the names of the towns and cities, has been placed in the library of the Rhode Island Historical Society.

The first advertisement concerning traveling accommodations for the gold region was placed in the "Journal" of December 13, 1848, by William Whipple Brown, of Providence, and Burr & Smith, of Warren, Rhode Island. It extolled the durability of the ship "Hopewell" and the navigating prowess of its captain, George Littlefield.

The "Hopewell" sailed from Warren, Rhode Island, on January 28 for San Francisco.

Several other vessels sailed from Rhode Island ports during the Gold Rush.

The bark "Floyd," Freeman Mayberry, captain, cleared from Providence on March 3, 1849, for Mazatlan and a market (destination California).

The bark "Winthrop," Captain Moore, sailed from Bristol, Rhode Island, for San Francisco on March 8, 1849.

The ship "South America," with Captain Sowle in command, sailed from Newport on Saturday morning, September 8, 1849. Most of the passengers were members of the Tallman Mining and Trading Association.

The packet bark "Perseverance" sailed from Providence on June 15, and three days later the "Journal" published a list of her passengers, also the following news item:

The bark "Perseverance," Capt. Geo. Heath, sailed for California, Thursday. We give below a list of her passengers and officers. Religious services were held on board previous to her departure. Several clergymen were present and participated in the services. Rev. Mr. Thompson made a prayer, an address was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Hall, which was responded to by the Rev. Mr. Sturtevant, who went out in the bark as a passenger.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

The schooner "Alexander," Captain Dennis, sailed from Newport on October 22.

The bark "Walter" was advertised as a very fast sailer of 257 tons burthen and draught which would allow her to proceed about 125 miles up the Sacramento River. The expedition was to be for a period of two years and was to comprise all necessary provisions and implements. Shares cost \$100 each.

The "Walter" left Providence on October 25. Many of the Rhode Island passengers were members of the Rhode Island Hope Mining and Trading Association.

The "Journal" printed the following advertisement in its issue of August 21:

For San Francisco and the Gold Regions of California—The "Rhode Island Workingmen's Mining Company" having purchased the superior coppered and copper fastened fast sailing bark "Rio," will fit her immediately for California, under the command of Capt. Colin C. Baker. She will be fitted for two years, with a large and convenient house, mining and camp equipage, and everything necessary for such an expedition. Shares \$360 each. A few more will be disposed of if immediate application is made to Uriah Baker, 34 S. Water St. Upstairs.

The bark "Rio" left Providence, October 23, and touched at Newport, October 30, 1849.

The bark "Anne," Captain Cobb, sailed from Bristol on February 8.

The schooner "John A. Sutter," Captain Samuel R. Eddy, sailed from Warren on March 8 and touched at New York, where she doubtless took on many of her passengers.

The ship "Audley Clark" sailed from Newport on February 15.

The bark "Rhodes," Captain Samuel T. Remington, for San Francisco, cleared from Providence November 20, 1849.

The brig "Hallowell," Captain Noyes, sailed from Bristol for San Francisco on December 4, 1849. Haskins does not give the passengers who went in the "Hallowell," and who were listed in the newspapers as:

Providence—John U. Noyes (captain), John L. Gifford (first officer), Christopher S. Sherman (second officer), Perry Merry, C. G. Douglass, Silas G. Tripp, J. B. Dayton, F. G. Hall, R. C. Spooner, S. P. Page, S. A. Thomas, Peter Vanderbeck, J. S. Daymon, William

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

Tripp, N. T. Peck, Augustus Olney, O. Wood, Thomas Mathewson, Daniel Mathewson, James Colvin, Andrew Wood, William J. England, T. G. A. Hall, R. H. Robbins, Abram Bliss, Joseph Spooner.

Bristol—J. Clark, Enos Pedro.

Warwick—James Essex, Leander Wilcox, P. R. Whitman, Z. Andrews, William Spencer, C. D. Carpenter, Alfred Macy, Arnold Chappell, Oliver Slocum, William N. Clark, Dennis Colvin, Abel Thomas, S. K. Hathaway, George Whipple, E. H. Mathewson, Horace Spencer, Hiram Mathewson.

Woonsocket—Charles B. Sergant, Z. Wood.

Kingston—S. D. Johnson.

The schooner "Alexander," Captain Dennis, sailed from Newport for San Francisco on October 22d.

Her passengers from Rhode Island were:

Newport—William H. Dennis (captain), Stephen Burdick, James Brown, Samuel Simpson, William H. Smith, John Albro, Joseph Manwaring, Robert Hollingsworth.

New Shoreham—Henry Gorham.

It is probable that the following vessels which also sailed from Rhode Island ports for San Francisco carried passengers for the notice of their sailing was well advertised.

The ship "Henry Tuke," Captain Bowen, of Warren, sailed for San Francisco on December 10, 1849, *via* Valparaiso, with a cargo of lumber and "houses."

The schooner "Charles Herbert," Captain Carr, sixty-seven tons burthen, sailed from Warren for the west coast on December 5. Twenty-four members of the Warren Mining Company were her passengers.

The ship "Chariot," Captain Barden, sailed from Warren on August 24.

The bark "Harvest," Captain Mauran, sailed from Providence October 17.

Although the routes to California were filled with hardship and discomfort and there was considerable risk connected with the trip, the dangers to life were not considered extraordinary by the New York Life Insurance Company as is shown by the following item which was placed in the "Journal":

The New York Life Insurance Company continues to insure the lives of persons going to California by any of the usual routes. Applications received at No. 4 Broad St. HENRY P. KNIGHT, Agent.



BAGS OR POUCHES FOR CARRYING GOLD,
USED IN CALIFORNIA IN 1849, NOW IN THE
MUSEUM OF THE RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

It is, of course, impossible to determine the individual profits of the forty-niners from Rhode Island, and it would doubtless be very difficult to even approximate the total amount of gold obtained by Rhode Islanders or brought back to the State. One item in the Custom House papers throws some light on this question.

The ship "Portsmouth," Captain Samuel S. Munroe, from Oahu, Sandwich Islands, arrived in the port of Warren, Rhode Island, on June 6, 1849.

She carried one hundred ten pounds of California gold, valued at \$26,400, which was the property of her passengers, Aaron C. Inman, lady and two children, I. Johnston, M. Farlane.

It would be interesting to know how many of the Rhode Islanders of the Gold Rush remained in California and became the parents of the native sons and daughters of the "Golden West."

ADDITIONAL LIST OF PASSENGERS.

The "Nahumkeag" passengers were the following twenty-nine Rhode Island citizens, the first fifteen comprising the Roger Williams Mining Company:

Providence—John H. Mason, 2d, Albert B. Cranston, Samuel B. Darling, Robert A. Perry, George F. Wesson, Henry A. Billings, Frederick O. Smith, Daniel McMillen, James B. Bradford, John B. Perry, Robert B. Barton, ————, Robert B. Woodward, Benson Bean, Horatio Phinney, Charles Burrough, Silas Alden, Patrick Carr, Albion N. Olney, George Burlingame.

Richmond—George W. Reynolds, William Reynolds.

Newport—John A. Gardner.

Woonsocket—George A. Sayles.

Warren—John Hale.

Gloucester—Seth H. Steere, H. S. Tourtellot.

Scituate—Ethan C. Thornton, Charles Ford.

The "Hopewell" sailed from Warren, Rhode Island, on January 28th for San Francisco with these passengers aboard:

Providence—Edward E. Chase, Ezra Dodge, Philip M. Fiske, James D. Simmons, George T. Bowen, John P. Pierce, Jesse E. Raze, H. Carrison, Christopher Vaughn, D. H. Wesson, N. B. Horton, William Silver, Daniel P. Andrews, William D. Butts, Lewis P. Field, James B. Carder, Robert T. Reynolds, George W. Thompson, Caleb Burbank, Thomas C. Pierce, John B. Simmons, William H. Thurber, Jacob Zurlinder, Charles Herr, William M. Cullough,

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

Henry T. Treadwell, William Batchelder, Thomas Warner, Daniel V. Ross, 2d, T. B. Carr, Talmadge G. Robbins, Edgar G. Windsor, Warren Pierce, Harley McDonald, Edwin Spencer, Samuel Thompkins, William F. Allen, Franklin White, Jr., Benjamin D. Manton, Isaac Knowles, George A. Weeden, Theodore S. Angell, Joseph P. Williams, Thomas C. Peckham, Clarke Dawley.

Scituate—Wanton Briggs, Jr., Lucius Briggs, Jeremiah Brown, Edward Smith, Sayles Brown, Henry Harris.

Pawtucket—Joseph Luther, William J. Luther, James Vinson.

Slatersville—Charles M. Child, Charles Sweetser, John B. Holmes.

Woonsocket—Edward Johnson, Jacob T. Holmes, George Kennecom, William K. Levett, Charles B. Aldrich, Andrew J. Varney.

Cranston—George W. King.

Johnston—George W. Waterman, Alfred Waterman, Nathan Pratt, Jr., Abel G. Tripp, George W. Randall, Joseph Bennett, Nicholas G. Reynolds, Anthony A. Rathbone.

South Kingstown—Darius Pierce.

The residences of the following men have not been ascertained, but they were all Rhode Islanders:

Charles G. Hidden, Francis Reed, Thomas Cole, Perry Lawton, William Smith, James M. Hathaway, John E. Eddy, Stephen Grinnell, Moses Grinnell, Francis B. Gardiner, Cornelius Seabury, Morris J. Dooley, Thomas D. Palmer, Ebenezer Slocum, Edward F. Gardner, Asa A. Slocum, Andrew J. Corey, William H. Surgens, William S. Hendrick, Seth Carter, Alfred Pratt, Robert Smith, Beriah Mason.

The bark "Floyd," Freeman Mayberry, captain, cleared from Providence on March 3, 1849. The members of the Bark Floyd Expedition were:

Freeman Mayberry (captain), of Dighton, Massachusetts.

Providence—John Borden, James L. Cogswell, Horace C. Snow, James M. Pierce, William Barden, Hiram Weeks, George Teal, Crimblin La Du, William D. Aldrich (seaman), George D. Gardiner (seaman), Franklin White, William H. May, Stephen G. Gerald, William Taylor, James M. Angell, Samuel A. Lewis, Henry Pullen (steward), John P. Crins, Thomas Smith, Thomas Jackson, Nathaniel Kelly, Isaac Bowen, Joseph J. Holmes.

North Providence—Oliver C. Hawkins, Hezekiah Olney, Frank H. Young.

Smithfield—Joseph H. Knight, Charles S. Walcott (second mate), William Henry Walcott (seaman), Jeremiah L. Smith.

Pawtucket—Curtis E. Willard, James Burns, Otis Perrin, Jr., James Slocum, Joseph M'Intyre, Seth Blanchard, Samuel H. Vinson.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

Johnston—Caleb Remington, Jr.

Newport—Edward B. Williams.

Seamen—John A. Hanson, George H. Gardiner, J. L. Munro, William M. Cleary (mate), Gideon Girad (cook), S. A. Knight, Gideon Gray, Orin Smith, Joseph Aldridge.

The bark "Winthrop," Captain Moore, sailed from Bristol, Rhode Island, for San Francisco on March 8, 1849.

Passengers—Mount Hope and California Mining Company.

Providence—Francis Moore (captain), James Darling (first mate), Hezekiah Willard (second mate), William P. Munro (second-third mate), John N. Walton (fourth mate), Francis West, Thomas P. Thurston, Joseph J. Ralph, Benjamin B. West, William H. Johnson, Isaac Gorham, Martin D. Bonney, Benjamin C. Cummings, Samuel G. Richmond, Jr., David Bullock, Jr., Alfred Peabodie, Edward S. Gladding, Henry W. Warrel, William E. Wrightington, George Caparel, Eli Darling, Nathaniel F. Phillips, John D. Wright, Simon A. Vaugh, Joseph Paine, Joseph Armington, Alfred S. Buffington, Jr., William H. Hammond, Ezekiel F. Mowry, John F. Brown.

Warren—William C. Fales.

Cranston—John Lippet.

Coventry—Arnold C. Briggs.

North Providence—Seth Wheelock.

Newport—Lewis Cobele.

The ship "South America," with Captain Sowle in command, sailed from Newport on Saturday morning, September 8, 1849.

The passengers, who were members of the Tallman Mining and Trading Association, were:

Providence—Nathaniel W. Sowle (captain), Benjamin S. Fenner (first mate), George Shed (second mate), ——— Sowle (third mate), Esek Tallman (president and treasurer), William F. Hammond (vice-president), George W. Webster (secretary).

Directors—John H. Bullock, *Mowry W. Smith, William N. Webster, Beriell Arnold, ——— ———, Josiah Kennicut, Thomas J. Blanding, Daniel Angell, Jr., Henry C. Peck, E. A. Everett, R. M. Chapin, Albert Cleaveland, Martin Thurber, Thomas T. Easterbrooks, Henry Wrenches, Robert L. Kelly, A. U. Eldred, Jabez Bullock, Nathan M. Chafee, H. P. Angell, David Tefft, Henry W. Leman, Jabez W. Jencks, B. M. Claffin, Charles Barras, Thomas B. Wilbur, J. Burdick, Charles H. Dunham, D. T. Burr, P. D. Greene, D. T. Eddy, S. H. Davis, William P. Salisbury, Nathan B. Fenner, Jeremiah Snow, P. M. Bowen, John H. Bradford, E. F. Childs, Rod-

*To go out *via* Panama.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

man Sweet, L. G. Nicholas, Isaac S. Battey, John H. Cole, William C. Barker, E. R. M. Jipson.

Warwick—Henry Hubbard, M. Waterhouse.

Gloucester—Samuel Potter, Jr.

Cranston—E. E. Suseman, Richard W. Dexter.

Central Falls—Robert McQuiston.

Others from Rhode Island—Abel Wade, Henry Nicholas, John Dean, G. B. Hill, C. C. Greene, William A. Remington, Crispin Taylor, A. K. Aldrich, ——— Allen, H. W. Ellis, William Piersons, William Murdock, Arnold S. Hood, ——— Sowle, William Rowe, N. S. Titus, Thomas S. Simmons, Thomas P. Marshall, William H. Lawton, C. W. Hopkins, Joshua Clark, Charles H. Kelley, A. C. Gardiner, Benjamin D. Chace, J. W. Chambers, E. G. Pierce, Thomas J. Hawks, Otis Phillips, William C. Hazard, William R. Wilbur, H. Bowen, A. O. Titus, R. Mathewson, J. Gardner, H. C. Chace, Martin W. Thurber, T. H. Angell, E. Brown, J. G. Smith, Carlos Cowe, William H. Tripp, E. Blanchard, Lewis C. Merrill, J. A. Potter.

The packet bark "Perseverance" sailed from Providence on June 15 with the followings persons:

Captain George Heath (president and director), of Providence.

Captain William Perry (first mate), of Providence.

Captain Gilbert Richmond (second mate and director), of Bristol.

S. A. Comstock, Providence; D. S. Linnell, Jr., Pawtucket; E. B. Dorrance, Providence (directors).

Merrill Andrews Johnston, (vice-president).

Rev. Thomas D. Sturtevant and lady, Providence (secretary).

Captain Lawton Kelley, Warren (treasurer).

Henry R. Angell, North Providence (agent).

Providence—Joel R. Ray, James P. Butts, James H. Horton, John Noyes, Jr., John Martin, William Moore, George Foster (steward), D. Winslow, George B. Weeden, Silas Weston.

Smithfield—James Brown, Spalding N. Ross, Sabin Brown, Stephen Handy, George A. Young.

Cranston—William M. Potter.

North Providence—David B. Westcott.

Warwick—Joseph W. Cady, William E. Vamper, William Nichols.

Coventry—Job W. Spink, James B. Arnold, H. B. Arnold.

Johnston—J. Knight, W. Standfield, Albert E. Thurber, Stephen O. Hopkins, Sheldon Knight, Orin Mowry.

Burrillville—Charles H. Lapham.

Scituate—Thomas Hill, Russel Card.

The schooner "Alexander," Captain Dennis, sailed from Newport on October 22:

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

Newport—William H. Dennis (captain), Stephen Burdick, James Brown, Samuel Simpson, William H. Smith, John Albro, Joseph Manwaring, Robert Hollingsworth.

New Shoreham—Henry Gorham.

The "Walter" left Providence on October 25. The following Rhode Island passengers were members of the Rhode Island Hope Mining and Trading Association:

Providence—Captain John G. Joyce and lady, Joseph Manton, Jr., Harvey Cornell, James H. Nichols, George B. Dean, Charles G. Cole, Erastus L. Fennery, John H. Everett, Thomas G. Hathaway, William Newcomb.

Johnston—Andrew Waterman, Nehemiah Randall, James Winsor.

Scituate—Elisha Tew, Richard Olney, William A. Bateman.

Warwick—Asa Bennet, Judson White, Charles Capwell, Henry H. Tiffany, George A. Smith, William A. Gardiner, Cary D. Dyer, William H. Allen, Job Phillips.

Westerly—J. William Vincent.

South Kingstown—Daniel P. Knowles, Joseph S. Hazard.

East Greenwich—Gorton Spencer, Walter Mumford, Daniel Howard, S. S. Whitney.

Charlestown—J. Clark Green, Thomas A. Pierce, George Eddy, John H. Ward, John P. Ward.

Cranston—W. T. Alleny.

Richmond—Brightman Tucker, David S. Larkman, Charles H. Potter.

Foster—Hiram N. Randall.

Apponaug—George W. Taylor.

West Greenwich—William Champlin, Luther R. Capwell.

Crompton Mills—Joseph Liddle.

North Kingstown—George Smith.

Newport—Charles Burdick.

Pawtucket—Milton Cole.

The Crew of the "Walter"—Joseph E. Martin (first mate), J. N. Saper (second mate), Edward Burdee, Pardon Brown, Isaac C. Williston, John C. Davis, Samuel H. Oxx, Thomas Sherman, William C. Tillinghast, William Blanchard.

In the bark "Rio," which sailed from Providence October 23 and touched at Newport October 30, 1849, were:

Colin C. Baker (captain).

Albert A. Gardner (first mate).

Henry Richardson.

Charles H. Green (second mate).

Providence—John Frason, Pardon A. White, John Nickerson, Jonathan Baker, Sheldon Crowell, Heman Crocker.

RHODE ISLAND'S CONTRIBUTION TO CALIFORNIA

North Providence—Charles H. Williams, Robert Pettis, William Munroe, James F. Sweet.

Warwick—Daniel Baxter, Benjamin Knight (president), Henry J. Holden (treasurer), Doc. H. V. Bickwell (secretary), John Warner (director), George Briggs (director), Joseph Fones, Benjamin Cornell, George J. Jackson, John Andrews, Alfred J. Johnson, George W. Bates, George Gorton, Leonard W. Bennett, Jonah Titus, 2d, Caleb W. Baily, Albert G. Tennant, James D. Vaughn, Jonathan T. Briggs, Ambrose N. Taylor, Henry A. Bailey, Peter Nocache, Obediah M. Knight, Samuel Underwood, Thomas Holden, Levi Nichols, John W. King, John H. Briggs, Vernon G. Gardner, Stephen W. Reed, Daniel S. Bellows, Lowry Whipple, Bradford W. Andrews, Benjamin G. Johnson, Eliphalet C. Bellows, Jr.

Coventry—Vernon Spencer (director).

South Kingstown—Samuel J. Eddy, George W. Browning, Ezekiel H. Browning.

Newport—Thurston Lake (director).

Smithfield—Albert J. Whipple.

East Greenwich—Albert J. Spnecer, Wilber Vaugh, Albert D. Dedrick.

The bark "Rhodes," Captain Samuel T. Remington, for San Francisco, cleared from Providence, November 20, 1849.

Her passengers were:

Providence—Smith Burrows, Samuel A. Pearsons, B. C. Tuckerman, William H. Peck, Alexander Smith, Allen Gladding, Horace J. Crandall, George Rounds, James Brownell, Josias L. Peck, Thomas D. Gladding, Jr., James B. Randall, Frederic Perry, Jonathan Boyd, Samuel Back.

Warren—Horace Luther, James M. Riley.

East Greenwich—Ralph Haskins.

Olneyville—Perry H. Williams.

Natick—Christopher C. Rhodes, Charles Sprague.

Quidneck—John Leahy, Joseph Sutcliffe.

Pawtucket—Cornelius Arnold, James Quick.

Bristol—Matthew Freeborn, Thomas S. Clark, John Himmall, John H. Chadwick, Daniel Linsey, Matthew Frederic.

Smithfield—George Birch, William M. Farnum.

North Kingstown—Stanton C. Gage, William Stone.

Gloucester—Esek Harris.

Burrillville—James H. Smith, John Whipple, Enoch Whipple.

North Swansey—Henry C. Peck.

Greenville—Cyrus Stone.

West Greenwich—Thurston Capwell.

Barrington—James Chase.

Woonasquetucket—James A. Williams.

Edgar Cowan, United States Senator from Pennsylvania During the Civil War

BY JOHN NEWTON BOUCHER, GREENSBURG, PENNSYLVANIA



AMERICAN biography is replete with interesting and elevating stories of the struggles of those who came from the humbler walks of life and who, by industry and ability, have arisen to places of usefulness, to fame or to untold wealth. But there are few names so far as the writer can recall who triumphed over so many apparently insurmountable difficulties of youth and whose strides from poverty and obscurity to prominence and true greatness were equal to those of Edgar Cowan. He was a lawyer, a scholar, a wit, an orator and a nationally known statesman. To show you that he undoubtedly had all of these qualities in a high degree and was one of the most illustrious men Pennsylvania ever sent to the United States Senate, is the purpose of this article.

Mr. Cowan was born of very poor parents near West Newton, Pennsylvania, on September 15, 1815. He was brought up by his lonely mother and his grandfather. His mother kept a toll gate on the Robbstown Pike. One of the boy's duties, perhaps when his mother was busy, was to collect the toll from the traveler. One morning a traveler on horseback with more money than manners, when he learned from the boy that the toll was 12½ cents, instead of handing the boy the money, threw a silver dollar on the ground and asked for the change. The boy picked it up, hurried into the house and returned with the change which he threw on the ground where the traveler had thrown the dollar. With a good deal of profanity, the enraged traveler was compelled to dismount to gather up his change. That illustrates a prominent characteristic of Mr. Cowan's whole life. He was always kind and deferential to those who treated him properly, but woe to the stranger or witness who tried to impose on him, to misrepresent facts or who got impudent with him, but we will come to that feature of him later on in this article.

At an early age he was almost full grown and worked on a flat boat in the summer, taught school in the winter and all the time he

EDGAR COWAN

was a reader and a student. In 1838, he entered Franklin College at New Athens, Ohio. Having studied Greek, Latin and mathematics before entering, he was graduated in 1839 with the highest honors, being selected by the faculty as valedictorian of his class. The next year he went to Greensburg and read law with General Henry D. Foster and was admitted to the bar in February, 1842.

Nature had been very kind to Mr. Cowan. He was of splendid build, and was six feet and four inches tall. He had most classically chiseled features and an extremely acute and retentive memory. He had a musical voice that could roll and thunder like the peals of a great organ or in the next breath apparently, plead his cause in the mild and gentle accents of a cultured woman. Nature also made him a quick thinker and gave him a ready wit which alone was sufficient to render him noted among his fellows. He had a superior look and a lofty bearing, was always tastefully dressed and his clear cut face marked him as a man of character and a deep thinker. With these marvelous gifts by nature he was bred to industry from his very youth, a trait which never left him.

As a result of these endowments, he very rapidly attained a foremost rank at the bar. His practice for years was the largest in Greensburg. Anyone who will take time to examine the continuance dockets from 1850 to 1860, will find that he either tried or was connected with more than half of the great cases in all these years. Mr. Cowan was an omnivorous reader and apparently never forgot anything he read, but could instantly recall it and use it to his advantage. He was said to be equally posted, not only in the law, but in ancient and modern history, English and American history, Biblical history, in literature, in poetry, philosophy, and in the sciences of botany, astronomy, geology, ornithology, zoölogy and in all of the well-known sciences of that day. It quite frequently happened that students in the Seminary, when they passed his office, would stop and he would assist them in their more difficult lessons of algebra and higher mathematics and translate for them their lessons in Greek and Latin. This, it must be remembered, was nearly fifty years after he had left school.

Mr. Cowan was brought up as a Jackson Democrat, but in the campaign of 1840, the first in which he took interest, he became a Whig. In 1856, with his unrivaled powers of oratory, he advocated the election of John C. Fremont. He was a presidential elector on the Republican ticket in 1860, when Abraham Lincoln was first elected.

EDGAR COWAN

In 1861, when he was forty-five years old, he was elected to the United States Senate by the Legislature of Pennsylvania. Before this he had held but one office, that of school director of Greensburg, when the town had a population of about 1,100. It is difficult for those of the present boss-ridden State of Pennsylvania to understand how a man with none of the influences which wealth and family can bring, without the power of political leadership and coming from a backwoods section, could be elected to this high position over candidates from Pittsburgh and Philadelphia, and over several candidates from other sections who had years of experience in politics and in Congress.

When he entered the Senate he was practically a stranger to all of its members. Slavery, the great question of that period, had been bubbling up and bursting forth in Congress for thirty years. It had then fully exploded and was before the American people for settlement. It could not be otherwise than that a man of Mr. Cowan's mental attainments, strength of character and industry, would take high rank even in so learned a body as the United States Senate was then. President Lincoln took office the same day, March 4, 1861, and Mr. Cowan generally sustained Lincoln and his policy from that day until the death of the Great Emancipator. According to custom a new member of the Senate was supposed to stand back and be reserved for a time. Not so with Mr. Cowan. He dashed into debate, particularly on legal questions, in the very first session. As a lawyer he took rank very shortly with such men as Collamer, Browning, Bayard, Hendricks, Trumbull, Fessenden and others.

Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana, Congressman, Senator, Governor and Vice-President, said of him that, "He was a dashing debater; he came into any controversy when it was at its highest and was able to maintain himself against much odds." It was perhaps in the give and take of running debate in the Senate and especially when Mr. Cowan was alone in defending his position, that he was seen at his best. His extensive law practice had sharpened his natural gifts in this direction. His well-known predilection was in favor of the weak and downtrodden, rather than the powerful. In the Senate he raised his strong arm against syndicates, rings and combinations, in their endeavors to secure unfair army and navy contracts and otherwise to benefit themselves at the expense of the government.

EDGAR COWAN

This altruistic spirit prompted him to introduce a resolution which we must notice. The Confederate Army was encamped near the somewhat miasmatic flats south of the Potomac, and was suffering from ague as it was then called. They could not procure quinine, the popular remedy, because all their ports were blockaded by the North. His resolution authorized the Northern Army to send quinine to the suffering Confederates. It raised a furor among the radical Senators who would much rather have sent smallpox to them. Mr. Cowan defended his resolution alone and with great force until Senator Sumner came into the Senate. Sumner was perhaps the ablest man in the Senate and was generally adverse to Mr. Cowan, but he at once took up the contest for the passage of the resolution. Sumner was naturally charitable. It was about as popular a measure as though we had, thirteen years ago, tried to send provisions to the German Army. Mr. Cowan said, "Where is the Northern soldier, brave enough to enlist in defense of a downtrodden race and brave enough to stand up against the leaden hail of Lee's army, who will not share his last ration of hard tack with a sick and starving rebel?" The resolution was passed by the help of Mr. Sumner. Then Mr. Cowan said, "Now I know that the North is sure to conquer the Rebellion."

It was the same principle which induced him to vote against all bills to confiscate the property of the Southern soldiers and leaders. When the war was over he urged that the Confederate States be brought back into the Union as soon as practical. President Lincoln undoubtedly had the same policy of Reconstruction. His talk with Stevens and Tombs at Hampton Roads and his letter to Governor Vance proved this, and when General Lee was about to surrender to General Grant, it is said that Lincoln said to Grant, "In taking the surrender of the army don't rub it in on them." Had Lincoln lived the South would have been much more kindly dealt with than they were; both North and South believe this now. But not so with the leaders of Congress in the Reconstruction days. They liked the South about as well as we liked Germany at the close of or during the World War. In this connection the writer asked Mr. Cowan one day how it came that Lincoln with but little education and still less experience in state matters, could overrule the strongest members of his strong cabinet and go contrary to most of the leading Senators when within a short time the correctness of Lincoln's decision would be demonstrated. He laughed and said, "Ah, Linkie had brains."

EDGAR COWAN

Many of the representative men in Washington were opposed to the President's policy and Cowan probably lost popularity by supporting him. You must remember that Lincoln's conduct of the war was very unpopular in the first three and a half years of his administration and that his reelection in 1864 was somewhat problematical until the people spoke on election day. But in the Reconstruction policy Mr. Cowan was violently opposed to the policy of a large majority of both bodies, and he undoubtedly advocated what he thought were the inherent rights of the South, though it was the unpopular side. On this question he fell out with his party and as a result he was not returned to the Senate at the close of his term. But his six years in office, including the Civil War period and the Reconstruction period, during which he was a power in the Senate, was perhaps the most important six-year period in our history. Almost daily he met in debate one or more of such men as Sumner, Wade, Fessenden, Trumbull, Collamer, Doolittle, McDougal, Sherman, Hale, Hendricks, Chandler, Bayard, Edmunds, etc. He measured swords with these men time and again, and there is simply no reliance to be put in the written opinion of that day, if he did not sustain himself with honor in every contest with the ablest of them. Several prominent writers of a recent date, among them Claude Bowers, in reviewing that period, give Mr. Cowan the highest meed of praise for the stand he took. Public sentiment has long since proved that both Lincoln and Cowan were right in the Reconstruction matter.

A very good description of Mr. Cowan is given by the pleasing poet, scholar, author and traveler, Nathaniel P. Willis, in the "Home Journal," from which we quote:

The drive to Hall's Hill was exceedingly beautiful, like an excursion in early October, but made mainly interesting to me, however, by the company of the elegant Senator who shared our carriage, Mr. Cowan, of Pennsylvania. He is the finest specimen of humanity I have ever seen for brilliancy and learning. . . . Of his powerfully proportioned frame and finely chiseled face, the Senator seemed as naturally unconscious as of his singular readiness and universal erudition. He comes from the western part of Pennsylvania and passed his early life as half boatman, half schoolmaster, and later became a lawyer. His speech on this occasion for the flags, very flowing and fine, has been reported at length in the papers. It was most stirring to watch the faces of the men as they looked on and listened to him. I realized what eloquence might do in the inspiring of pluck for the battle.

EDGAR COWAN

It seems to the writer that after the above, from one of America's greatest poets, not from a politician, further quotations concerning Mr. Cowan and his ability are entirely superfluous. Had we nothing further of him than the above words from such an authority as N. P. Willis, this alone would entitle him to the highest rank among the Pennsylvanians of the past. But from the "Dobbs Family in America," a novel published in 1864 by Maxwell and Company of London, written by Albert Rhodes, on page 197 is found a description of Mr. Cowan as he appeared in the Senate. It is as follows:

That tall, fine looking gentleman, with keen, gray eyes and aquiline nose, is Edgar Cowan, of Pennsylvania. It is generally conceded, even among his enemies, that he is the most talented man who ever came to Congress from that State. He came up from the common people. At an early age he was thrown upon his own resources and by his indomitable will and talents, mounted to his present position. He is the readiest man in this chamber. Although his specialty is law, it would be difficult to name a science with which he is not more or less acquainted. Nothing delights him more than to tackle with men of science who are able to throw the ball with him; then the riches of his well-stored mind are displayed in profusion. Let the subject be what it may, he always touches the bottom. In speaking, as soon as he is fully aroused, his words roll out in well-rounded sentences. His voice is full and deep, and when he chooses to employ it, has more volume than that of any other Senator here. His style in one point, that of classic illustration, is not unlike Senator Sumner's, of Boston. Cowan is practical and argumentative in his speeches, a wrangler by profession, and is as brave as Julius Cæsar. Both Cowan and Sumner are fond of tradition and classic lore and here they meet on common ground.

George Augustus Sala, who was in Washington as war correspondent of the "London Telegraph" during the Civil War and indeed a very great man, wrote of Senator Cowan in the "Telegraph" as "the ablest Shakespearian scholar he ever met in America." Daniel Dougherty, the learned and eloquent Philadelphia lawyer, spoke of him as "the most scholarly and learned man among living Pennsylvanians."

You may think the public utterances of a man of such varied intellectual accomplishments would be beyond understanding of the ordinary hearer. The fact was exactly the opposite. Mr. Cowan was above all things, essentially a trained lawyer, and as such he surpassed himself in everything else in his ability to state the principles of his case and in doing so to adapt his language and reason to the mind

EDGAR COWAN

even of the most unlettered hearer. This power of statement he had in such a marked degree that the hearer could not misunderstand him even if he tried, and therein lay one element of his great strength as a lawyer, both in the bar and in the Senate. As an illustration of his Anglo-Saxon language in his addresses, the following incident is remembered:

In the early '80's he delivered an address about an hour and a half long to a jury composed mostly of farmers. It was one of his best efforts. In the evening one of the jurors, a level-headed, hard-working, rugged-minded man, of but little education, came to the writer and said, "Who was that tall man who talked to us this afternoon?" When told that it was Senator Cowan he surprised the writer by saying, "I suppose he is a very ignorant man except that he seems to know the law pretty well." Not wishing to disabuse his mind too suddenly he was told that Mr. Cowan was generally regarded as rather well educated and asked why he thought him an ignorant man. "Because," said the juror, "he talked all afternoon to us and did not use no big words, and I suppose that being an ignorant man he did not know any to use." The juror explained further that the preachers to whom he listened regularly "were educated men but used so many big words that he knew nothing about and generally got him all mixed up." Mr. Cowan—when told of this—regarded it as one of the very highest compliments which could be paid to a public address.

Mr. Cowan's rural nativity colored his whole life. He loved nature, the singing birds, the wild animals, trees, plants and flowers. He could name all the flowers, plants, shrubs, weeds, etc., and tell of their properties, the origin of their German, Greek and Latin botanical names, the curative value of their roots, if they had any, etc. By nature he was a philosopher and was always trying to discover the reason for the natural phenomena which came under his observation. His examination of law students, particularly when he found the student well posted, generally developed into a delightful talk on something near at hand, a prominent author, a peculiar case, noted events in history, the beauty of literature, etc. It is the general opinion among those who knew him well that above all other gifts of nature Mr. Cowan excelled in conversation and he certainly surpassed in this line, in beauty and clearness of diction, in pungent wit, in fitting illus-

EDGAR COWAN

tration and in his ability to interest his hearers, all men whom the writer has ever met or heard talk. Riding with him one morning to his farm, Mt. Odin, as it is now called, which passed to his son by his death and by the son's last will, is now the property of the city of Greensburg, when we reached the farm we found some boys trying to kill ground squirrels and also engaged in stoning a cat. He called the boys together and explained to them the rights of the squirrel and a cat to a living, saying that they had as a good a right to live as we had and he explained the uses of all animals, of birds, insects, etc., in the great household of nature. Mr. Cowan was a great friend of young people. He liked to talk to them, to draw them and teach them. A business man, whose hair is now turning gray, tells that in his young days when he and other boys would see the Senator walking up street they would approach and follow him for he frequently, accidentally as they thought at the time, dropped his cane and the boy who picked it up first and handed it to him got a dime or a nickel, which was quite a sum among them. The Senator liked to see them struggle for the cane.

One morning he was asked to present before Judge Hunter the case of a poor woman convicted of selling a few glasses of beer without a license. He had had nothing to do with the case when tried, but was speaking for leniency when she came up for sentence. He made a very beautiful and pathetic plea for her, explaining to the court that her husband had been killed in the mines and that she was alone with four children and was selling a few groceries and canned goods, etc., in her endeavor to keep her children together, to clothe them and send them to school. He asked the court to send her home to her children who greatly needed her. Judge Hunter, though he seemed to take kindly to the Senator's suggestions, doubted his right to omit punishment, and said, "This is all very fine, Senator, but have you any decision or Act of Assembly to sustain your position?" "Oh, yes, your Honor, I have," said the Senator, "I will refer you to a judge whose opinions are greater than those of Judge Gibson; whose laws are more enduring than those of Lycurgus, and from whose judgment no one to this day has successfully appealed; a judge who tried cases centuries ago on the lonely shores of Galilee, who, when He had brought before Him a woman charged with an infraction of the law, and who was guilty, too, like this woman, had the courage and kind-

EDGAR COWAN

ness and the good sense to send her forth with the injunction, 'Go thy way and sin no more.'" Judge Hunter had naturally a kind disposition and the woman was not punished.

Most of the instances of Mr. Cowan's wit and repartee are lost to us because the circumstances surrounding them cannot be reproduced, but it may be possible to show you his quick-wittedness. At one time he was defending a physician for malpractice. The evidence for the plaintiff indicated that the defendant was not at best very learned in his profession. At length a physician from the same town came out boldly and unethically and said the defendant's reputation was not good. Mr. Cowan, on cross-examination, said, "Doctor, you say his reputation is not good. Now, what is your reputation as a physician?" The doctor defiantly said, "Ask my patients if you want to know." "Ask your patients," said Mr. Cowan. "Would you have me invade the cemetery and tear from the tombs their silent inmates in order to learn what kind of a physician you are?"

One day a friend of the writer, Mr. Woolf, from Ohio, was visiting here and, as was the custom with strangers, he was taken down to pay his respects to the Senator. After listening to his delightful conversation for a half hour or so, we three walked up street. On the way up Mr. Woolf looking up said, "Senator, how tall are you?" "Six feet four inches and with shoes on a little taller. How tall are you, Mr. Woolf?" "I am five feet ten or eleven inches." "Well," said Mr. Cowan, "that's tall enough. Six feet four inches I have often thought is too tall. I have often been inconvenienced by my height. Five feet ten or eleven inches is abundantly tall enough." And then placing his hand over on the head of the writer, he said, "And Mr. Boucher, four feet is tall enough in a pinch."

One morning a wealthy but avaricious client called and asked Mr. Cowan to draw his will, devising many thousand dollars to different relatives, to churches, etc., some contingent interest and calling for one or two spend-thrift trusts. He asked Mr. Cowan how much he would charge him and Mr. Cowan said \$100.00. The client said, "Oh, I will not pay that much. I can get a will written for \$1.50 or \$2.00 that will suit me." Mr. Cowan said, "Very well, you can do that if you wish, but remember if you have such a will written and I live longer than you, I will make a good deal more than \$100.00 out of your estate." The result was that the man had such a will written,

EDGAR COWAN

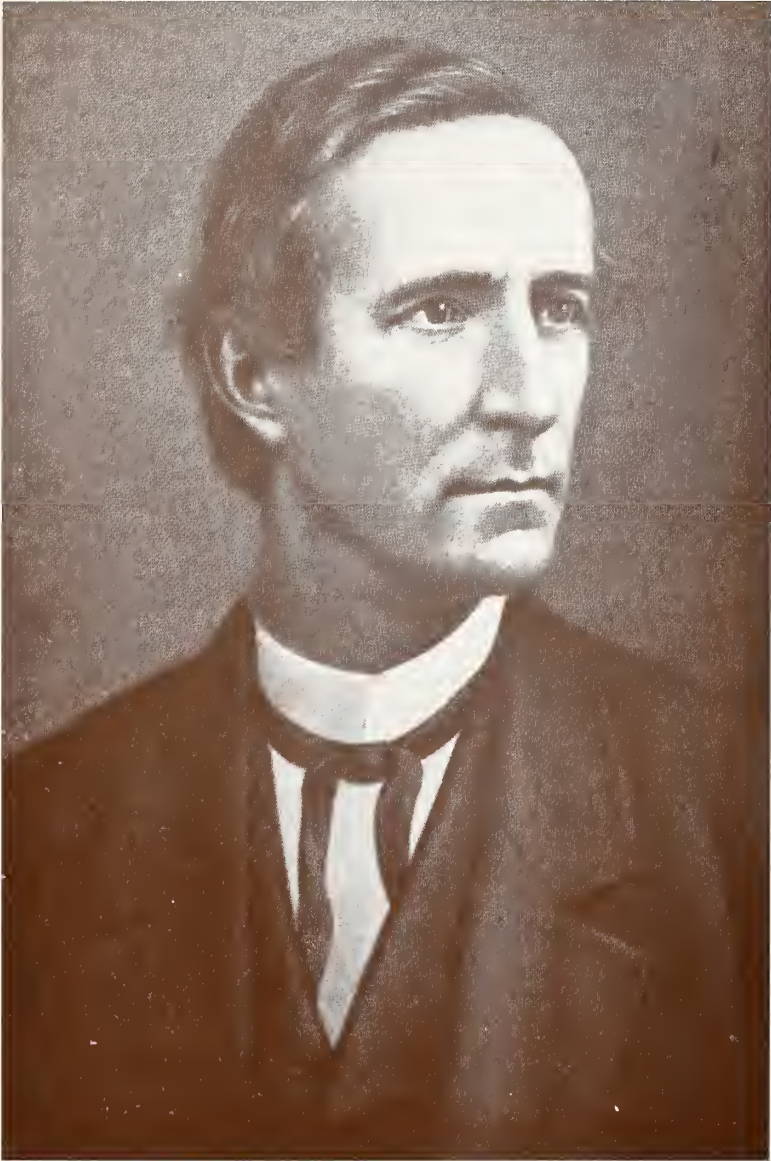
and a long will contest in court followed and Mr. Cowan was attorney to sustain the will and he received nearly \$1,000.00 as a fee.

On one occasion a client was paying him a fee for services rendered which Mr. Cowan said was \$150.00. The client was slow pay and with some dickering induced Mr. Cowan to reduce the fee to \$100.00. Then he wrote a receipt for the \$100.00 and wrote it all in little letters, using no capitals whatever, using the pronoun I as often as he could but with a little i with a dot above it, writing the client's name and signing his own name in the same way. The client looked at the receipt, and in amazement said, "What did you write it without capitals for, Senator?" "Why," said the Senator, "I can't afford to use capital letters when a client beats down my fee as you did." The client for years afterward carried the receipt to show it as a joke.

In his office one day an old boyhood schoolmate came in and asked Mr. Cowan some questions, which he answered promptly. He offered pay but Mr. Cowan declined to accept it. Then the old schoolmate said, "Well, Senator, maybe if I had a chance like you I might have known something, too." "Chance," said Mr. Cowan, "Why you had every chance and I had no chance. You had a rich father and had good clothes and shoes, while I often skated barefooted with you boys who often made fun of my patched pants, etc." Then the old schoolmate said, "Yes, I guess I really had plenty of chance but you had more brains than I had, that was my trouble."

Mr. Cowan's vein of humor prompted him to frequently relieve the monotony of long trials by injecting witticisms. One day Mr. C. C. Griffith, a well-known educator, was called as a character witness. Mr. Cowan did not catch his name and asked him if it was C. G. or E. G. Griffith. The witness answered, "It is neither, it is C. C. I was called after Christopher Columbus." "Well," said Mr. Cowan, "Christopher Columbus, what have you discovered so far in this case?"

One morning he and Mr. Laird were arguing a case before the court, but they were on opposite sides. Mr. Laird was physically afflicted and with difficulty was walking over to the table for books where they were stacked. Mr. Cowan said, "I will hand them to you." Mr. Laird thanked him and at once began to ask for "Eighth Bar," then "First Penrose and Watts," and eight or ten other books, and Mr. Cowan at length turned to the court and jokingly said, "Your Honor, I'd as soon tend a bricklayer as my friend here."



Edgar Cowan

EDGAR COWAN

The renowned Pittsburgh banker, judge and lawyer, the late Thomas Mellon, father of the recent able Secretary of the Treasury and our present Ambassador to Great Britain, was engaged as chief counsel in an important corporation case in Greensburg. In the final argument he followed and was supposed to answer one of Mr. Cowan's most learned addresses. Judge Mellon's introduction to his own address was taken down by the stenographer and was as follows:

"When I first learned that I was to appear in this case I heard that I was to meet here the celebrated Jeremiah S. Black, who is undoubtedly one of the first three or four great lawyers in the United States, and it was with much trepidation that I agreed to undertake it. But when I later learned that it was Edgar Cowan whom I had to meet I was still more frightened for I knew of his ability, his eloquence and his adroitness in the trial of a case. You, gentlemen of the jury, have just heard him and are certainly amazed at the scope and legal learning of his address. He may not have or may not use the poetic temperament of Robert G. Ingersoll, and he may not have the piety of Henry Ward Beecher, but you must agree with me when I say that he has the eloquence of both of these men." Ingersoll and Beecher were the eloquent men of that day, though differing widely in their fields of labor.

When the writer was admitted to the bar a Pittsburgh acquaintance was to be tried with others for conspiracy in trying to induce coal miners in this county to strike. When he came here we employed Mr. Cowan to defend them. Though there were several able attorneys from Pittsburgh and Greensburg on the prosecution side, they were, to say the least, not in Mr. Cowan's class and he was easily able to try the defense side alone. The taking of the testimony required about four days and on Saturday afternoon it was arranged that the arguments should be made on Monday. Saturday evening the writer was with Mr. Cowan reading him a few notes of the testimony which had been taken. A reporter of a newspaper came into the office and asked Mr. Cowan to give him an outline of the address which he would make. The Senator refused this, but the reporter importuning him to give him something, Mr. Cowan said, "Your newspaper has always misrepresented me and I would prefer if you would say nothing about the trial." The reporter insisting further, Mr. Cowan rather pointedly asked him to leave the office. On Monday Mr. Cowan made a very fine address on conspiracy, etc., and

EDGAR COWAN

when we read the reporter's account of it, though the writer had done nothing in the case except take a few pages of testimony, the account praised the opposing attorneys very highly and ended by saying that the defense was conducted by John N. Boucher, assisted by a lawyer named Cowan. Mr. Cowan enjoyed this very much.

Mr. Cowan was extremely ethical in his professional work. A prominent business man told the story that in the panic of '73 he lost heavily and that he owed a widow of Greensburg \$1,000.00 at the time. She importuned him quite frequently and finally said that she wanted the \$1,000.00 to buy a piano for her daughters so that they could learn music. He replied to her that he had given his wife a piano two years before this for which he paid \$1,000.00 and that he felt confident that she would gladly turn the piano over to the woman and that he would ask a reputable piano dealer from whom he had purchased the piano, to estimate its value at retail price and she should give him credit for the amount which Mr. Glunt would say it was worth. This pleased the woman very much, but for some reason she went to her attorney, Mr. Cowan, concerning it. The next morning Mr. Cowan came into his office and said, "Whose piano is this that you are about to sell my client?" In answer he said, "It is a piano which I gave two years ago to my wife. It is her piano." Mr. Cowan said, "You were not indebted at all two years ago, were you?" "No," he answered. Mr. Cowan said, "The law protects a married woman in the ownership of her property and we must obey the law. No client of mine shall, with my consent, take a wife's property to pay her husband's debts. You must pay your own debts and not pay them with your wife's property. The piano belongs to her exclusively." Then the gentleman who told this story, pointed and said, "And there is the same piano; we have had it ever since."

One of the last cases that Mr. Cowan tried was a movement on the part of the West Newton people to have the bridge across the Youghioghny River made a free bridge, he representing the owners of the bridge who regularly collected toll. Quite a number of witnesses who evidently had not been selected by the attorneys on the other side, on cross-examination by Mr. Cowan, admitted that they had a special ax to grind; that a free bridge would be of special advantage to them and he nearly always got a laugh from the audience when he would bring this out, for the law made provision only for the gen-

EDGAR COWAN

eral public and not for particular people. Finally, however, a middle-aged woman with a sharp tongue came on the stand who, on cross-examination, was somewhat opposed to Mr. Cowan and began rather impudently by telling him that he should be ashamed of himself for trying to hold the rotten, old bridge as a toll bridge, and after a few questions she said, "But I'll tell you, Mr. Cowan, I don't live over there, I don't use the bridge, and you can't get any laugh on me." Then he said, "Very well, madam, I don't want to get a laugh on you, all I want is for you to tell the court and jury the true situation." She replied, "Well, I'll tell you one thing, which the directors of the bridge do which is very wrong." "What is that?" asked the Senator. "Well, they charge me when I cross the bridge to go to camp meeting and that is not right." Mr. Cowan said, "No madam, that is indeed wrong. I shall certainly reprove the directors for that. There must be no barrier whatever erected between the sinner and the place of salvation."

When he returned from Washington he resumed the practice of the law, and was soon busy in court. For the next fifteen years he appeared in nearly all of the important trials of that day and often in important cases in Pittsburgh. In the early 'eighties, however, his eyesight failed and he retired gradually from the duties of his profession. This he did joyfully for his life had been a success; he had triumphed over difficulties which would have overwhelmed most young men; he had gathered the brightest laurels both in the bar and in the Senate, and he was looking forward to a few years of ease and comfort, which a life of unusual industry had warranted and made possible. He spent his days mostly in having someone to read to him; in looking after his somewhat extensive property and in social engagements becoming an elderly gentleman of his disposition and attainments. Occasionally he assisted in trials when he could see neither a witness nor juror, and frequently made the final argument. Without notes he could quote the testimony unerringly and could apparently talk as eloquently and forcefully as ever. He also made a few public addresses and they were as fresh, as witty and interesting as though they were the product of a young man in the heyday of life. Late in 1884, however, he contracted a malignant mouth and throat ailment. It increased rapidly and was attended with excruciating pain. Gradually he wasted away and on August 28, 1885, his last battle was

EDGAR COWAN

fought, his race was won, his eyes were closed and his eloquent tongue was still in death.

This brief sketch of Mr. Cowan may remind us of his eloquence, of his prominence as a lawyer, or of his "singular readiness and universal erudition," as the great poet has written of him. But it is hoped that rather than these qualities the reader will remember his altruism; his natural predilection to favor the weak instead of the strong; his fearlessness in all national controversies, regardless of the outcome; his advocacy of what were, as he thought, the inherent rights of the unfortunate, taking the unpopular side of the controversy, which side could only lead to his temporary injury. That it will remind the reader of his innate industry and integrity, which, with his natural gifts, made him a power in his profession and in the United States Senate, and the peer of any man in that most cultured legislative body of modern times.



Devenpeck, Schermerhorn and Allied Families

BY E. D. CLEMENTS, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



THE name Devenpeck is found in early records under the forms Dovepach, Douvebag, Duyvebach, Dauvenbach, Triespach, Duivenbach, Dovebach, and Divenbagh. The form Dorebach is probably a typographical error in which copyist or editor has mistaken "v" for "r."

The earliest mention of the name in New York State (found in this search) is in New York City in 1735. Two marriages are recorded in the records of the Reformed Church there. Leonard Wieland from Germany married, February 19, 1749, Susannah "Dourebag," of New York, and Martin Everts married, January 26, 1749, Elizabeth "Douvebag." In the baptismal records of the church the following baptisms are found of children of Johannes Devenpeck (spelled Douvepach, Douvebag and Dorebach) and Christina Herder: 1. Geertje, baptized October 19, 1735; sponsors were Michael Christoffel Rouw and Martje Cornelius. 2. Christina, baptized February 25, 1739; sponsors were Christiaan Houber and Coenradina Mandebach, wife of Johannes Snock. 3. Andries, baptized October 7, 1744; sponsors were Andries Refver and Maria Holder.

("Records, Reformed Church, New York City," in "Collections of New York Genealogical and Biographical Society," Vol. III, pp. 46, 70, 112.)

I. Christian Devenpeck appears in the records of the Reformed Church at Albany in 1764. Since Christina is a feminine form of Christian and the name Christiaan Houber is mentioned as a sponsor to the baptism of one of the children of Johannes Devenpeck, it is probable that Christian Devenpeck was a close relative of Johannes and may have been his son. This probability is increased by the fact that the eldest son of Christian Devenpeck was named Johannes. Christian Devenpeck (name here spelled Dovebach) married Cathalyne DeFreert. Children: 1. Johannes, of whom further.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

2. Rebecca, baptized January 25, 1767. 3. Abraham, baptized February 24, 1769; resided for a time at Niskayuna, Schenectady County; leased lot seventy, containing one hundred and twenty acres, at Berne, Albany County, of Stephen Van Rensselaer in 1795, and sold the lease May 27, 1819, to Michael Lee; at the time of the sale he was residing in the town of Florida, Montgomery County, New York; married, at Boght, June 22, 1793, Mary Flinn, who died July 11, 1832, at the age of sixty-seven years, and is buried in the Remson Bush Cemetery near Minaville, town of Florida; children, baptized at Niskayuna: i. Christian, born March 16, 1794, died September 20, 1834; married and had children: a. Mary Ann, born January 26, 1819, baptized at Florida. b. Sally Ann, born July 26, 1820, baptized at Berne. c. Abraham, born October 13, 1828, died August 24, 1830, and was buried at Minaville. ii. Caty, born February 2, 1796. iii. Catalyna, born April 17, 1798. iv. Johannes, born February 21, 1800; married, November 22, 1827, Tina Devenpeck, daughter of J. Devenpeck (probably his uncle Johannes Devenpeck); children, baptized at Florida: a. Alonzo, born December 20, 1829. b. Elias Hayward, born January 25, 1834. v. Elizabeth (probably) married, at Niskayuna, March 17, 1831, Elias Hayward, and was dismissed from the Reformed Church, Niskayuna, to the Congregational Church, Braintree, Massachusetts, March 24, 1832; had a child, Susan Elizabeth, born June 3, 1832, baptized at Niskayuna.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany." "Van Rensselaer Ledger Manuscripts," in New York State Library. "Albany County Deeds," Vol. CCCLXIX, p. 279. "Records, Reformed Churches, Boght, Niskayuna, Florida, Schenectady, and Berne." E. H. Becker: "Montgomery County Cemetery Inscriptions," in "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. LVII, pp. 191, 194.)

II. *Johannes Devenpeck*, son of Christian and Cathalya (De Freert) Devenpeck, was born August 12, 1764, died November 4, 1837, and is buried in the Remson Bush Cemetery near Minaville in that town. He was baptized at the Reformed Church, Albany, New York, September 16, 1764, the sponsors being Archelus and Catherina Devenpeck. He removed to Niskayuna, and from there to Florida, Montgomery County.

Johannes Devenpeck married, February 23, 1790, Susanna Bassett (Bassett IV), this event being recorded at Schenectady. Chil-

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

dren, baptized at Niskayuna: i. Christian, born February 20, 1791. 2. Michael Bassett, of whom further. 3. Rebecca, born January 29, 1795; married John Staley; children, baptized at Florida: i. Garret, born September 21, 1822. ii. Theodore Romeyn, born April 24, 1823. iii. Winslow, born December 26, 1831. 4. Cornelius, born November 4, 1798, baptized at Niskayuna, died in 1874; married, at Florida, March 11, 1824, Margaret Van Wurmer, who died in 1874; both buried at Glen, Montgomery County; children: i. Elizabeth Ann, born January 30, 1825, died March 10, 1882, buried in Baptist Churchyard, Charleston, New York; married, at Glen, January 13, 1848, Adam D. Frank. ii. Child. iii. Isaac Van Wurmer, born January 7, 1830. iv. Mary, born September 7, 1833. v. Winslow, born April 17, 1837; married, at Charleston, Montgomery County, September 20, 1859, Harriet E. Smith; had a child, Flora V, born August 13, 1860, died September 17, 1860. 5. Abraham, born October 17, 1808. 6. Garret, born February 6, 1810. 7. Sarah, born March 4, 1813. 8. Nicholas Bassett, died May 2, 1893, buried at Riders Corners, Glen, Montgomery County, New York; married, at Florida, December 5, 1832, Hannah DeFreert, who died May 6, 1879, and is also buried at Riders Corners; children: i. Mary Jane, born in 1833, died in 1901; married, at Charleston, June 19, 1860, George L. Fers. ii. Mary Elizabeth, born October 18, 1843, died June 16, 1892, buried at Riders Corners. iii. Reuben B., baptized at Glen; married, at Charleston, September 24, 1857; had a child, Annie E., who died October 11, 1878, at the age of eighteen years, five months; buried at Glen.

(“Records, Reformed Church, Albany,” in “Holland Society Year Book,” Vol. XX, p. 102. “Records, Reformed Churches, Schenectady, Niskayuna, Florida, Glen.” J. Pearson: “First Settlers of Albany.” “Montgomery County Cemetery Inscriptions” in “New York Genealogical and Biographical Record,” Vol. LVII, p. 191; Vol. LX, p. 288. Herrick: “Marriage Records, Charleston, Montgomery County, Manuscript,” in New York State Library.)

III. Michael Bassett Devenpeck, son of Johannes and Susanna (Bassett) Devenpeck, was born March 11, 1793, and baptized at Niskayuna. He married Anne Hubbs. Children, baptized at Florida: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Charles, born April 21, 1823.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

3. Gitty Maria, born June 28, 1825. 4. Jeremiah Hubbs, born October 19, 1827.

("Records, Reformed Churches, Florida, Niskayuna.")

IV. John Devenpeck, son of Michael Bassett and Anne (Hubbs) Devenpeck, was born January 17, 1821, and was baptized at Florida, New York. He died July 14, 1881, and is buried in the Albany Rural Cemetery. About 1850 he removed to Watervliet, Albany County, New York, and in 1854 is mentioned in the "Troy Directory." In 1857 he is listed as a cabinetmaker. For many years he was a furniture dealer, his store being located at No. 187 Broadway, and his home on Washington Street. He later engaged in a car manufacturing enterprise at Schenectady. He married, at Niskayuna, November 10, 1847, Leah Witbeck. (Witbeck VI.) Child: 1. Lucas Witbeck, of whom further.

("Records of Reformed Church, Florida, New York." "Troy Times," July 16, 1882.)

V. Lucas Witbeck Devenpeck, son of John and Leah (Witbeck) Devenpeck, was born in West Troy (now Watervliet), New York, September 8, 1857. He received his early education at the old Trinity Parish School of West Troy, and the First Ward Public School in Troy. Later he attended the Union Classical Institute, in Schenectady. While still a student, his father died, leaving some monetary obligations which the young man decided to meet. Immediate employment was necessary, as well as strict economy of living. Determined to carry out his plans, Mr. Devenpeck started his business career as a clerk in the hardware house of Witbeck and Cunningham, one of the old reliable business houses of Schenectady.

After several years with this organization, in the course of which he discharged his father's obligations, he became associated with the Wagner Sleeping Car Company as a conductor, and so began his long and useful career in the railway industry. For five years he served in that same capacity, and then was made superintendent of the Wagner Palace Car Company by W. Seward Webb, with headquarters at Montreal, Province of Quebec, Canada.

When the New York Central Railroad, by lease, acquired control of the West Shore, Mr. Devenpeck was transferred to New York City and made superintendent of the Wagner Sleeping Car service of



Arthur Tappan & Sons

100 Broadway, N.Y.C.

L W Devenport

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the West Shore branch of the New York Central lines. In 1890, Mr. Devenpeck settled in Chicago, Illinois, where he became superintendent of the Wagner Sleeping Car Company's service on the Lake Shore, the Chicago and Grand Trunk, and the Chicago and Wabash railroads, with headquarters at the Rock Island and Polk Street Station.

At a later time Mr. Devenpeck resigned his position there to accept a post with the West Shore Railroad. In 1892, he settled permanently in Schenectady, where he formed a partnership with James H. Barhyte, under the firm name of Barhyte and Devenpeck, coal dealers. The business, which until that time had been poorly handled, was in anything but a prosperous condition, and several of Mr. Devenpeck's friends thought he had made a great mistake. Nevertheless, under his careful supervision, the firm was put on a sound financial basis, and each year showed substantial gains in profits. Mr. Barhyte died in 1905, and Mr. Devenpeck purchased the interest that had previously belonged to his partner. From that time forward, he continued independently in business, until, in 1911, the enterprise was incorporated and merged into the Devenpeck Coal Company. The members of the newly-incorporated firm were: Mr. Devenpeck himself, the late James Thompson, and Edward B. Ashton, of Saratoga Springs, New York.

Along with his activities in the commercial world, Mr. Devenpeck was keenly interested in civic, social and political life. He was a member of the Benevolent and Protective Order of Elks, as well as vice-president of the Ingersoll Memorial Home for Aged Men, in Schenectady. His political allegiance he originally gave to the Democratic party, although in later years he turned his support to the Republican standard. His religious affiliation was with the First Reformed Church. Into all his work and the many affairs of life with which he was concerned, he ever put his fullest measure of energy and enthusiasm, with the result that he was esteemed and admired among all whose privilege it was to know him, and was able to perform useful work in many fields of endeavor.

Lucas Witbeck Devenpeck married, December 28, 1885, Cornelia Schermerhorn Bond (Bond IV), a woman of charming personality and cultural attainments. In social life, she has for years been a leader in Schenectady. She, too, possesses a large measure of enthus-

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

iasm and a strong executive ability, and is a collector of old and valuable relics. The Devenpeck home in Union Street, Schenectady, is filled with rare old mahogany furniture that is both antique and useful. Here Mr. and Mrs. Devenpeck spent the summer months, going in the fall to milder southern climates. In the later years of their happy married life, Mr. and Mrs. Devenpeck devoted much time to travel; and not long before his death, which occurred on May 23, 1924, they had returned from a winter in St. Petersburg, Florida.

The passing of Mr. Devenpeck was a cause of widespread and sincere sorrow, for he had contributed to the well-being of his fellowmen, and performed labors that had redounded to their lasting good. He was a man of culture, fond of studying not only the ways of men familiar to him, but also the habits and traditions of foreign lands and peoples and the culture of other nations. A man of distinct individuality, frank in his expressions of opinion regarding men and their thoughts and deeds, generous in spirit in all his human relationships, he made friends easily and valued them at their true worth. Never demonstrative in his feelings toward others, he was none the less cheerful, kindly and unselfish. In all things, it has been said of him, he stood "four square to every wind that blows." His memory will live on in future years, a source of joy and inspiration to those who knew him and of encouragement to them in their lives and their work.

(Family data.)

(The Bond Line)

Arms—Argent, on a chevron sable three bezants.

Crest—A demi-pegasus azure, winged and semée of estoiles or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

The patronymic Bond is a very old one. On referring to the Domesday Book it will be found that numerous estates in England were held by families of the name of Bond in the time of Edward the Confessor, and through later years down to the formation of the survey by William the Conqueror. They held estates in the counties of Cornwall, Dorset, Essex, Kent, Hants, Berks, Berford, Suffolk, Gloucester, Northampton, and York.

There is a tradition that three brothers of the name of Bond first came to this country a little previous to 1650. One of them, Thomas, settled in Virginia or Maryland, another, John, in Newbury, Massachusetts, and William, in Watertown.



THE L. W. DEVENPECK RESIDENCE
SCHENECTADY, N. Y.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

So far, research has not revealed the name of the progenitor of our Bond line, or whence he came.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames."
Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

I. Richard Bond, the first known of the Bond line herewith, was a soldier in the Revolution, serving in the Second Regiment, Albany County militia, under Colonel Abraham Wemple. In the 1790 census he was recorded as residing at Duanesburgh with a family consisting of one male over sixteen (himself), two males under sixteen, and one female (his wife). His will, dated May 1, 1828, was recorded September 26, 1831. In it he mentioned his wife, Angelica, daughter Elizabeth, wife of Abraham Bice, two sons, Daniel and Richard, and three grandsons, "Richard, son of my son Richard, Richard, son of Daniel, and Richard, son of my daughter Elizabeth."

Richard Bond married Angelica (Engeltje) Van Antwerpen, daughter of Johannes Van Antwerpen. Children: 1. Richard (2), of whom further. 2. Elizabeth, born December 8, 1792; baptized at the Reformed Church, Schenectady; married Abraham Bice. 3. Daniel, resided at Princeton in 1831.

(Roberts: "New York in the Revolution," Vol. I, p. 98. "Schenectady Surrogates' Records, Wills," Vol. C, p. 106, Box 18. "Records of Reformed Church, Schenectady.")

II. Richard (2) Bond, son of Richard and Angelica (Van Antwerpen) Bond, was born July 9, 1787, and was baptized at the Reformed Church, Schenectady. Joseph and Margarietje Bragham were witnesses. He resided at Rotterdam, Schenectady County, where he died, December 20, 1843. The children named below were cited as heirs.

Richard Bond married, in Schenectady, December 31, 1811, Lydia Wasson, daughter of Thomas and Helen (Bradshaw) Wasson. (Bradshaw III.) Children: 1. Thomas, born November 16, 1816; will dated August 23, 1847, and recorded May 18, 1851; the estate was given to his three brothers: Richard R., John, and James W. Bond, and his mother, Lydia; resided at Rotterdam, New York. 2. Angelica, resided at Rotterdam, New York; will dated October 10, 1859, and recorded February 29, 1860; married Mr. Kettle. 3. Ellen, named in her father's will as wife of Henry Kettle; named in

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

her sister Angelica (Bond) Kettle's will as Ellen Kilmartin; will of John Kilmartin dated March 18, 1874, and recorded September 20, 1886, mentioned wife Ellen. 4. Richard R., of whom further. 5. John, resided in Schenectady. 6. James William, a minor in 1843; married Caroline. 7. Dorothy; married Jacob S. Schermerhorn. (First Schermerhorn Line VI—child 4.) 8. Nancy, born in 1834, died April 6, 1896; married James Babcock. 9. Elizabeth; married, June 20, 1857, Jacob Bond, of Rotterdam.

("Records of Reformed Church, Schenectady." "Schenectady Surrogate Records," Box 32; "Wills," Vol. G, p. 82, Box 19; "Wills," Vol. H, p. 63; Vol. L, p. 524, Box 278. "Inscriptions, Cobblestone Churchyard, Rotterdam, New York." Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," p. 119. "Records of Reformed Church, Glen.")

III. Richard R. Bond, son of Richard (2) and Lydia (Wasson) Bond, was born September 20, 1821, and died March 27, 1868. He and his wife are buried in the cemetery of the Reformed Church at Rotterdam, known as the Cobblestone Church. Richard R. Bond married Eliza C. Schermerhorn. (First Schermerhorn Line VII.) Child: 1. Cornelia Schermerhorn, of whom further.

(Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," p. 119. "Schenectady Surrogate Records," Box 57.)

IV. Cornelia Schermerhorn Bond, daughter of Richard R. and Eliza C. (Schermerhorn) Bond, married Lucas Witbeck Devenpeck. (Devenpeck V.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Schermerhorn Line—Line One)

Arms—Argent, on a mount vert an oak tree proper, at foot of tree a mole sable. Helmet crowned.

Crest—The tree.

Motto—*Industria semper crescam.*

(Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy." Rietstap: "Armorial Général.")

Schermerhorn was adopted as a surname from the village of Schermerhorn in the northern part of the province of North Friesland in the Netherlands. It is a compound of three words, namely, *Scher*, meaning "clear or pure," *mer*, meaning "lake," and *hooren*, a "point or cape of land." The village was a prosperous trading center in the early seventeenth century, and once numbered the captains of twenty-five large coasting vessels among its inhabitants.



Schermerhorn

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Information regarding the ancestry of Jacob Janse Schermerhorn, founder of the American family, is quite fragmentary. It is known that his father, Jan Schermerhorn, was living in Amsterdam, Holland, in 1654. As late as 1884, a tombstone set in the floor of the old church at the village of Schermerhorn recorded the fact that Jacob Ryer Schermerhorn died January 25, 1645, and that his wife died in 1665. Both Jacob and Ryer are names found frequently in the American family, and the stone is probably that of Jacob Janse Schermerhorn's grandparents. There are still Schermerhorns residing in Holland.

As a family they are characterized by their stern inflexibility of character, perseverance, sturdy courage, combined with a natural generosity, hospitality and kindness.

(Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," pp. 9-11, 42-44.)

I. Jacob Janse Schermerhorn, son of Jan Schermerhorn, was born in Holland, in 1622, and died in Schenectady, New York, in 1688. His place of birth is not definitely known, although a certain document refers to him as "formerly a citizen of Waterland, Holland." It is quite likely that he was among the colonists who sailed from Holland on the ship "Rensselaerswyck," October 8, 1636, and it is thought that he was one of the young men or boys who came over with Albert Andriesz Bratt to assist in the building of a mill at Rensselaerswyck.

Having engaged in various business enterprises, including that of carpenter and copyist, by the time he became of age, he had gathered together sufficient capital to embark in an enterprise of his own. As the fur trade was of utmost importance in Albany, where he had located, during that early period, he followed this vocation. In 1649, he was described as an importer and was in possession of considerable property. His partner, Jacob Ryntgens, resided in New Amsterdam (now New York) and secretly purchased firearms from the West India Company, which were delivered to Schermerhorn in Albany, and in turn sold to the Indians. The Indians demanded firearms or liquor in trade and it was necessary to deal in these articles to carry on business. Governor Stuyvesant, although claiming the right to conduct the same type of business, desired to restrict it to himself, and claiming that Schermerhorn and Tyntgens were guilty of a felony,

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

he sentenced them to banishment and the confiscation of all their goods on July 9, 1648. The "Nine Men" and other influential colonists interposed and secured the remission of the sentence of banishment. The action of Stuyvesant formed one of the grounds for the remonstrance against his administration addressed to the States General, July 28, 1649. Schermerhorn and Tyntgens both plunged into active business and soon recovered their fortune. Tyntgens was later made one of the directors of the West India Company, and Schermerhorn was a magistrate at Fort Orange, now Albany, in 1652, 1654, 1656, 1657, 1664, 1671, 1672, 1674, and 1675. There were three magistrates and the office was one of the most important in the Colony. He was a member of the consistory of the Reformed Dutch Church of that city, and in 1666 kept its records. From 1665 to 1686, he was one of the committee to audit the church accounts. He made at least two trips to Holland, the first being in 1654, when he acted as attorney for some of his Albany friends. In 1668, he made a second trip and loaded the ship "King Charles" with goods for the return voyage. On account of the prohibition of the sailing of more than one ship yearly to the colony, he had to petition for permission to sail, which was granted in this case.

The records show that he frequently gave bond for various people in the colony, but while always ready to help his friends, he was not easily trifled with and frequently brought suits for trespass and money due. He was a large property owner. What his possessions were prior to the confiscation of his property is not known, but in 1653 he received patents for land in Albany. They may have been for the land described under his name, one mentioned in 1664 as located on the east side of North Pearl Street, between Maiden Lane and State Street, the other in 1676, on the north side of Pearl and Chapel. He removed to Schenectady, but the date is not known. At least, he must have been a resident in 1673, during which year his wife was called to give court testimony concerning a certain happening in Schenectady. His will, dated May 20, 1688, mentions a farm at Schodack, which was willed to his son, Jacob, and remained in the possession of his descendants for nearly two hundred years. The estate of Jacob Janse Schermerhorn was valued at 56,882 guilders, or \$23,000, including money in Holland. After his wife's death in 1700, it was divided equally among the children.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Jacob Janse Schermerhorn married, in New York City, February 20, 1650, Jannetie (Van) Egmont, or Van Voorhout, daughter of Cornelius Segertse Van Egmont, or Van Voorhout, who came to America from Voorhout, Holland, in September, 1643, with his wife, Brechje Jacobsen, and located at Albany, New York. Some of his descendants adopted the name Egmont, while others have used that of Segers. Attempts, so far unsuccessful, have been made to connect this family with the Counts of Egmont, the most prominent of whom was Lamoral, Count of Egmont, who was one of the leaders in the Dutch resistance to Philip II, and whose execution was a prelude to the revolt of the Netherlands. Children: 1. Ryer Jacobse, of whom further. 2. Simon, born in Albany, New York, in 1658, died in New York City, in 1696; carried the news of the Schenectady massacre to Albany; removed to New York City and became the founder of that branch of the family; married, about 1683, Willempie Viele, daughter of Arnout Cornelise Viele. 3. Helena, born about 1660; married, about 1684, Myndert Harmense Van der Bogart, son of Harmen Myndertse and Gillisje Claese (Schouw) Van der Bogart. 4. Jacob. (See Second Schermerhorn Line.) 5. Machtelt, born about 1663; married, about 1683, Johannes Martense Beekman, son of Marten and Susanna (Jans) Beekman. 6. Cornelius. (See Third Schermerhorn Line.) 7. Jannetie, born about 1672; married, July 28, 1695, in New York, Caspar Springsteen. 8. Neeltje, born about 1674; married, in Albany, September 30, 1700, Barent Ten Eyck. 9. Lucas, born about 1676; removed to New Jersey; married Elizabeth Damen, baptized September 20, 1676, daughter of Jan Cornelius Damen.

(*Ibid.*, 27-35, 53, 152-53, 391-92.)

II. Ryer Jacobse Schermerhorn, son of Jacob Janse and Jannetie (Egmond) Schermerhorn, was baptized in New York City, June 23, 1652, and died February 19, 1719. According to family tradition he was sent to Holland as a youth at the solicitations of two maiden aunts. Each wished to have him live with her and to make him her heir. The result was so much jealousy and unkind feeling that he left without notice and, going to London, learned the shoemaker's trade. For a long time he was given up as lost, but a sea captain who had been a good friend of his father discovered him and induced him to return to America.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

After his father's death, Ryer J. Schermerhorn, as the eldest son, became the head of the family, and a leading figure in the community as his father had been before him. On October 6, 1690, he was commissioned by Jacob Leisler, as justice of the peace of Albany County and evidently served in this office until 1699. He was appointed assistant judge of the Court of Common Pleas in Albany, on May 1, 1700. That he was trusted and recognized as a man of affairs by the colony officials is indicated through the considerable amount of business intrusted to him, shown by the warrants issued to him from time to time for services rendered, such as, October 4, 1698, for military transportation; November 1, 1699, furnishing candles and firewood to the garrison at Schenectady; September 9, 1700, for public transportation; August 8, 1700, for freight and provisions delivered to sachems of the Five Nations at Albany; May 7, 1702, for repairing the fort at Schenectady; April 14, 1702, for firewood to the Schenectady garrison.

The prominence of Ryer J. Schermerhorn's position in the early affairs of Schenectady was due in part to the legal authority vested in him as one of the original patentees of the Schenectady Patent. This patent, which had been confirmed by the Governor on November 1, 1684, named five as patentees. Three of these were killed in the Schenectady massacre of 1689. The fourth patentee, an aged man, then residing in Albany, took little interest in the patent, and in 1692 removed to New York, where he died in 1700. Thus Ryer J. Schermerhorn was left in entire control of affairs, almost from the beginning. The people objected to being under the rule of one man, and although other patents were granted, Ryer J. Schermerhorn firmly stood his ground and continued conducting affairs as he had done previously. The contest continued on not only to his son, Jan, but even to his grandson, another Ryer Schermerhorn who, in turn, willed it to his heirs.

In addition to his being sole trustee of the Schenectady Patent (including about 80,000 acres), he was a large individual property owner. Among his lands were: a forty-acre tract on the easterly half of the Seventh Flat on the north side of the Mohawk River; a lot on the east corner of State and Church streets, Schenectady; a lot on the north side of State Street; another lot on State Street; an eight-acre lot on the south side of State Street, near the Coehorne Kill; a lot on

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the west corner of Union and State streets; a tract of land in Bergen County, New Jersey, purchased February 6, 1701-02, and Bouwery number 4, which contained twenty-six morgens, or fifty-two acres, and which later became known as Schermerhorn's Mills. The mills had been in existence since the early eighteenth century, but were burned in July, 1898.

In September, 1698, Ryer J. Schermerhorn, along with one other man, representing the city and county of Albany, protested against a tract of land which had been granted to five men. This land had been occupied by friendly Indians and this grant would lead them "to desert this Province and fly to the French." The Governor commissioned (commission dated May 19, 1699) Ryer J. Schermerhorn and the mayor of Albany to visit the Indians and to arrange to convey back to them the land which had been taken away. The journey to the Mohawks must have been satisfactorily concluded, for the Governor stated in a letter to the "Lords of Trade," dated January 16, 1701, that Schermerhorn was a "very sensible man and has managed to bargain with the Mohawks very skilfully."

During this same period Ryer J. Schermerhorn was again called upon by the New Amsterdam officials to render them service, and made a contract to deliver lumber for supplying masts for English ships. The project was successfully terminated (warrant for bringing ships timber from Albany, dated June 16, 1702), although some time must have elapsed between its institution and conclusion, as it was not until September 8, 1702, that an order appears for Samuel Blackman of the Jersey man-of-war, and Beverly Latham, for the valuation of Ryer Schermerhorn's ship timber.

He was a leading member of the Reformed Church of Schenectady, being foremost in the matter of building a new church there in 1701, serving it as deacon from 1701 to 1704, elder from 1705 to 1713, and with Johannes Teller, managed church finances during the period when there was no pastor. His will was dated April 5, 1717, and proved April 9, 1726. It is filed in the Surrogate's Court, New York City.

Ryer Jacobse Schermerhorn married, in July, 1676, Ariaantje Arentse (Brat) Otten, widow of Helmer Otten. (Brat III.) Children: 1. Jannetje; married, in Albany, New York, August 6, 1698, Volkert Symonse Veeder. 2. Catalina, died about 1708; married, in

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Schenectady, June 15, 1701, Johannes Wemple. 3. Jan, baptized in Albany, October 14, 1685, died in 1752; inherited the Schermerhorn homestead at Schuylenburgh; acquired from his brothers, Jacob and Arent, an extensive property in the "Raritans," New Jersey; married, April 28, 1711, Engeltie Vrooman, baptized December 22, 1695, died in 1754, daughter of Jan Hendrickse and Giesie (Veeder) Vrooman. 4. Jacob, of whom further. 5. Arent, baptized in Albany, January 1, 1693, died July 14, 1757; inherited from his father "the easterly half of the second Flatt," on the north side of the Mohawk River, where is now the present town of Glenville, New York; his name appears in Captain Harmon Van Slyck's Company of Schenectady Militia in 1715; married, in Albany, April 16, 1714, Antie Fonda, baptized February 2, 1690, daughter of Douw Jillese and Rebecca Fonda.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 56-66, 69, 70-71-72-73.)

III. Jacob Schermerhorn, son of Ryer Jacobse and Ariaantje Arentse (Brat-Otten) Schermerhorn, died July 4, 1753. He settled on the Schenectady Flatts in the town of Rotterdam, New York, on an estate inherited from his father. His name appears on the roll of Captain John Sanders Glen's company of Schenectady in 1715. He attended the First Reformed Church of Schenectady, and occupied Bench No. 6 as early as 1734. He was an elder of the church in 1746.

Jacob Schermerhorn married, in Albany, New York, November 20, 1712, Margarita Teller, baptized February 19, 1693, died May 22, 1741, daughter of John and Susanna (Wendel) Teller. Children, baptized in Schenectady: 1. Ryer, baptized February 28, 1714, died young. 2. Johannes, baptized June 22, 1717; married (first), in Schenectady, December 14, 1744, Maghdalene Bradt, baptized in Schenectady, May 28, 1716, daughter of Captain Arent and Jannetje (Vrooman) Bradt; (second), in Schenectady, August 2, 1765, Sarah Teller (Sally Taylor, widow). 3. Jacobus, baptized January 31, 1720, died July 28, 1782; resided in Rotterdam, New York; married, in Schenectady, September 4, 1762, Annatie P. Vrooman, born July 24, 1726, died September 7, 1770, daughter of Pieter and Agnietje (Vedder) Vrooman. 4. William. (See Fourth Schermerhorn Line.) 5. Arent, baptized April 10, 1725; private in Captain Nicholas Groot's company of Schenectady Militia, May 19, 1767;

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

married (first), in Schenectady, November 9, 1751, Jacomyntje Van Guysling, daughter of Myndert and Suster (Viele) Van Guysling; married (second), in Schenectady, November 9, 1786, Annatie Delle-mont Teller, a widow, born in 1737, died February 19, 1823, aged eighty-six years, three months, thirteen days. 6. Andries, born July 1, 1727, died May 22, 1741. 7. Simon, of whom further. 8. Susanna, born December 5, 1735; married, in Schenectady, July 27, 1759, Captain John Visscher.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 72, 81-82-83.)

IV. Simon Schermerhorn, son of Jacob and Margarita (Teller) Schermerhorn, was born September 19, 1730, baptized in Schenectady, New York, and died January 13, 1793. He resided on the Schenectady Flatts, upon the hindermost lot of the "Bouwland," originally patented to William Teller, probably inherited from his mother, who was a daughter of Johannes Teller. The brick house built on this lot was occupied as late as 1872 by his grandson, Simon J. Schermerhorn. In the census of 1790, the family of Simon Schermerhorn is listed as follows:

Simon J. Schermerhorn—Residence, Schenectady, south of the Mohawk; 2 males over 16 (inc. father); 8 slaves.

Simon Schermerhorn married (marriage license, January 27, 1773) Sarah Vrooman, baptized June 28, 1741, died September 16, 1795, aged fifty-four years, three months, fifteen days, daughter of Pieter and Agnietje (Vedder) Vrooman. Children: 1. Jacob S., of whom further. 2. Sarah, born in September, 1775; married, April 4, 1796, Barent Roseboom, of Canajoharie, son of John and Susanna (Veeder) Roseboom.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 83, 84.)

V. Jacob S. Schermerhorn, son of Simon and Sarah (Vrooman) Schermerhorn, was born December 30, 1773, baptized in Schenectady, and died in 1814. His name appears as ensign, March 26, 1794, in Lieutenant-Colonel John Mynderse's regiment of Albany County Militia, of Schenectady. In 1794, he was lieutenant in Colonel Jacob Hochstrasser's regiment, and in 1800 was captain in Lieutenant-Colonel John Wendell's regiment.

Jacob S. Schermerhorn married Engeltie Bradt, born February

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

21, 1775, died November 27, 1843, daughter of Jacob and Elizabeth (Dellamont) Bradt. Children: 1. Simon, of whom further. 2. Jacobus Bradt, born September 16, 1799, died young. 3. Jacobus (James) Bradt, born April 5, 1801, died July 16, 1842; married, in Schenectady, December 20, 1827, Catharina Schermerhorn, daughter of Bartholomew and Annetje (Teller) Schermerhorn. 4. Daniel David Campbell, born March 10, 1803, baptized in Schenectady, died November 1, 1891; married Julia Sitterley. 5. John J. A., born June 13, 1806, baptized in Schenectady; married, in Rotterdam, October 17, 1838, Martha J. Ayres. 6. Elizabeth, born January 15, 1809, baptized in Schenectady; died young. 7. Sarah Maria, born September 10, 1810, baptized in Schenectady.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 101, 119-20.)

VI. Simon Schermerhorn, son of Jacob S. and Engeltie (Bradt) Schermerhorn, was born October 14, 1797, baptized in Schenectady, New York, and died in 1873. He was supervisor at Rotterdam, New York, in 1828, 1830, 1831, 1839. In 1818, he was ensign of the 57th Regiment, New York Militia.

Simon Schermerhorn married Cornelia Schermerhorn. (Second Schermerhorn Line VI.) Children: 1. Angelica, born March 31, 1818, died December 23, 1892; married Nicholas Van Petten. 2. Henry, born in 1821, died in 1876; married Amanda Carpenter, who died in 1901. 3. Sarah Maria, born in 1824, died in 1886; married William Henry Bradt. 4. Jacob S., born in 1826; married Dorothy Bond. (Bond II—child 7.) 5. Eliza C., of whom further. 6. John S., born September 15, 1832, died March 3, 1913; married, January 1, 1862, Mary Jane Relyea, born April 10, 1840, died March 26, 1892. 7. Jane Ann, born March 21, 1835, died December 28, 1912; married (first) John C. Ellis; (second) Joseph W. Smitley. 8. Catharine Eva, born April 1, 1839; resided in Schenectady, New York; married James H. Stauring.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 119, 131-32.)

VII. Eliza C. Schermerhorn, daughter of Simon and Cornelia (Schermerhorn) Schermerhorn, was born February 14, 1830. She married Richard R. Bond. (Bond III.)

(*Ibid.*, p. 119.)



SCHERMERHORN HOMESTEAD

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Schermerhorn Line—Line Two)

I. For introduction and generation one, see first Schermerhorn line.

II. *Jacob Schermerhorn*, son of Jacob Janse and Jannetie (Egmont) Schermerhorn, was born about 1662. He was master of the sloop "Star," plying between Albany and New York from 1681 to 1684. The "Star" was probably the property of his father, and was used in connection with the latter's trading and exporting business. After his marriage, he settled in Schodack, located in Rensselaer County, New York, about twelve miles below Albany, on property belonging to his father. In the will of Jacob Janse Schermerhorn, dated May 20, 1688, the following is stated:

I do freely remit and discharge my son Jacob Schermerhorn who lives upon my farm at Schodack of ye rent which is owing for ye same and which will be due to ye day of my decease, not willing that my executrix or administrator shall any way molest him, the said Jacob Schermerhorn, Jr., or his heirs for ye same.

In the subsequent division of the property, in 1700, Jacob Schermerhorn came into possession of the property referred to, and his descendants retained the original farm until it was sold in 1836 by Barent C. Schermerhorn in the sixth generation.

Jacob Schermerhorn married Gerritje Hendrickse Van Buren, daughter of Hendrick Cornelise and Elizabeth (Van Slyck) Van Buren. Children. 1. Catalyntje, baptized August 26, 1683; married, May 18, 1706, Abraham Van Valkenburgh, of Kinderhook. 2. Jacob, Jr., of whom further. 3. Hendrick, baptized in Albany, October 16, 1687; resided in Athens, Greene County, New York, where he was one of the principal inhabitants; married, in Athens, March 17, 1716, Elsie Jans Albertse Bratt, baptized in Albany, July 21, 1692, daughter of Jan Albertse and Gosche Bratt. 4. Cornelius, baptized in Albany, September 22, 1689; June 11, 1720, registered as being a freeholder in Kinderhook; married, February 25, 1713, Margarita Jans Albertse Bratt, baptized in Albany, January 22, 1696, daughter of Jan Albertse and Gosche Bratt. 5. Machtelt, baptized in Albany, January 3, 1692. 6. Jannetie, baptized in Albany, May 6, 1694. 7. Elizabeth, baptized in Albany, August 28, 1698; married, in Albany, February 13, 1728, Roelaf Jansen. 8. Johannes, baptized

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

in Albany, July 21, 1700; resided in Schodack; married Engeltie Gardinier, baptized in Albany, January 19, 1707, daughter of Samuel and Helena (Bye, or Bey) Gardinier, of Kinderhook. 9. Reyer, baptized in Albany, February 24, 1702; was a blacksmith by trade, but was a large property holder and slave owner as well; married (first), in Albany, July 4, 1724, Geertje Ten Eyck, daughter of Barent and Neeltje (Schermerhorn) Ten Eyck; (second), in Rhinebeck, April 17, 1751, Marritje Decker Osterhout, widow.

(Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," pp. 186-187-88-89-90-91-92-93.)

III. Jacob Schermerhorn, Jr., son of Jacob and Gerritje Hendrickse (Van Buren) Schermerhorn, was baptized in Albany, December 27, 1685, and was buried at Papsknee, June 20, 1743. He married, in Albany, June 23, 1714, Antie Van Vechten, baptized December 20, 1692, daughter of Cornelis and Maria (Lucase) Van Vechten. Children: 1. Catryna, baptized in Albany, July 10, 1715. 2. Jacob, resided in Greenbush, New York, near the Schodack border; married, August 29, 1740, Catalyntje Van Buren, born December 11, 1717, daughter of Cornelius and Hendrickje (Van Ness) Van Buren. She married (second), in 1746, Barent Van Buren. 3. Maria, baptized in Albany, March 6, 1717. 4. Cornelius J., baptized in Albany, January 1, 1719; resided in Schodack, New York; married, October 22, 1742, Maria Winne, daughter of Daniel and Dirkje (Van Ness) Winne. 5. Reyer, baptized in Albany, April 9, 1721; resided in Schodack, New York, his property bordering on the Hudson River; married, in Albany, November 20, 1753, Dirkje Van Buren, baptized in Albany, June 9, 1734, daughter of Hendrick Maase and Aaltje (Winne) Van Buren. Their daughter, Aaltje (Alida) Schermerhorn, married Jacob Schermerhorn. (Second Schermerhorn Line IV—child 1.) 6. Maria, baptized in Albany, January 30, 1723; married Jacob R. Schermerhorn. 7. Gerritje, baptized in Albany, October 11, 1724; married Adam Danilse Winne. 8. Hendrick, of whom further. 9. Jannetie, baptized in Albany, February 25, 1728; married, June 28, 1750, Johannes Jansen. 10. Cathalyntje, baptized in Kinderhook, March 6, 1730. 11. Captain Lucas J., baptized in Kinderhook, October 15, 1732; resided in Schodack, New York; married (license dated June 10, 1758) Wyntje Fitzgerald. 12. Johannes,

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

baptized in Kinderhook, August 4, 1734; married (license dated December 1, 1766) Margaret Folmsbee. 13. Philip, baptized in Albany, April 17, 1737.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 188, 195-99.)

IV. Hendrick Schermerhorn, son of Jacob and Antie (Van Vechten) Schermerhorn, was baptized in Albany, September 25, 1726, and died August 27, 1794. He lived in Schodack, New York, his property comprising about three hundred acres, is indicated on the Van Alen map of 1785-90 as bordering on the Hudson River, opposite Schodack Island. The name of Hendrick Schermerhorn is found among those of the claimants for land bounty rights after the Revolution as a member of the 4th New York Regiment. Both he and his wife were among the early members of the Old Dutch Church in Schodack. Hendrick Schermerhorn married (license dated November 1, 1762) Cornelia Lansing, baptized in Albany, January 11, 1738, died March 1, 1804, daughter of Evert and Annatie (Cooper) Lansing. Children: 1. Jacob, born September 10, 1763, died May 8, 1813; previous to 1790 he removed to Charleston, Montgomery County, and from there (about 1802) to Deerfield, Oneida County; married, in Kinderhook, in 1782, Aaltje (Alida) Schermerhorn, born September 12, 1764, died September 15, 1836, daughter of Reyer and Dirkje (Van Buren) Schermerhorn. (Second Schermerhorn Line III—child I.) 2. Annatje, born September 10, 1764, died January 27, 1796; married Benjamin Springsteen. 3. Catalyntje, born February 10, 1768. 4. Catrina, born February 9, 1770, baptized in Schodack, died September 8, 1795. 5. Evert, of whom further. 6. Catlyntje (2), born September 15, 1775, died January 23, 1835; married (first), July 24, 1794, Petrus Hardenburgh; (second), November 19, 1815, Colonel Cornelius I. Schermerhorn, son of Lieutenant Jacob C. and Gerritje Schermerhorn. 7. Cornelia, born July 1, 1778, baptized in Albany; married, probably, Rev. Peter Bork. 8. Cornelius, born August 31, 1781; married Hester Vedder, born January 21, 1785, died August 21, 1847.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 197-98, 216-17, 227.)

V. Evert Schermerhorn, son of Hendrick and Cornelia (Lansing) Schermerhorn, was born August 17, 1772, baptized in Schodack, New York, and died April 26, 1849, aged seventy-six years,

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

nine months and eleven days. He moved from Schodack to Montgomery County, New York, probably with his brother, Jacob, between 1788 and 1790. At the time of his marriage he lived in Caughnawaga, which is about twenty miles above Schenectady, near Fonda.

Evert Schermerhorn married, in Schenectady, January 5, 1795, Elizabeth Schermerhorn. (Fourth Schermerhorn Line VI.) Children: 1. Annatje (Nancy), born March 4, 1796, baptized in Schenectady, died January 14, 1812. 2. Giney, born August 29, 1798. 3. Cornelia, of whom further. 4. Gesey, born May 9, 1804. 5. William Henry, born May 8, 1807, died February 2, 1852; married Julia Ann, whose surname has not been ascertained. She was baptized in Rotterdam. 6. Eleanor, born June 27, 1809. 7. Nancy, born August 4, 1812; married Mr. Nichols. 8. Clara (Clarissa), born March 16, 1815, baptized in Schenectady; married, March 17, 1836, John S. Springsteen, of Schodack Landing, New York. 9. Jacob E., born March 30, 1819, baptized in Schenectady; married, but his wife's name is unknown.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 216-17.)

VI. Cornelia Schermerhorn, daughter of Evert and Elizabeth (Schermerhorn) Schermerhorn, was born December 4, 1800. She married Simon Schermerhorn. (First Schermerhorn Line VI.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Brat Line)

I. Andries Brat, ancestor of the Brat, Bratt, and Bradt families, tracing from the early settlement of Albany and Schenectady, is supposed to have resided in Norway. His two sons, who emigrated to America and were among the early settlers of Albany, often went by the name of De Noorman, and it is a matter of record that his son, Albert Andriese, was from Frederickstad, Norway. No evidence is found, however, that Andries, the father, ever came to America. Andries Brat had two sons, probably born in Norway: 1. Albert Andriese, died June 7, 1686; married (first), Annetie Barentse Van Rotmers, who was deceased in 1662; married (second) Geertruy Vosburgh, from whom he was "separated" October 24, 1670. He was the ancestor of the Bratt family of Albany, also of the Van der Zee family, through his son, who was born during the voyage to America, in

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

exceptionally stormy weather, and was therefore named Stormy Van der Zee (Storm from the Sea). 2. Arent Andriese, of whom further.

(Prof. Jonathan Pearson: "Contributions for the Genealogies of the Descendants of the First Settlers of the Patent and City of Schenectady, from 1662 to 1800" (1873), pp. 19, 20; (1872), pp. 23, 24. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XXXV, p. 45.)

II. Arent Andriese Brat, son of Andries Brat, was born probably in Norway, about or before 1625, and died in Schenectady, New York, in 1662, 1663, or 1664. While no record is found as to the time of his emigration to America, it is known that his brother, Albert Andriese, with his wife, sailed from Amsterdam, Holland, September 25, 1636, in the "Arms of Rensselaerswyck," spent New Year's Day and a week or two besides at Ilfracombe, England, on the Bristol Channel, arrived in New York in March, and finally at Beverwyck, Albany, April 7, 1637.

Arent Andriese Brat became one of the first proprietors of Schenectady in 1662, and died soon after. The grants of land which had been allotted to him were, after his death, confirmed to his widow. Her home-lot in the village of Schenectady was the west quarter of the block bounded by Washington, Union, Church and State streets. On November 12, 1664, being about to marry her second husband, she contracted, with the guardians of her children, to set off for them from her estate, one thousand guilders, and mortgaged her bouwery, No. 1, on the bouwland to secure this sum to them.

Arent Andriese Brat married, probably about 1648, Catalyntje De Vos, who died in 1712, daughter of Andries De Vos, Deputy Director of Rensselaerswyck. She married (second), about November 12, 1664, Barent Janse Van Ditmars, who was killed in the Schenectady massacre of 1690. She married (third), in 1691, Claas Janse Van Boekhoven, whom she also outlived. Children of Arent Andriese and Catalyntje (De Vos) Brat: 1. Aeffie, born about 1649 (age fifteen in 1664), died January 23, 1728, aged seventy-eight; married Claas Frederickse Van Petten. 2. Ariaantje Arentse, of whom further. 3. Andries, born about 1653; married Margareta Van Slyck. He, with one of his children, was killed in the massacre of 1690. 4. Cornelia, born about 1655; married Jan Pootman; she, with her husband, was killed in the massacre of 1690. 5. Samuel, born about

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1659; married Susanna Van Slyck. 6. Dirk, born about 1661; married Maritje Van Eps.

(Prof. Jonathan Pearson: "Contributions for the Genealogies of the Descendants of the First Settlers of the Patent and City of Schenectady, from 1662 to 1800" (1873), pp. 19-20, 230. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XXXV, p. 45.)

III. *Ariaantje Arentse Brat*, daughter of Arent Andriese and Catalyntje (De Vos) Brat, was born about 1651, and died in Schenectady, New York, in 1717. She married (first) Helmer Otten, of Albany, who died before July, 1676. Her second marriage was to Ryer J. Schermerhorn. (First Schermerhorn Line II.)

(Prof. Jonathan Pearson: "Contributions for the Genealogies of the Descendants of the First Settlers of the Patent and City of Schenectady, from 1662 to 1800" (1873), pp. 19-20, 132, 158, 264.)

(The Bradshaw Line)

Arms—Argent, two bendlets between as many martlets sable.

Crest—A hart gules standing under a vine branch vert.

Motto—*Qui vit content tient assez.*

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Bradshaw finds its origin in the Old English words "brad," meaning broad, and "sc(e)aga," a wood. An early spelling of the name was Bradshaigh.

A chapelry in County Lancaster is so named, and here the Bradshaws have flourished from the time of the Saxons. Bradshaw, near the peak of Derbyshire, gave its name to another ancient family. Of early record in England was Alan de Bradeshagh, of Radcliffe, County Lancaster, 1332, and in the time of Edward I, a Richard de Bradeschawe is recorded.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Harrison: "Surnames of the United Kingdom," Vol. I. Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

I. *James Bradshaw* was born in Derbyshire, England, September 25, 1743, and died in Princeton, Schenectady County, New York, between 1815 and 1817. He and his wife came to America in 1775, and first located at Cherry Valley, New York, then on the western frontier of settlement. It was destroyed by an attack of Indian sympathizers of the British cause during the Revolution, and the residents of several nearby settlements in what is now Otsego County were obliged to remove eastward. James Bradshaw located at Princeton,

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

then known as Curry's Bush, Schenectady County. A five hundred-acre tract of land which he acquired lay partly in Princeton and partly in Duaneburgh. He erected a large stone house on it and resided there until his death. His will, dated September 27, 1815, and recorded March 4, 1817, is filed in Schenectady County. At that time his ten children were all living and were given bequests of either money or land.

James Bradshaw married (first) Elizabeth Bullock, who accompanied him to America. A second wife, Martha, is mentioned in his will. Children, probably all of first marriage: 1. John, born in England, June 14, 1769; married, May 23, 1801, Nancy Singer, who is mentioned in the will of Robert Bullock, recorded in 1831, as widow of John Bradshaw, deceased. 2. Helen, of whom further. 3. Elizabeth, born January 6, 1773; married John Barlow, of Montgomery County. 4. James, born March 17, 1775, on the voyage to America; married Delana Briggs. 5. George, born November 10, 1776. 6. Thomas, born September 28, 1778. 7. Robert, born July 11, 1780. 8. Benjamin, born March 11, 1782. 9. Mary, born March 19, 1784; married Charles Tullock, of Duaneburgh. 10. Joseph, born November 18, 1786.

(Howell and Tenney: "History of Schenectady County," p. 206. "Schenectady County Wills." "Surrogate Records, Schenectady County," Vol. IV, p. 18. "Records of Reformed Church, Schenectady.")

II. Helen Bradshaw, daughter of James and Elizabeth (Bullock) Bradshaw, was born in Derbyshire, England, February 12, 1771. In her father's will she is called Ellen, and received seven hundred dollars. She married Thomas Wasson. Children: 1. Lydle, born November 2, 1791. 2. Lydia, of whom further. 3. Dorethea, born August 16, 1795. 4. Elizabeth, born August 15, 1798. 5. John, born July 29, 1801. 6. Mary, born February 3, 1802.

(*Ibid.*)

III. Lydia Wasson, daughter of Thomas and Helen (Bradshaw) Wasson, was born September 8, 1793. She married Richard Bond. (Bond II.)

("Records of Reformed Church, Schenectady.")

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Witbeck Line)

The surname Witbeck is undoubtedly of Dutch origin. At the time when surnames were being adopted, a family living in the village of Witbeck in all probability took it for their surname, and it has been carried on by their descendants through the centuries.

I. Jan Thomase Witbeck, or Van Witbeck, was born at Witbeck, a village in Holstein, and is also described as from Oostenvelt, a village in Schleswig, located not far from Witbeck. As was usual in early records, he was designated by the first name of his father, and was referred to as Jan Thomase, meaning Jan, son of Thomas. He is first mentioned at New York in 1648, and removed to Beverwyck, now Albany, where he resided as early as 1652, and from 1654 to 1679, repeatedly held the office of magistrate. In association with Volkert Jansen Douw he engaged in several real estate operations. In 1658, they purchased a farm on Papscanee Island, and on November 3, 1663, obtained a patent from Stuyvesant for land at Schodack, including Aepjer Island, receiving a confirmatory patent May 4, 1667. Among the notarial papers of Albany County are receipts from Poulas Cornelissen for shipping horses, boards and other articles from Albany to Esopus, dated April 4, 1678, and another for shipping forty-two skippels of wheat. Witbeck and Douw are recorded as granting a lease of land at Esopus in what is now the town of Hurley, February 9, 1663. It provided that they should furnish horses and cattle as well as boards and bricks for a house. The rent was to be paid in grain. Jan Thomase Witbeck and his wife made a will dated October 21, 1679. They were residing at Papscanee, about an hour's journey from Albany. It provided that the survivor should be sole heir. If either should remarry, one-half the estate was to be divided among the children, but their names are not given. Jan Thomase Witbeck is described in the will as born at Witbeck, while the marriage record describes him as from Oostenvelt.

He married, in New Amsterdam, now New York, June 10, 1648, Geertruyd Andries. Children: 1. Andries Janse; married Engeltie Volkertse Douw. 2. Johannes Janse; married Lysbeth Leendertse Conyn. 3. Lucas Janse; married, June 28, 1691, Catrine Melgertse Van Deusen. 4. Hendrick Janse; married (first) Lyntje Winnie; married (second), September 27, 1707, Lena Bout; resided at Clav-

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

erack. 5. Jonathan Janse; married (first), January 7, 1697, Caatje Martinse Van Beuren; married (second) Catharine Van Deusen. 6. Thomas Janse, of whom further. 7. Catherina; married (first) Jacob Sanderse Glen; married (second) Jonas Volkertse Douw.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 153. J. Pearson: "Early Records of Albany," Vol. III, pp. 50, 154, 447-48, 483-85.)

II. Thomas Janse Witbeck, son of Jan Thomase and Geertruyd (Andries) Witbeck, was buried at Papscahee, May 6, 1731. He married, September 5, 1702, Jannetje Van Deusen. Children, baptized at Albany: 1. Geertruyd, baptized January 1, 1704. 2. Melgert Abrahamse, baptized September 22, 1705; probably identical with the Abraham Melgertse Witbeck; married, October 19, 1741, Marytje Van Deusen. 3. Johannes, baptized July 9, 1708; married, May 9, 1740, Eva Waldron. 4. Jacobus, or Jacob, baptized October 30, 1710; married, December 25, 1742, Cathalyne Van Deusen. 5. Lucas, of whom further.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 154.)

III. Lucas Witbeck, son of Thomas Janse and Jannetje (Van Deusen) Witbeck, was baptized at the Reformed Church, Albany, February 26, 1724. He was overseer of the Van Rensselaer manor house. On August 9, 1769, he purchased of Stephen Van Rensselaer for £269 a tract of land formerly in possession of Joseph Chite, containing two hundred and fifty-nine acres, on the road from Albany to Loudens Ferry. This property was located at what is now Latham's, New York, popularly called Latham's Corners, on the auto road between Cohoes and Albany, and in 1886 was occupied by his great-grandson, John L. Witbeck. Lucas Witbeck was among the original members of the Boght Reformed Church. This church was, in its early history, connected with that of Niskayuna. He is recorded as among those from the congregation at the Boght, January 27, 1790, at Niskayuna, when it was resolved that the seal of the congregation should be a lion standing up.

Lucas Witbeck married Geertruy Lansing. (Lansing IV.) Children, baptized at Albany: 1. Elizabeth, baptized November 16, 1746, died in infancy. 2. Elizabeth (2), baptized January 24, 1748; married a Mr. DeFreert; children: i. Lucas, resided at Greenbush. ii. Rebecca; married Martin DeFreert; resided at Greenbush. iii.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Gitty, resided at Greenbush; married John Fonda. iv. Abraham W., resided at Troy. 3. Thomas, baptized March 18, 1750; married Angantie Miller; had a child, Maria, born November 6, 1782; baptized at Schaghticoke. 4. Gerrit L., of whom further. 5. Abraham L., baptized February 11, 1753, died March 24, 1846; resided on a farm of one hundred and fifty acres on the Louden Road, between Cohoes and Albany; no children, so the estate was divided among nieces and nephews. 6. Johannes L., born February 5, 1760, died April 25, 1791; married, at Schaghticoke, August 30, 1781, Helena Van Den Bergh; children: i. Annatie, baptized at Schaghticoke. ii. Lucas L., born October 4, 1784; married Harriet Fonda; children, baptized at Boght: a. Gertrude, born October 3, 1812; married John Van Den Bergh. b. John, baptized September 29, 1816. c. Isaac Fonda, baptized July 29, 1821, died August 25, 1854; married, March 7, 1849, Jane Cobee. d. Abraham, baptized August 1, 1824. e. Jesse, baptized October 26, 1828. f. Ann Helena, baptized November 12, 1830. g. Johanna, born September 27, 1833. iii. Geertruy, baptized at Albany, November 19, 1786. iv. Geertruy, born February 13, 1789, baptized at Boght. v. John, born January 4, 1792, baptized at Boght.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 154. "Albany County Deeds," Vol. X, p. 205. Howell and Tenny: "History of Albany County," pp. 932, 940. "Papers on Estate of Abraham L. Witbeck." "Records, Reformed Churches, Niskayuna, Boght and Schaghticoke." "Albany County Wills," Vol. XV, p. 198.)

IV. Gerrit L. Witbeck, son of Lucas and Geertruy (Lansing) Witbeck, was baptized at Albany, March 18, 1750, and died December 13, 1807. He leased from Stephen Van Rensselaer, January 22, 1794, land on the Mohawk River, containing forty-three and a half acres. The lease was to hold during his life, that of his wife, and those of Lucas G. and Thomas G., their sons. On January 28, 1794, he leased thirty acres in the township of Watervliet, and according to an assignment on the back of it, sold it to his son, Lucas G., February 13, 1801. Gerrit L. Witbeck also owned property in the township of Niskayuna, Schenectady County. His will is not recorded in the Surrogate's records, but is given in one of the Albany County deed books. It is dated October 17, 1804.

Gerrit L. Witbeck married, May 29, 1774, Immetje, or Emmetje,

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Perry, who was baptized at Albany, November 7, 1752, and was a daughter of Johannis Perry, of Claverack, who married, January 9, 1748, Francyntje Chite. Children: 1. John Perry, born March 10, 1775, baptized at Albany; married, at the Boght, September 8, 1798, Sarah Crygier; children, baptized at Niskayuna: i. Gerrit, born April 12, 1799; married Maria Tymessen; children: a. John, born April 14, 1825. b. Peter Tymesen, born January 18, 1827. c. Sarah Ann, born December 23, 1828. d. Jemima, born September 3, 1831. e. Lucas, born December 4, 1833. f. Garret, born June 20, 1837. ii. Martinus, born December 4, 1806. iii. Lucas. iv. Rebecca, born August 25, 1810; married Peter Tymessen. v. Anne, born May 12, 1813. vi. Abraham, born November 11, 1815; married, August 18, 1842, Margaret Knight. vii. Thomas, born September 28, 1817. 2. Lucas G., of whom further. 3. Antje, born January 28, 1781, baptized at Albany; married, at the Boght, April 21, 1799, Michael Freligh; children: i. George, born December 6, 1800, baptized at Boght. ii. Francyntje, born June 12, 1802, baptized at Boght. iii. Gitty Maria, born September 16, 1803, baptized at Schenectady. iv. Gerrit Witbeck, born March 4, 1807, baptized at Vischers Ferry. v. Emmetje Perry, born June 10, 1809, baptized at Niskayuna. vi. John Perry, born December 9, 1811, baptized as Vischers Ferry. vii. Leah, born May 9, 1813. viii. Michael, born October 5, 1814. ix. Sarah Ann, born February 8, 1821. x. Margaret Elizabeth, born August 7, 1822. 4. Thomas G., born January 27, 1785, baptized at Boght; married Leah Marshall (or Mershall); children: i. Francis Marshall, born January 23, 1807. ii. Emmittie, born April 5, 1809. iii. Gertrude, born April 17, 1811. iv. Francis Marshall (2), born August 6, 1814. v. Charles, born October 26, 1818. vi. Maria Ann, born January 24, 1824.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 154. "Albany County Deeds," Vol. XCII, pp. 181-85; Vol. CLXXXVIII, p. 342. "Records, Reformed Churches, Niskayuna, Boght.")

V. Lucas G. Witbeck, son of Gerrit L. and Immetje, or Emmetje (Perry) Witbeck, was baptized at Albany, June 23, 1778. In the settlement of his father's estate he and his brother, Thomas G. Witbeck, received the farm which lay partly in the town of Niskayuna, Schenectady County, and partly in the town of Watervliet, Albany

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

County. It was later described as bounded by the Mohawk River on the north, lands of the Shakers on the east, by Gerrit Vedder on the south, and by land of Maria John and Peter Witbeck on the west, and as containing two hundred acres. Their heirs sold it March 19, 1863, to Lucas Witbeck, evidently the son of Lucas G. Witbeck.

Lucas G. Witbeck married Emma Marshall, daughter of Francisus and Geertruy (Van Deusen) Marshall, who were married November 23, 1770, and granddaughter of Peter Busie and Annatje (Flensburgh) Marshall. Children: 1. Gerrit, born November 2, 1802, baptized at Boght. 2. Henry Wyckoff, born October 6, 1814, baptized at Niskayuna. 3. Lucas, born January 3, 1817, baptized at Niskayuna. 4. Sarah, born December 6, 1818, baptized at Niskayuna. 5. Leah, of whom further. 6. Gerrit (2), baptized at Niskayuna, June 1, 1823. 7. Gertrude; married William P. Lansing, mentioned in the papers of the estate of Abraham L. Witbeck; resided at Schenectady. 8. Emma (Angelica); married, March 22, 1838, Derrick Green, of Niskayuna.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 154. "Albany County Deeds," Vol. CLXXVIII, pp. 342, 348. "Records, Reformed Churches, Boght, Niskayuna." "Papers on Estate of Abraham L. Witbeck.")

VI. Leah Witbeck, daughter of Lucas G. and Emma (Marshall) Witbeck, was baptized at Niskayuna, April 6, 1821. She is mentioned in the list of next of kin of Abraham L. Witbeck, and with Francis M. Witbeck and Jane, his wife, Sarah Witbeck, Garret L. Witbeck and Carolina, his wife. Henry W. Witbeck and Barbara, his wife, sold on March 19, 1863, the farm formerly owned by Lucas G. and Thomas G. Witbeck. In this deed she is named as the wife of John Devenpeck. (Devenpeck IV.)

("Records, Reformed Church, Niskayuna.")

(The Lansing Line)

Arms—Gules, a fesse argent charged with a rose of the field barbed vert.

(C. G. Munsell: "Lansing Genealogy.")

Although there is a definite reference in an early book of Albany County deeds to the Lansing family coming from Hasselt in the province of Overijsell, there is no mention of them in the baptism or marriage registers of that city nor in the notarial books in the city archives.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

The only reference to them there is in the "Dagelljksche Handelingen Contentisuse en Volontaire zaken Resolutien, 1648-59," Folio 5, January 13, 1648. A translation of the entry follows:

In the matter of the guardians of the children of Jan Van Mepelen against Gerryt Lansinck concerning the claim of 10 guilders, 11 stivers, 12 pennies, it is ordered that the parties shall examine the books of the late Br. Jan Alberts and if no entry shall be found relating to this difference it will be sufficient that Gerryt Lansinck shall declare upon oath that the late Jan Alberts had settled with him.

There are some notes on Lansing in the files of the High Council of Nobles at The Hague, but they do not give a connected history of the family.

Arnold, or Arent, Lansing was a vassal or feudatory member of the household of the "Commandeur of Djerem," fifteen miles north-east of Arnhem in Gelderland in 1336. This probably refers to the branch of the Knights of the Teutonic Order founded there, but the word "Commandeur" may refer to the knight in command of the branch, or to the commandery of local organization itself. Arent died prior to 1368. He married Hadewich. Children: 1. Arent called Van Koudenover, who exchanged his estate by that name for Werensick in the parish of Selem. 2. Wilhelm, justice of Doesburg, Gelderland, in 1365, bailiff of Sutphen in 1369. In 1368, he and Arent affixed his seal to a document. It bore the inscription "Sigillum, Willem Van Bremen." For this reason they are believed to be brothers.

In 1382 Gerrit Lansing was judge at Doesburg, but his relationship to those mentioned heretofore is not given nor is the connection given with those named hereafter.

Reinier Lansing conferred a usufruct on his wife, Wilhelma Van Eschede, in 1422.

Egbert Lansing and wife Hadewig conveyed to John John Bonijngerhof an income from their estate at Oldenzeel in 1442.

Reinier Lansing, son of Christian Lansing, of Angerio, received a feudal grant at Lathem and settled a usufruct upon his wife in 1442. He married Henrica Van Broeckhuisen, and had two daughters, Lysbeth and Griet.

Johan Lansinck, of Emmerick, married Anna Duicker, widow of Harmen Van Woldenberg, and had a son, Arend. It is probable that he married a Van Hoen.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

A catalogue of the University of Leyden names the following among the students:

Bartholdus Lantsing, of Zutphen, matriculated for medicine; Henricus Lansing, of Gelderland, in 1630, for law; Petrus Lantswick, of Gelderland, in 1638, for law; Petrus Lansing, of Lochem, in 1643, for law; Joachimus Lanzing, of Zutphen, in 1649; Bartholdus Lantswick, of Lochem, in 1650, for law; Justus Lantswick, of Gelderland, in 1650, for law.

It is therefore probable that Gelderland was the place where the family originated. Branches settled in several other localities, including the provinces of Overijssell and Drenthe.

(J. V. L. Pruyn: "Interesting Notes on the Lansing Family," in Albany, "Argus," December 12, 1902.)

I. Gerrit Frederickse Lansing, son of Frederick Lansing, was a citizen of Hasselt, Province of Overijssell in the Netherlands. About 1640 he came to New Amsterdam (New York) and removed from there to Albany. Jan Hendrickse Van Baal sold him a home and lot in Albany April 15 (25), 1667, which he sold to Jan Brincker, March 6 (16), 1667 (1668). In July, 1668, he bought a house and lot of Gerrit Van Slichtenhorst and sold it to Barent Albertse Bratt. A deed dated 1674 in giving boundaries to land describes his property as bounded on the north by that which Jan Coned sold Evert Janse Wendell. Gerrit F. Lansing died prior to 1679. An old deed recorded in the county clerk's office at Albany contains a power of attorney from his heirs.

Appeared before me Ro^t. Livingston, secretary of Albany, Colony of Rensclaerswyck and Schaenhechtady, etc., in prescence of the Honorable Dirk Wessells and Cornelis van Dyck, magistrates of said jurisdiction, Gerrit Gerritse Lansing, Hendrick Gerritse Lansingh, Johannes Gerritse Lansing, Mr. Ger^t. van Slichtenhorst, husband and guardian of Aeltje Lansingh, Hendrick Roosenboom, husband and guardian of Gsbertie Lansing, and Hilletie Lansing, widow of the late Storm Albertse van der Ze, deceased, all citizens of this town of Albany, who declared in accordance with advice from their cousin (Neef, which may be translated either cousin or nephew), Jan Barentst ten Kate, dwelling at Swoll in Over Isell dated the 4th of June 1679, that they constituted and appointed their said cousin Jan Barentst ten Kate residing at Swoll and Gysbert Janse Vermeer, residing at Hassell (Hasselt), where he is Gasthuysmr (hospital superintend-

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ent) their attorneys, specially to demand, collect and receive in Over Yssell etc., their inheritance and bequests left to them by their father deceased, named Gerrit Frederickse Lansing, in his life time burgher of Hassell; of the receipts to five acquittance, to release from further demands and furthermore to do, transact and perform all that may be needful and that may seem advisable to them promising at all times to hold valid whatever shall be lawfully done and performed in the matter aforesaid by the aforesaid attorneys, Mr. Jan Barenst ten Kate and Mr. Gysbert Janse Vermeer, without any gainsaying, provided that the attorneys be held upon request to make a proper accounting, statement and return of their transactions aforesaid. Done in Albany in America on the 3d of October in the thirty first year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord Charles the Second, by the grace of God, King of Great Britain, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, Annoq: Dom: 1679.

D. WESSELLS
CORN VAN DYCK

GERT. GERRITSE LANSING
HEND: GERRITSE LANSING
JOH: GERRITSE LANSINGH
HEND: ROOSEBOOM
HILLETIE VAN DR. ZEE

In my presence

RO^t. LIVINSTON, Secretary.

Gerrit F. Lansing married Elizabeth Hendrickse, who later married Wouter Van Den Vythof. Children (as recorded in deed, order unknown): 1. Gerrit, 2. Hendrick. 3. Johannis Gerritse, of whom further. 4. Aeltje; married Gerrit van Slichtenhorst. 5. Gsbertie; married Hendrick Roosenboom. 6. Hilletie; married Storm Albertse Van der Ze.

(C. G. Munsell: "Lansing Genealogy," p. 1. J. Pearson: "Early Records of Albany," Vol. I, pp. 107, 413, 429, 439; Vol. II, pp. 64-65.)

II. Johannis Gerritse Lansing, son of Gerrit Frederickse and Elizabeth (Hendrickse) Lansing, was probably born at Hasselt, in the Netherlands. He accompanied his father to America and resided at Albany. In 1681 he was Deacon of the Reformed Church. He was buried January 28, 1782. Johannis is mentioned in the settlement of the estate of Goosen G. Van Schaick in 1680, and was guardian of the minor children of Sybrant Van Schaick, brother of his wife, in 1686.

In 1678 Johannis Gerritse Lansing married Geertje (Van Schaick) Coster, daughter of Goosen Gerritse and Geertie Brantse (Peelen)

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Van Schaick, and widow of Hendrick Coster. She is probably the Geertje Lansing who was buried December 22, 1739. Children: 1. Libbetie, born in 1679; married, July 16, 1699, Stephen Groesbeck. 2. Geertruy, baptized November 2, 1684; married, April 23, 1704, Ryer Gerritsen. 3. Jan, or Johannis, baptized September 4, 1687; married, June 13, 1714, Geertruy Schuyler. In an old record of the Reformed Church is noted the burial of the wife of Johannis Lansing, June 23, 1744. It has been supposed that she was the wife of this Johannis, but Johannis and Geertruy, his wife, and Lucas Witbeck were sponsors at the baptism of Elizabeth, daughter of Tobias and Neeltje (Lansing) Stoutenberg, on August 2, 1747. The burial record is, therefore, that of the wife of Johannis, son of Gerrit Gerritse Lansing. 4. Engeltje, baptized August 12, 1690; married, December 12, 1710, Evert Wendell. 5. Gerrit, of whom further.

(S. V. Talcott: "New York and New England Families," pp. 114, 462. "Early Records of Albany," Vol. II, pp. 107, 331, 375. "Records of Reformed Church, New York," Vol. III, p. 135.)

III. Gerrit Lansing, son of Johannis Gerritse and Geertje (Van Schaick-Coster) Lansing, resided at Albany, and may be the Gerrit Lansing who was buried January 26, 1736. In that case, he could not have been the Gerrit Lansing who was sponsor at the baptism of the first two children of Lucas Witbeck and Geertruy Lansing, his wife. The Neeltje Lansing who was the other sponsor with Gerrit Lansing in these baptisms was evidently the daughter of Gerrit.

Gerrit Lansing married, October 27, 1715, Elizabeth Bancker. (Bancker III.) Children: 1. Neeltje, baptized November 4, 1716, died young. 2. Neeltje (2), baptized April 11, 1718; married Tobias Stoutenberg. 3. Geertruy, of whom further. 4. Johannes, baptized October 9, 1724, buried February 26, 1725. 5. Johannes (2), baptized April 24, 1726, buried July 27, 1737. (The burial record reads in both cases, a child of Gerrit Lansing.)

(S. V. Talcott: "New York and New England Families," pp. 455, 461.)

IV. Geertruy Lansing, daughter of Gerrit and Elizabeth (Bancker) Lansing, was baptized December 26, 1719. She married Lucas Witbeck. Witbeck III.

(*Ibid.*)

BOND

Arms—Argent, on a chevron sable three bezants.

Crest—A demi-pegasus azure, winged and semée of estoiles or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

BRADSHAW

Arms—Argent, two bendlets between as many martlets sable.

Crest—A hart gules standing under a vine branch vert.

Motto—*Qui vit content tient assez.*

(Burke: "General Armory.")

LANSING

Arms—Gules, a fesse argent charged with a rose of the field barbed vert.
(C. G. Munsell: "Lansing Genealogy.")

BANCKER

Arms—Argent, a figure 4 (merchant's mark) resting on an ornamented bar gules (called an old merchant's mark).

Crest—Two wings expanded gules.

Motto—*Dieu defend le droit.*

(Bolton: "American Armory.")

VRANCKEN (VAN VRANKEN)

Arms—Azure, a fesse wavy argent.

(Rietstap: "Armorial Général.")

Box 11

1712—Argent on a chevron and three bezants.
Crest—A demi-goose surmounted and encircled by a wreath.
(Burke: "General Armory")

BRADSHAW

1713—Argent, two bezants between a man's arm and a sword.
Crest—A hand holding a sword.
(Burke: "General Armory")

LASSING

1714—Gules, a cross argent, charged with a rose of the field.
(Crest: "Lassing")

BANKER

1715—Argent, a cross gules, charged with a hand holding a sword.
Crest—A hand holding a sword.
(Burke: "General Armory")

FRANKLIN VAN FRANKLIN

1716—Argent, a cross gules, charged with a hand holding a sword.
(Burke: "General Armory")



Bond



Bradshaw



Hansing



Bancker



Branken
(Van Branken)

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Bancker Line)

Arms—Argent, a figure 4 (merchant's mark) resting on an ornamented bar gules (called an old merchant's mark).

Crest—Two wings expanded gules.

Motto—*Dieu defend le droit.*

(Bolton: "American Armory.")

The family of Bancker took their name from a family of Dutch sea captains named Banckert, whose ancestral name had been Van Trappen. They were among the Sea Beggars prominent in the early part of the long struggle for independence from Spain.

(Howard James Banker: "Bancker or Banker Families of America," pp. 15-17.)

I. Gerrit Bancker, immigrant ancestor of a large and important family of Banckers, or Bankers, was born in Holland, date unknown, but probably about 1620, and died probably in Albany, New York, between November 25, 1690, and May 7, 1691. In his will, dated November 25, 1690, proved May 7, 1691, he bequeathed to his wife all his property, "Whether situated in Albany, in Schenectady, in New York, in England, in Holland, or at Sea." He is first mentioned in Albany in 1651, where later he became a prosperous Indian trader and merchant. He had his home on the south side of what is now State Street, a little east of Pearl. Gerrit Bancker accumulated a considerable estate, both real and personal. He was one of the fifteen original proprietors of Schenectady in 1662, owning rich farm lands there, and also a village lot, the "northerly quarter of the block bounded by Washington, Union, Church and State Streets," as the city is now laid out. It is not known whether he ever lived there, and his son, Evert, sold the property in 1702. In 1664, he owned a house and lot at Esopus, and seems to have lived there for a time. That he was an active and enterprising man is evident from the fact that his name appears in many conveyances of land and other business transactions from 1657 to 1684. His wife appears to have made a visit to Holland in 1668, and to have conducted some business affairs for her mother and second step-father, Cornelius Van Nes. After the death of her husband, she removed to New York, where she conducted a store.

Gerrit Bancker married Elizabeth, or Lysbet, Dirckse Van Eps, who died in what is now New York City, July 3, 1693; she was a daughter of Dirck and Margaret (Damen) Van Eps. Children: 1.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

William, born February 23, 1661; probably resided in Holland, in 1700; married, before 1693, Isabelle Winterswijk. 2. Evert, of whom further. 3. Richard, born December 23, 1666; was living in New York City as late as 1692; is said to have died without issue. 4. Anna, born April 1, 1670, was living in 1735; married, October 10, 1688, Johannes De Peyster, who became mayor of New York City in 1698. 5. Maria, born April 1, 1675, died in 1710-11; married, September 20, 1694, Cornelius De Peyster. 6. Gerardus (Gerrit), born August 1, 1677, died in 1702, probably without issue. 7. John, was living at New York City as late as 1717, is said to have died without issue. 8. (Perhaps) Sibilla. (A Sibilla Bancker was sponsor at the baptism of a child of Evert Bancker, in 1700.)

(Howard James Banker: "A Partial History of the Bancker or Banker Families of America," pp. 239-43, 297.)

II. Evert Bancker, son of Gerrit and Elizabeth, or Lysbet, Dirckse (Van Eps) Bancker, was born in Albany, New York, January 24, 1665, as given by his son, Adrianus, or February 24, 1663, as stated in a "Bancker Genealogy," published in 1838; and was buried there July 10, 1734. He resided at Albany nearly all of his life, but ended his days on his farm at Guilderland, New York. Like his father he was a merchant, Indian trader, and man of affairs. As early as 1685 he held a pass for himself and a comrade with a request that they be allowed to pass and repass to Canada. In 1692, he furnished supplies for the Fusileers, in King William's War, and was justice of the peace. Three years later (1695) Evert Bancker became the third mayor of Albany. In 1697, in company with others, he received an extraordinary grant (afterwards annulled), of land along the Schenectady River, four miles wide and fifty miles long. He was a deacon in the Dutch Reformed Church in 1693 and 1700; was a commissioner of Indian affairs in 1696; represented his locality in the Colonial Assembly, 1702-04; and was a master of the Colonial Court of Chancery in 1704. In 1707 he was chosen alderman, but immediately afterwards was again appointed mayor of Albany. During Queen Anne's War (1711), Evert Bancker was one of the managers of the expedition against Canada. In 1723, or 1726, he was resident commissioner among the Seneca Indians, and in 1724, or 1727, was commandant of the fort at Oswego, with the commission of captain.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Evert Bancker married, September 24, 1686, Elizabeth Abeel, born March 23, 1671, a daughter of Stoffel Janse and Neeltie Janse (Croon) Abeel. Children, born in Albany: 1. Gerardus, born February 11, 1688, died young. 2. Neeltie, born March 1, 1689, died September 23, 1712. 3. Gerardus (2), born June 12, 1691, died November 1, 1705. 4. Elizabeth, of whom further. 5. Christoffel (Christopher), born October 27, 1695, died about 1763; married, October 16, 1719, Elizabeth Hooglandt. 6. Anna, born October 3, 1697, died October 2, 1706. 7. Willem, or William, born October 28, 1699, died in Schenectady, New York, February 22, 1772; married, in Schenectady, December 17, 1726, Annatje Veeder. 8. Jannetie, born August 28, 1701; married, December 1, 1722, Hermanus Schuyler. 9. Adrianus, born October 10, 1703, died August 21, 1772; married, January 31, 1728-29, Gertrude Elizabeth Van Taerling. 10. Gerardus (3), born April 1, 1706, died before February 27, 1745; married, October 31, 1731, Maria De Peyster. 11. Anna, born June 12, 1708, died May 30, 1709. 12. Johannes, born March 15, 1710, died April 30, 1710. 13. Johannes (2), born February 20, 1712; married Magdalena Veeder, a sister of Annatje Veeder, who married his brother, William.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 244-47, 266, 274, 280, 285. "Abstracts of New York Wills," Vol. VI, p. 236.)

III. *Elizabeth Bancker*, daughter of Evert and Elizabeth (Abeel) Bancker, was born in Albany, New York, July 29, 1693. She married Gerrit Lansing. (Lansing III.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Bassett Line)

Bassett is a local name of Norman origin, and is a diminutive form of Bass, meaning "low," "short," "fat." There was also an old Teutonic personal name Bass, the name of a priest to whom the English King Eckberht gave Reculver in A. D. 669. The Old French word, *bassett*, meant a "dwarf" or a "very low man." The name in this form seems to be used in many countries, although its representatives were long seated in France, where it appears in the various *départements* or "counties." In England it is found as early as the Domesday Book. The Dutch family undoubtedly had its origin in

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

France, its representatives coming to Holland, probably as did many others for religious or political freedom.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

I. Michael Bassett is first mentioned in New York City at the time of his marriage in 1693. He is recorded as "van" or from "Eylt Christoffel," evidently his previous residence. His occupation was that of a mariner, and on May 5, 1701, when he witnessed the will of Cladius Aigron, he was described as captain of the brigantine "Ann." Whether he was related to Peter or Francis Bassett of that city is not proved by available records. They attended the Huguenot Church, while he attended the Dutch Church. They died before most of his children were born, but were not sponsors at the baptisms of the elder of his children, who were born while they were alive. The fact that both Michael and Francis Bassett were mariners may be significant and his acting as witness of the will of Cladius Aigron may indicate that he was associated with the French residents of the city. Lists of those voting for William Morris for alderman and for Jeremiah Tuthill for assistant, dated September 9 and November 1, 1701, show that both Michael and Peter Bassett were residing in the East Ward. His name is found in tax lists of that ward in 1696, 1697, and 1698 (published by the New York Historical Society). On May 13, 1702, Isaac Bedlowe, Jr., was apprenticed to him for four years, and February 17, 1707, John Crego was apprenticed to him for seven years. On December 19, 1717, he sold property to Jacob Swann. His will, dated March 8, 1706, was not proved until July 1, 1741. It provided that his widow should have the use of the estate during her widowhood, and that his son, John, should receive £5 as heir-at-law. After the death of the widow the estate was to be given to all his children. His wife and Stephen De Lancey and Captain Robert Lurting were named executors. At the time of his death his wife and Captain Lurting were already dead and De Lancey resigned. Letters of administration were granted to his son, Steven Bassett, Gentleman, of New Jersey, the other children, John and Michael Bassett and Ann Young, having refused to undertake it.

Michael Bassett married (first), December 5, 1693, Helena Van Alst, daughter of Joris Stevens and Geesie (Hendricksen) Van Alst.

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Joris Stevens Van Alst came to his country from Bruges and located at Newtown, Long Island. Geesie Hendricksen, his wife, was a daughter of Harmon Hendricksen. He married (second), at the Reformed Church, New York, January 17, 1718, Cornelia Timber. Children, baptized at Reformed Church, New York: 1. Johannes, baptized February 5, 1696; sponsors, Johannes Hardenbroeck and Hester Glee. 2. Leah, baptized October 9, 1698; sponsors, Tymon Van Bursum, Sarah Van Laer, wife of Johannes Hardenbroeck. 3. Annatie, baptized January 31, 1703; sponsors, Thomas Evans, Jannetje Evans. 4. Michael, of whom further. 5. Steven, baptized December 15, 1706; sponsors, Rip Van Dam, Elizabeth Kierstede. 6. Rachel, baptized July 17, 1709; sponsors, Isaac Bedlow, Belitje Bastiaanse. 7. Marytje, baptized April 29, 1711; sponsors, Nicholas Van Thienhove, Anna Millers.

("Records, Reformed Church, New York City." B. Fernow: "Calendar of New York Wills," p. 1. "Minutes of Common Council of New York," Vol. II, pp. 173, 176. "New York Historical Society Collections," Vol. XLIII, pp. 65, 172, 245; Vol. XVIII, pp. 600, 618. "Index of Conveyance, Office of Register of the City of New York." "Records, Dutch Church in New York," Vol. I, p. 76; Vol. II, pp. 233, 254, 288, 305, 320, 339, 352. Riker: "History of Newtown," pp. 380-81.)

II. Michael Bassett, son of Michael and Helena (Van Alst) Bassett, was baptized at the Dutch Church in New York City, January 21, 1705, the sponsors being Walter Thang, Rip Van Dam, and Sarah, his wife. He married, in Albany, April 18, 1728, Lysbeth Schermerhorn. (Third Schermerhorn Line III.) Children, baptized at Albany: 1. Michael, baptized August 10, 1729, died in infancy. 2. Lena, baptized December 12, 1731, died in infancy. 3. Cornelius, baptized August 14, 1734, died in infancy. 4. Lena, baptized November 19, 1735, died in infancy. 5. Lena, baptized May 14, 1738. 6. Michael, baptized September 28, 1740, died in infancy. 7. Michael, of whom further. 8. Jannetje, baptized August 28, 1743. 9. Cornelius, baptized September 8, 1745. 10. Cornelius, baptized January 24, 1748; married Engeltje Cool; had one child, Elizabeth, born January 5, 1770. 11. Annatie, baptized November 4, 1750.

("Records, Dutch Church, New York," Vol. II, p. 305. R. Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," p. 307. J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 16.)

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Michael Bassett, son of Michael and Lysbeth (Schermerhorn) Bassett, was baptized at the Reformed Church in Albany, October 25, 1741. He married, December 12, 1767, Maria, or Marytje, Van Vranken. (Van Vranken V.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, born March 20, 1768; married, April 16, 1787, Benjamin Winnie. 2. Susanna, of whom further. 3. Cornelius, baptized May 30, 1773. 4. Geertruy, born May 5, 1776. 5. Gerrit, baptized May 9, 1779. 6. Michael, born August, 1784. 7. Nicholas, born May 19, 1787.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 16.)

IV. Susanna Bassett, daughter of Michael and Maria, or Marytje (Van Vranken) Bassett, was born April 28, 1770, and was baptized at Albany. She died January 24, 1857.

Susanna Bassett married Johannes Devenpeck. (Devenpeck II.)

(*Ibid.* E. H. Becker: "Montgomery County Cemetery Inscriptions," in "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. LVII, p. 191.)

(The Vrancken (Van Vranken) Line)

Arms—Azure, a fesse wavy argent.

(Rietstap: "Armorial Général.")

I. Ryckert Claase Van Vranken was one of two brothers who located at Albany at an early date. Their names indicated that they were sons of Claas Van Vranken. Ryckert C. Van Vranken owned a lot on Pearl Street, Albany, which he sold to Johannes Wendel in 1684. In 1672, he and Claas Janse Van Boekhoven purchased land at Niskayuna for five hundred and fifty skipels of wheat. Although Niskayuna is now a township in Schenectady County, the term was originally applied to land on both sides of the Mohawk River. The portion lying north of the river is now in the town of Clifton Park, Saratoga County, and it was in this portion that he located. Some of his descendants still reside there, in the vicinity of Vischer's Ferry.

Ryckert Claase Van Vranken married Hillegonda. Children: 1. Maus, built a fort at Niskayuna in 1704; married Annatie, whose surname is unknown. 2. Gerrit Ryckertse, or Ryckse, of whom further. 3. Isaac, taken captive to Canada at the time of the Schenectady massacre of 1690, but escaped with two others and returned to Schenectady. 4. Margaret.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Schenectady," p. 248.)

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Gerrit Ryckertse, or Ryckse, Van Vranken, son of Ryckert Claase and Hillegonda Van Vranken, resided in that part of the town of Niskayuna which was north of the Mohawk River. His brother, Maus, also resided there. On April 22, 1708, they received a patent extending their farms one mile north. Gerrit R. Van Vranken was buried January 13, 1748.

He married, in Albany, New York, September 27, 1696, Barber Janse, who was buried January 13, 1748. Children, baptized in Albany, New York: 1. Ryckert, of whom further. 2. Alida, baptized September 3, 1699, buried March 12, 1729. 3. Anna, baptized June 20, 1703. 4. Margarita, baptized April 1, 1705; married Johannes Bratt. 5. Johannes, baptized October 24, 1708; married Anna. 6. Hillegonda, baptized October 12, 1711. 7. Andries, baptized August 7, 1715; married, August 14, 1750, Maria Groot.

(*Ibid.*, p. 249. J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 137.)

III. Ryckert Van Vranken, son of Gerrit and Barber (Janse) Van Vranken, was baptized December 12, 1697, and died April 28, 1746. He married, in Schenectady, February 9, 1723, Maria Bratt, who was born September 22, 1698, and died September 27, 1774. She was a daughter of Dirk and Maritje (Van Eps) Bratt, and granddaughter of Arent and Catalyntje (De Vos) Bratt and of Johannes and Elizabeth (Janse) Van Eps. Children: 1. Alida, baptized in Albany, December 18, 1723; married Johannes Pearse. 2. Maria, born August 5, 1725; married Reyer Schermerhorn. 3. Barber, baptized in Albany, September 24, 1727; married Pieter Pieterse Bogart, of Albany. 4. Baata. 5. Gerrit, of whom further. 6. Dirk, baptized May 21, 1732. 7. Richart, born August 20, baptized September 15, 1734, died September 11, 1805; married, April 26, 1760, Maria Marselis. 8. Elizabeth, born July 5, baptized July 31, 1736; married Andrier Truex. 9. Anna, born September 13, 1739.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 137. J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Schenectady," pp. 19-20, 221, 249.)

IV. Gerrit Van Vranken was the son of Ryckert and Maria (Bratt) Van Vranken. He was one of the witnesses at the baptism of Susanna and Gerrit, children of Michael and Marytje (Van Vranken) Bassett. He married (first) Susanna Egbertse, and (second), about 1765, Alida Reyly. Children: 1. Maria, or Marytje, of whom

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

further. 2. Elizabeth, baptized September 10, 1749, died in infancy. 3. Elizabeth, baptized November 7, 1752, died in infancy. 4. Geertruy, baptized October 20, 1754; married, March 21, 1779, John Gates, of Halve Maan (Half Moon). He was witness at the baptism of Michael, son of Michael Bassett. 5. Elizabeth, baptized December 31, 1758. 6. Ryckert, born May 14, 1766.

(J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Albany," p. 138.)

V. Maria, or Marytje, Van Vranken, daughter of Gerrit and Susanna (Egbertse) Van Vranken, was baptized at Albany, New York, November 16, 1746. She married Michael Bassett. (Bassett III.) Proof that the Maria Van Vranken, who married Michael Bassett, was the daughter of Gerrit and Susanna (Egbertse) Van Vranken, and not of another, lies in the fact that Gerrit and his wife were witnesses at the baptism of Susanna, daughter of Michael Bassett; that Gerrit Van Vranken and Geertruy Van Vranken were witnesses at the baptism of Gerrit, son of Michael Bassett; that John Gates was witness at the baptism of Michael, son of Michael Bassett; that Michael Bassett was witness to the baptism of Elizabeth, daughter of John Gates and Geertruy Van Vranken, July 29, 1781; and that Michael Bassett named two of his children after his wife's parents. There was only one Gerrit Van Vranken who married a woman named Susanna and had a daughter Geertruy.

(*Ibid.* J. Pearson: "First Settlers of Schenectady," p. 249.)

(The Schermerhorn Line—Line Three)

I. For introduction and generation one, see first Schermerhorn line.

II. *Cornelius Schermerhorn*, son of Jacob Janse and Jannetie (Egmont) Schermerhorn, was born about 1668. As he is referred to as in his minority in his father's will, dated May 20, 1688, he could not have been born earlier than 1668; however, it is quite likely he was fully at the age of sixteen when, in 1684, he is referred to as master of the sloop "Star," which in that year made at least four trips between New York and Albany. Cornelius and his sister, Jannetie, after their father's death, probably lived with their brother, Simon, and his family in Schenectady Village, as they are mentioned among the refugees of the Schenectady massacre in 1690, who received

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

a portion of the supplies that were distributed among the sufferers. The rest of the family must have been living at "Schermershorn Mills," which was some distance from the scene of the massacre. On June 17, 1692, the name of Cornelius Schermershorn was listed among those of a party of twenty-seven Ulster County men who were detached for Colonel Peter Schuyler's company, probably for service against the French and Indians. On January 11, 1699, he is listed among the Albany County residents signing the oath of allegiance to King William. It is likely that he continued his occupation as sailing-master, as it is noted that his son, Hendrick's baptism in 1699 is registered at the Dutch Church in New York City, and on May 7, 1702, Cornelius rendered an account for "towing pinnace" and giving passage to soldiers from New York to Albany. At this time his sloop was named "Mary," probably after his wife. However, Cornelius Schermershorn did not hand down this occupation to his descendants, and by 1708, he must have settled down to a more centered life for, on October 14, he was appointed constable of the First Ward of Albany. In October, 1715, his name is found on the muster roll of Captain Johannes Mingael's company of Albany City Militia, and on June 11, 1720, he is listed as a freeholder in the Second Ward of Albany. Cornelius Schermershorn was appointed firemaster of the Third Ward of Albany, November 27, 1722.

Cornelius Schermershorn married, in Albany, March 21, 1695, Maritie Van Buren, daughter of Hendrick Cornelise and Elizabeth (Van Slyck) Van Buren. She was buried, February 1, 1730, at the Albany Dutch Church. Children: 1. Jacob, baptized in Albany, October 4, 1696; was an early resident of the city of Albany, where he served as firemaster and constable; removed to the Manor of Livingston, where he served as deacon of the church in 1735, and elder in 1740, 1748, and 1751; married, in Albany, May 14, 1718, Johanna (Anna) Beekman, baptized in New York, December 4, 1696, daughter of Marten and Neeltje (Slingerland) Beekman. 2. Hendrick, baptized in New York, September 9, 1699, probably died young. 3. Hendrick, baptized in Albany, February 23, 1701. 4. Cornelius, baptized in Albany, September 9, 1705; married Annatje Dekker, daughter of Jan and Tysje (Bogart) Dekker. 5. Lysbeth, of whom further. 6. Jannetje, baptized in Albany, April 23, 1710.

(Richard Schermershorn: "Schermershorn Genealogy," pp. 307-311.)

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Lysbeth Schermerhorn, daughter of Cornelius and Maritie (Van Buren) Schermerhorn, was baptized in Albany, February 16, 1707. She married Michael Bassett. (Bassett II.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Schermerhorn Line—Line Four)

For introduction and generations one, two and three, see first Schermerhorn line.

IV. William Schermerhorn, son of Jacob and Margarita (Teller) Schermerhorn, was baptized in Schenectady, New York, November 10, 1722. His will, dated June 28, 1809, was proved May 6, 1811, and filed in Schenectady. In it, he mentioned his wife, Eva, and all of his children, excepting Jacob. He resided in Schenectady. On January 5, 1758, he was commissioned first lieutenant in Captain John Sander's company of Schenectady Militia. William Schermerhorn served as an elder in the First Reformed Church of Schenectady in 1772, 1781, and 1785.

William Schermerhorn married (first), in Schenectady, June 17, 1745, Elizabeth Van Der Volgen, born September 7, 1725, daughter of Lourens and Susanna (Welleven) Van Der Volgen. He married (second) Eva De Graaf, born April 27, 1725, daughter of Jesse and Altie (Hennions) De Graaf. Children, of first marriage, baptized in Schenectady: 1. Jacob, who was a private in Captain Nicholas De Groot's company of Schenectady Militia, May 19, 1767; lost on Lake Ontario. 2. Lourens, of whom further. 3. Margarita, baptized September 29, 1751; married, in Schenectady, January 29, 1775, Abraham De Graaf. 4. Nicholas De Graaf, baptized March 23, 1755, died young. 5. Nicholas, baptized June 18, 1758, died young. 6. Nicholas W., baptized September 21, 1760; married Engeltie Schermerhorn, born August 11, 1760, died October 6, 1834, daughter of Ryer and Maria (Van Vranken) Schermerhorn. 7. Elizabeth, baptized October 18, 1767.

(Richard Schermerhorn: "Schermerhorn Genealogy," pp. 82-83, 99.)

V. Lourens Schermerhorn, son of William and Elizabeth (Van Der Volgen) Schermerhorn, was baptized in Schenectady, February 12, 1749, and died in Rotterdam, March 26, 1836-37. The name of Lourens Schermerhorn is found on the rolls of Captain Nicholas

DEVENPECK, SCHERMERHORN AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Groot's company of Schenectady Militia, May 19, 1767. Later he served in the Revolution, as his name appears on the State Pension Roll in 1834.

Lourens Schermerhorn married (marriage license, July 21, 1775) Geesie Viele, born in 1760, died September 26, 1847, daughter of Nicholas and Neeltje (Schermerhorn) Viele. Children, baptized in Schenectady: 1. Nicholas V., born October 21, 1776, died November 29, 1821; married Maria Schermerhorn, baptized in Schenectady, June 22, 1777, daughter of Jacob and Maria (Vedder) Schermerhorn. 2. Elizabeth, of whom further. 3. Neeltje, baptized April 29, 1781; married Henry Bastiance, of Indiana.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 99, 118.)

VI. Elizabeth Schermerhorn, daughter of Lourens and Geesie (Viele) Schermerhorn, was born in December, 1778. She married Evert Schermerhorn. (Second Schermerhorn Line V.)

(*Ibid.*)



Henry Bronson, M. D., Distinguished Physician and Educator

BY HEROLD R. FINLEY, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



PROFESSOR of materia medica and therapeutics at Yale University, and one of the most distinguished practitioners in Connecticut medical history, Dr. Henry Bronson occupied a position of prominence in affairs of this State during his long life. He was especially famous for his researches into the cause and cure of Asiatic cholera, but he neglected no opportunity to be of service to his fellowman, or prosecute with fullest vigor the warfare against the dread forces of illness and disease.

Dr. Bronson was a descendant of a long line of honorable forebears.

I. John Bronson, the American ancestor of this family, was born in England, and died in Farmington, Connecticut, November 28, 1680. He is believed to have come to New England in 1636 with the Rev. Thomas Hooker, of whose church he was a member. He was one of the earliest settlers in Hartford, and was a soldier in the bloody Pequot battle of 1637. His house-lot, supposed to have been given for service in the Pequot War, was in the "soldiers' field," so-called, in the north part of the village of Hartford on the "Neck Road." He was living there in 1640, but after the purchase of Tunxis (Farmington), Connecticut, by the Hartford people, he removed to that place. Here he was active in the organization of the Farmington Church, and took a prominent part in town affairs. He was deputy to the General Court in 1651 and later years, served as constable of Farmington and is recorded as a freeman in 1669. The name of his wife has not been preserved. Children: 1. Jacob, born in January, 1641; died in 1708; married Mary. 2. John, born in 1643, or January, 1644. 3. Isaac, of whom further. 4. Mary; married John Wyatt. 5. Abraham, baptized November 28, 1647; removed to Lyme, Connecticut; married Hannah Griswold, daughter

July 1932



LAURENS de RASIÈRE—1641-1694

Son of Isaac de Rasière, The New Netherlander, 1595-1670

(From an oil painting by Nicolaes Maes)

VOL. XXVI

JULY, 1932

NUMBER 3

AMERICANA

ILLUSTRATED



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Inc.
SOMERVILLE, NEW JERSEY
AND
NEW YORK CITY

Entered at the Post Office in Somerville, N. J., as Second Class Matter, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

Copyright, 1932
The American Historical Society, Inc.

VOL. XXVI

JULY, 1932

NUMBER 3

AMERICANA

ILLUSTRATED



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Inc.
SOMERVILLE, NEW JERSEY
AND
NEW YORK CITY

Entered at the Post Office in Somerville, N. J., as Second Class Matter, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

Copyright, 1932
The American Historical Society, Inc.

AMERICANA

Published by THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC., formerly published by the National Americana Society. Issued in quarterly numbers at \$4 per annum; single copies \$1. Publication Office, the C. P. Hoagland Company Building, 16 Union Street, Somerville, N. J.

AMERICANA is a Quarterly Magazine of History, Genealogy, Heraldry, and Literature. Manuscripts upon these subjects are invited, and will be given early and careful consideration. It is desirable that contributions should contain not less than two thousand nor more than ten thousand words. Contributors should attach to their manuscript their full names, with academic or other titles, and memorandum of number of words written.

All correspondence relating to contributions should be addressed to the Editor. All communications should be addressed:

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, INC.,
Somerville, N. J., or 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City

OFFICERS AND EDITORIAL STAFF

President and Managing Director MARION L. LEWIS
Secretary F. M. KELLER
Research and Circulation Departments M. M. LEWIS

Editor-in-Chief

WINFIELD SCOTT DOWNS

Contributing Editors

EDW. D. CLEMENTS	WALTER S. FINLEY
JAMES A. DAILEY	HERBERT A. HULL
HEROLD R. FINLEY	WILLIAM B. TOWNE

CLYDE F. RYAN

<i>Biographical Editor</i>	HORACE A. WARRINER
<i>Heraldic Art</i>	MILDRED K. BAKLEY
<i>Historical Editors</i>	} EDWIN P. CONKLIN
	} E. MELVIN WILLIAMS

EUROPEAN RESEARCH ASSOCIATES

MR. A. T. BUTLER, Windsor Herald, College of Arms, Queen Victoria St., London, E. C. 4, England.

JOHN MACLEOD, 80 Montpelier Park, Edinburgh, Scotland

MR. EDWARD PHELPS, 3 Tobernea Terrace, Monkstown, County Dublin, Ireland.

DR. N. F. ÖSTMAN, Arkivarien (Keeper of the Stockholm City Archives) Rådhuset, Stockholm 8, Sweden.

FRU GUDRUN NATRUD, Arkivkonsulent, Statarkivet, Oslo, Norway.

Contents

	PAGE
Old Halifax, North Carolina - - - - -	321
By Armistead C. Gordon, LL. D., Litt. D., Staunton, Virginia.	
American Municipal Arms - - - - -	339
By Howard M. Chapin, F. R. Hist. S., Librarian of the Rhode Island Historical Society, Providence, Rhode Island.	
Two Heroes of Maryland - - - - -	355
By Marguerite Allis, New Haven, Connecticut.	
The Green Family of Printers - - - - -	364
By Douglas C. McMurtrie, Chicago, Illinois.	
Green's Harbor - - - - -	376
By George P. Peterson, Providence, Rhode Island.	
The Gold Star Pilgrimages to the American Overseas Cemeteries	381
By Mary F. Anderson, Washington, District of Columbia.	
The Expansion of New England in Southern New York—Long Island - - - - -	388
By Joel N. Eno, A. M., Brooklyn, New York.	
Isaac De Rasière, the First Secretary of New Netherland; His Ancestry and Descendants - - - - -	394
By Louis P. de Boer, A. M., Denver, Colorado.	
Bonapartes and American Marriages - - - - -	408
By Alta Ralph, Watertown, New York.	
Kendall and Allied Families - - - - -	422
By Herold R. Finley, Providence, Rhode Island.	

AMERICANA

July, 1932

Old Halifax, North Carolina

BY ARMISTEAD C. GORDON, LL. D., LITT. D.,* STAUNTON,
VIRGINIA



IN his recent book, "Sunlight on the Southside," Mr. Landon C. Bell discusses the routes of emigrants from Virginia into the Southwest, and calls attention to "the tide of emigration which flowed from Virginia into North Carolina and Tennessee, and thence into Kentucky and the West."

Long before this Virginia "tide of emigration" started Westward and Southwestward over the "Wilderness Road" about the middle of the eighteenth century, people from the Tidewater and Southside sections of the Colony of Virginia had begun to move South and to settle in the eastern part of North Carolina; and the records of those eastern Carolina counties give abundant evidence of the settlements of early Virginians in them who participated in this movement.

Not far south of the "Dividing Line" between the two Colonies lay the county of Halifax, formed in 1758 from Edgecombe County; and Colonel William Byrd, who left a history of the establishment of that famous "Line," and who was not very complimentary to North Carolina, said of these neighbors:

"The borderers laid it to heart if their land was taken in Virginia; they chose much rather to belong to Carolina, where they pay no tribute to God or to Cæsar."

Due, says Mr. Bell, to the fact that this early migration of settlers from Tidewater and Southside, Virginia, into North Carolina has been "inadequately understood," and little pains have been taken by the historians and genealogists to group and record the facts con-

*This article was one of the last works of authorship from the pen of this noted student and scholar. His death occurred October 21, 1931.

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

cerning it, the specific debt of North Carolina to these sections of the older part of the Colony has been little recognized. As an illustration of his statement, he states that the Carolina historians and genealogists "are yet ignorant of the date and place of birth of one (and the same is doubtless true of others) of the most distinguished of men connected with the early history of that Colony and State."

This was Willie Jones, of Halifax, who he says "was born in Albemarle Parish, Surry County, Virginia, May 25, 1741."

Halifax County, North Carolina, derives its name from the Earl of Halifax, who in 1758 was the first Lord of the Board of Trade. It is situated in the northeastern part of the State, and is bounded on the north and east by the Roanoke River, which separates it from Northampton County; on the south by Martin, Edgecombe and Nash counties, and on the west by the county of Warren.

Its county seat is Halifax town, situated on the west bank of the Roanoke; and county and town in their history are distinguished for their devotion to liberty and for the patriotism of their people. Halifax was represented in the Newbern Convention of 1774 by two of its most eminent citizens, Nicholas Long and Willie Jones; and in the important Hillsboro Convention, called to act upon the Federal Constitution adopted at Philadelphia in 1787, Willie Jones was the leader and moving spirit who, under Mr. Jefferson's inspiration, prevented its ratification at that time, because it was without a Bill of Rights.

Other distinguished citizens of Halifax in the Revolutionary period were: William R. Davie, a prominent officer in the Colonial armies, and later Ambassador to France; John Baptista Ashe, a brother-in-law of Willie Jones, who also opposed the adoption of the Federal Constitution, and later became a member of Congress and Governor of the State; and Nicholas Long, a son of Gabriel Long, of Virginia, and Commissary-General of North Carolina.

Connected with Halifax through his association with Willie Jones, was one of the most celebrated figures in the naval history of the Revolution. Colonel Cadwallader Jones, in his "Genealogical History," writing of the two brothers, General Allen Jones and Willie Jones, says:

Gen. Allen Jones resided at Mt. Gallant in Northampton County, at the head of Roanoke Falls.

Willie Jones lived at "The Grove," near Halifax. These old

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

mansions, grand in their proportions, were the homes of abounding hospitality. In this connection, I may mention that when John Paul Jones visited Halifax, then a young sailor and a stranger, he made the acquaintance of those fine old patriots, Allen and Willie Jones; he was a young man but an old tar with a bold, frank sailor-bearing that attracted their attention. He became a frequent visitor at their houses, where he was always welcome. He soon grew fond of them, and as a mark of his esteem and admiration, he adopted their name, saying that if he lived he would make them proud of it. Thus John Paul became Paul Jones—it was his fancy. He named his ship the "Bon Homme Richard," in compliment to Franklin; he named himself Jones in compliment to Allen and Willie Jones. When the first notes of war sounded he obtained letters from these brothers to Joseph Hewes, member of Congress from North Carolina, and through his influence received his first commission in the navy. I am now the oldest living descendant of Gen. Allen Jones. I remember my aunt, Mrs. Willie Jones, who survived her husband many years, and when a boy I have heard these facts spoken of in both families."

In her "Women of the Revolution," Mrs. Ellett speaks of Mrs. Willie Jones, Mrs. Allen Jones, and Mrs. Nicholas Long as exhibiting a patriotic zeal, a noble spirit and a devotion to their country which illustrated the attachment of the women to the cause of the Revolution.

Mrs. Willie Jones was a daughter of Colonel Joseph Montford, a strong patriot, a prominent citizen of Halifax, and a colonel of the Halifax Militia before the outbreak of the war. He was distinguished as a Mason; and died in 1776, just as the Revolution was beginning.

Another of his daughters, as stated, married John Baptista Ashe.

Mrs. Willie Jones was famous for her personal beauty, her brilliant wit and her suavity of manners. She is said to have been "devotedly and enthusiastically loved by every human being who knew her."

It was her individual charm, even more than the admiration which the young Scotch sailor, John Paul, had for her as well as for her husband, that caused him to add Jones to his name, when he left Halifax and went into the American Navy.

When Cornwallis, in 1781, led his army north from Wilmington to its final surrender at Yorktown, he remained several days in Halifax, where some of his officers were quartered among the families of the town. They were treated courteously but coldly by their reluctant

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

hosts; and more than one story has come down of the scars inflicted on the vanity of some of them by the wit of these patriotic women. Colonel Banastre Tarleton, Cornwallis' leader of cavalry, had been wounded in the hand by a sabre cut in a personal encounter on the field with Colonel William Washington. One day at "The Grove," during his stay in Halifax, the Englishman spoke to Mrs. Jones in sneering terms of his recent opponent, saying that he understood that Colonel Washington was an ignorant and illiterate boor, hardly able to write his own name.

"Ah, Colonel," said Mrs. Jones to Tarleton, "you should know better than that, for you carry on your person the proof that he can at least make his mark!"

The English general, Leslie, with some of his officers, was quartered at the house of Mrs. Jones' sister, Mrs. Ashe, during the stay of the invading army in Halifax; and here Tarleton continued his vituperation of Colonel Washington, saying to Mrs. Ashe that he would like to see the American officer, who he understood was insignificant looking and ungainly in person. Mrs. Ashe replied: "Colonel Tarleton, you would have had that pleasure, if you had looked behind you at the battle of the Cowpens!"

Tarleton, enraged, involuntarily grasped the hilt of his sabre. General Leslie at this moment entered the room, and observing the anger of the officer and the sudden agitation of the lady, inquired the cause. She repeated the brief conversation, and Leslie said, with a smile: "Say what you please, Mrs. Ashe, Colonel Tarleton knows better than to insult a lady in my presence."

Colonel William R. Davie was long a resident of Halifax County. He was born in England and came to America at the age of five years. He was a student at Princeton, which he left in 1776 to enter the Continental Army, serving in the North, and returned to college after the campaign, where he graduated with the first honors of the college. Again joining the army, he became captain and was severely wounded in the battle of Stono, which temporarily incapacitated him for military service. Again, in 1780, he answered the call to arms, and raised a troop of cavalry and two companies of infantry, equipping them out of his own private funds. He took an active part in the battle of Hanging Rock, of which he wrote a vivid account that is published in Wheeler's "History of North Carolina."

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

He served successively as captain, major, and colonel, and was at the battles of Guilford Court House and Hobkirk's Hill, and at the evacuation of Camden and the siege of Ninety Six. In 1781, he became commissary general of North Carolina; and at the close of the war he resumed the practice of law at Halifax, and married Sarah Jones, daughter of General Allen Jones, and niece of Willie Jones. He was a brilliant and successful lawyer, and was in his fifteen years at the bar employed in many of the most important criminal cases in the State.

He held many political offices. In 1787, he was a delegate to the Federal Convention at Philadelphia, upon which, though but thirty-one years old, he made a decided impression by his knowledge and eloquence. He was called away from the convention a few days before its adjournment by an important law case, and his name does not appear among the signers. He was a member of the State Convention at Hillsboro in 1788, and after the later ratification of the Federal Constitution at Fayetteville he was offered by President Washington a district judgeship, which he declined. He served in the General Assembly for a number of terms, and was one of the founders of the State University at Chapel Hill. In 1798, Congress having provided a provisional army of 10,000 men, Colonel Davie was appointed by President Adams brigadier-general and was confirmed by the Senate July 1 of that year. In the same year he was elected Governor and inaugurated December 27.

On June 1, 1799, he was appointed by President Adams Ambassador to France and resigned the Governorship to accept that office. He was one of the three men to draw up the treaty with the French Government, which was ratified by Congress September 10, 1800. He is said to have been the handsomest and most distinguished looking man of the trio; and the story is told that an eyewitness of their meeting with Napoleon said: "I could but remark that Bonaparte, in addressing the American Legation, seemed to forget that Governor Davie was second in the mission, his attention being more particularly to him."

After his return from France he was appointed, in 1802, by President Jefferson, commissioner for the settlement between North Carolina and the Tuscarora Indians, and under the treaty between the State and the Indian chiefs, the remnant of the Tuscaroras removed to New York.

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

In November, 1805, General Davie left Halifax to live in South Carolina. During the War of 1812 he was appointed by President Madison major-general in the United States Army, and was confirmed by the Senate, but declined the appointment. He died in 1820, and was buried at Waxhaw Churchyard, just across the river from his plantation.

Willie (pronounced Wiley) Jones, a Virginian by birth, was one of the most important and distinguished figures of the State in the Revolutionary period, and in some respects one of the most remarkable men of his time.

Mr. Claude G. Bowers, in his book: "Jefferson and Hamilton; The Struggle for Democracy in America," draws a graphic and accurate portrait of this notable North Carolina lieutenant of Thomas Jefferson in his formation of the Republican party:

In North Carolina Jefferson found a leader cut from his own pattern, an aristocratic democrat, a radical rich man, a consummate politician who made the history that lesser men wrote without mentioning his name—Willie Jones, of Halifax. His broad acres, his wealth, his high social standing were the objects of his pride, and he lived in luxury and wore fine linen while the trusted leader of the masses, mingling familiarly with the most uncouth backwoodsmen, inviting however, only the select to partake of the hospitality of his home. There was more than a touch of the Virginia aristocrat of the time in his habits—he raced, gambled, hunted like a gentleman. Like Jefferson, he was a master of the art of insinuation, a political and social reformer. He loved liberty, hated intolerance, and prevented the ratification of the Constitution in the first State Convention because of the absence of a Bill of Rights. There he exerted a subtle influence that was not conspicuous on the floor. If he was neither orator nor debater, he was a strategist, disciplinarian, diplomat, who fought with velvet gloves—with iron within. A characteristic portrait would show him puffing at his pipe in the midst of his farmer followers, suggesting, insinuating, interspersing his political conversation with discussions of the crops, farming implements, hunting dogs, horses. An Anthony in arousing the passions by subtle hints, he was an Iago in awakening suspicions. Here was the man with the stuff that Jefferson required, generous and lovable in social relations, in politics relentless, hard as iron. He was the Jefferson of North Carolina—"A man . . . the object of more hatred and more adoration than has ever lived in that State."

His home was "The Grove," situated in the southern end of the town of Halifax, near Quanky Creek, built in the year 1765. The

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

house was seated amid beautiful grounds, and nearby its owner maintained a race track, which was used extensively by the residents of the town and by those who came from elsewhere to witness or take part in the races; and he kept a stable of pedigreed horses and is said to have kept a barge on the Roanoke River that was rowed by his liveried negro servants, like Washington's on the Potomac.

At the close of the War Between the States the house was unoccupied, and was taken possession of by the Federal soldiers. Later, it was owned and dwelt in by the families and children of Willie Jones' daughters, Mrs. Eppes and Mrs. Burton. It is now in ruins.

The Jones family came to Virginia from Wales about the middle of the seventeenth century. Robert Jones, grandson of the immigrant, moved to North Carolina, and was the agent of Lord Granville. He was educated at Eton in England, and was appointed Attorney-General for the Colony in 1761. As attorney for the Crown and agent of Granville's extensive domain, he became wealthy and was perhaps the largest landowner on the Roanoke River.

Willie Jones' earliest appearance in politics was in the Provincial Congress that met in Newbern in 1774, and he was a member of the succeeding Colonial conventions of 1775 and 1776. He was a member of the committee in 1776 which prepared a Bill of Rights, modeled on that of George Mason in Virginia, and is believed to have been the chief author of the document. He was president of the Committee of Safety, and Acting Governor until the election of the first Governor after the establishment of the State.

In 1787 he was elected to the Philadelphia Convention which made the Federal Constitution, but like Patrick Henry in Virginia, who "smelled a rat," he declined to serve. He was a member of the Continental Congress in 1780; and, as stated by Mr. Bowers, was the leader in defeating the adoption of the Constitution by the Hillsboro Convention on account of its lacking a Bill of Rights.

This was his last appearance in public life. He died in 1822 at his summer home near Raleigh, and was buried in his garden there.

Colonel Nicholas Long, of Halifax, was another citizen of Virginia extraction and probably of Virginia birth. He was a son of Gabriel Long, of Virginia, but neither the place nor the date of his nativity is known. His son, Nicholas, was a gallant soldier in the Revolution, and was in the battles of Camden, Cowpens, and Yorktown. He and

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

Major Hogg had the celebrated race after Tarleton at the Cowpens. It is related of the younger Long that in the battle two British cavalymen pursued him. He wheeled and sought safety in flight: they opened fire and in their hot pursuit became separated. Observing this, he suddenly turned and killed each of them successively with his sabre.

Colonel Nicholas Long's home was "Quanky," in the southern end of Halifax town, on Quanky Creek, opposite "The Grove." He was a wealthy planter, much given to hospitality: and his house was frequented by the many prominent men who visited Halifax. When President Washington made his tour of the South, he is said to have stopped with Colonel Long for several days at "Quanky."

His first wife was Mary Reynolds, and his second was Mary McKinnie, daughter of John McKinnie, and granddaughter of Barnaby McKinnie, who represented Edgecombe County in the Colonial Assembly of 1734.

By his first marriage Colonel Long had two children: Gabriel Long, and Anne Long, who married William Martin, of Halifax. Among the descendants of William and Anne Martin were: William H. Battle, of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, and Kemp Plummer Battle, president of the University of North Carolina. William Martin, 2d, a son of William and Anne Martin, married Betsey Macon, daughter of the Hon. Nathaniel Macon, who John Randolph, of Roanoke, said was "the most honest man he ever knew."

Mrs. Ellett, in her "Women of the Revolution," says of Colonel Nicholas Long's second wife, Mary McKinnie:

Colonel Long was commissary-general of all the forces raised in North Carolina, and superintended the preparation in workshops, erected on his own premises, of implements of war and clothing for the soldiers. His wife was a most efficient coöperator in this business. She possessed great energy and firmness, with mental power of no common order. Her praises were the theme of conversation among the old officers of the army as long as any were left who had known her. She died at about 80 years of age, leaving a numerous offspring.

Mary, a daughter of Colonel Nicholas Long and his wife, Mary McKinnie, was one of the most famous beauties and belles of her day in North Carolina. McCree, in his "Life of Judge Iredell," gives a description written by his brother, Thomas Iredell, of the festivities which followed the marriage of Mary Long to Colonel Bassett Stith, of Virginia, in 1790:

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

Thomas Iredell visited Halifax, July, 1790. A letter from him gives a characteristic account of the gay and opulent borough. "The divine Miss Polly Long" had just been married to Bassett Stith, a Virginia beau. The nuptials were celebrated by twenty-two consecutive dinner parties in as many different houses; the dinners being regularly succeeded by dances, and all terminated by a grand ball.

Among the children of Colonel Bassett Stith and Mary Long were: Maria Stith, who married Judge Joseph J. Daniel, one of the three judges of the Supreme Court of North Carolina, whose other members at the time were Judges Ruffin and Gaston; and Martha Stith, who married Hon. J. R. J. Daniel, attorney-general of the State and for many years member of Congress. A son of J. R. J. Daniel and Martha Stith was General Junius Daniel, C. S. A., a gallant and distinguished officer, who fell in the battle of Spottsylvania Court House, May 13, 1864.

Judge Joseph J. Daniel was a native of Halifax, a grandson of William Daniel, of Virginia, who was descended from the Daniel family of the "Northern Neck" of Virginia, which numbered among its members Judge Peter V. Daniel, of the Supreme Court of the United States, and Hon. John Warwick Daniel, for many years United States Senator from Virginia. One of Judge Joseph J. Daniel's grandsons is Hon. George Gordon Battle, the eminent New York lawyer.

Judge Daniel lived in the town of Halifax, and had a country place, "Burncourt," in the county. He achieved great distinction in his early manhood, and was one of the most brilliant lawyers of the State. He was a member of the House of Commons for a number of years, was appointed judge of the Superior Court in 1816, and in 1832 was elevated to the Supreme Bench, which position he held until his death in 1848.

He was a man of great simplicity of character, and many stories are told of his artlessness. One who knew him well said that "the most ordinary details of his farm were Dutch to him," and that "he could not even plant a row of corn." Another said that he was kind and charitable, and was accustomed to send around his servants with meal and meat to his indigent neighbors. In his time it was no reflection upon a man "to take a drink" with a friend; and whenever he did Judge Daniel always insisted on paying for his own drink.

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

Chief Justice Ruffin said of him at the time of his death:

Judge Daniel served his country through a period of nearly thirty-two years acceptably, ably, and faithfully. He had a love of learning, an inquiring mind and a memory uncommonly tenacious; and he had acquired and retained a stock of varied and extensive knowledge, and especially became well versed in the history and principles of the law. He was without arrogance or ostentation, even of his learning; had the most unaffected and charming simplicity and mildness of manners, and no other purpose in office than to "execute justice and maintain truth"; and, therefore, he was patient in hearing argument, laborious and calm in investigation, candid and instructive in consultation, and impartial and firm in decision.

Among the earlier notable citizens of Halifax was John Branch, who was educated at the State University, where he was a fellow-student and associate of Thomas H. Benton, who was in the United States Senate when Branch was Secretary of the Navy in President Jackson's Cabinet. During Branch's incumbency of this office occurred the famous episode of the disruption of Jackson's Cabinet over Mrs. Eaton.

Mr. W. C. Allen, in his "History of Halifax County," gives an account of Senator Branch's connection with the affair:

Soon after his entrance upon his second term as Senator, he was tendered by President Jackson the portfolio of Secretary of the Navy, which he accepted. John H. Eaton, at that time living in Tennessee, but a native of Halifax County, was made Secretary of War. Thus there was the singular coincidence of two natives of Halifax County being in the President's Cabinet at the same time.

President Jackson's Cabinet was disrupted in a singular way, and as two Halifax men were closely identified with the incident, it is here related. Secretary Eaton had married a widow Timberlake, about whom there were some uncomplimentary rumors. As a consequence of these rumors she was not received in the best circles of Washington. President Jackson was an intimate personal friend of Secretary Eaton, and noticed the snubs that Mrs. Eaton was receiving. He, therefore, undertook to have the social ostracism removed. He sent R. M. Johnston, of Kentucky, to Secretary Branch to express to him that the President thought the rumors regarding Mrs. Eaton were untrue, and intimated a wish that Branch might use his influence in Mrs. Eaton's favor.

Branch resented the effort of the President to influence his social relations, and at once tendered his resignation. His example was immediately followed by the other members of the Cabinet. Presi-

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

dent Jackson thus found that his diplomacy in social matters was not equal to his skill on the battlefield. Even Martin Van Buren, the Secretary of State, who was only remotely connected with the affair, left the Cabinet.

Benton, in his "Thirty Years in the Senate," says:

I was particularly grieved at this breach between Mr. Branch and the President, having known him from boyhood, been school-fellows together, and being well acquainted with his inviolable honor and long and faithful attachment to General Jackson.

None of the citizens of Halifax County ever held so many honorable positions as John Branch. He was at different times member of the General Assembly, Governor of the State, Representative in Congress, United States Senator, Secretary of the Navy, and Governor of Florida.

He was a man of incorruptible integrity, and a high order of ability, with an indomitable will-power and great urbanity.

He died at Enfield, January 4, 1863, and was buried in the cemetery near that town.

Another Virginia-born citizen of Halifax was Governor Hutchings G. Burton, the place of whose nativity was Mecklenburg County in Southside Virginia. His father, John Burton, was a soldier in the Revolutionary War. The son was educated at the Williamsboro Academy and the University of North Carolina, and studied law under Judge Henderson.

In 1810, he was elected Attorney-General of the State, and held the office until 1816, when he resigned. After representing Mecklenburg County, North Carolina, for two terms in the Legislature, on a visit to a former schoolmate, Willie Jones, Jr., he met Sarah, the youngest daughter of Willie Jones, of "The Grove," and sister of his friend, and married her. He immediately became a resident of Halifax, where he continued to practice law. He lived at "The Grove," and represented Halifax in the North Carolina Legislature in 1817. In 1819, he was elected to Congress, and served two terms.

In 1825, he was elected Governor of the State, and was instrumental in the ultimate establishment of a system of public schools. In 1826, he was nominated by President John Quincy Adams as Governor of the Territory of Arkansas, but the nomination was never confirmed by the Senate.

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

Governor Burton was an eloquent orator and an able debater. He had a summer home in the western part of Halifax County, known as "Rocky Hill." Here he was residing with his family at the time of his death, which occurred on a journey to Texas, where he owned property. On his way to Texas he visited a cousin in Lincoln County, and stopping at the "Wayside Inn" to spend the night, suddenly became ill and died in a few hours on April 21, 1836. He was buried in Unity Churchyard in that county.

A prominent citizen of Halifax was John B. Ashe, who has been described as "a determined son of liberty." He was a captain in the Revolutionary Army at the early age of nineteen, fought under General Greene, and was lieutenant-colonel at the battle of Eutaw. He was elected a member of the Continental Congress in 1787 and served until 1788. He was again a member of Congress from 1790 to 1793, and was elected Governor of the State in 1802, but died before his qualification for the office.

Willis Alston, Jr., an ardent follower of Thomas Jefferson, was a native and resident of Halifax County. He was elected a member of Congress in 1799, and held the office until 1815, when he retired. He was again elected in 1815, and served until 1831. For many years he was a member of the North Carolina Legislature, where he occupied a commanding position and greatly influenced legislation.

John Haywood was a resident of Halifax. He was a distinguished lawyer, and was Attorney-General of the State and a judge of the Superior Court. He was the earliest reporter of the State, and was the author of a "Manual of the Laws of North Carolina" and Haywood's "Justice." He subsequently moved to Tennessee, and wrote "A History of Tennessee." He was a leading lawyer of Tennessee and became a judge of the Supreme Court of that State, holding that office at the time of his death in 1826.

John R. J. Daniel was a native of Halifax, where he spent the larger part of his life. He was an able lawyer, and was a member of the State Legislature for several terms, and Attorney-General from 1834 to 1841, when he was elected to Congress, serving until 1851. He was a vigorous and fearless speaker and debater; and Thomas H. Benton, in his "Thirty Years," quotes from several of his speeches and accords him praise for his forensic powers. After his last term in Congress, he bought a plantation in Caddo Parish, Louisiana, on

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

the Red River, some twenty miles above Shreveport, where he spent much of his later life, and died there in 1868. He was a cousin of Judge Joseph J. Daniel, and married successively two of the sisters of Judge Daniel's wife, Maria Stith, who were daughters of Colonel Bassett Stith and his wife, "the divine Polly Long." He was the father of General Junius Daniel, C. S. A., who was killed in the battle of Spottsylvania Court House.

There are many other names of distinguished residents and citizens of the county and town of Halifax, whose careers adorn the history of their locality and of the State. Among them were: Bartholomew F. Moore, able lawyer and Attorney-General; Colonel Andrew Joyner, prominent in the politics of the county for many years, a soldier in the War of 1812, a business man of distinction, president of the Roanoke Navigation Company, which operated the first steamboat on the Roanoke, and president of the Weldon & Portsmouth R. R., which afterwards became the Seaboard; his second wife was the widow of Governor Hutchings G. Burton; General Lawrence O'Bryan Branch, brigadier-general in the Confederate States Army, president of the Raleigh & Gaston Railroad, member of Congress from the Raleigh District, serving until 1861, when he resigned at the prospect of North Carolina's secession, receiving upon his retirement from Congress the tender from President Buchanan of the Secretaryship of the Treasury, which he declined, and falling in battle at Sharpsburg; Colonel Francis M. Parker, gallant soldier of the Confederacy, who after participating in many battles of the War Between the States, was desperately wounded at Spottsylvania and incapacitated for further active service; Spier Whitaker, father and son—the father, an Attorney-General of the State, who removed before the war to Iowa—the son a Confederate soldier, who served in the ranks of the Confederate Army, participated in many of its battles, and remained steadfast and faithful until the end at Appomattox, becoming after the war chairman of the State Democratic Executive Committee, and Superior Court Judge; Walter N. Allen, who after practicing law in Halifax, removed in 1857 to Kansas, where he achieved great reputation as a stalwart Democrat, and as editor of the "Topeka Democrat"; Edward Conigland, born in Ireland, an able and prominent lawyer, and counsel for Governor Holden in his impeachment trial; and Thomas N. Hill, of State-wide reputation as a lawyer,

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

with an extensive practice in the State and Federal courts, whose second wife was Mary Amis Long, daughter of Col. Nicholas McKinnie Long, of Weldon. Though a Democrat, he received, in 1902, the following endorsement of his candidacy for the Chief Justiceship of the State from the Republican State Convention: "Resolved, That whereas the Republican party desires the elevation to the bench of the best fitted lawyer of the State, regardless of party affiliations, the candidacy of the Hon. Thos. N. Hill for Chief Justice of North Carolina is hereby endorsed, and we, the Republicans of the State, in convention assembled, do earnestly recommend him to the people of the State for this high office."

He was defeated by Judge Walter Clark, another distinguished jurist of Halifax County, who was then the incumbent of the office of Chief Justice.

Both of the two brigadier-generals from Halifax, General Lawrence O'Bryan Branch and General Junius Daniel, were killed in battle in the War Between the States.

General Daniel was the youngest of the three sons of Hon. J. R. J. Daniel. His two elder brothers died in early manhood. His mother was Martha Stith, daughter of Col. Bassett Stith, of Halifax, and his wife, Mary Long. He was a lineal descendant of John Stith, the immigrant to Virginia, who espoused the cause of Nathaniel Bacon, the younger, in his famous "Rebellion" in Virginia in 1676; and his earliest ancestor on the distaff side was Mary Randolph, daughter of William Randolph, of Turkey Island, Virginia, who was the progenitor of Edmund Randolph, Thomas Jefferson, John Marshall and Robert E. Lee. General Daniel's descent on the Randolph and Stith side was also through the Burvells and Bassetts, of Virginia, who were ancestors of the two Harrison Presidents of the United States.

General Junius Daniel was appointed, in 1846, to a cadetship in the Military Academy at West Point, from which he graduated in 1852, and was stationed for five years at Fort Albuquerque, New Mexico. Resigning his commission in the army at his father's solicitation, he became a planter, taking charge of his father's plantation on Red River. He married, in October, 1860, Ellen, daughter of Colonel John J. Long, of Northampton County, North Carolina, and upon the beginning of hostilities between the North and South, returned to his native State and entered the service of the Confederacy. He was suc-

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

cessively colonel of the Fourth, Fourteenth and Forty-fifth regiments, and was commissioned finally a brigadier-general in 1862. After participation in various battles, the troops under his command took part in the battle of Gettysburg, where General Lee accorded him the high praise of saying: "General Daniel, your troops behaved admirably and they were admirably handled." On May 11, 1864, he was killed in battle at Spottsylvania Court House, while leading his brigade in a charge. He was buried in the old Colonial Churchyard at Halifax, and a monument to his memory was, after many years, erected recently there by the patriotic Daughters of the Confederacy.

Many interesting and romantic legends and stories are connected with the early history of Halifax, among them being that of the Crowells. Two members of the family of Oliver Cromwell emigrated from England to New Jersey after the restoration of the Stuarts, and thence to Halifax, where they settled. Wheeler, in his "History of North Carolina," says:

They fled from England, from the political storms that impended over the name and house of the late Protector.

While on the voyage, fearing that persecution would follow from the adherents of Charles II, then on the English throne, they resolved to change the name. This was done with solemn ceremony, and by writing their names each on paper and each cutting from the paper the "m" and casting it in the sea.

The family pedigree on vellum, recording these facts, was with the family in North Carolina in an ornamental chest with other valuables, when by a party of Tarleton's Legion, in 1781, this chest was seized and taken off. These facts are undoubted. The record was again made up from the recollections of the family, and is still preserved among them. From one of them these interesting and curious facts are derived.

Here, in the quiet retreats of North Carolina, the aspiring blood of Cromwell found repose, and in the peaceful precincts of Halifax, the exquisite poetry of Gray was fully realized:

Some village Hampden, who with dauntless breast
The petty tyrant of his fields withstood,
Some mute inglorious Milton here may rest,
Some Cromwell guiltless of his country's blood.

Although, during the four years of the War Between the States, from 1861 to 1865, no part of Halifax County was occupied by Fed-

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

eral troops, memories still linger there of the story of its navy yard in a cornfield and of the construction from meagre materials of the Confederate ram, "Albemarle," which was built and launched on the Roanoke River in 1864 for service against the Federal forces and ships in and about Albemarle and Pamlico sounds.

The builder of the "Albemarle" was Gilbert Elliott, of Elizabeth City, North Carolina, who when he began its construction, was a youth of nineteen years of age; and its plans and specifications were prepared by John L. Porter, chief constructor of the Confederate Navy, who with Captain John M. Brooke, had designed and built the famous iron-clad, "Virginia," from the United States frigate "Merrimac," that fought the great sea fight with the "Monitor" in Hampton Roads.

Elliott said in his report to the authorities, subsequently published in Vol. V of the "North Carolina Regimental Histories":

During the spring of 1863, having been previously engaged in unsuccessful efforts to construct war vessels of one sort or another, for the Confederate Government, at one point or another in Eastern North Carolina and Virginia, I undertook a contract with the Navy Department to build an iron-clad gunboat, intended if ever completed, to operate on the waters of Albemarle and Pamlico sounds. Edwards Ferry on the Roanoke River, in Halifax County, North Carolina, about 30 miles below the town of Weldon, was fixed upon as the most suitable for the purpose. The river rises and falls, as is well known, and it was necessary to locate the yard on ground sufficiently free from overflow to admit of uninterrupted work for at least twelve months. No vessel was ever constructed under more adverse circumstances. The shipyard was established in a cornfield, where the ground had already been marked out and planted for the coming crop; but the owner of the land, W. R. Smith, Esq., was in hearty sympathy with the enterprise, and aided me then and afterwards in a thousand ways to accomplish the end I had in view. It was next to impossible to obtain the machinery suitable for the work in hand. Here and there, scattered about the surrounding county, a portable sawmill, blacksmith's forge or other apparatus was found, however, and the citizens of the neighborhoods on both sides of the river were not slow to render me assistance, but coöperated cordially in the completion of the iron-clad, and at the end of about a year from the laying of the keel, during which innumerable difficulties were overcome by constant application, determined effort and incessant labor day and night, success crowned the efforts of those engaged in the undertaking.

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

Seizing an opportunity offered by comparatively high water, the boat was launched, not without misgivings as to the result, for the yard being on a bluff, she had to take a jump, and as a matter of fact was "hogged" in the attempt; but to our great gratification did not thereby spring a leak.

The difficulties of the iron-clad were not ended when she reached the waters of the river. Commander Cooke was in charge. She was still unfinished. Having obtained two young officers and twenty men, and placed on board ten portable forges with numerous sledge hammers, Cooke started on his voyage down the river as a floating workshop. "Naval history," says a historian, "affords no such remarkable evidence of patriotic zeal and individual perseverance." Captain John N. Maffitt, of the Confederate Navy, gave a graphic continuation of the story:

On the turtle-back [he wrote in his "Reminiscences"], numerous stages were suspended, thronged with sailors wielding huge sledge hammers. Upon the pilot-house stood Capt. Cooke giving directions. Some of the crew were being exercised at one of the big guns. "Drive in Spike No. 10!" sang out the commander. "On nut below and screw up! Invert and sponge. Load with cartridge!" was the next command. "Drive in No. 11, port-side—so!" "On nut and screw up hard! Load with shells—prime!" And in this seeming babel of words the floating monster glided by.

After an active drill at the guns, an aide was dispatched to sound the obstructions placed in the river by the enemy. He returned at midnight and reported favorably, upon which all hands were called and soon the steamer was under way.

Soon that dull leaden concussion which to practiced ears denotes a heavy bombardment broke upon the ear, and ere long by the dawn's early light the spires of Plymouth greeted the sight.

It was at 3 A. M. on the 19th of April, 1864, when the "Albemarle" passed in safety over the river obstructions, and received without reply a furious storm of shot from the fort at Warren's Neck. Instantly grasping the situation, amid the cheers of his crew, Cooke made for the Federal gunboats that were chained together in the rear of Fort Williams, guarding its flank, and dashed nine feet of his prow into the "Southfield," delivering at the same time a broadside into the "Miami," killing and wounding many of her crew. Among the killed was numbered her commander, the brilliant Flusser. In ten minutes the "Southfield" was at the bottom, the prow of the ram still clinging to her and exciting for a few moments serious apprehensions for the safety of the "Albemarle." However, she was soon disentangled,

OLD HALIFAX, NORTH CAROLINA

and being released from the downward pressure was fiercely pursuing the enemy, who were finally driven out of the river:

The next day the Confederate forces under General Hoke carried the Federal defences of Plymouth by storm, captured the town, and took the entire garrison prisoners of war. The iron-clad, built in the cornfield of Halifax County, had performed a prominent part in the sanguinary and brilliant capture of Plymouth.

Some months later, after various other engagements with the Federal vessels, the "Albemarle" engaged near the mouth of the Roanoke an enemy fleet of seven vessels. After a terrific battle of four hours, in which her smokestack was riddled and she was otherwise crippled at the cost of great losses to the Federals, she put back to Plymouth, and lay almost a wreck until the night of October 27, 1864, when she was torpedoed and sunk by the intrepid Lieutenant William B. Cushing, of the United States Navy.

In this enterprise Cushing's own boat was swamped by the rush of the water, and of his thirteen officers and men all but himself and one other were either shot, drowned or made prisoners.

The "Albemarle" was raised by the Federals in April, 1865, and an Admiralty Court appraised her value at \$282,856, of which \$79,954 was distributed among the men who destroyed her.

The battle-battered smokestack of the "Albemarle" is now in the museum of the Historical Commission at Raleigh.

AUTHORITIES:

- County Records of Halifax County.
- Wheeler's "History of North Carolina" (1851).
- Col. Cadwallader Jones' "A Genealogical History" (1900).
- W. C. Allen's "History of Halifax County" (1918).
- Thomas H. Benton's "Thirty Years in the United States Senate."
- Landon C. Bell's "Sunlight on the Southside" (1931).
- Claude G. Bowers' "Jefferson and Hamilton: The Struggle for Democracy in America" (1925).
- "North Carolina Regimental Histories," Vol. V.
- J. T. Scharf's "History of the Confederate States Navy" (1887).
- John N. Maffitt's "Reminiscences of the Confederate States Navy" (1887).



American Municipal Arms

BY HOWARD M. CHAPIN, F. R. HIST. S., LIBRARIAN OF THE RHODE ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



MOST of the large cities of Europe adopted coats-of-arms in medieval times, and the smaller cities gradually followed suit, until at the present time nearly all of the municipalities, large and small, in the Old World have their own distinctive armorial bearings.

Most persons who have traveled much in Europe have come to recognize, even though perhaps unconsciously, many of the municipal devices: the cross with the sword in the first quarter for London; the medieval ship with the fleurs-de-lis in chief for Paris; the lion of St. Mark for Venice; the red fleur-de-lis for Florence; the castle for Hamburg; the key for Bremen; the bear for Berlin; the yellow and red shield, heraldically per fess or and gules, for Naples; the monk for Munich, and indeed many others.

In America the adoption of armorial bearings by municipalities has been somewhat slower, yet the leading cities have adopted them, as also many of the smaller ones.

The device used on the official seal of a city is not of very general interest, but when such device can be treated heraldically and can become the coat-of-arms emblematic of the city and its citizens, it becomes a matter of general interest. Such a municipal coat-of-arms can be used effectively on public buildings and semi-public buildings, on flags and banners, and can be incorporated into the insignia of all sorts of local institutions.

A distinctive coat-of-arms has a remarkable sentimental value that has long been appreciated by colleges, which have been very quick to adopt heraldic devices as one of those subtle influences which develop college spirit. In a like manner civic spirit and the consciousness of community entity and community interest is unconsciously developed by the use of heraldic city emblems.

Some of the American municipal coats-of-arms, especially those of the larger cities, such as New York, Chicago, Philadelphia, Balti-

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

more, Los Angeles, and Pittsburgh, are in perfect heraldic taste, as indeed are some of those of the smaller cities. Strangely enough, with all its culture and its boasted resemblance to an Old World city, Boston is still without a coat-of-arms.

NEW YORK—The city of New York has long borne as its arms: Argent, the sails of a windmill in saltire between two beavers passant in pale and as many tuns in fess all proper. The arms date back to colonial days when a crown was used for a crest. After the American Revolution the American eagle, perched on a demi-globe, replaced the crown. The supporters are dexter, a white man in colonial costume, holding in his right hand a sounding line, and sinister an Indian holding in his left hand a bow.

When New York was New Amsterdam, during the seventeenth century, the arms were: Gules on a pale sable, edged, three saltires coupé argent, a coat slightly differenced from that of Amsterdam, which was: Gules on a pale sable three saltires coupé argent. The crest of the New Amsterdam arms was a beaver.

This beaver motive from the crest of the arms of New Amsterdam became one of the charges on the arms of New York.

It is interesting to note that the arms of Amsterdam in Holland violated the so-called heraldic rule which prohibits the placing of color on color.

CHICAGO—Chicago chose for its armorial bearings: Argent six pallets gules a chief azure with over all a garb or. This is, of course, the arms of the United States of America differenced by the addition of a garb. The crest is "a sleeping infant proper reposed in a shell argent," and the supporters are dexter, a ship in full sail proper, and sinister "an Indian chief with bow and arrow proper standing on a promontory vert." The motto is *Urbs in Horto*.

PHILADELPHIA—Philadelphia, like New York, has had two coats-of-arms. The present one is: Azure a fess or between a plow in chief and a ship under full sail in base proper. The crest is a right arm, nude, embowed, coupé at the shoulder, holding a pair of scales. The supporters are dexter, a female figure standing full face, habited white and purple, crowned with an olive wreath, and in her right hand an open scroll charged with an anchor; sinister, a similar female

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

figure, habited white and blue, in her left hand a cornucopia. The motto is *Philadelphia maneto*.

The earlier arms used by Philadelphia were: Quartered (1) Azure on a fess argent two hands clasped, (2) argent a garb, (3) argent a pair of scales, (4) azure a ship under sail at sea. It will be noted that the device of the ship was carried over into the new coat-of-arms and the device of the scales in the old arms became the crest in the new ones.

BALTIMORE—Although the seal of the city of Baltimore is not armorial, the device on the seal, the Battle Monument, has been used as the charge on the city's coat-of-arms as borne on its flag, viz.: Sable the Battle Monument argent, within a border or.

PITTSBURGH—Pittsburgh appropriately adopted the arms of Pitt. It bears: Sable a fess chequy argent and azure between three bezants each charged with an eagle rising with wings displayed and inverted regardant sable, being the arms of Pitt to which are added the eagles for America. The crest is a triple towered castle sable, masoned argent.

Legally the eagles are gold rendered in varying tones to simulate relief as on a coin, but in common practice for practical reasons are rendered black, or gold outlined in black.

LOS ANGELES—The city of Los Angeles bears as its coat-of-arms: Quartered (1) argent six pallets gules a chief azure, for the United States; (2) argent a bear passant proper, a champagne and in dexter point a mullet gules, for California; (3) argent upon a rock issuant from the sea a cactus on which is perched an eagle displayed holding in its beak a snake proper, for Mexico; (4) gules a castle or, for Castile, impaling argent a lion rampant gules, for Leon.

The county of Los Angeles bears a somewhat similar coat which is as follows: Tierce in mantle (1) azure the eagle of the United States displayed holding an olive branch in his dexter claw and arrows in his sinister claw and on his breast the escutcheon of the United States, argent six pallets gules a chief azure; (2) purpure the eagle of Mexico displayed regardant perched on a cactus and holding in his beak a snake proper; (3) gules a castle or, for Castile. The crest is the bear passant proper of California with at dexter a mullet. These arms of the county must not be confused with the arms of the city.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

In the cast of most of our states, the coats-of-arms are not heraldic in spirit, but are of such sort, as one heraldic writer appropriately and sarcastically described, as "picturesque bits." This was largely owing to the fact that these "arms" were designed and adopted for the most part in the nineteenth century, the most decadent period of heraldic taste.

Nevertheless, the arms of Rhode Island, Connecticut, Delaware, Maryland, New Jersey, Colorado, and Pennsylvania conform to the very best heraldic usage.

Of course, any device is suitable for a seal, while only devices complying with certain heraldic principles are appropriate for coats-of-arms. Most American cities have adopted municipal seals. Many of these devices are not appropriate for armorial bearings, while many others might be treated heraldically or "gothically" and so transformed into appropriate coats-of-arms.

Many other American cities have adopted coats-of-arms which are used either on their seals or on their flags, or in some cases on both.

ALPHABETICAL LIST

ALBANY, NEW YORK

Gules two garbs or, on a chief argent a beaver felling a tree proper.

Crest—An old Dutch topsail sloop.

Supporters—Dexter, a farmer holding a sickle on his right arm, sinister, an Indian resting his left hand on a bow.

Motto—*Assiduity*.

ALLENTOWN, PENNSYLVANIA

Argent a heart gules.

Crest—An ancient lamp.

Supporters—Dexter an oak leaf, sinister an eagle.

The shield is in the unusual shape of a keystone, symbolic of Pennsylvania.

ATLANTIC CITY, NEW JERSEY

Per fess azure and argent three sloops contourné under sail counterchanged, in base a section of the boardwalk proper.

Crest—A lighthouse between two dolphins descendant.

Supporters—Two classic female figures, each holding a caduceus in one hand and a flower in the other.

Motto—*Consilio et Prudentia*.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

ATTLEBORO, MASSACHUSETTS

On a bend sinister between a factory and a locomotive in chief, and a plow in base, a chain.

Crest—A demi-cogwheel.

BALTIMORE—(See above)

BLACKSTONE, MASSACHUSETTS

Impaled; dexter, a cotton mill, impaling sinister argent two bars and in chief three cocks gules (for Blackstone).

Motto—Do well and doubt not.

BRIDGEPORT, CONNECTICUT

Per fess argent a demi-sun in splendor issuant, in base barry undy azure and argent an arm naked embowed holding a hammer.

Crest—An eagle displayed.

Motto—*Industria crescimus.*

BRIDGEWATER, MASSACHUSETTS

Or on a bridge a castle . . . , on a chief gules an ancient lamp.

BRISTOL, RHODE ISLAND

Barry undy azure and argent, on a chief undy of the second a mount vert.

Crest—Two crossed arms embowed, the dexter holding a pair of scales, and the sinister holding a serpent entwined about the arm.

Supporters—Dexter a ship under sail, sinister an Indian.

Motto—*Virtute et industria.*

CAMDEN, NEW JERSEY

Sable on a fess between three elephants' heads erased argent, as many mullets of the first, impaling a ship on the ways proper.

Crest—Out of a marquess' coronet a pine tree.

Supporters—Dexter a female figure habited with flaming torch of learning in her right hand a book in her left, and sinister a workman.

The dexter coat is that of Pratt, Earl Camden.

CANTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent a saltire gules between four door staples sable, a canton azure.

Crest—A triple-towered castle.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

These are the arms of Stoughton differenced by the omission of an escallop and by the addition of a canton. On the town seal the Staughton arms are still used undifferenced.

CHICAGO—(See above)

COLUMBUS, OHIO

Argent six pallets gules, a chief azure, over all a plate charged with the ship of Columbus at sea proper, with in middle chief a mullet of the first.

Crest—An eagle.

COLORADO SPRINGS, COLORADO

Per chevron argent a demi-sun in splendor issuant or, in base vert three ingots of the second, all within a border azure.

This device is carried on the city flag in an hexagonal shield. The green mount represented by the chevron lines symbolizes Pike's Peak.

CORAL GABLES, FLORIDA

Azure a cross charged with roundles, cantoned by (1) a triple-towered arch, (2) a pelican, (3) . . . and (4) a stalk of coral.

Crest—A palm tree.

Supporters—Dexter a classic female figure seated holding a pencil in her right hand and an open scroll in her left hand, and sinister a workman seated holding a hammer in one hand.

CRANSTON, RHODE ISLAND

Gules, three cranes within a border embattled argent.

Motto—*Dum vigilo curo.*

These are the arms granted in 1724 by Lyon, King of Arms, to Governor Samuel Cranston, for whom the city was named.

DARTMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure a buck's head cabossed argent.

Motto—*Utile dulci.*

DEDHAM, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure an oak tree.

Crest—A pair of scales.

Motto—Contentment.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

DENVER, COLORADO

Azure a key in bend sinister, wards downwards, argent.
One supporter; an eagle.

DUDLEY, MASSACHUSETTS

Or a lion rampant azure, a crescent for difference.
These are the arms of the family of Dudley, of Massachusetts.

EGREMONT, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure a chevron between three lions' heads erased or.
Crest—A lion's head erased.
These are the arms of Wyndham, Earl of Egremont.

ELIZABETH, NEW JERSEY

Gules four lozenges in fess argent, on a canton of the last a sinister hand, coupé at the wrist and appaumée of the first.
These arms are those of Carteret, which were adopted because Elizabeth was named for Lady Elizabeth, the wife of Sir George Carteret, Baronet.

FALMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure a sailing ship under full sail at sea, on a chief gules a plow.
Crest—On a mount a lighthouse.
The chief is often colored brown, although the tincture lines signify gules; that is, red.

FORT MYERS, FLORIDA

Argent a palm tree growing on a beach proper, impaling azure a fish hauriant and embowed, on a chief gules, a branch with three oranges proper.

FRAMINGHAM, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent six pallets gules, over all a wheel of which the six spokes are railroad tracks.
Crest—A school building.
The chief bears the lettering "Danforth Farms 1662," which might better be omitted.

GREAT BARRINGTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent three chevronels gules.
Crest—A bearded hermit's head in profile wearing a cowl and draped paly or and gules.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

The viscount's coronet beneath the torse might well be omitted. These are the arms of Viscount Barrington, with the label of three points omitted.

HARRISBURG, PENNSYLVANIA

Argent a dome azure its base line engrailed between in chief a bezant and a fleur-de-lis and in base three crescents or.

The shield is shaped like a keystone, symbolic of Pennsylvania.

HARTFORD, CONNECTICUT

A hart fording a river proper, in base on a plate three vines supported and fructed proper.

Crest—An eagle displayed rising.

Motto—*Post Nubila Phæbus.*

JAMESTOWN, RHODE ISLAND

Vert, a sheep argent.

This is one of the few American municipal arms that were adopted in colonial days.

KANSAS CITY, MISSOURI

Argent on a chief azure thirteen mullets of the first. The lower part of the shield is charged with an inscription which sometimes reads "Incorporated" and sometimes "Incorporated 1850." If this lettering were omitted, the arms would be in good heraldic taste.

KEENE, NEW HAMPSHIRE

An arm embowed holding a hammer.

KNOXVILLE, TENNESSEE

Quartered (1) a steam crane, (2) sable a hammer and axe in saltire, (3) a railroad train, and (4) gules a building.

Crest—Nine mullets.

Motto—Progress.

LANCASTER, MASSACHUSETTS

Gules a leopard passant or on a chief azure a fleur-de-lis argent.

Motto—*Ad alaunam ad nashuam.*

These arms are based on those of the borough of Lancaster in England.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

LEXINGTON, MASSACHUSETTS

The statue of the Minute Man (*i. e.*, the statue by Kitson).

Motto—What a glorious morning for America.

LINCOLN, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure a building, on a chief argent a cross gules charged with a fleur-de-lis or.

Crest—A chestnut tree.

The chief is based on the arms of Lincoln in England.

LITTLETON, MASSACHUSETTS

Per fess, azure a plow and argent three apples stalked and leaved proper.

Crest—The crest of Massachusetts.

Supporters—Dexter a settler, and sinister an Indian.

LOS ANGELES—(See above)

MALDEN, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure three leopards regardant or.

Crest—An open Bible.

Motto—*Auxilium ab alto.*

These arms are based on those of Maldon, England.

NEW BRITAIN, CONNECTICUT

Argent a beehive beset with bees volant proper.

NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT

A ship contourné under full sail at sea.

Crest—Mars' head.

Another New Haven seal, perhaps for the port authority, was: on a fess between two chevrons, three anchors palewise in fess.

Crest—The grapevine of Connecticut.

NEW LONDON, CONNECTICUT—(Port of [1799])

A ship under full sail at sea.

Crest—A bird regardant wings raised.

NEW YORK—(See above)

PHILADELPHIA—(See above)

PITTSBURGH—(See above)

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

PITTSFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS

Sable a fess checky argent and azure between three bezants.

Crest—A mural crown.

Motto—*Benigno numine.*

These are the arms of Pitt.

PLYMOUTH, MASSACHUSETTS

A cross, in each canton on a champagne between two small pine trees, a naked Indian on one knee, holding in his hands a flaming heart.

It is possible that the device shown as a flaming heart was originally the leaves or flower of some plant.

These were the arms of the Plymouth Company.

PORTLAND, MAINE

A Viking ship at sea.

Crest—An eagle displayed.

Motto—*Resurgam.*

PRINCETON, MASSACHUSETTS

Gules a saltire or surmounted by a cross engrailed ermine.

These are the arms of the Prince family.

PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND

Argent, the landing of Roger Williams proper.

Supporters—(Unofficial) dexter, a Revolutionary sailor with his right hand resting on an anchor; sinister, a Revolutionary military officer with his left hand resting on a drawn sword.

Motto—What cheer.

While the coat of arms of Providence may not be considered by some to be in the very best heraldic taste, precedents can readily be found in support of the use of an important historical or legendary incident on armorial bearings, as, for instance, St. George and the dragon on the arms of Moscow, St. Martin and the beggar on the the arms of Dover, St. Michael and the devil on those of Brussels, and the shipwreck of the Sea Venture on those of Bermuda.

PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND

COLONIAL TOWN COUNCIL

Azure in chief a sheep and a goose, in base a bee displayed or.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND

BOARD OF ALDERMEN

Argent in chief a bee displayed and a goose, in base a sheep azure.

RANDOLPH, MASSACHUSETTS

Gules on a cross argent five pierced mullets sable.

These are the arms of the Randolph family.

READING, PENNSYLVANIA

Sable a fesse or between in chief a beehive beset with bees volant of the last and in base a salamander in flames, over all an inescutcheon argent on a fess sable three plates.

Crest—Out of a mural crown the caduceus of Mercury.

Supporters—Dexter Thor, sinister Vulcan.

Motto—*Deo adjuvante labor proficit.*

REVERE, MASSACHUSETTS

Azure a colonial horseman (*i. e.*, Paul Revere) with in chief seven mullets and in sinister chief a decrescent.

Crest—An arm embowed holding a sword.

RICHMOND, VIRGINIA

Gules on a fess argent the inscription *Deo Vindice* of the first, in chief a saltire azure charged with ten mullets of the second.

The arms would be better if the motto were omitted from the shield and placed below it.

These arms are used on the city flag, but not on the seal.

ROCHESTER, NEW YORK

Or a fess between three crescents sable.

Crest—A crane argent.

This coat-of-arms, which is that of the Rochester family, is used by the city of Rochester on its flag, but not on its seal.

ROCKLAND, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent on a bend gules between three lions' heads erased sable three crosses patté of the first.

These arms are based on those of the family of Hatherley.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS

The arms of Salem are a "picturesque bit" of which the chief device is: a Chinaman holding an umbrella.

Crest—A dove holding in its beak an olive branch.

Motto—*Divitis Indiæ usque ad ultimum sinum.*

SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS—(Port of)

1786. A pine tree.

1804. A ship.

SAN DIEGO, CALIFORNIA

A fess engrailed between in chief a ship and in base an orange tree between two winged wheels.

Crest—A Spanish mission bell in belfry.

Supporters—The pillars of Hercules draped.

SAN FRANCISCO, CALIFORNIA

A steamer entering Golden Gate.

This might be described as: a paddle-wheel steamship at sea between two promontories.

Crest—A phœnix.

Supporters—Dexter a miner of 1849 holding a shovel and sinister a sailor of 1849 contourné using a sextant.

Motto—*Oro en Paz, Fierro en Guerra.*

SANDWICH, MASSACHUSETTS

(Azure) three ships' hulls in pale (argent).

These arms are based on those of Sandwich, England, from which the colors given above are derived.

SCHENECTADY, NEW YORK

Purpure a garb or.

SHIRLEY, MASSACHUSETTS

Paly of six or and azure, a canton ermine, on a plate the portrait of Governor Shirley.

Crest—An arm in armor embowed holding a sword.

These are the arms of Governor Shirley, to which his portrait has been added.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

SPRINGFIELD, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent, a Puritan. (The Puritan is a replica of the Statue of Samuel Chapin by Saint Gaudens.) It appears on the municipal flag. The ribbon bearing an inscription, which appears on the shield, should be placed below it.

STONEHAM, MASSACHUSETTS

A shoe and on a chief a currier's shave.

Crest—A goat.

The currier's shave appears as a charge on the arms of the Worshipful Company of Curriers of London.

STOUGHTON, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent on a saltire gules between four door staples sable an escallop or.

These are the arms used by Governor Stoughton.

TISBURY, MASSACHUSETTS

Three codfish in pale or, on a chief of the last two barrels.

Motto—*Takemmy*.

TRENTON, NEW JERSEY

Azure, three garbs or.

Crest—A horse's head.

TYNGSBOROUGH, MASSACHUSETTS

Argent on a bend cotised sable three martlets or.

Crest—A wolf's head issuant.

On the town seal the tincture lines show the field to be gules and the charges are left white as if argent.

WARWICK, RHODE ISLAND

Gules a chevron between three crosses botonnée or, on a chief of the last an eagle displayed of the first.

WINDSOR, MASSACHUSETTS

In chief a plow, in base three apples stalked.

Crest—The crest of Massachusetts.

Supporters—Dexter a settler, and sinister an Indian.

These arms appear to be the same as those of Littleton, Massachusetts.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

WILKES-BARRE, PENNSYLVANIA

Vert a beehive beset with bees volant or.

The device appears on a lozenge on the city flag.

It is not pretended that this list is a complete list of all of the American cities that have coats-of-arms. It is merely a list of such that have come to the notice of the writer, who will be pleased to receive any information relating to the armorial bearings of American municipalities.

Out of the seventy arms listed, twenty are based on personal arms that were used in Europe, and seven are based on European public arms, making a total of twenty-seven, or more than one-third, that were based directly upon European armorial bearings. Five were based upon the shield of the United States and others contain the American eagle as a motive.

American municipal heraldry has naturally developed in some cases along lines that differ from the usage of European heraldry. Perhaps the most obvious of these developments are the use of inanimate and botanical objects as supporters, and the widespread use of lettering upon the shield. Of course, lettering will occasionally be found on European municipal arms as in case of Rome, Seville and Ragusa, but in the United States mottoes and the municipality's name often appear on the shield. Such inscriptions should unquestionably be placed on a ribbon or scroll outside of the shield and preferably beneath it.

Naturally the arms of the United States are often used as a motive in the arms of American cities and likewise the State arms of New York, Massachusetts, Ohio and other states frequently appear in part, or as a whole, in the devices of the municipalities of the respective states.

Several Pennsylvania cities bear their devices on a keystone-shaped shield because the keystone is considered symbolic of Pennsylvania. Such usage, though somewhat extraordinary from an heraldic point of view, has much to justify it.

The placing within the outline of a shield a conglomeration of devices or a landscape does not constitute a coat-of-arms in the heraldic sense, nor is it possible to describe such a device in heraldic terms.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

Such designs, however, appear on the seals of many American cities, such as Cleveland, New Orleans, Minneapolis, Jersey City, and Springfield, and many of the smaller municipalities of Massachusetts.

Many American cities, which have no armorial bearings, carry on the seal or flag some distinctive device, which if placed upon a shield, would make a most appropriate and suitable coat-of-arms.

Such civic devices that have come to the writer's notice are included in the following list:

MUNICIPAL DEVICES

ATLANTA, GEORGIA—A phœnix.

BUFFALO, NEW YORK—Tenne a barrulet and a chief argent, over all a plate charged with the seal of the city, in the foreground a section of the Erie Canal in which is a canal boat and in the background a full rigged ship under sail on Lake Erie beside a lighthouse on a breakwater, surrounded by the inscription "Seal of the City of Buffalo."

Crest—An eagle displayed perched on a globe.

Supporters—Dexter Liberty, and sinister Justice.

Motto—*Excelsior*.

If the seal of the city were omitted the arms would be in good heraldic taste and artistically pleasing.

CINCINNATI, OHIO—Argent in chief a pair of scales, in base a sword and a caduceus in saltire points downwards, azure.

Motto—*Juncta juvant*.

HOUSTON, TEXAS—A locomotive between in chief a mullet and in base a plow.

INDIANAPOLIS, INDIANA—An eagle volant contourné holding in its beak a pair of scales.

JERSEY CITY, NEW JERSEY—Jersey City encloses its municipal device within the outline of a shield. On the city seal there is a two-masted ocean steamer in base, but on the city stationery there is a ferry boat in base. In chief there is a sailing ship under full sail between two buildings on the seal, but on the stationery the ship is shown contourné with sails furled.

Motto—Let Jersey prosper.

AMERICAN MUNICIPAL ARMS

This device might be improved heraldically if treated "gothically" as: "In chief a ship under sail, in base a ferry boat," with the view of the city omitted.

LYNN, MASSACHUSETTS—A shoe.

MIAMI, FLORIDA—A palm tree.

NEW LONDON, CONNECTICUT—A ship. Motto—*Mare liberum*.

NEW ORLEANS, LOUISIANA—New Orleans uses a rather unheraldic device of the "picturesque bit" type within the outline of a shield on its seal. The device on its flag is much simpler and might be blazoned:

Azure a chief gules on a fess argent three fleurs-de-lis or.

A precedent for charging metal upon metal may be found in the arms of Jerusalem.

NORFOLK, VIRGINIA—On a fess a plow, between in chief a ship and in base three garbs. Motto—*Crescas*.

PASADENA, CALIFORNIA—A key enfiled with a crown.

ST. LOUIS, MISSOURI—A Mississippi River steamer.

SAN ANTONIO, TEXAS—A mullet charged with a pair of scales.

TOLEDO, OHIO—Argent a blockhouse gules within a border azure.

WORCESTER, MASSACHUSETTS—A heart.



Two Heroes of Maryland

BY MARGUERITE ALLIS, NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT



THE curiosity awakened by the Washington Bicentennial has quickened interest in contemporaries of the great George, and in other less conspicuous anniversaries which, falling in this year, might otherwise be overlooked.

Time weaves a charm-enhancing veil across the memories of the illustrious dead; but, when the vanished have been in life surrounded by romance, this veil takes on an added sheen of glamour.

Thus it is with George Calvert, the first Lord Baltimore, founder of the Colony of Maryland; and with Charles Carroll, of Carrollton, longest surviving signer of the Declaration of Independence. This year of nineteen hundred and thirty-two marks the anniversaries of the deaths of both these men; the three hundredth of that of Lord Baltimore, and the one hundredth of Carroll, of Carrollton.

Coincident anniversaries connected by a thread of historical fact are not uncommon, but that two such romantic figures as these should die two hundred years apart, yet both be so closely concerned with the history of the United States, and the very soil of Maryland, is one of the interesting affinities of time. Sir George Calvert died the fifteenth of April in 1632; and Charles Carroll, November 14, 1832.

But to return to the romantic life-story of George Calvert, who was born in Yorkshire about 1582.

History makes claim on the attention on behalf of this man, but had he been insignificant in person would history have passed him by without a glance? Not that the lady has failed in her duty toward the uncouth who have risen in her very path and dared her to do her worst; but, like all women, has she not a penchant for the picturesque?

The spell of George Calvert was caught by King James' court painter, Mytens, who made it immortal upon his canvas. The shock of black hair, sweeping across a brow of dazzling whiteness, to fall behind the ears upon the wide, pleated ruff about his neck; the long, mesmeric eyes looking out from under heavy lids drooping at the cor-

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

ners; even the sinewy hand which rests its long fingers on the hilt of his sword, all cry aloud of a compelling personal magnetism.

After receiving the education customary for a young gentleman of his time, concluding with Oxford, in further accord with tradition at the early age of fifteen young Calvert was sent abroad to travel. Meager are the details of this journey, which must indeed have been momentous, at the close of the sixteenth century, when all travel was of necessity in a quadruped-drawn river scow, or on the back of a horse along old, old trails. But it was, in all probability, on this journey that George Calvert contracted that itching foot which was never to desert him; for once the "Wanderlust" enters the blood only complete disability can extirpate it.

Some of the seeds of Catholicism may have been sown in the heart of the young man at this time; fancy prompts that the beauty and the insidious charm of the great Continental cathedrals may have had something to do with it; at any rate he turned Catholic in 1624, after twenty years of connection with the Court of Saint James in various capacities. In the words of a contemporary chronicler:

"He fully confessed to the King that he was become a Roman Catholic, so that he must be wanting in his trust or violate his conscience in discharging his office." Thus ended his two decades of service.

This period had not been entirely spent over the secretary's desk, however, although he had served in that capacity to Lord Robert Cecil, and had been clerk of the Privy Council. His eyes, like those of so many adventurous spirits, had turned toward the New World, which was but then beginning to unfold its possibilities, and disclose its charms, to the Old.

Calvert had been a member of the great Company for Virginia, and, as a result of that experience, had, four years previous to the death of James I., obtained from that monarch a patent to the land on the southernmost headland of Newfoundland. At Avalon, as he called the place, Calvert, who had meanwhile been made a peer of Ireland and Lord Baltimore by the apostacy-hating James, in spite of his religion, expended a fortune in warehouses and a splendid mansion.

In the same year that he created the new peer, James died, and doubtless the change in government engendered had a part in the

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

revival of the spirit of adventure in the, by then, middle-aged Baltimore.

After the ascension of Charles I to the throne, Sir George visited his colony at Avalon a second time; a voyage fraught with all the dangers of that dangerous age, and not a little of its glamour, for, turning filibuster *en route*, he had a fight with some French ships which had been molesting his colony, and captured them.

Clothes do not make the man; but there is no gainsaying the effect they produce as part of the picture. There is no period equal to that of the early seventeenth century for romance in costume; the tall, wide-topped boots; the swaggering, plume-decked hats askew upon the falling curls of the cavaliers; the broad lace collars and velvet coats and breeches, serve to create some of the allure with which tradition has credited them.

One can fancy Lord Baltimore upon the quarter-deck of his white-winged craft, great boots wide-spread to steady himself against the roll of the tempestuous sea beneath his fragile bark; the wind of the Atlantic in his long hair, the while he scans the horizon with his keen glance in search of those harassing French ships.

"Sail Ho!" calls the look-out high among the shrouds. There is a hurrying and a scurrying about the decks of the little, high-pooped craft. Long, awkward guns are prepared for firing; sword and cutlass catch the gleam of the sun as they are whipped from their scabbards preparatory to boarding. The wind sings in the rigging; the white crests of the waves break high about the painted figure-head and send their spray in shining showers over the clean-stripped decks.

"They took the French ships," says the terse account.

Even today crossing the Atlantic is high adventure, albeit one travels free from concern of free-booters; safe and snug in a giant liner replete with all the comforts of home, and more. But in 1629 "going down to the sea in ships" was still the quintessence of hazardous daring and Romance spelled with a capital "R." This trip of Lord Baltimore must have embraced all the details of adventure set forth in the thrilling tales of the voyages of the period.

Although to our pampered existence the life of the English Court of Charles I would not seem one of voluptuous ease, it was comfort and luxury compared to that of Lord Baltimore's colony. Moreover, in contrast to the mildness of England the climate was terrible. There

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

can be no doubt Baltimore experienced real hardship, along with the discomfort; at any rate he was dissatisfied with his grant and appealed to Charles I for something more salubrious.

His visit to Virginia the previous year had not a little to do with his discontent; despite the cool reception accorded him in that colony on account of his religion, he had been delighted with the country, and would not rest until the reluctant Charles had agreed to give him a new grant, this time in the neighborhood of Chesapeake Bay.

The papers for this new patent, which included not only Maryland, but what is now Delaware and a portion of the present Pennsylvania, were in process of being drawn up when George Calvert died, leaving his heirs to reap the harvest of all his adventures.

There is a section of these papers in which the Crown solemnly exacts from the Calverts, as tribute, two Indian arrows, to be presented in person every year to the King at Windsor Castle on Tuesday of Easter week. Nothing was reserved to the Crown except allegiance, and one-fifth of all the gold and silver which might be found in the province, a proviso not destined to add greatly to the weight of that royal head-piece!

Various arguments have been set forth to account for the unique munificence of a Protestant monarch in making so grand a gift as a piece of land, almost as large as his whole kingdom, to a Catholic in the days when religious intolerance was hot and bitter. One incontestable authority advances the idea that it is accounted for by a secret understanding as to religious freedom.

George Calvert was, in truth, a man of much wisdom and moderation; but will that satisfy the student of history?

One likes to think that the personal charm of the first Lord Baltimore had not a little to do with it; it would not be the first time the fascinating personality of a courtier had succeeded in charming a royal bird off the bushes!

A copy of Mytens' famous portrait was presented to the State of Maryland in 1882; there you will see that handsome face, the firm mouth with its upturned moustachios, its pointed *royale* and those deep eyes which hold one captive. What sincerity of purpose, what strength of religious conviction had Charles Stuart, King of England, to oppose to that mesmeric charm?

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

It was a graceful gesture which caused the new plantation to be named after Charles Stuart's wife, that unfortunate daughter of great Henri IV of France. Poor Henrietta Maria, shivering on her scanty bed at the court of her brother, never knew what a sunny, pleasant land was to make her name immortal!

Could George Calvert have transmitted this intangible something to his descendants, along with the title of Lord Baltimore, fancy likes to toy with the possibility that all the turmoil which resulted from the hostility of a Protestant population and a Catholic landlord might have been avoided; and the early history of Henrietta Maria's Land been one flowing with the milk and honey of content and peace.

Charles Calvert, whose mother was that Anne Arundel for whom the county was named, was the grandson of the first Lord Baltimore, and is the connecting link between these two romantic figures of our narrative; for it was the third bearer of the title who appointed a certain Charles Carroll, immigrant to Maryland under William and Mary, to the position of judge, register of the land office and collector of the rents for his plantation along the Chesapeake Bay.

Charles Calvert, third Lord Baltimore, himself ruled over his tempestuous domain for twenty troublous years, continually disturbed by religious strife and restless under feudal supremacy. Although he himself was a broad-minded, level-headed man in favor of religious freedom, the fact that the Calverts were Roman Catholic was always a bone of contention in an English colony settled by rampant Church of England men.

In 1684 Lord Baltimore, grown tired of the constant internal strife, returned to England permanently. It was seven years later that he appointed Charles Carroll to the responsible position which that bearer of the name passed on to the second Charles, who, in his turn, became the father of "Charles Carroll of Carrollton," as his famous signature reads.

The second of these distinguished figures, commemorated here, is the more winning of the two. Charles Carroll, of Carrollton, combined not alone charm of manner with the spirit of adventure; but the soul of the pioneer with the high purpose of the votary.

He was a great gentleman, in the fullest acceptance of the word, who came into the world with an ancient heritage of twelfth century

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

Irish blood, descended from those princes of Ely who held sway upon the green isle on the edge of the Atlantic from that far-off time until the sixteenth century. The Kings of Munster, and the great Irish Houses of Ormond and Desmond, with a stray dilution of Scotch Argyll, poured their romantic life-stream into his veins.

Such was what ancestry promised him; what good he added, what evil he overcame, during his long life on these young shores where he was born, of whose history he became an integral part; and with whose dust he finally mingled his own, is the substance of this narrative.

Although Carroll was born on Maryland soil, and spent the first eight years of his life there, at the end of that time he was sent abroad to be educated, and did not see these shores again until he was twenty-eight.

A very thorough education it was which was bestowed upon this youth, nine years under the French Jesuits, six of them in their college of Saint Omer, one at Rheims, and two more at the college of Louis le Grand. Nor was this the end of his education. From the latter institution of learning he went to Bourges to study law, continuing the same course at Paris. In 1757, he went to London, where he entered the Middle Temple for further legal study, and did not return to Maryland until 1765.

With all this as preliminary, now indeed began his life as it concerns these United States.

Although Maryland was founded by a Roman Catholic, the colony was under the same religious dominion by the Church of England as other nearby colonies; this intolerance was the prime reason for the long sojourn of the young Carroll across the water, for no Catholic could be educated by his own faith on this side at that time.

In a land dedicated to religious freedom there was no freedom of thought in religious matters; be your convictions what you willed, taxed you were to support the established church, nevertheless.

It was in literary discussion as to the validity of this law that Carroll first attracted public notice immediately on his return from London. He became at once one of the most prominent citizens, being appointed one of the committee of correspondence for the province, that group which took the first steps toward revolution in that quarter.

Stirring times these in all the colonies, Maryland no less than those to the north of her. At the meeting in Annapolis, in December

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

of 1775, of the revolutionary convention, Carroll represented Anne Arundel County.

So much for his life up to the beginning of the war; as to his private existence, he had married, three years after his return to America, the charming daughter of Col. Henry Darnell. Mary Darnell was a fitting consort for the descendant of the ancient Irish Kings, for not only was her own family ancient and wealthy, but Mary herself was a very lovely person, well fitted in every way to reign most graciously at that palatial manor-house, "Carrollton," where entertaining was patterned after that of the English squires.

After the colonies were actually committed to their revolt against the Mother Country, Carroll could have found scant time to enjoy the beauties of his home and the companionship of his lady-wife, for he was involved in all the political concerns of the period, and a prime mover in all the demands for making the "united colonies free and independent states."

Carroll had heard the passionate Pitt declaim in London, and after the famous results of the tea tax he must have heard again, with the ears of his imagination, that beguiling voice declare:

"I rejoice that America has resisted!"

After Boston had refused the tea, the "Peggy Stewart" brought a consignment of the "detestable weed" to Maryland. Carroll counselled the owner to set fire to her and her cargo to prevent another large tea party being given in Chesapeake Bay. That funeral pyre of so many embryos of the "cup that cheers" must have been a strange sight upon those waters!

Charles Carroll took his seat with all the other deputies in the historic room in Philadelphia in July of 1776, wherein so many hearts beat that day with mixed trepidation and courage. A bold deed it was to affix one's signature to parchment defying the English King and all his powerful cohorts! Not a man there but was well aware of its far-reaching consequences, Carroll not least among them. Charleses were plentiful among the family branches, as they had always been, nor was this one unmindful of the confusion which might result, to the undoing of the wrong man. And so he signed his name to the weighty document, the shaky, spidery writing as we see it today: "Charles Carroll of Carrollton," that there might be no doubt who thus defied his King.

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

Chauncey Depew, at the time of the government's acceptance of the statue of Carroll, painted a word picture of this momentous event in homely, human phraseology distinctly different from the formal one etched by convention. He said:

When the time for signing came, and in bantering one another as to whether in case of failure they would hang singly or hang together, the remark was made to Carroll: "You can escape, because there are so many Charles Carrolls." His answer, immediately emphasized by the inscription following his pen, was:

"Charles Carroll of Carrollton."

It is the only title in our Revolution. There have been many men in different ages and countries whose proud boast it was that they could transmit to their descendants their name as of the duchy, the earldom or the barony which had been bestowed upon them by royal grant for distinguished services, or as favors to the Crown. But here was a distinction, not bestowed, not granted, but assumed by the writer, not as a title to nobility—but as the location and description by which the executioner might find him if the cause of liberty failed.

It has seemed to the romantic-minded of all the generations following that here was a variety of nobility, a variety of title to be worn with far greater pride than any ancient prefix in all the world.

This then is the Charles Carroll of Carrollton at thirty-eight, whom Richard Brooks immortalized in his statue placed in Statuary Hall in the Nation's Capitol thirty years ago.

Carroll was a diminutive man, so the figure, in its quaint continental dress, is not arresting except for the lightness of its poise. But the face intrigues the discriminating beholder who fancies he sees in those earnest, deep-set eyes; in the beautiful, sensitive sculptured lips, something reminiscent of those far-off, high-hearted Irish Kings who were his forebears. It is one of those idealizing, envisioning faces no less characteristic of the men who make history than the more practical type to which belong the early statesmen whose names are more familiar to us.

For thirty years this man was deep in the interests of the new Nation; as commissioner to Canada with Ben Franklin; as member of the Board of War; as delegate from Maryland to the First Continental Congress; and later her first United States Senator. He was an ardent advocate of the Federal Union and a participant in framing the Constitution.

TWO HEROES OF MARYLAND

What an Aladdin-dream it all must have seemed to him! The forming of this new power here in the midst of what had been so short a time before a howling wilderness, the fast augmented strength of the young Nation, the casting off of the parental yoke, the standing forth strong in the strength of youth, and the certainty of the future which is one of youth's outstanding characteristics.

• Carroll of Carrollton outlived all the other signers, including Jefferson and John Adams. Daniel Webster saw him as "an aged oak standing alone on the plain, which time has spared a little longer after all its contemporaries have been leveled with the dust."

At ninety he still retained something of the vigor, the vivacity and the grace of youth. That dominating characteristic, his unassuming modesty, his entire lack of any pretension, was part of him still. Latrobe, who wrote his biography, tells of visiting him, not long before his death, in order to submit the volume for his approval. Carroll, having heard it read with all the interest anyone would feel in his own history seen through another's eyes, remarked:

"Why, you have made me out a much greater man than I ever thought I was; and yet you really have said nothing that is not true."

When the first Lord Baltimore toured the continent in 1597 even carriages had hardly come into common use. In 1827, when Carroll of Carrollton was past ninety, he was made one of the directors of the Baltimore and Ohio Railroad, laying the foundation stone at the beginning of that undertaking.

Travel is swift in these days, but the flight of progress, delineated in the foregoing lines, is truly epochal. Hardly any two hundred and thirty years in history can show such rapidity of change in thought, in government, or in living conditions—Romance, indeed, in the true meaning of the word.



The Green Family of Printers

BY DOUGLAS C. MCMURTRIE, CHICAGO, ILLINOIS



NE of the most interesting phenomena of the early history of printing in the United States is the growth and development of the family of printers established by Samuel Green, the second printer in the English-speaking colonies and successor to the Dayes of Cambridge. In 1810, Isaiah Thomas wrote: "Until the commencement of the Revolution in 1775, Boston was not without one or more printers by the name of Green. These all descended from the Green of Cambridge. Some of his descendants have, for nearly a century past, been printers in Connecticut. One of them, in 1740, removed to Annapolis, and established the 'Maryland Gazette,' which was long continued by the family." That same "Maryland Gazette" was continued by the Green family until 1839, long after Isaiah Thomas was dead.

Samuel Green I was born in 1615 and died in 1702. He was the son of Bartholomew and Elizabeth Green, who emigrated to America in 1630, when Samuel was sixteen years old. It was on his reputation as a business man and not on his ability as a printer that he was selected to manage the college press after the death of Matthew Day in 1649. Green printed numerous important works, particularly the John Eliot Indian Bible. Samuel Green continued active as a printer until 1692, when he is believed to have retired because of his advanced age and the lack of interest by the college in continuing the printing office. He died at Cambridge January 1, 1702, at the age of eighty-seven. He had what we now call an "old-fashioned" family, being twice married and the father of nineteen children, eight by his first wife and eleven by his second, "who was a daughter of Mr. Clarke, an elder in Cambridge, and to whom he was married February 23, 1662." It was through the children of this second marriage that he established the long and important line of printing families who were to be leading figures in American printing history for over two centuries.¹

¹Littlefield, Vol. I, pp. 197-206. Thomas, variously.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

Samuel Green II was the son of the first Samuel Green, of Cambridge, by his first wife. He was half-brother to Bartholomew Green, of Cambridge and Boston, and to Timothy Green, of Boston and New London.² Samuel Green II was born at Cambridge, March 16, 1648, and worked in his father's shop there. From 1677 to 1678 he printed at Cambridge. He removed to Hartford, Connecticut, and later to New London in the same State, doing no printing at either place. In 1681 he came to Boston to act as printer under Samuel Sewall, and in 1684 Green succeeded to the management of the press, continuing to direct it until his death in 1690. Perhaps the most interesting single undertaking of Samuel Green II was the printing of "The Present State of New English Affairs" in the fall of 1689. This was the first American attempt at a printed newspaper of any kind.³

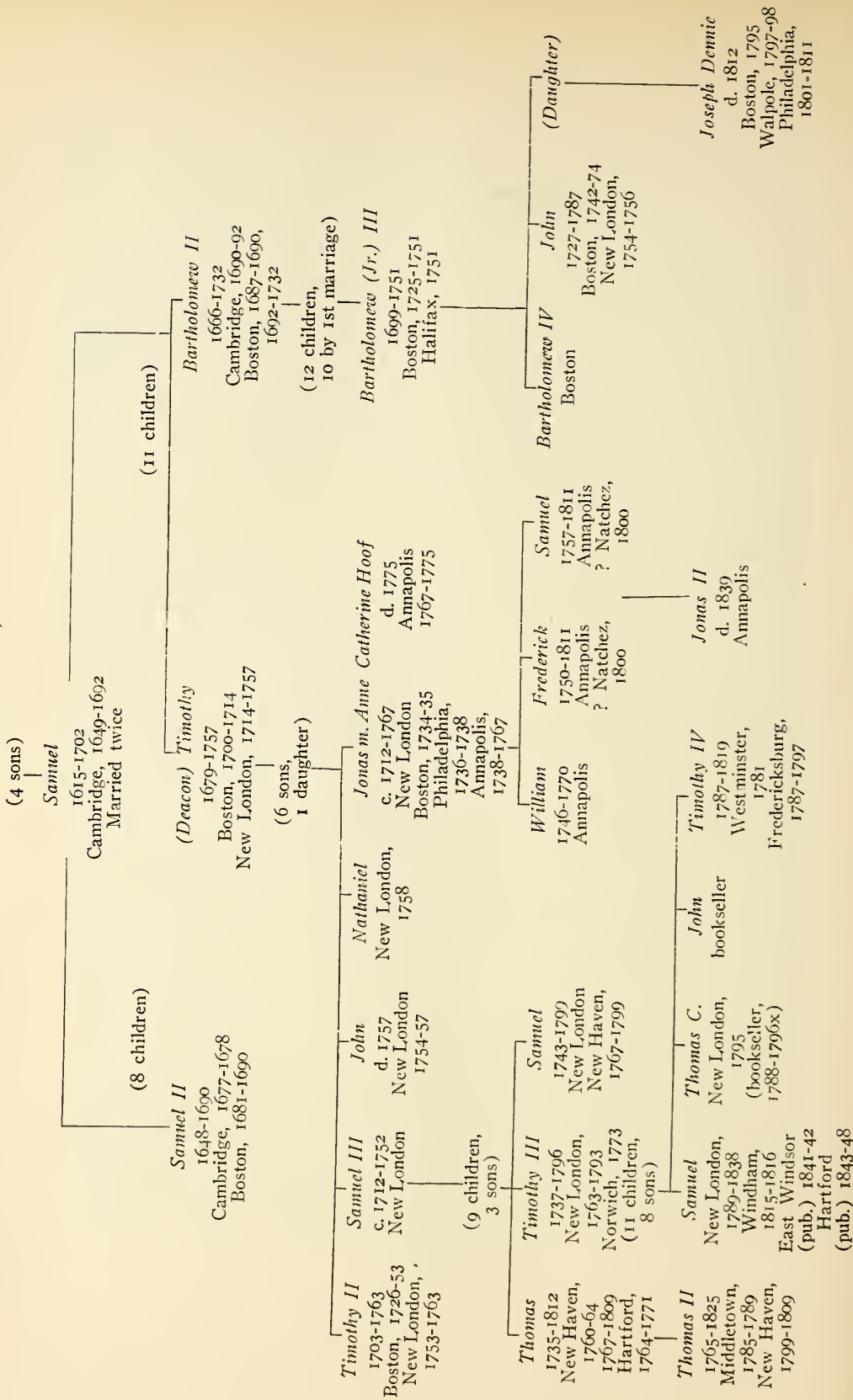
Bartholomew Green II, grandson of the emigrant Bartholomew Green, and son of Samuel Green, the printer of Cambridge, was born at Cambridge, October 12, 1666, and learned his trade from his father. In 1687 he was in Boston, probably working for his brother, Samuel, but possibly employed in the printing office of Richard Pierce. Bartholomew succeeded to his brother's office on his death in 1690, but within a few months the Green establishment was destroyed by the first that swept Boston early in the fall of 1690. Bartholomew Green then returned to Cambridge, where he assisted his father in the management of the Harvard College press until its discontinuance in 1692. That year he returned to Boston, where he probably rented the press of the late Richard Pierce, and printed in association with John Allen.⁴ In 1693 Bartholomew Green obtained his own press and printed independently for a time, later entering into another partnership with John Allen, until 1704. That year he became printer of

²It has frequently and erroneously been stated that Samuel Green II was the father rather than the brother of Timothy Green. This question is discussed in detail under the account of Timothy Green.

³Littlefield, Vol. II, pp. 25-36. Lee, pp. 8-9. Thomas, Vol. I, pp. 86-89.

⁴John Allen was the nephew of the Rev. James Allen who came to Boston in 1662. John Allen was born in England about 1660 and came to America in 1686, having previously learned the printing art in London. From 1686 to 1690 he is believed to have been employed by Samuel Green II at Boston. Thereafter he worked in conjunction with Richard Pierce, Benjamin Harris, Vavasour Harris, and Bartholomew Green. His partnership with Green ended in 1704, and he is next known to have been active in 1707, when he took over the printing of the "Boston News-Letter" until his office was destroyed in the fire of 1711. He opened a new office later and continued to print in Boston until his death, which occurred about 1727. Littlefield, Vol. II, pp. 61-66.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS
(*Bartholomew and Elizabeth Green*)



Dates immediately below names indicate years of birth and death. Towns listed below names indicate places of printing activity, with years given when known.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

John Campbell's "Boston News-Letter," first regular newspaper issued in America, and continued in that capacity, with the exception of the time from 1707 to 1711, until his death in 1732. He was also editor of this first paper after 1722.⁵ Among his other works of importance may be listed the Eliot Indian Bible, in the printing of which he was one of his father's chief assistants. Bartholomew Green II met with considerable financial success and enlarged his printing office to twice its original size. He was twice married and had ten children by his first wife and two by his second. For forty years he was printer to the Governor and Council of Massachusetts, and Isaiah Thomas called him "the most distinguished printer of that period in this country."

Bartholomew Green, Jr., as he is often called, was really Bartholomew Green III. He was a son by his first wife of Bartholomew Green, of the "Boston News-Letter," and a grandson of the first Samuel Green. He worked in his father's shop till 1734, when fire destroyed the plant. His name first appeared on a Boston imprint in 1729. After 1734, he continued to work in Boston as a member of the firm of Green, Bushell & Allen. From 1727 to 1736 he was a printer of the "Boston Gazette," in which capacity he was succeeded by his cousin, Timothy Green II. In September, 1751, Green followed the pioneering tradition of his family by moving his equipment to Halifax in Nova Scotia with the intention of establishing the first printing office there. He died within five weeks of his arrival, however, and his plans were later carried to completion by his former partner, John Bushell. Two of Bartholomew Green III's sons were printers, and one of his daughter's children became an outstanding publisher and editor. Bartholomew Green IV was one of the third Bartholomew's sons to continue the printing trade, but he never operated an independent office.⁶

John Green, son of Bartholomew Green III, and great-grandson of the first Samuel Green, was born in Boston in 1727 and continued

⁵Bartholomew Green II and his son, together with other members of their family, were responsible for the publication of the "Boston News-Letter" from its inception in 1704 until its suspension seventy-two years later, with the exception of the years from 1707 to 1711. Bartholomew Green III and his brother-in-law, John Draper, printed the paper, which on Draper's death in 1762 passed to his son, Richard Draper. The "Boston News-Letter" was discontinued in 1776 following attacks against it as a Tory paper. Lee, pp. 24-26. For accounts of Bartholomew Green II, see Littlefield, Vol. II, pp. 51-57, and Thomas, Vol. I, pp. 89-91.

⁶Thomas, Vol. II, pp. 120-22. Also, see McMurtrie, pp. 5-6.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

to print there all his life, his name first appearing on an imprint in 1742. He was apprenticed to John Draper, whose daughter he married, and with whom he was allied from 1757 till 1773 in publishing the "Boston Weekly Advertiser"⁷ under various names and in various forms. Green remained in Boston throughout the Revolutionary War, part of the time devoting himself to the publication of the "Independent Chronicle."⁸ He died in November, 1787, believed by Isaiah Thomas to have been the last of his name to print in Massachusetts.⁹

Joseph Dennie was the son of one of the daughters of Bartholomew Green III, and a great-great-grandson of Samuel Green, of Cambridge. He was a Harvard graduate and a law student, but literature was his forte, and he became one of the literary lights of his day as a newspaper and magazine editor and publisher. He was associated with Royall Tyler, important as a dramatist, in a literary partnership which contributed articles to the country journals. In 1795 Dennie established a weekly literary paper at Boston, the "Tablet," which had only a short life. In 1797 and 1798 he was editor of the Walpole, New Hampshire, "Farmer's Museum," published by Isaiah Thomas, who later wrote of Dennie that he was "among the first scholars in the belles-lettres which our country has produced." Dennie was appointed private secretary to Timothy Pickering, Secretary of State, in 1799, and at the same time he accepted an editorial position on the Philadelphia "Gazette of the United States." At Philadelphia Dennie proposed a "Lay Preacher's Magazine," which never appeared, and finally, in 1801, he established the "Port Folio." This was a weekly publication, which was "not quite a Gazette, nor wholly a magazine, with something of literature to engage Students."¹⁰ It had a distinct political flavor and supported England against the United States to such an extent that Dennie was tried for seditious

⁷During 1768 and 1769 Green and Russell combined their publication with Richard Draper's "Boston News-Letter," the original American newspaper, founded by Green's grandfather. The "Boston News-Letter" and the "Boston Weekly Advertiser" appeared together as the "Massachusetts Gazette," using the older titles in a separate heading. Lee, p. 25, calls this combination "the Siamese twins of journalism." Brigham, p. 273, of his Massachusetts section, gives a detailed account of the combination.

⁸Green became associated with the "Boston Independent Chronicle" after the British evacuation of Boston. Powars and Willis are listed as publishers during Green's connection with the paper. He died childless at the age of sixty.

⁹Thomas, Vol. I, pp. 140-41.

¹⁰Quoted from the first issue of the "Port Folio," by Mott, p. 223.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

libel in 1805, but was acquitted. Dennie was publisher of the "Port Folio" from 1801 to 1808, and editor of it from 1801 to 1811. He was extremely successful in its management and abandoned it only a short time before his death in 1812.¹¹

Timothy Green was the son of the first Samuel Green, of Cambridge, and the brother of the second Samuel, of Boston. An error made by Isaiah Thomas and other authorities has been responsible for the repeated statement that Timothy Green was the son of Samuel Green II, of Cambridge and Boston. Actually, Timothy was his brother, and the son of Samuel Green I, of Cambridge, by his second marriage.¹² Timothy Green began printing about 1700, in Boston, and continued to work there until 1714, when he accepted the invitation of the government of Connecticut to settle in New London, where he had refused to open an office seven years earlier when a

¹¹Thomas, Vol. I, p. 122. Mott, pp. 223-39. Ellis, pp. 134-215. Smyth, pp. 86-151. Joseph T. Buckingham, "Specimens of Newspaper Literature," Boston, 1850, pp. 106-97, has an interesting personal sketch of Joseph Dennie. Buckingham had been printer's devil in the Walpole, New Hampshire, office at the time Dennie was making a reputation as a writer and editor:

"In person he was rather below than above the middle height, and was of slender frame. He was particular attentive to his dress, which, when he appeared in the street on a pleasant day, approached the highest notch of the fashion. I remember, one delightful morning in May, he came into the office dressed in a pea-green coat, white vest, nankin small-clothes, white silk stockings, and shoes, or *pumps*, fastened with silver buckles, which covered at least half the foot from the instep to the toe. His small-clothes were tied at the knees, with ribbons of the same color, in double bows, the ends reaching down to the ankles. He had just emerged from the barber's shop. His hair, *in front*, was well loaded with pomatum, frizzled, or *craped*, and powdered; the *ear-locks* had undergone the same process; *behind*, his natural hair was augmented by the addition of a large queue (called, vulgarly, the *false tail*), which, enrolled in some yards of black ribbon, reached half-way down his back. Thus *accommodated*, the Lay Preacher stands before my *mind's eye*, as lifelike and sprightly as if it were just yesterday that I saw the reality. . . .

"Dennie wrote with great rapidity, and generally postponed his task until he was called upon for *copy*. It was frequently necessary to go to his office, and it was not uncommon to find him in bed at a late hour in the morning. His *copy* was often given out in small portions, a paragraph or two at a time; sometimes it was written in the printing office, while the compositor was waiting to put it in type. One of the best of his lay sermons was written at the village tavern, directly opposite to the office, in a chamber where he and his friends were amusing themselves with cards. It was delivered to me by piecemeal, at four or five different times. If he happened to be engaged in a game when I applied for copy, he would ask some one to *play his hand for him while he could give the devil his due*. When I called for the closing paragraph of the sermon, he said, 'Call again in five minutes,' 'No,' said Tyler, 'I'll write the improvement for you.' He accordingly wrote the concluding paragraph, and Dennie never saw it till it was put in print."

¹²Thomas, Vol. I, p. 185, makes the erroneous statement, which is also to be found in Savage's "Genealogical Dictionary," Vol. II, p. 306, and in other works. Love, pp. 12-13, note, has a detailed discussion of the error and presents a complete refutation of it. Littlefield, Vol. II, p. 69, also has a discussion of the subject and a refutation of the error.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

previous offer had been made him. Had he accepted he would have become the first rather than the second printer in the Colony. He printed extensively in New London, his name looming large in the history of Connecticut printing. He died May 5, 1757, at the age of eighty-seven, having some years earlier resigned his printing office to his son, Timothy Green II. The elder Timothy was an active church member and was known as "Deacon Timothy." He had five sons, all of whom became printers. These were: Timothy II, who succeeded his father; Samuel III, grandson of the first Samuel, who was associated in business with his father, and died before him; John; Nathaniel; and Jonas, who went to Maryland. "Timothy Green was a man highly respected in church and State and perhaps as skilled in his trade as any in his time; but his chief distinction is that he perpetuated the art through his sons and became the ancestor of no less than fifteen printers, who bore a name more widely known than any other in the annals of early American printing."¹³

Timothy Green II was the son of Timothy Green I, of Boston and New London, and grandson of Samuel Green, of Cambridge. He was born in Boston in 1703 and went to New London with his father, who taught him his trade. From 1727 to 1741 Timothy Green II published the Boston "New-England Weekly Journal" in partnership with Samuel Kneeland. In 1741 they combined the "Journal" with the "Boston Gazette," with which they had been associated since 1736. In 1753 Green gave up his partnership with Kneeland to take over his father's business in New London. His brother, Samuel, had previously managed the father's shop, but he had recently died, and Deacon Timothy was too old to continue the work alone. In the capacity of director of his father's press Timothy Green II was from 1754 to 1757 allied with his brother, John. In 1758, after his father's death, Timothy Green II entered into a temporary partnership, this time in his own name, with his brother Nathaniel. Timothy Green II followed his father as public printer to Connecticut.

John and Nathaniel Green, respectively, the third and fourth sons of Deacon Timothy Green, were printers of minor importance. Nathaniel probably never had a press of his own, and his name appeared in only a few imprints in 1758, in partnership with his

¹³General accounts of Deacon Timothy Green are given by Thomas, Vol. I, pp. 185-87; Love, pp. 47-48, and pp. 12-13, note; and Littlefield, Vol. II.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

brother, Timothy Green II. John Green¹⁴ printed in partnership with his father from 1754 to 1756. In May, 1757, the year of his death, John Green was appointed official printer to Connecticut. In August, 1758, Timothy Green II established the "New London Summary," which he continued till his death on October 3, 1763, at the age of sixty. The paper was continued as the "New London Gazette" by Timothy Green III, nephew to the second Timothy Green, and son of Samuel Green III.

Samuel Green III, son of Deacon Timothy Green, of Boston and New London, was born in Boston about 1712 and taken to New London when he was two years old.¹⁵ He learned to print in his father's shop and was for several years in partnership with him. He died May, 1752, at the age of forty, leaving a family of nine, three of them sons, who were all printers. Their names were: Thomas, Timothy, and Samuel.

Timothy Green III was the son of Samuel Green III, grandson of Deacon Timothy Green, and nephew of Timothy Green II, of Boston and New London, to the last of whom he was successor. He was born in New London in 1737 and was apprenticed to his uncle, Timothy Green II, whose business he inherited in 1763. He continued his uncle's "New London Summary" under the title of "New London Gazette," which in May, 1793, he turned over to his son, Samuel Green. In 1773 Timothy Green III set up a press in Norwich, in company with his brother-in-law, Judah-Padock Spooner. In 1778, Green was urged to come to Vermont, which lacked a printer, but instead he supplied Judah-Padock Spooner and his brother, Alden Spooner, with a printing outfit and sent them. In 1780 Green was requested to send his son to Vermont, and it seems likely that Timothy Green IV was in Westminster, Vermont, printing with Judah-Padock Spooner in 1781.¹⁶ Timothy III was the father of eight sons and three daughters, and he died March 10, 1796.¹⁷

¹⁴The partnerships of Timothy I with John Green and of Timothy II with Nathaniel Green are established by Evans. Evans also lists an N. Green, bookseller, in Boston in 1738. Bates, "Thomas Green," p. 290, mentions John and Nathaniel.

¹⁵Judging from the information supplied by Thomas, Vol. I, p. 186, concerning his age and the date of his death. Love, p. 13, note, says that the first Timothy Green "left five sons, the order of whose birth is: Timothy, Samuel, John, Nathaniel, and Jonas." Love cites the Boston records and Robins' "History of the Second Church, Boston," p. 250, as his authorities.

¹⁶See Rugg.

¹⁷Thomas, Vol. II, pp. 187-88.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

His son, Samuel, published the "New London Gazette" under his own name for fifty-five years, from 1793 on, with the exception of the time from 1805 to 1808. In 1815 and 1816 he was publisher, but not printer, of the "Windham Herald" at Windham, Connecticut. Samuel Green continued to print his New London paper until 1838. He remained as publisher for another decade, but the paper was actually printed by others at Hartford. In 1841 Green changed his place of publication from New London to East Windsor, and in 1843 he shifted it to Hartford, where the paper was printed. After 1800 it was known as the "Connecticut Gazette."

Thomas C. Green, son of Timothy Green III, had a book shop at New London from 1788 on for many years. In 1795 he established the "New London Advertiser," which ran for only a few issues. His brother, John Green, was also a bookseller.

Timothy Green IV, great-great-grandson of the first Samuel Green, of Cambridge, and son of Timothy Green III, is believed to have been sent by his father to Westminster, Vermont, in 1781, to work in partnership with Judah-Paddock Spooner. This was the only known venture of the Green family in Vermont. Timothy Green IV, in 1787, founded the Fredericksburg "Virginia Herald" and continued to publish this paper most of the time for the rest of his life, finally giving it up in 1819.

Thomas and Samuel Green were sons of Samuel Green III, of New London, and grandsons of Deacon Timothy Green, of Boston and New London. Thomas Green had published the New Haven "Connecticut Gazette" from 1760 to 1764. In the latter year he went to Hartford, where he established the "Connecticut Courant," in which he maintained an interest until 1771. His brother, Samuel Green, had learned the printing trade in the office of his uncle, Timothy Green II, in New London. In 1767 Thomas and Samuel Green formed a partnership to publish the New Haven "Connecticut Journal," which they continued together until Samuel's death, in 1799, at the age of forty-six. Thomas and Samuel Green were printers to Yale University from 1790 on. Thomas Green and his son, Thomas Green II, continued the paper until 1809.¹⁸ Thomas Green II had

¹⁸Thomas, Vol. II, pp. 189-90. Brigham on Connecticut. Probably the Thomas Green Woodward who published the New Haven "Connecticut Journal," from 1814 to 1816, was a grandson, or was otherwise related to the first Thomas Green. Woodward died in 1840, age sixty-one, according to the New Haven Vital Records, as cited by Mr. Robert W. G. Vail in a letter to me, dated November 10, 1931. See Hawkins, pp. 136-37, for an obituary of Thomas Green II.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

previously been co-publisher of the Middletown, Connecticut, "Middlesex Gazette" from 1785 to 1789.

Jonas Green was the fifth son of Deacon Timothy Green and was the founder of the Annapolis "Maryland Gazette," which from 1745 till 1839 was published by him and his direct descendants. He was born in Boston about 1712 and served his apprenticeship with his father in New London, working in Boston during 1734 and 1735 for the firm of Kneeland and Green, of which his brother, Timothy Green III, was a member. In 1735 he published in Boston the first Hebrew grammar to be printed in America. From 1736 to 1738 he worked for Franklin and for Andrew Bradford in Philadelphia. In the latter year he married Anne Catherine Hoof, who was born in Holland, and they moved to Annapolis, Maryland. In 1745 he began the famous "Maryland Gazette" there, and in 1755 he printed Bacon's "Laws of Maryland." He had six sons and eight daughters. The three sons who reached manhood all continued the typographic tradition of their New England ancestors.

His wife, too, knew the business of printing, and when Jonas Green died, in 1767, Anne Catherine Green carried on his work. She was made public printer to the Colony, and she continued to print the "Gazette." William Green, her eldest son, was her partner until his death in 1770. From then until she died, March 23, 1775, at the age of forty-two, she continued the business alone.

Frederick Green, son of Jonas and Anne Catherine Green, succeeded his mother as public printer on her death, and two years later he took his younger brother, Samuel Green, into partnership, which they continued until 1811, when both the brothers died. One of the two was possibly among the first printers in Mississippi, having a press at Natchez for a short time in 1800.¹⁹

They were followed by their son and nephew, Jonas Green, son of Samuel Green, and among the last of his name known to have been active in American printing. He was a great-great-grandson of Samuel Green, the printer of Cambridge, who had been the second printer in the United States. Jonas Green II continued to publish the "Maryland Gazette," established by his grandfather of the same name, until his death in 1839. For a century his family had been printing in

¹⁹A Mr. Green from Baltimore operated a press at Natchez and issued a paper there. Brigham, Vol. XXVI, 1916, p. 84-85.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

Annapolis,²⁰ and for almost two centuries the Greens had been active in America. The distinguished work of the descendants of Samuel Green, of Cambridge, in spreading the typographic art throughout the United States, in fostering printing as an art, and in length of service is unprecedented and unequalled. The Brandfords of New York and the Bradfords of Kentucky established dynasties of imposing aspects, but they never equalled the Greens of New England and Maryland.²¹

BIBLIOGRAPHY:

Bates, Albert Carlos: "Connecticut Statute Laws," Hartford, 1900, p. 5.

Bates, Albert Carlos: "Thomas Green," in "Papers of the New Haven Colony Historical Society," Vol. 8 (New Haven, 1914), pp. 289-309.

Bigham, Clarence S.: "Bibliography of American Newspapers, 1690-1820," in "Proceedings of the American Antiquarian Society," 1913-27.

Buckingham, Joseph T.: "Specimens of Newspaper Literature," Boston, 1850.

Ellis, Harold Milton: "Joseph Dennie and His Circle," in "Bulletin of the University of Texas," 1915, No. 40, p. 134-215.

Evans, Charles: "American Bibliography," Chicago, 1903-30.

Hawkins, Rush C.: "The Daye Press," in "Literary Collector," Vol. VII (Greenwich, Connecticut, 1903-04), pp. 33-39, 136-39.

Lee, James Melvin: "History of American Journalism," Boston and New York, 1923, pp. 8, 24-27, 45-47, 52.

Littlefield, George Emery: "The Early Massachusetts Press, 1638-1711," Boston, 1907, two vol.

Love, W. DeLoss: "Thomas Short, the First Printer of Connecticut," Hartford, Connecticut, 1901, pp. 12-13, 25-29, 47-48.

McMurtrie, Douglas C.: "The First Printing in Nova Scotia," Chicago, 1930. (Reprinted from "Printing Review of Canada," Montreal, Vol. V, July, 1929, pp. 15-18.)

Mott, Frank Luther: "A History of American Magazines, 1741-1850," New York and London, 1930, pp. 223-39.

²⁰The Maryland branch of the Greens are discussed by Thomas, Vol. I, pp. 321-22; Lee, pp. 45-47; and Wroth, pp. 75-110.

²¹Another possible descendant of Samuel Green, of Cambridge, was the Charles D. Green who printed at Georgetown in the District of Columbia at the turn of the eighteenth century. He published, in collaboration with David English, the Georgetown "Centinel of Liberty," from 1796 to 1800, in both a town and country edition for the first two years. In 1800 they continued the paper as the "Museum and Washington and George-town Daily Advertiser," continuing it, but not as a daily, until 1801.

THE GREEN FAMILY OF PRINTERS

Rugg, Harold Goddard, "The Dresden Press," in "Dartmouth Alumni Magazine," 1918.

Smyth, Albert H.: "The Philadelphia Magazines and Their Contributors," Philadelphia, 1892, pp. 86-151.

Spaulding, E. Wilder: "The 'Connecticut Courant,' a Representative Newspaper in the Eighteenth Century," in "New England Quarterly," Vol. III, 1930, pp. 443-63.

Thomas, Isaiah: "The History of Printing in America," Albany, New York, 1874, two vol.

Wroth, Lawrence C.: "A History of Printing in Colonial Maryland," Baltimore, 1922, pp. 75-110.

Isaiah Thomas is the chief source of information on the Greens, although his information is scattered through his two volumes and difficult to coördinate. The first two generations are exhaustively dealt with by Littlefield. Love is concerned with Deacon Timothy Green, and Joseph Dennie is the subject of Buckingham, Ellis, Mott, and Smyth. Rugg writes of Timothy Green III and his son, Timothy IV. Wroth gives a detailed account of the Maryland branch of the family. Bates' article concerns Thomas Green I.



Green's Harbor

BY GEORGE P. PETERSON, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



THE story of the early Pilgrim settlements is closely associated with the then existing waterways in and about Plymouth and Duxbury bays, which at once became a determining factor in the selection of sites and the apportionments of land by the Plymouth Colony. The arteries from the bays at once attracted the attention of the more ambitious, who very evidently inherited a desire for landed estates, so common among their English contemporaries. The aspirations of the colonists seemed to demand ampler tillage and grazing lands for their cattle and hogs.

Not long after the landing of the Pilgrims, all fear of the Indians in the vicinity of Plymouth was removed by the signing of the treaty by Massasoit, and the very cordial relations which sprang up between this noble chief and the Pilgrims made it feasible for the early settlers to seek favorable locations somewhat removed from the immediate confines of Plymouth. Thus we find Bradford, Standish, Brewster, Alden, Rogers, De la Noye, Soule, and the Winslows among the first to take up allotments, accessible to the home town by convenient waterways.

In the order of events, as early as 1627 removals began to be made to Duxbury and Kingston, and, a little later, to Green's Harbor. I will here quote from the parish records of Plymouth, 1632 :

And so to tie their lands to Plymouth, as farms for the same, and there they might keep their cattle and tilling *by some servants*, and retain their dwellings here, and so some special lands were granted at a place usually called Green's Harbor.

This is the first recorded mention of Green's Harbor, the subject of this sketch. Tradition is very persistent in associating the naming of this waterway and the adjoining territory with William Green, a brother-in-law of Thomas Weston, who, with several other rich merchants, outfitted the Pilgrim expedition.

Shortly after the arrival of the Pilgrims, Green came himself to the Colony and entered into the fishing trade. He established a fish-

GREEN'S HARBOR

ing post on Salt House Beach, now Duxbury Beach, near where Beach and Bay streets intersect. It was convenient to the fishing grounds, and the beach and banks of the river made excellent places for drying the fish. The river, at that time, flowed through the meadows behind and parallel with the beach, and from old maps and boundaries, we are able to locate definitely its outlet to the ocean.

The marsh formations north of Cut Island mark the spot where Green's Harbor River flowed to the sea, and, that we may the better understand the acts of the General Court, let us here clearly fix in our minds that Green's Harbor River, for nearly two hundred years, included all of what is now Green's Harbor River (except the present outlet) and the creek running through the meadow to Cut Island, where it ran out to the ocean.

Cut Island then, lay directly to the south of the mouth of this river, and this island, so-called, is largely of sand formation, at the westerly end being entirely made up of sand, and it had, during the centuries before the coming of the first settlers, completely cut off the continuous flow of water from the larger river known as Green's Harbor River, to the smaller creek which wandered through the Duxbury marshes from the bay to the southwesterly side of Cut Island.

The only practical method of transportation in those days was by water, and with this in mind, the land grants were usually laid out convenient to some navigable stream flowing into the bay, so that settlers could easily reach the mother town. For the earlier settlements on Eel River, Rocky Nook, Jones River, and along the shores of Duxbury Bay, the distance to the mother town was not great, but farther to the north, the fertile lands, particularly the grazing lands known as Green's Harbor Marsh, were not so accessible to Plymouth. Careswell, the home of Winslow, was reached by a creek, known as Careswell Creek, which flowed through the meadows from Duxbury Bay to a point of land just on the edge of Careswell; but the landowners around Green's Harbor River had no such water connection. To reach Plymouth they were compelled to make a long and hazardous journey. Let us follow them down Green's Harbor River to the outlet at Cut Island, thence along the coast, rounding Gurnet Point, and on up the whole length of Plymouth Harbor, always handicapped or favored by the prevailing winds and tides.

GREEN'S HARBOR

We can readily understand that these early settlers found, in Cut Island, a barrier, which must needs be removed in order to provide a waterway which would obviate danger and save many miles in their going and coming between the settlement and the home town for both social and business purposes.

The first reference in the Plymouth Colony records to Green's Harbor is a mandatory order, passed at the General Court, July 1, 1633, and was as follows:

That unless Mr. Gibson and John Shaw and the rest, that undertook the cutting of the passage between Green's Harbor river, and the bay, finish it before the first of October next ensuing, according to covenant, they be assessed in 10 pounds; but if any of them will do it, the fine be exacted of the rest, and they be paid for their labors.

The carrying out of this order, by cutting through Cut Island, and widening and deepening the creek from that island down by Pine Point to the bay, is the first record we have of the connecting by a canal of two waterways for transportation purposes in the United States.

In this act we undoubtedly see the influence of the eleven not altogether unprofitable years spent in Holland by the Pilgrims. Holland, the chief maritime nation at that time, in the world, had developed to a wonderful degree her internal waterways by canals, and used them extensively for commercial purposes. The Pilgrims, keen in taking advantage of advanced ideas, early appropriated for practical purposes such waterways as were available.

The next reference that we have in history to this waterway is by an order of the General Court, January 3, 1636-37:

That the cut at Green's Harbor for a boat passage be made 18 feet wide and 6 feet deep, and for the manner how the same shall be done for the better ordering thereof, it is referred to the Governor and his assistants, with the help of John Winslow, Jonathan Brewster, John Barnes, and Christopher Wadsworth, as well to proportion every man equally to the charge thereof, as well as to order men that shall work thereat, that 10 men may work together there at once, and that the Governor, or whom he shall appoint, shall oversee the same that it may be well performed.

More or less uncertainty has existed as to what this general work refers to, but to one who is familiar with local surroundings, and in the light of the fact that the order of the court left the practical car-

GREEN'S HARBOR

rying out of this work to the Governor and others, they, and they alone, were to determine what was to be done in Green's Harbor River, and in view of the fact that three years before a canal had been constructed to connect the bay with Green's Harbor River (at Cut Island), it is left for us to conclude that what we now know as the canal or creek from Tolman's Point (the present mouth of the river) to the then mouth of the river, north of Cut Island, was to be widened and deepened, according to definite orders of the court, to eighteen feet wide and six feet deep.

The widening and deepening of this marsh Creek amply cared for transportation and drainage for nearly two hundred years, permitting the passing of vessels of medium tonnage of that period, in and out, for all commercial purposes.

It is probable that the new or widened and deepened passageway gradually filled, and the banks fell away, and it failed to function for adequate drainage, for in 1806 various proprietors petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation, permitting them to build a canal from Green's Harbor to Duxbury Bay. On the 11th of February, 1807, the following act was passed. I quote, in part:

That Isaac Winslow, Luke Wadsworth, Judah Thomas, and Benjamin White, proprietors in Green's Harbor Marsh, together with their associates . . . shall be a corporation, by the name of Green's Harbor Canal Co., for the purpose of draining and building crossways and bridges, and for digging a canal or canals for the water to pass into Duxbury and Plymouth bays.

Soon after this work was accomplished a November storm completely closed the mouth of Green's Harbor River, and for several years the only outlet or drainage for all the Green's Harbor marshes was through the creek or canal to Duxbury Bay.

In the fall of 1810 certain fishermen and sportsmen took it upon themselves to dig an outlet to the sea by Blue Fish Rock. This labor was done under the cover of the night, and about forty men were engaged in the undertaking. Among them was Chandler Oldham, Captain Asa Hewett, Thomas Oldham, Dwelly Baker, Seth Peterson, and Jabez Hatch. The first named was swept off his feet when the waters from above suddenly broke through the sand while the men were digging. The flow of the water soon deepened to a river what is now the outlet to the sea.

GREEN'S HARBOR

I find no record when the bridge or bridges mentioned in the Act of 1807 were built. Old maps of the town of Marshfield clearly indicate that a bridge now known as Rainbow Bridge was in existence previous to 1833. The canal connecting Green's Harbor and Duxbury Bay was the first canal in New England, 1633-36. The next canal in New England, by decree of the General Court, 1697, known as the Cape Cod Canal, was cut through the land at Sandwich from Barnstable Bay into Manomet Bay. Were there earlier canals in the New World?





TWO TYPES OF HEADSTONES ARE USED IN AMERICAN OVERSEAS CEMETERIES
The Cross is for the Graves of Those of Christian Faith, While the Shield of David is for
Those of Jewish Faith

The Gold Star Pilgrimages to the American Overseas Cemeteries

BY MARY F. ANDERSON, WASHINGTON, DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA



THE pilgrimages of the Gold Star mothers and widows to the American Overseas Cemeteries through the summers of the four years following 1930 will round out a series of memorials to the soldier dead of the World War which has been arranged by the United States Government. No other country has so honored its sleeping heroes resting at the battlefront on foreign soil by giving their near relatives the comforting knowledge that the graves of their loved ones are well kept, and that a grateful Nation remembers the sacrifices of which they had a part.

Between 1919 and 1922 the remains of the soldiers, which had been buried temporarily near the battlefields, and which were not brought back to the United States, were concentrated in eight cemeteries—six in France, one in Belgium, and one in England. There are 30,836 of these graves which contain remains of American soldiers, sailors and marines who died during the war. Ascertaining the wishes of the nearest relatives as to the disposal of the bodies, attempting to establish the identity of many of the “unknown” and the removal of the remains to the new cemeteries constituted a tremendous task delegated to the Cemeterial Division of the office of the Quartermaster-General of the War Department, working with the office of the American Graves Registration in France.

As a preliminary arrangement Quartermaster-General Frank B. Cheatham made a tour of the cemeteries, cities and ports through which the Gold Star pilgrims were to be routed. His successor, Major-General J. L. DeWitt, the present quartermaster-general, has done everything possible to make the pilgrimages a success.

That the cemeteries should be made adequately beautiful, expert landscape artists were employed with the instructions to spare neither expense, time nor skill in their efforts. Recently the wooden markers have been replaced with white marble headstones, three feet in height,

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

on which are inscribed the soldier's name, rank, organization, date of death, and State from which he came. As one of the last acts of completion, in each cemetery is being erected a chapel of suitable architecture. Two of these were finished in 1930, four were completed in 1931, and three in 1932.

Just before Congress adjourned for the Christmas holidays in 1929, a law was passed empowering the War Department to arrange for the pilgrimages, and since provisions have been made for \$5,386,367 to finance the trips. Full railroad and steamship transportation, with the government providing all incidentals, such as tips, steamer rugs, and meals, including lunches to be carried along and prepared when on long automobile trips, are furnished. It is estimated that the expenses will average about \$800 a person. Everything furnished is of the best available. Accompanying each group of pilgrims is competent personnel, including guides, interpreters, nurses and physicians.

There are in all 17,389 mothers and widows who have remained unmarried who are eligible for the trip. The number that made the trip in 1930 was 3,653. The number making the trip in 1931 was 1,790. The enabling act defined a mother as mother, step-mother or mother by adoption. Those who have visited the graves at some previous time are not eligible for the government tours. Of the number to whom the government sent invitations to go to Europe as its guests, 6,730 signified their desire to go within two months after the letters were mailed from Washington. Wherever possible the wishes of the pilgrims have been considered as to the time that they should go. Groups from the same communities are arranged together, and the authorities try to route groups according to the cemeteries they will visit. Because some of the chapels will not be finished until 1932, efforts have been made to schedule those visiting the unfinished cemeteries at the last.

Mrs. Hoover was asked to aid the War Department officials to help decide which State groups should go first. The names of the forty-eight states were written on cards and placed in a covered box. The cards drawn by Mrs. Hoover designated the time arrangement of the State groups to go. Nebraska was the first card drawn, and California, Mrs. Hoover's home State, was the thirteenth.

The first pilgrims left the United States in May, 1930, and the last group will return by October 31, 1933. About one month is con-

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

sumed in each trip, roughly speaking; one week to go and one week to return and two weeks abroad. The groups are routed to New York, whence they sail on United States steamers. Every attention for their comfort and convenience is provided. The itinerary of each trip is made out and printed in the language of the countries that the tourist will visit, as well as English. Those who visit the Government Cemetery in England leave the steamer at Plymouth or Southampton, and from there are sent to London, where it is less than an hour's ride to and from Brookwood. Those who visit the French and Belgian cemeteries leave the steamer at Cherbrough and go first to Paris, where they are rerouted to the town nearest the cemetery they are to visit.

The largest of our overseas cemeteries is the Meuse-Argonne American Cemetery. It contains 14,201 graves. The soldiers who are buried there came from almost every division in the American Expeditionary Forces, the greater number having given their lives in the Meuse-Argonne operation, one of the decisive battles of the war. Bodies were brought there from the area immediately west of the Argonne Forest, from the general vicinity of the Vosges Mountains, from occupied Germany and from Archangel, Russia.

The chapel which is being built in the Meuse-Argonne Cemetery was to be completed in May, 1932. It is an adaptation of the Romanesque style of architecture, and consists, not only of the chapel proper, which forms the central part of the edifice, but of two flanking arcades, the entire building being more than 200 feet in length. This memorial will arise from a beautiful terraced site, and will stand at the end of a long, wide avenue that runs through the cemetery.

The cemetery is near the small town Romagne-sous-Montfaucon and is about 250 kilometers from Paris. It is about 25 miles northwest of Verdun, where the pilgrims are usually located, as the town is within easy motoring distance of the cemetery.

The Oise-Aisne American Cemetery, with its 6,012 graves, is second in size. It is located near the towns of Seringes-et-Nesles and Fere-en-Tardenois, and is about 110 kilometers from Paris. It is about 18 miles from Chateau-Thierry and almost equi-distant from Soissons, and is slightly farther from Rheims. The majority of the soldiers who were buried in this cemetery are from the divisions that fought in the Ourcq River territory that extended to the Oise River. The soldiers who were buried in the general area west of the line

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

Tours-Romerantin-Paris-Le Havre were removed in 1922 to this cemetery.

The memorial chapel now being erected in this cemetery is a modern adaptation of the French-Romanesque type of architecture. The central portion of the memorial will be a semi-circular arcade, at one end of which will be the chapel proper, and at the other end an architectural balance of similar external appearance. The structure will be more than 100 feet wide.

The St. Mihiel American Cemetery is the third in size. In it are buried 4,152 American soldier dead. The cemetery is located near the small town Thiaccourt, which is about 310 kilometers from Paris and is approximately 20 miles from Nancy, Verdun and Metz. The majority of the soldiers buried in St. Mihiel's were in the American Division attacking when the great offensive action of our First Army resulted in the reduction of the St. Mihiel salient. Bodies from the training areas in the southwest, or of soldiers serving in other near sectors were removed here in 1922.

The memorial chapel in this cemetery, which will be completed in 1932, is of modified Greek Doric style, and in some ways suggests the American Colonial type of architecture. The central part will consist of a peristyle, circular in form, and open to the sky, surrounded by 16 columns. The peristyle, which is about 48 feet in diameter, will be flanked on one side by a chapel and on the other side by a corresponding room.

The Aisne-Marne American Cemetery contains the remains of 2,285 American soldiers. It is located just outside the village of Bellau, and is about 95 kilometers from Paris, on the Est Railroad. The nearest town of any size is Chateau-Thierry, containing about 8,000 inhabitants, which is about six miles northwest. The majority of soldiers who lie here fought in the vicinity of the Marne River. A number of the bodies were brought here from the regions about Lyon and Clermont in Central France.

The memorial chapel now being erected in this cemetery is of the transitional French-Romanesque style of architecture. Its external appearance will give the impression of a massive tower. With its retaining walls and terrace the entire edifice will be some 110 feet in height, and will stand on the slope of the hill that rises toward Belleau Wood.

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

The Somme American Cemetery is the resting place of 1,832 American soldier dead. It is located near the village of Bony, and is about three kilometers from the village of Let Catelet and 17 miles from St. Quentin, a city of 56,000 inhabitants. In the cemetery are buried members of the 27th and 30th Divisions who fell while serving in that vicinity, as well as those of the First Division, who gave their lives in the operation near Cantigny, and of the 33d and 18th Divisions, who fell while serving in that vicinity with the British. In addition, all American soldiers on or behind the British front in France and who were not removed to the United States in 1922, have been brought here.

The chapel, completed in 1931, is an adaptation of the Romanesque chapel style of architecture. In general form it will be like a massive shaft with a low and somewhat pyramidal covering, being nearly 50 feet in height and 26 feet in length and breadth.

The pilgrims visiting the Somme Cemetery will probably stay at a hotel in St. Quentin, which is about 11 miles away, after leaving Paris, which is about 154 kilometers away.

In the beautiful Suresnes American Cemetery are buried 1,536 American hero dead. The cemetery lies on the slope of Mount Valerian and overlooks the capital of France, whose walls are about three miles away. It is easily accessible to the heart of Paris, six miles away by train, street car or taxicab. The chapel, which will soon be completed, suggests the American Colonial architecture. The chapel, including the stairs, will be about 42 feet high and about the same length and breadth. Entrance to the building will be by way of a colonnade porch, and this porch will be approached by two flights of stairs on each side of the structure.

The Brookwood Cemetery is in the County of Surrey, 28 miles from London. There are 453 American soldiers buried in this cemetery, who were brought from various places throughout England, Scotland, and Ireland, after the Armistice. In general the cemetery contains those members of the American expeditionary forces who lost their lives in Great Britain or its surrounding waters during the war. The cemetery forms a part of a large and beautiful cemetery in England established many years ago. The American section adjoins one used by the British for war burials.

The chapel now in the course of erection is an adaptation of the

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

Greek-Doric order of architecture. Its structure is about 34 feet square, with small projecting wings on each side and a small portico in front. The columns of the portico are 15 feet high and $2\frac{1}{4}$ feet in diameter at the base.

The best known of the eight cemeteries—Flanders Field American Cemetery—is the smallest of all. Within its confines are buried 365 American soldiers. It is on the Belgian ground captured by the 91st Division and the place is within easy walking distance of Waereghem, Belgium, which is located about half way between Brussels and Ypres. The soldiers buried here are mainly those of the 37th and 91st Divisions, who fell at Ypres.

The graves of this cemetery are grouped around an open square, and in this space the chapel is placed. It is octagonal in shape and is about 36 feet high and 20 feet in diameter. A shallow sunken garden encircles the cemetery, giving to the place an individual beauty.

The chapels will bear the inscriptions of the nameless and unknown soldiers, besides the names of those whose identifications have been established and whose bodies are in that particular cemetery. In addition to the 1,629 unknown graves in the eight cemeteries, there are approximately 2,905 missing American military and naval personnel for whom the War Department has no information on record tending to show that their remains have been recovered and buried either in the cemeteries of Europe or elsewhere. The chapels will record for each of these 4,534 soldiers his name, rank, organization and name of the State from which he came.

In addition to these graves of the "known" and "unknown" contained in the eight cemeteries, there are maintained by the United States Government 73 cases of what are known as "do not disturb" graves, such as that of Quentin Roosevelt in the Commune Coulonges-en-Tardenois, Aisne, France. In all of these 73 cases the families of those who fell desired that the bodies of their loved ones rest where originally buried, and for that reason the bodies were not reinterred in the American cemeteries.

In addition to these there are four cases referred to by the War Department as "Special," where a man of foreign extraction, who was fighting with the American soldiers at the time of his death, was buried at the request of relatives in the family burying plot at his native



MAP SHOWING LOCATION OF AMERICAN CEMETERIES IN EUROPE

1. Brookwood. 2. Flanders Field. 3. Somme. 4. Suresnes. 5. Aisne Marne.
6. Oise Aisne. 7. Meuse Argonne. 8. St. Mihiel.

GOLD STAR PILGRIMAGES

home. There have been removed to the Lafayette Escadrille Memorial bodies of 18 American soldiers.

Furthermore, there were lost 2,103 American soldiers in European and "outside" waters.

As recoveries and identifications are being made all the time, by the time all the chapels are completed, it is likely that many of the "unknown" will have become known. In the last six months of 1929 there were 7 recoveries and 4 identifications established, while for the entire fiscal year 47 recoveries were made and 14 were identified.

In charge of each overseas cemetery a World War veteran has been placed who performs his duties with love and pride. Of special comfort and help are they to the Gold Star pilgrims who visit the graves of the men who are their "buddies" still.

In all the cemeteries only two types of headstones are used to mark the soldiers' graves. The cross is for those of Christian faith, and the shield of David for those of Hebrew faith. The headstones at the graves of the unknown soldiers bear this inscription: "Here rests in honored glory an American soldier known but to God."



The Expansion of New England in Southern New York---Long Island

BY JOEL N. ENO, A. M., BROOKLYN, NEW YORK



THE whole of Long Island, except the "five Dutch Towns" now included in the borough of Brooklyn, was settled either by or through New England. The five Dutch Towns were: *Breukelen*, bought from Indians, the first purchase being at Gowanus, 1636, by William A. Bennett and Jacques Bentyn; first settler, 1645, J. E. Bout. *Flatlands*, Dutch New Amersfoort, bought from Indians, June 16, 1636, by Wolphert G. van Kouwenhoven and Andreas Hudde, but not growing for some years later. *Flatbush*, 't Flakkebosch, or Midwout, begun by Dutch in 1651; whence *New Lots* was set off as a town February 12, 1852. *Bushwick* (Du. Boswijk, or Woods-town) bought from Indians, 1638, became a town about February 16, 1660, including Williamsburg village; and *New Utrecht*, granted January 16, 1657; a town in 1662. Brooklyn absorbed Bushwick in 1855; New Lots, including East New York, 1886; Flatbush, April, 1894; New Utrecht and Gravesend, July 1, 1894, and Flatlands, January 1, 1896; Kings County.

The English towns follow: Kings County, named from Charles II. *Gravesend*, completing Kings County and Brooklyn Borough, was granted by Kieft, director of the Dutch West India Company, December 19, 1645, to Lady Deborah Moody and others from Lynn (some *via* Sandwich) Massachusetts, originally from Wiltshire, England.

Queens County was begun by the grant of *Flushing*, Dutch Vlissingen (named from Vlissingen on Zealand), January 15, 1639, but settled by English in the spring of 1645, and included Jamaica. *Newtown* settled by English at Maspeth, under patent of March 28, 1642, and at Middleburg or Newtown village in 1652; the patent being granted to Rev. Francis Doughty and others. *Hempstead* was bought from the Indians December 13, 1643, and settled 1644 from Wethersfield and its colony, Stamford, Connecticut; patent November 16, 1644, and named from Hemel Hempstead, England. When North Hempstead was set off, April 6, 1784, it was called for a while South

EXPANSION OF NEW ENGLAND

Hempstead. *Jamaica* was named from the Gemeco Indians, from whom it was bought, and was settled by Robert Jacken and others from Hempstead, on a grant from Director Stuyvesant, March 21, 1656; incorporated as the town of Rustdorp in 1660. *Oyster Bay* was settled in 1653 from New England, under Connecticut jurisdiction, until September 29, 1677, and named, says Cornelis van Tienhoven, secretary of the Dutch West India Company, in his "Information" ("Doc. Relative to Colonial Hist. of N. Y.," Vol. I, p. 366) "for its abundance of fine oysters." *Long Island City* was set off from Newtown May 6, 1870; made a city April 13, 1871.

Queens County, named from Catharine, wife of Charles II, was divided January 1, 1899; Hempstead, North Hempstead and Oyster Bay being set off as Nassau County, named from the Dutch princely house of Nassau, leaving Queens County co-extensive with the borough of Queens. The treaty of September 19, 1650, made the line between Connecticut and the Dutch from westernmost of Oyster Bay south to sea.

Suffolk County was organized in 1683. *Southampton*, eight square miles, was purchased from the Indians April 17, 1640, and from James Farrett, agent for William Alexander, earl of Stirling, June 12, 1640, and began to settle; forty families in all; last payment and deed December 13, 1640; a town November 1, 1676. *Southold*, bought from Farrett by New Haven, deed August 15, 1640, settled October 21, 1640, by Rev. John Youngs, pastor of St. Margaret's, County Suffolk, England, and earlier pastor of Hingham, County Norfolk, with adherents from both congregations, settling first in New Haven Colony; a town October 30, 1676. *Easthampton*, Governor Theophilus Eaton and magistrates of New Haven had bought it in 1648, estimated 30,000 acres, from Wayandanch and other sachems, for goods estimated value £30 4s. 8d. The deed, which was in their name, was transferred to the settlers in the spring of 1651. It was called at first Maidstone, from Maidstone in County Kent, and settled from Southampton, Southold, New Haven, Connecticut, and Lynn, Massachusetts, and asked protection from Connecticut in 1657. August 1, 1660, the widow of Wyandanch, for £100 conveyed the lands, and the deed was confirmed by the other Indian claimants, February 11, 1661. In 1662, the name was changed to Easthampton, and on March 13, 1666, accepted a patent from Governor Nicolls and came under New York jurisdiction.

EXPANSION OF NEW ENGLAND

Huntington, bought from the Indians by Theophilus Eaton in 1646, who transferred his deed to the settlers in 1653, and was under Connecticut jurisdiction until 1666, when it accepted a patent from New York.

Shelter Island, originally Farrett's Island, 8,000 acres, was bought from Farrett by Stephen Goodyear, of New Haven, and transferred by him June 9, 1651, to Thomas Middleton, Thomas Rouse, Constant and Nathaniel Sylvester for 1,600 pounds of Muscovado sugar. August 28, 1654, N. Sylvester bought out the other owners and settlement began under Connecticut jurisdiction; but a patent from New York was accepted May 31, 1666.

Smithtown, a gift from Wyandanch, July 14, 1659, to Lion Gardiner, who conveyed it in 1663 to Richard Smith, of Setauket (originally of Gloucester, England); it was called Smithfield until November 2, 1683; patent March 25, 1673.

Brookhaven, settled at Setauket, as Ashford, by fifty-two people from the vicinity of Boston, Massachusetts.

Islip, named from Islip in Oxfordshire, had its first town meeting in 1700.

Riverhead was set off from Southold by Act of March 13, 1792.

Babylon, the southern part of Huntington, was set off as a town by Act of March 13, 1872.

This whole county of Suffolk, as organized November 1, 1683, rightfully belonged to Connecticut, and desired to be under her jurisdiction; but was robbed from her in 1664, with no right except the pretended "Divine right of kings," and given by King Charles II to his brother, James, Duke of York, as a part of the province of New York, as was Oyster Bay. In fact, all the English towns on Long Island asked to join Connecticut, and had commissioners appointed by Connecticut at the May Assembly, 1664. ("Public Records of Conn.," Vol. I, pp. 341, 384, 386, 416, 424.)

WESTCHESTER COUNTY

Unlike the lands of Long Island, settled by colonies or groups of families, New England democratic style, the lands of the present Westchester County were granted in freehold, but quasi feudal plan-

EXPANSION OF NEW ENGLAND

tations, to individuals. Jonas Bronck, a Swede, married at Amsterdam, Holland, Antonia, daughter of Juriaan Slagboom, and settled near the Harlem River, where he bought land, 1639-40, but died in 1643, yet his name survives in Bronx River and Bronx Borough. Though Director Willem Kieft, of the Dutch West India Company, through C. van Tienhoven, secretary of the company, in 1640 bought from the Indians title to all the lands between Norwalk, Connecticut, westward to the North or Hudson River, the greater contingent of the actual settlers of Westchester County were English. Adriaen van der Donck, the Jonckheer or young nobleman, sheriff of Rensselaerswyck in 1641, obtained in 1646 a patroonship, similar to an English manor, in the tract above Spuyten Duyvil Creek, which he called Colen Donck, but was foiled by the hostility of the West India Company and died in 1655, and in 1666 his estate was divided and sold to various buyers; the chief memorial of his attempt being in the name of *Yonkers*, "De Jonckheer's (Landt)." (O'Callaghan: "Hist. New Netherland," Vol. I, p. 363.) He married the daughter of the Rev. Francis Doughty, and the chief part of his lands came to Doughty's son, Elias. The Yonkers tract was divided in 1872, the north part being incorporated as the city of Yonkers, and the south part made the town of *Kingsbridge* December 19, 1872, and annexed to New York City in 1873, including Woodlawn Cemetery and the King's Bridge, built in 1693.

The six English manors covering most of the county were: (1) Fordham, in the Vreedeland patent of February 13, 1667, settled by New Englanders; granted November 13, 1671, by the Duke of York to John Archer. (2) Pelham, granted by James II, October 25, 1687, to John Pell; bought from the Indians, by his uncle, Thomas Pell, before 1666, when his title was confirmed by Governor Nicolls. John sold 6,100 acres of his 9,166 acres in 1689 to Huguenots from La Rochelle, France, 1686-87 (the year after the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes), for £1675 25s., the beginning of the town of New Rochelle. The Pelham tract was claimed both by the Dutch and by Connecticut. (3) Philipseborough, granted by William and Mary, June 12, 1693, to Frederick Philipse, including Yonkers, Mount Pleasant, and Greenburgh, towns March 7, 1788, and the villages of Tarrytown, Irvington, and Dobbs Ferry; Ossin-sing, made the town of *Ossining* May 2, 1845, from Mount Pleasant, contains Sing Sing; this manor, extending from the Nepperhan River to the Bronx. The

EXPANSION OF NEW ENGLAND

Philips owner at the time of the Revolution being a Tory, this great estate was confiscated and sold. (4) Morrisania Manor was a grant by William III, May 8, 1697, to Lewis Morris, on the Morrisania patent previously to his uncle, Richard Morris. (5) Cortlandt Manor, on a tract sold by the Indians June 3, 1682, to Cornelius van Burgum, and another tract sold August 24, 1683, to Stephanus van Cortlandt, deed of 1,800 acres April 21, 1685, confirmed by royal patent December 23, 1685, the manor grant by James II, June 17, 1697, including the north part of Westchester County from the Hudson to the bounds of Connecticut, twenty miles by ten; whence *Salem* was set off as a town in 1751; whence Lower or South Salem, a township 1783-1806, named *Lewisboro* from John Lewis, a prominent citizen, February 13, 1840. *North Salem* was set off as a district of Salem, 1760, having all the privileges of a town except representation in the Assembly, and became a town in 1784. *Cortlandt* and *Stephentown* were set off as towns March 7, 1788; the latter was named *Somers* in 1808, from Richard Somers, United States naval commander. *Yorktown*, a town March 7, 1788. (6) Scarsdale Manor, named from Scarsdale, England, was granted by William III, March 21, 1701, to Caleb Heathcote, of London; was partitioned in 1778. It was under John Richbell's purchase from the Indians, September 21, 1661, whence *White Plains* had been set off as a town, March 13, 1721, and *Rye*, settled from Greenwich, Connecticut, in 1660 and 1661, and named from Rye in County Sussex, England; was ceded to New York, November 28, 1683, but seceded to Connecticut; applied for a patent from Connecticut in 1686, and the petition was granted January 19, 1697, and it remained under Connecticut jurisdiction until 1700. *Mamaroneck* and *Scarsdale* were recognized as towns March 7, 1788, after the partition of Scarsdale Manor, which included also the western part of *North Castle*, Heathcote being one of ten patentees; deed from Wampus, Indian sachem, October 19, 1696; deed of eastern part by Ponus, sachem, to Heathcote and others, July 5, 1701; central part, June 11, 1701, with a deed, 1640, to Nathaniel Turner. *New Castle* was set off from North Castle March 18, 1791. July 14, 1705, the Indians sold all their lands in Westchester County.

The towns along Long Island Sound and the eastern border of New York were extensions from Connecticut; *Poundridge* being included in a grant to Captain Nathaniel Turner and others, July 1,

EXPANSION OF NEW ENGLAND

1640, confirmed in 1655 to settlers from Stamford, Connecticut; including Darien and New Canaan, Connecticut, and a large part of Greenwich; and also of Bedford, New York, a tract eight miles along the Sound and sixteen miles northward into the wilderness, which obtained its patent from Connecticut May 26, 1685; the north tract being settled by twenty-two Stamford men, deed from the Indians, 7,693 acres, for £46, December 23, 1630; but Bedford, organized May 13, 1697 (and named from Bedford, England), patent was confirmed by New York April 8, 1704, and Poundridge, patented by Connecticut in 1685, fell within New York in the settlement of boundaries in 1731. In 1790 *Bedford* was the most populous town in Westchester County. *East Chester* was granted by Thomas Pell to Fairfield, Connecticut, settlers, ten families, as "Hutchinson's," or the "Ten Farms," 1664, and chartered as East Chester, March 9, 1666; whence *Mount Vernon*, the southern part, was incorporated a city, March 22, 1892. *Westchester*, like East Chester, named from Chester, England, was called a town by the Dutch in 1673; a borough in the North Riding of Yorkshire, Long Island, 1686, giving name to Westchester County in 1691; and a town of the United States April 18, 1785; was annexed to New York City June 6, 1895, after *West Farms* had been set off May 13, 1846, and annexed to New York City in 1874; whence *Morrisania*, named from Gouverneur Morris, had been set off December 7, 1855, and annexed to New York City in 1873. *Harrison* was bought by John Harrison; the first settlers, 1724, from Rye. All wills in New York, Kings, Richmond, Westchester and Orange counties, were to be proved in New York City for a long early period. Surrogates appointed by the colonial governor appear in Westchester County by 1730. White Plains has superseded Westchester as the county town. Westchester County was so little settled in 1686, that the town of Westchester was combined with Hempstead and Oyster Bay, as the North Riding of Yorkshire County, Long Island. Nearly all the early settlers of Westchester County, except New Rochelle, were originally from England, landing first in Massachusetts; the greater number entered the county by way of Connecticut, Long Island furnishing nearly all the remainder. Though some proceeded from this county into northern New Jersey, and up the Hudson, nearly all "up the State" settlers belonged to a later immigration from New England.

Isaac De Rasière, the First Secretary of New Netherland; His Ancestry and Descendants

BY LOUIS P. DE BOER, A. M., DENVER, COLORADO



ISAAC DE RASIÈRE was born at Middelburg, in Zeeland, in the United Netherlands, in the year 1595, and baptized in the Reformed Church there on October 15, 1595. His father was Laurens de Rasière, silversmith, who had entered the guild there in 1591. The name of his mother has not been found. Witnesses to the baptism were Adriaen Wyns and Ingelken (Angelica) van Vyn (*sic.*).

An elder brother of Isaac, Abraham de Rasière, was born there, presumably in the latter part of 1593, and baptized on February 15, 1594. One of the witnesses to his baptism was "Dierick de Rasier."

This Abraham de Rasière served the Dutch East India Company, like his brother, Isaac, served the Dutch West India Company. On July 17, 1618, Abraham de Rasière was upper-merchant on the E. I. Company's ship "de Seewolf" ("the Seewolf"). Captain of this craft was Havick Claes. On October 26, 1620, this ship was one of the four armed merchant vessels which, accompanied by two yachts, were used in the navigation to Patany, Siam and Cambodja. On the named date she sailed from Jacatra (now Batavia, Java) to Atchin, in Sumatra. (See "Leyden Archives.") The "Seewolf" and the "Orange" sailed on September 1, 1622, from Amsterdam to the Moluccas. We have no further information concerning this brother of Isaac de Rasière.

Laurens de Rasière, father of Isaac and Abraham, seems to have come to Middelburg with Dirck de Rasière, his father, in, or shortly before the year 1590. We may place the date of his first marriage in 1591 or 1592, soon after he had joined the silversmith guild. Dirck de Rasière joined the same guild at Middelburg in 1590, after having practiced his craft for some time in Amsterdam. He entered the guild at Amsterdam on April 24, 1586, at the same time becoming a citizen there. At this time he is mentioned as a native of Liège, but

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

the indications are that he and his family had lived for some time at Antwerp, and like all other Protestants had left this city, according to the terms of surrender, within the time of four years after its capture by the Spanish Army in 1585.

The de Rasière family was of old Walloon origin. Jean de Rasière, the first of the name, Knight of Ligniville, lived about 1250. He married Nicolle de Novian. In 1320, their daughter, Alice de Rasière, became abbess of the convent of Poussey, in the Vosges, in Lorraine. After her death she was succeeded as such by her sister, Adeline de Rasière.

NOTE—The fortune of the noble family of de Rasière received a severe blow when in the struggle for supremacy between Philip-le-Bel and Guy de Dampierre, Godfried de Rasière, Knight, who held the part of the latter was deprived of all his feudal holdings and those of his wife, Margareta, by the victorious Philip. His estate was near Bourbourg and in the parishes of Lampernes and Eghenhard Chapel, near Lille. In 1298, Philip granted Godfried de Rasière's confiscated estate near Bourbourg to his favorite, Jean de Zoutenai. (See "Bulletin du Comité Flamand de France," Vol. VI (1872), pp. 111, 143.)

There lived at Lille, in 1291, a certain Robert à Rasière, Knight, whose seal appears in "Scéaux de la Flandre," by G. Demay, No. 2744. At Lille lived further, in 1375, Gerard à Rasier, citizen, whose seal is given, *ibid.*, under No. 4677. In 1376 he was a magistrate there. (See V. Derode: "Histoire," III, 487.)

On April 11, 1561, became a denizen of Antwerp, "Geraert de Rasière, Diericksoone," a native of Liège, silversmith. This Gerard, son of a certain Dirck de Rasière, of Liège, according to time, may have been a brother of Dirck de Rasière, silversmith, native of Liège, who in 1586 lived at Amsterdam and in 1590 and 1594 at Middelburg, in Zeeland. In that case Gerard de Rasière was an uncle of our Laurens de Rasière.

The following item from the guild books of Antwerp seems to be in favor of this supposition: "Tiry de Rassier, 1564/5." "Tiry" or "Thierry" is the French form of the Dutch name "Dirck" or "Diederick."

NOTE—He was born at Liège in 1531, as on July 12, 1577, he is stated to have been forty-six years old. (See Antwerpsch "Archiefblad," XXIV, 224.)

Gerard de Rasière, in 1561, when he came to Antwerp from Liège, was a young man, as his marriage at Antwerp, his whole subsequent career and those of his sons, show. Here is, therefore, a clue that "Tiry" or "Dirck" de Rasière, who came to Antwerp in 1564 as a silversmith, was then also a young man and the same person who,

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

thirty years later, in 1594, at Middelburg, was a grandfather. That this Dirck de Rasière of 1564-65 was a Protestant is further borne out by the fact that he did not live at Antwerp after 1567, when the Netherland Protestants, especially those of Antwerp, first began to feel the hand of the Duke of Alva and the Inquisition.* Again, this supposition is strengthened by the fact that he returned to Antwerp as soon as religious tolerance was introduced there by the Prince of Orange in 1581. He is then named "Dirck Rassir, master silversmith."

Of Gerard de Rasière we know a little more. He remained a Roman Catholic and loyal to the King of Spain, yet in such a moderate way, that he was maintained in his office as city mintmaster during the nationalistic régime from 1581 till 1585. Also during that régime he must have borne himself very moderately, for he was kept in office by the Spanish authorities after 1585. Gerard de Rasière appears as Mintmaster-General of Antwerp in 1571, with Jacob Jongelinx and Robert van Eeckeren as mintmasters under him. This was during the severe régime of Alva (1567-73). The latter two men were dismissed by the national régime in 1581, but he was confirmed in his office by letter of May 20, 1582. In the same manner the restored Spanish régime reconfirmed him in his office by letter of August 6, 1586.

Besides Mintmaster-General, Gerard de Rasière was a gold and silversmith and artist of the first rank. Several masterpieces of his hand are known and some of these still exist in private and public collections, as for instance the new Great Seal of Antwerp, designed by him in 1581, and the beautiful medal inscribed "Religione et Providencia"; also medals made by him in May, 1584, and March and April, 1585, in commemoration of heroic feats during the siege of the city. (See "Antwerpsch Archiefblad," V and VI.) His business partner was Lowys Caluwaert, and they bought between 1571 and 1579 much property in the city. They owned a number of houses on the famous "Meir" at Antwerp, among others the "Keerskorf" ("the Cherrybasket.")

*A certain Balhasar de Rasière, born in 1548 at Tournay, a weaver, became a Protestant (Baptist) and was rebaptized on 21 February, 1569, at Borgerhout in Flanders. For this fact, accused by the Inquisition, he was burned alive at Antwerp, 2 April, 1569, aged twenty-one. (See *Ibid.*, XIV, p. 122.)

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

Of his marriage with Christina Briers, at Antwerp, two sons were born: Artus de Rasière and Rombout de Rasière, who both became silversmiths. They, according to our calculation, were first cousins of Laurens de Rasière, of Middelburg. Artus de Rasière, on January 24, 1592, succeeded his father as Mintmaster-General of Antwerp. The younger son, Rombout de Rasière, was from 1600 on an established silversmith at Antwerp. From his shop proceeded the famous silver water pitcher, in 1631, presented by the Archduchess Isabella, Sovereign of the Spanish Netherlands, to the painter, Pieter Paul Rubens. Rombout had a son named Dirck de Rasière, who lived from 1602 till 1654, and who also was a silversmith at Antwerp. (See "Rubens Bulletyn," I, 24off.)

Isaac de Rasière, the New Netherlander, lost his mother before he was ten years old. His father, Laurens de Rasière, remarried at Rotterdam, June 5, 1605, with Anna l'Hermite, widow of Jehan Fuefuet, and daughter of Jacques l'Hermite, Sr., who at that time resided at Rotterdam on the south side of the "Blaeck" and later in the "Houttuyn."

This l'Hermite family was of Antwerp origin, the grandfather of Anna l'Hermite, Jacques l'Hermite (I), having moved to the United Netherlands with wife and children and grandchildren, after the fall of the city in 1585. At Antwerp he had been a staunch Protestant and friend of the national cause. Early in 1585 he had been delegate of Antwerp to the Estates of Holland and Zeeland. The family settled at Rotterdam, where he died late in November, 1600, and his widow in the first half of July, 1603. Their son, Jacques l'Hermite (II), had three children, all natives of Antwerp, named: Jacques l'Hermite (III), the above-named Anna, and Sara l'Hermite. The latter married, at Rotterdam, on September 21, 1603, with Pieter de Martin, a native of Paris.

A marriage contract between Laurens de Rasière and Anna l'Hermite was drawn up at Rotterdam on April 29, 1605, before Notary Public Jacob Symons. A copy of this document we have not yet been able to obtain.

The connections established by their father's second marriage were instrumental in determining and promoting the careers of the two boys, Abraham and Isaac de Rasière.

Jacques l'Hermite, their uncle, was born at Antwerp in 1582. As

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

a young man he entered the service of the Dutch East India Company soon after its founding in 1602. From 1607 till 1611 he was upper-merchant for the company on the Island of Bantam and head of the trading station there. As such he made, in 1609, a treaty with the Sultan of Bantam, and in 1610 one with the Prince of Jacatra (the later city of Batavia, Java.) In 1611 he was a member of the High Council of the Dutch East Indies. In 1612 he returned to Patria. On March 2, 1613, he married, at Amsterdam, Theodora Van Wely, who was a close relative of Anna Van Wely, the second wife of the well-known Kiliaen van Rensselaer, who was not yet married then. Jacques l'Hermite and Kiliaen van Rensselaer, on February 28, 1614, became partners in the jeweler and silversmith firm of "Jan van Wely & Comp." at Amsterdam. Much about this firm may be found in the Van Rensselaer-Bowier Manuscripts, edited by Mr. A. J. F. van Laer.

Before the year 1620 Jacques l'Hermite had given up this partnership and again had turned toward colonial enterprises. On April 29, 1623, he sailed as admiral of a commercial fleet, named the "Nassau Fleet," from Amsterdam for a journey around the world. The fleet completed the trip, but the admiral died on the West Coast of South America, at Callao de Lima, on June 2, 1624. That Abraham and Isaac de Rasière, the stepsons of his sister, Anna, instead of becoming silversmiths, entered upon colonial careers, is undoubtedly due to his influence.

Isaac de Rasière, a young man of thirty-one years, entered the service of the Dutch West India Company, which was founded in 1621. Early in 1626 he sailed on the ship "Het Wapen van Amsterdam" ("The Amsterdam Arms") for New Netherland, where, in 1624, the beginnings of a colony had been made. Most of the early colonists in New Netherland were of Walloon descent and, like their fathers, faithful subjects of the Lords States-General of the United Netherlands. The company, therefore, employed preferably Netherland Walloons as her officials in early New Netherland. Jean Lampo, born 1591, a Netherland Walloon of Canterbury, England, became "Schout-Fiscal" in New Netherland. (See article by L. P. de Boer in "N. Y. Gen. and Biog. Record," April, 1930.) Peter Minuit, born 1590, a Netherland Walloon of Wesel, in Germany, became Director-General of that Colony. (See article by L. P. de Boer, *ibid.*, January, 1928.)

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

The Director-General, in fact, was also Secretary of the Colony, but Isaac de Rasière was made Provincial Secretary, second to the Director. He arrived as such at Fort Amsterdam, on Manhattan, on July 28, 1626.

The official positions in New Netherland at first were not in every respect well defined. The Secretary's services, for instance, were also required as bookkeeper of the monthly wages of the officers and employees of the company in the Colony. On September 23, 1626, he sent a lengthy and most interesting account of the Colony, the country, its climate, products, natives, etc., to his masters, the Directors of the West India Company at Amsterdam. The original Dutch text, together with an English translation by Mr. A. J. F. van Laer, have been published by the Henry E. Huntington Library.

The secretarial duties of Isaac de Rasière in New Netherland included that of Intercolonial Ambassador. In March, 1627, he was sent by Director Minuit on a "good-will embassy" to the "Northern English," to wit, the Colony of New Plymouth. (The New Netherlanders always spoke of the New Englanders as "the Northern English" and of the Virginians as "the Southern English.") A descriptive account of this mission is given in Joseph White Moulton's "History of the State of New York" (1826). The embassy sailed for New Plymouth from New Amsterdam in the bark "Nassau," accompanied by soldiers and trumpeters. Governor William Bradford, of the New Plymouth Colony, sent a boat to meet the embassy at Manonscusset. For several days Isaac de Rasière and his New Netherlanders were entertained as the guests of the New Englanders. Profitable intercolonial trade connections were established. Also an intercolonial means of currency was introduced, namely, "seawan," or "wampum." On October 4, 1627, after his return to his New Netherland home country, the Secretary sent a letter of thanks to Governor Bradford.

Isaac de Rasière seems to have held office for about three years, returning to Holland late in 1628 or early in 1629, most likely at the same time as Cornelis van Voorst, who had spent an equal length of time in the Colony. As Secretary of New Netherland, Isaac de Rasière was succeeded by Jan van Remund, with Leendert Cool as Assistant Secretary. Whereas, New Netherland comprised the territories of the present states of New York, New Jersey, Delaware

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

and parts of Connecticut, Maryland and Pennsylvania, Isaac de Rasière may be rightly considered as predecessor in office to the present Secretaries of State in all these states.

Could he ever have imagined the enormous extent to which the functions of these dignitaries would developed after three hundred years?

Upon his return to Holland, Isaac de Rasière settled at Amsterdam. He probably was engaged in colonial trade on his own account, but he never severed his connections with the West India Company. He had reached the age which enables a single man to make wise and careful marriage calculations. On December 20, 1633, he married, at Amsterdam, Eva Bartels, like himself, a native of Middelburg, in Zeeland, daughter of Hans Bartels and Maria Raye, his wife. The following record is found in the Dutch Reformed Church Registers of Amsterdam (MS. in the Old City Archives, Amsterdam.) (translated) :

Banns, 3 Dec., 1633.

Isaac de Rasière, of Middelburg, aged 37; parents dead; living in the Coe-Street at Amsterdam,

With Eva Bartels, of Middelburg, aged 24, assisted by Hans Bartels, her father, and Eva Ray, her grandmother, living in the Pyl Steeg.

The parents of the bride, like those of the groom, were of Antwerp origin, her father having been born there in 1570 and her mother in 1580.

They also, with their parents, had soon after the capture of Antwerp by the Spaniards in 1585, taken refuge in the Dutch Republic and settled in Middelburg and thereupon moved to Amsterdam. Jehan Raye, uncle of the bride, became, in 1621, one of the first directors of the newly founded Dutch West India Company, and remained one of its principal shareholders for many years. Students of New Netherland history are familiar with the intrigues current within the circles of the directors in Patria, which often decided colonial destinies and officers. The "Patroon party," of which Kiliaen van Rensselaer was the leader, in 1633 had endeavored to have Wouter van Twiller, a nephew of the latter, appointed as Director-General of New Netherland. Isaac de Rasière had had an eye upon this office, and at the time of his wedding he had not yet given up hopes of soon replacing

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

Van Twiller. Even at the wedding party, to which several directors of the West India Company had been invited, efforts were made to this effect. (See Van Rensselaer-Bowier Manuscripts, p. 270.)

Eva Bartels, the wife of Isaac de Rasière, was baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church at Middelburg, in Zeeland, on May 17, 1609. Witnesses to her baptism were: Leonart Raye, Thomas Josse and Eva Raye. As appears from a document in the "Archives of Rotterdam," her parents had the following children: 1. Eva, born 1609, who married Isaac de Rasière. 2. Magdalena, born 1610, died 1684, who married Jean de Meye, of Rotterdam. 3. Elisabeth, who married Elbert Chrispyns. 4. Catharina, who married Dr. Rogier Bernaerts, of Amsterdam. 5. Maria, who lived single at Rotterdam. 6. Adam, who lived single at Amsterdam. 7. Barbara, who lived single at Amsterdam.

Elbert Chrispyns, the brother-in-law of Isaac de Rasière, was in the Dutch Colony in Brazil early in 1634. We find him as baptismal witness at Pernambuco on March 11, 1634. At that time Isaac de Rasière was still at Amsterdam, where on September 17, 1634, his eldest son, Johannes (or Hans) was baptized. In 1635, he went with his family to Dutch Brazil. There his other children were born, two at Recife and one in the Province of Paraiba. The entries in the Dutch Reformed Church Records of Recife read (translated):

1636, April 20—Lourens, of Ysaac de Rogiere and Eva Bartels. Witnesses: Mr. Jacob Stachouwer, Elbert Chryspyns, Barbara Wyntges, Elisabeth Chryspyns (*i. e.*, Bartels).

The name Wyntges, Wyns and Van Wyn is probably the same and may contain a clue as to the maternal relatives of Isaac de Rasière.

1637, April 19—Ysaac de Rasière and Eva Bartels. Witnesses: Mr. Servatius Carpentier, Joost van den Bogaert, Maria Solers, Joanna Ridders.

In 1638 the family moved from Recife to the Province of Paraiba, where Isaac de Rasière had sugar plantations and three sugar mills, named the "Amstel," the "Middelburg" and "la Rasière." A Dutch Reformed Church was established in Paraiba, in which Isaac de Rasière was an elder. That he also held the office of "Schepen," or magistrate there appears from the Acts of the Classis of Brazil, October 29, 1638. As delegate to the meeting of the classis at that date

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

is recorded: "From the Church of Paraiba, the lord Schepen, Isaac de Rasière, Elder." (See "Hist. Genootschap, Utrecht, Kroniek," 1873, 29, 338.)

Isaac de Rasière was for the West India Company the "farmer of the sugar tax" in the Province of Paraiba. On November 19, 1641, he received as such "for the two years during which he had held office" the sum of 9,267 florins. This was a profitable business as is shown by an item of November 2, 1641, crediting Isaac de Rasière for ten thousand and five hundred and thirty-nine florins for eighty-one boxes of sugar delivered at Paraiba under the Commissary of the WIC., named Van Hacke. (See Archives of the Kingdom, The Hague, WIC. Papers, 69, Brazil.)

In Paraiba, in 1641, another son was born, who was named Laurens, whereas the first Laurens, born in 1636, had died. We have no church records of Paraiba.

For the last time we find "Isaak de Rasière" mentioned in Brazil on March 25, 1651, at Recife. The sad history of that Dutch Colony had been *his* history. When the Portuguese reconquered one after the other those provinces which in the thirty years of Dutch régime had developed great prosperity, the last remnants of the colonists concentrated at Recife. In April, 1654, also this last Dutch stronghold in Brazil was given up.

The relatives of Isaac de Rasière also left Brazil. His brother-in-law, Elbert Chrispyns, lost his plantation, "Manciape," which he had purchased from the WIC. in 1634, for seventy thousand florins. It was the confiscated plantation of Francisco Reguo Barros.

Elbert Chrispyns and Elisabeth Bartels, his wife, had two children baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church of Recife; on September 27, 1637, Petrus, and on November 21, 1638, Maria.

Also the Hon. Balthasar Wyntgens, whom we presume to have been a maternal relative of de Rasière, had left. He was a member of the High Council ("Politieke Raed") of Dutch Brazil, and Director of the Province of Tamarica. His wife was Barbara Goudswaert, formerly widow of Capt. Jacob Ewoutsz de Reus. As "Barbara Wyntges," she witnessed, on April 20, 1636, at Recife, the baptism of Isaac de Rasière's son, Lourens.

It is possible that another sister-in-law, Catharina Bartels, spent

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

some time in Dutch Brazil. We find a "Tryntje Bartels" as baptismal witness at Recife on July 7 and on July 28, 1641.

The unrefined sugar which Isaac de Rasière and his relatives sent over from Brazil to Holland was refined at Rotterdam in the refinery of his brother-in-law, Jean de Meye, husband of Magdalena Bartels. Jean de Meye was son of Jacob de Meye (1566-1622) and Maria Wyntgens.* Jacob's brother, Jean De Meye, Sr., whose wife was Eva Raye (he died 1645), was also a sugar refiner at Rotterdam. The younger Jean de Meye and Magdalena Bartels, his wife, had nine children, six sons and three daughters, all born between 1635 and 1653. The eldest of these, Jean de Meye (III), nephew of Isaac de Rasière, likewise became a sugar refiner at Rotterdam.

In those days many Dutch families became rich through the Brazilian sugar. The residence built by Johan Maurice, of Nassau-Siegen, former Governor of Dutch Brazil, still stands at The Hague. As the "Maurice House" it is well known to American visitors. Built from funds proceeding from the Brazilian sugar production, the contemporaries termed it "the Sugar House."

All these sweet profits, also for Isaac de Rasière, *cum suis*, came to an end with the passing of Dutch Brazil, in 1654.

Isaac de Rasière's first residence in Holland, immediately after his return there, was naturally Rotterdam. He must have kept in close contact with the other returned Dutch Brazilians, who for some time lived close together at Overschie, near Rotterdam, where they had time to liquidate their business affairs and jointly press their claims against the WIC. and the Dutch Government for losses incurred in Brazil.

Here he settled his business matters with the de Meye family and regulated family affairs with the Bartels family. On September 3, 1654, an agreement was made there between all the heirs of the estate of the late Hans Bartels and his wife. Isaac de Rasière's signature appears under this document drawn up before Notary Public Vitus Mustelius at Rotterdam. He was then about fifty-nine years old.

Where Isaac de Rasière and his family lived after that date, or

*The de Meye family originated from Belle, or Bailleul, in Flandres, not far from Lille, the ancestral home of the de Rasière family. Carel de Meye, born about 1550, and Maria de Cerf, his wife, with their children, about 1580 had fled for the sake of their Evangelical faith to Middelburg, Zeeland, where their son, François, became an important grain merchant. (See F. Nagtglas: "Levensbesch. van Zeeuwen.")

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

what his occupation was, we have not learned so far. At the time of his son Laurens' marriage, at Amsterdam, November 1, 1669, it is stated that Isaac de Rasière then lived in the Barbados, in the West Indies. He must have been seventy-four years old at that time, as he was born in 1595. Dr. Albert Eekhof, in his article on Isaac de Rasière, in Molhuysen's "Biographical Dictionary," states that "according to a family tradition, he has been Governor of the Island of Tabago in his later years." This WIC. possession was administered by the Chamber of Zeeland and was also named "Nova Walcheria," or "New Walcheren," after the Island of Walcheren, in Zeeland. In 1670, the Dutch colonists there expressed their need of a reorganization in the administration.

The date of the death of Isaac de Rasière is not known. The fact that he, and not his wife also, is mentioned in 1669 as living in the Barbados, may indicate that she had died before that date. It is nearly certain that at that advanced age he remained in the West Indies and that he died in the New World, where he had spent most of his life. The children of Isaac de Rasière and Eva Bartels, his wife, were: 1. Johannes, baptized 1634, September 17, at Amsterdam. 2. Laurens, baptized 1636, April 20, at Reciff, in Brazil. He died in infancy. 3. Isaac, born 1637, April 19, a Reciff, in Brazil. 4. Laurens, born 1641, at Paraiba, in Brazil.

The eldest son, Johannes de Rasière, born 1634, also seems to have gone to the Dutch West Indian Islands, when his father went there after his New Netherland and his Brazilian periods. Johannes de Rasière, on March 4, 1664, on the Island of St. Christopher, signed an account of the sale of horses shipped in the "Vergulde Vos" ("The Gilded Fox") from the Island of Curaçao. On the same date he signed an invoice of sugar. (See N. Y. Col. MSS. 17, pp. 81 and 82.) We have no record of his marriage or of any descendants.

Isaac de Rasière may have had a daughter, Anna, possibly born in 1639 in Paraiba, Brazil. A certain Anna de Rasière, wife of Jean del Canch, on December 3, 1664, became a member of the French Reformed Church at Amsterdam. But she may have belonged to the branch of the family which had settled in London, England. Jean de Rasière and Marguerite le Clercq, his wife, had their children, Jonas and Michael, baptized in the French Reformed Church of Threadneedle Street, London, respectively, on March 4, 1620, and October

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

5, 1623. The le Clercq family in England originated from Armen-tières, and was related to Jean Lampo, who was in New Netherland with Isaac de Rasière.

Laurens de Rasière (Isaac, Laurens, Dirck, Dirck), was born in the Province of Paraiba, Dutch Brazil, in 1641. On November 19, 1669, he married, in the New Church at Amsterdam, in which also his parents had married, Aletta Huntum, daughter of Hans Huntum and Cornelia Hertogh, his wife. She was born at Amsterdam in 1647. Her father was a nephew of Hans Jorissen Huntum, who must have known Isaac de Rasière in New Netherland. He was a fur trader in New Netherland before 1621 and a relative of Captain Willem Jorissen Huntum, of the ship the "Witte Duyf" ("The White Dove"), who visited New Netherland in 1621. After the establishment of the WIC., Hans Jorissen Huntum became Commissioner of Fort Orange (Albany, New York). He was a cruel and arbitrary man, who made many enemies. In April, 1632, Huntum, in a quarrel with Cornelis van Voorst, Director of Pavonia (now Hudson and Bergen counties, New Jersey), during the latter's visit at Fort Orange, was stabbed to death. Huntum's widow at Amsterdam later brought proceedings against Van Voorst, but he seems to have had sufficient defense to be acquitted. Hans Jorissen Huntum had a brother, who founded a fur business at Amsterdam, in the house "De Bonte Mantel" ("The Fur Coat").

Laurens de Rasière followed in the footsteps of his father's brother, Abraham de Rasière, and of his father's uncle, Jacques l'Hermite, and became a trader and navigator. He was a sea captain in the service of the Dutch West India Company. His death occurred before July 17, 1694, when his widow is mentioned. The beautiful oil portraits of him and his wife, done by the famous brush of Nicolaes Maes, are at present in the National, or Royal, Museum at Brussels. Formerly these portraits were in the possession of Madam Nederburgh, at Warmond, in Holland. In the paintings the coats-of-arms of de Rasière and Huntum are clearly visible. That of de Rasière is described as follows: "party per fess argent, 1: a wavy bend vert; 2: three leopard heads regardant proper (2 and 1). Crèst: a leopard's head regardant proper." The children of Laurens de Rasière and Aletta Huntum, his wife, were: 1. Isaac, baptized 1670, December 7, at Amsterdam. 2. Agatha

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

Constantia, born about 1673. She was alive at Amsterdam on January 20, 1713. 3. Johannes, born about 1676. He was alive on August 9, 1695.

Witnesses to the baptism of the child, Isaac, were on December 7, 1670, in the Easter Church at Amsterdam: Pieter de Meye, Isaac de Rasière, Eva Huntom, and Neeltje Hartog. Pieter de Meye (1642-1722) was the first cousin of the child's father. He evidently represented the paternal witnesses of whom, under ordinary circumstances, the father's father, Isaac de Rasière, would have been first in rank. From this we surmise that the grandfather was not personally present, but possibly still in the Barbados, where he was in November, 1669.

Of the maternal witnesses, Eva Huntum was a sister; Neeltje Hartog, the mother of the child's mother.

Isaac de Rasière (Laurens, Isaac, Laurens, Dirck, Dirck), baptized on December 7, 1670, in the Easter Church at Amsterdam, married in the New Church there, where also his father and his father's father, the New Netherlander, had married, on March 17, 1693, with Anna Maria Van Huchtenburg. She was a daughter of Jan van Huchtenburg, and born at Amsterdam in 1671. The name of her mother we have not found recorded. Van Huchtenburg (Amsterdam): "azure, between three fleurs-de-lis argent, a fesse or." Of this marriage the following children were born at Amsterdam: 1. Laurens, baptized 1694, June 4. He died in infancy. 2. Jan, baptized 1695, August 9. Witnesses: Jan de Rasière and Elisabeth Mommers.* 3. Laurens, baptized 1698, June 27. He was buried on August 9, 1702. 4. Hendrick, baptized 1700, January 3. Witnesses: Joan van Huchtenburg and Eva† Huntum. This child died February, 1701. 5. Jacoba, baptized 1702, December 22. 6. Isaac, baptized 1713, January 20. Witnesses: Jan van Hugtenburgh and Agatha Constantia de Rasière.‡

Isaac de Rasière (Isaac, Laurens, Isaac, Laurens, Dirck, Dirck), baptized at Amsterdam, January 20, 1713, married there on May 28,

*Jan de Rasière was either the father's uncle, Johannes, born in 1634, or, and this is more likely, the father's brother, Johannes, born in 1676. Elisabeth Mommers we suppose to have been wife of Jan van Huchtenburg.

†Jan van Huchtenburg was the maternal grandfather of these children. Eva Huntum was the father's aunt.

‡Agatha Constantia de Rasière was the father's sister.

ISAAC DE RASIÈRE—ANCESTRY AND DESCENDANTS

1734, with Ida Oosterling. She was born at Haarlem, Holland, and baptized in the Dutch Reformed Church there on January 1, 1711, daughter of Johannes Oosterling and Anna Kronenburg, his wife. The Oosterling family was originally Flemish and came from Ghent. The branches of Flandres and Holland have different arms.

Oosterling (Holland): "Argent, on a terrace vert an arbor of the same between two ravens affronted sable."

This Isaac de Rasière and his family left Amsterdam about 1747 and settled at The Hague. There he was for more than fifty years secretary of the Exchange Bank. He died there on February 13, 1799, after he had seen the fall of the old Dutch Republic in 1795, the French Revolution in 1789, and the establishment of independence of the North American Colonies, including the territory of old New Netherland, his great-grandfather's country. He died in the same year as George Washington and was the last male descendant of Isaac de Rasière, the first Secretary of New Netherland. Had armorial bearings and their usage still been popular at that time, he would have been buried with his escutcheon upon his coffin. But such a display was naturally out of place in the "Batavian Republic" of 1799. The children of Isaac de Rasière and Ida Oosterling were: 1. Jacoba de Rasière, born 173—, at Amsterdam. 2. Maria Elisabeth de Rasière, born at Amsterdam, March 12, 1737, who died at The Hague on August 12, 1804. She was married to Isaac Scheltus, LL. D., official government printer of the States-General, at The Hague. He lived from July 13, 1739, till November 29, 1799. Of this marriage a daughter, Jacoba Maria Scheltus, was born in 1771, who married and left descendants. 3. Johanna Maria de Rasière, born at Amsterdam, 17—. She died at The Hague shortly before her father on January 23, 1799. 4. Ida de Rasière, born at Amsterdam, 1743. She died at The Hague on October 1, 1812, two years before the establishment of the present Kingdom of the Netherlands. This great-great-granddaughter of Isaac de Rasière, "the New Netherlander," was the last of his descendants to bear the name of de Rasière.

§Willem Carel van Meerten, born 1838, a great-grandson of Isaac Scheltus and of Maria Elisabeth de Rasière (1737-1804), died in Holland, in 1879, without issue. (See "Familieblad," 1901, p. 227.)

Bonapartes and American Marriages

BY ALTA RALPH, WATERTOWN, NEW YORK



WHEN the name of Bonaparte was looming large, and the eyes of the world were centered on France, there came to America, as a midshipman on board a vessel of the French Navy, a youth of eighteen, Jerome Bonaparte, youngest brother of Napoleon. In the social circles of Baltimore, where they spent some time, the French officers proved a great attraction, young Jerome being the object of special attention. Among the young ladies who vied with each other in efforts to entertain them was one of very unusual beauty, the acknowledged belle of her home town, Miss Elizabeth Patterson, daughter of William Patterson, a wealthy resident of Baltimore. Her great beauty so infatuated Jerome that he proposed marriage, and, in spite of the objections of her father, she became his bride in July, 1803.

This marriage so enraged Napoleon that he immediately ordered his brother home. The vanity of this young girl prevented the thought entering her mind that she would be unwelcome in any family, and Jerome believed that when Napoleon saw her, her beauty would disarm his objections. They sailed for Europe, but on reaching Portugal, she was refused admission. He disembarked there and she went on to Amsterdam, but was not allowed to land there. England being an enemy of France, welcomed her, and there her child was born, June 7, 1805. In October the same year she returned to America with her son, named Jerome for his father, but familiarly called Bo. In February, 1805, Napoleon declared the marriage of his brother to Elizabeth Patterson invalid, and the marriage of Jerome and Princess Catherine, daughter of the King of Württemberg soon followed. Napoleon made Jerome King of Westphalia. William Patterson provided for his daughter, but never felt very kindly toward her, or treated her very cordially. In his will was the following clause, "To my undutiful daughter, Elizabeth, I give ten thousand dollars." After his death, in 1836, there was found in his house on South Street, Baltimore, a package of letters labeled "Betsy's Let-

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

ters." This girl, married at eighteen and deserted at twenty, always addressed her father as "Dear Sir," and showed no affection for any person except her son.

She remained in Baltimore from October, 1805, until after the fall of Napoleon at Waterloo, when she visited England and France. In spite of the slight and disgrace put upon her by her husband and his family, she considered it an honor to bear the name of Bonaparte, and made use of it on all occasions. She was well received in Europe and her letters are filled with accounts of the attention she was receiving, her beauty, and her son's beauty and rank. Her ambition was to educate her son in Europe and have him recognized as a Bonaparte by his father's family. In October, 1821, she took him to Rome to meet his grandmother and aunt, and a movement was started to marry this sixteen-year-old boy to his cousin, Charlotte, younger daughter of Joseph Bonaparte, then with her father in America.

To further this plan, Bo was dispatched to America that he might be on hand, but the proposed marriage did not take place. On July 11, 1824, Charlotte sailed for Italy to rejoin her mother, and in 1827 she married her cousin, Napoleon Louis, Duke of Cleves and Berg, eldest son of Louis Bonaparte, King of Holland, by his Queen, Hortense de Beauharnais, and brother of Napoleon III. In the summer of 1826 Bo joined his mother in Europe with a view of meeting his father and renewing acquaintance with the rest of the family. In a letter to her father dated Florence, 6 October, 1826, Elizabeth says, "Bo is now with his father." Under date of Rome, January 25, 1827, Bo writes to his grandfather Patterson, "I have been here now about six weeks and have seen nearly all the members of my father's family who are now living. I am excessively tired of the way of living here. You have no idea how anxious I am to return home. I was always aware that America was the only country for me, but now I am still more firmly persuaded of it than ever." Madame Bonaparte was destined to be disappointed in all her matrimonial schemes for her son. In spite of her statement, "I will never consent to his marrying any one but a person of great wealth, his name and rank require it," two years after his return to America, his engagement to a young lady of Baltimore was announced. His mother violently opposed the match. Her life ambition wrecked, all her plans frustrated, she returned to America in 1834, and established herself in the "little

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

trading town of Baltimore," as she contemptuously called her native city, and in spite of repeated declarations that she could not be happy in America, and that she detested Baltimore, passed the last forty-five years of her life there in quiet obscurity. Did the attention that her beauty, and the glamour of the name of Bonaparte drew to her for a few short years, compensate for the bitter disappointment and neglect she had to endure?

The crowd in lower Broadway, New York, on the afternoon of September 6, 1815, were startled to see a man throw himself on his knees before a stout elderly gentleman who tried to raise him and to calm his emotion. A young man who was with the older man stooped over the kneeling enthusiast, whispering a few words as he helped him to his feet, and the three men disappeared in a shop. The next morning the newspapers announced that Joseph Bonaparte, ex-King of Spain, and eldest brother of Napoleon, had succeeded in evading the vigilance of the English cruisers, and in reaching the United States. He had, and his recognition by one of his former soldiers, was what caused the demonstration in the street the preceding day. He had sailed in the American brig, "Commerce," from the little port of Royan, near Bordeaux, on July 25, landing in New York August 28. Soon after his arrival he went to Philadelphia, where he remained for some time, occupying several different houses. His last home in the Quaker City was one of the houses in Girard Row, Chestnut Street. The story goes that before these houses were built Joseph wished to purchase from Stephen Girard the block from Eleventh to Twelfth, and from Chestnut to Market streets. In discussing the subject at a dinner given by Bonaparte to Girard, Joseph offered to pay any fair price. "What do you consider a fair price?" asked Girard. Joseph replied, "I will cover the block with silver half dollars." With a calculating look Girard said slowly: "Yes, Monsieur, if you will stand them up edgewise." After the retreat from Moscow and the many reverses suffered by the French, Napoleon and Joseph Bonaparte were discussing the possibility of being forced to leave France and seek refuge in America. Unrolling a map of the United States, and placing his finger upon a spot in New Jersey, Napoleon said: "If I am ever forced to flee to America, I shall settle somewhere between New York and Philadelphia, where I can receive the earliest intelligence from France by ships arriving at either port." This may have influ-

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

enced his brother in the choice of a home in New Jersey. He bought a large estate in Bordentown, built a beautiful residence, where he entertained lavishly, and drew around him many of the exiles from France who came to seek an asylum in America.

Although forty-seven years of age when he came to America, Joseph, like the younger brother who preceded him, fell a victim to the charms of an American woman, and another American girl yielded to the name of Bonaparte. While living in Philadelphia he met and loved Annette Savage, the pretty daughter of a proud old Philadelphia family. Before the rise of the Bonaparte family to fame, Joseph had married Marie Julie Clari, daughter of a rich soap manufacturer, and of whom Napoleon entirely disapproved. She refused to follow him into exile and remained in Switzerland, living upon the allowance made her by her husband, while also, as is claimed, receiving a pension from the Orleanists, then ruling France, to remain apart from her spouse. Her daughters both visited their father here, the elder spending some time with him. Joseph persuaded Annette Savage and her mother, then a widow, that his European marriage was only a formal state alliance which he would have annulled. A contract was drawn up and signed which recognized the obstacles to a marriage, but bound Joseph to fidelity, and to make proper provision for the lady and her offspring. He was devotedly attached to his American wife and always spoke of her with the greatest respect and affection as "The beautiful Quaker girl."

Two daughters were born of this union, the elder dying in infancy. Joseph Bonaparte took Annette Savage and her mother to Europe, where they lived for some years. Of his wife, Marie Julie Clari, it is written, "Although but twenty-three, she was faded in appearance and singularly unprepossessing. She was of stunted growth with a very bad figure, and her features gave the impression of great delicacy; her eyes were large and staring, her nose thick and her mouth ugly." If this description be true, was there not some excuse for his infatuation for a beautiful American girl?

In 1792, Pierre Chassanis, of the city of Paris, France, purchased six hundred and thirty thousand acres of land in the northern part of New York State, and organized, under the laws of France, an association to be known as "The Company of New York," for the settlement of this tract. One of the members of this association, James D. Le

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

Ray de Chaumont, was a friend of Joseph Bonaparte, and when Joseph, King of Spain, was driven from his throne, and feared eventual exile from France, he asked his friend, M. Le Ray, if he still had his northern New York lands. This led to the purchase by the ex-King (known here as Count de Survilliers), of a large tract of land in Jefferson and Lewis counties. Among the news items in the "Sacketts Harbor Gazette" of October 8, 1818, is the following: "We hear with satisfaction that Joseph Bonaparte, after having traveled through a great part of this country, has expressed in the most lively terms, to different persons, how much he admires this part of the United States, and wishes to give it the preference for his residence if his lady consents to come. He has left everywhere a strong desire that he may carry into execution his project." His lady consented, and he built three homes on his northern New York estate, one at Natural Bridge, a village which he laid out; a hunting lodge of logs on a bluff overlooking the lake which now bears his name, and, near the outlet of the lake, a quite pretentious villa known as the "White House." Here, surrounded by a retinue of French servants, and accompanied by a number of companions, some of whom had shared the better days of the former King, he enjoyed all the pleasures of woodland life. He frequently said that the happiest days of his life were spent here, and "Little France" was the dearest spot on earth to Madame Bonaparte. He became alarmed at the stories of Adirondack winters and returned to New Jersey each fall, coming here only for the summers. In the hunting lodge on the shore of the lake came to him a letter, bearing many signatures, offering him the crown of Mexico. It told him that a number of leading men of that country would soon start for Bordentown to consult with him in regard to it. This, he said, much to his regret, would necessitate his going soon, as the Mexicans would be awaiting him and it would not do to disappoint them, though he did not intend to give serious consideration to their offer.

At the conference between himself and the Mexicans he told them their offer would be a most tempting one had he been unacquainted with the nature of a kingly life. Even then, he told them, he was flattered by the proffer, for it indicated that the family, in all its troubles, was well thought of in America. He said to them:

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

I have worn two crowns; I would not take a step to wear a third. Nothing can gratify me more than to see men who would not recognize my authority when I was at Madrid now come to seek me in exile; but I do not think that the throne you wish to raise again can make you happy. Every day I pass in this hospitable land proves more clearly to me the excellence of republican institutions for America. Keep them as a precious gift from Heaven; settle your internal commotions; follow the example of the United States; and seek among your fellow-citizens a man more capable than I am of acting the great part of Washington.

He told them there was no longer any ambition to wear the purple with its attendant anxieties, and said, "I am happier on the little lake in 'Little France' than I ever was in Spain, or probably ever would be in the Mexican country." Returning to New Jersey from one of his visits to his summer home, his party arrived about noon at a prominent tavern on the Mohawk River and ordered dinner in a style befitting a king. The town was searched for delicacies and the meal partaken of and enjoyed, but great was his astonishment when a bill of five hundred dollars was presented. Joseph demanded the items. With the utmost stretching the worthy Boniface could make these amount to but fifty dollars, but his Mohawk Dutch greediness came to the rescue and he completed the charge with: "To one damned fuss—\$450.00." This so amused the Count that the bill was paid without further question.

Before taking his final departure for France in 1839, he fulfilled the provisions of his contract with Annette Savage by providing liberally for the support of herself and daughter. On a bend of the Indian River, between the villages of Evans Mills and Philadelphia, he built her a residence of massive stone. There he left her and their daughter, Caroline Charlotte. Sometime after his departure Annette Savage married Charles Joseph Geilhand Delafaille, a young Frenchman of good family, who had come among the refugees to this section. Caroline Delafaille, as the daughter of Joseph Bonaparte was called, grew to be a beautiful woman. While living in Watertown with her mother, she met and married Zebulon H. Benton, their wedding being the most elaborate one that had ever been celebrated in the town at that time. They started on their wedding journey in a coach drawn by six horses. Mrs. Benton received from her father a wedding dowry very large for those days. The will of Joseph Bona-

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

parte, dated London, England, June 14, 1840, contained this clause: "I charge Mr. Louis Maillard with a special legacy of ten thousand dollars, the use of which I have indicated to him, and for the execution of which I wish that his honor may be trusted absolutely without any question or demand ever being made to him in this regard. The ten thousand dollars shall be reckoned to Mr. Maillard in the year of my death. He need never make any account of it." Might not this have been a provision for Mrs. Benton or her mother? The dream of Mrs. Benton's life was to be recognized in France as the daughter of Joseph Bonaparte, but not until 1869, during the Second Empire, was this to be realized. On September 4, 1869, she and two of her children sailed for France. While there she obtained an audience with the Emperor, and by the imperial act of Napoleon III the union of her parents was legitimized as a morganatic marriage, permissible under the French Constitution. In the old Scotch Presbyterian Cemetery in a small village in northern New York stands a monument on which is inscribed: "Caroline C. B., wife of Zebulon H. Benton." Nothing to tell the passerby that beneath it lies the daughter of a king, a scion of the House of Bonaparte. For many years a son of Caroline Bonaparte Benton spent his summers in a cottage on the opposite shore of Lake Bonaparte, from the bluff where, in days gone by, his kingly grandfather held his wilderness court.

Once again an American girl was to be won by the name of Bonaparte. Catherine D., daughter of Col. Byrd Willis and his wife, Mary Lewis, who was a niece of George Washington, was born at Willis Hall, near Fredericksburg, Virginia, August 17, 1803. At the age of fifteen she was married to Mr. Atcheson Gray, a Scotch gentleman, a neighbor of her father. In a little over a year Mr. Gray died, leaving his young wife a widow and a mother at the age of sixteen. Her child survived its father but a short time. About the year 1826 Mr. Willis, having met with financial reverses, removed to Florida. He rented a house in Tallahassee, and here it was that the young and beautiful widow, Catherine Gray, first saw Prince Achille Murat, eldest son of the King of Naples and his wife, Caroline, youngest sister of Napoleon Bonaparte, who being exiled from France, had, in 1821, come to America and selected Florida as his home. He soon became interested in Mrs. Gray, but she was not attracted to him at first. He was an educated man and an interesting conversationalist,

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

but had allowed himself to fall into such careless habits that he did not appeal to the delicately nurtured and fastidious lady.

The spell of the Bonaparte blood and the title of Prince finally won, and on July 30, 1826, the nephew of Napoleon and the grand-niece of Washington were married. The couple moved to Prince Murat's plantation in Jefferson County, where they passed many happy years. During a trip to Belgium, where they remained two years, Prince Murat was assigned to the command of a regiment in the Belgian service and their home was in Brussels. The striking resemblance which he bore to his uncle, Napoleon, seemed to awaken the love of the Belgian people to such an extent as to create a fear that the enthusiasm thus elicited might prove a nucleus around which sufficient troops could be raised to restore to his family their respective crowns. Consequently, by order of the King of Belgium, the regiment was disbanded. On taking leave of his soldiers, Achille Murat addressed them in seven different languages, such was his proficiency and the variety of nationalities represented. While the Murats were living in Belgium, Louis Napoleon was a frequent guest in their home and he often said, "When I am Emperor, cousin Kate, you shall have a chateau and everything you want." Because there were no signs of the speedy realization of this dream the Murats returned to Florida. They lived for some time in St. Augustine, and afterward in Tallahassee. It was while they were in St. Augustine that Louis Napoleon came to New York. Before he had visited them news of the severe illness of his mother caused him to return to Europe. Prince Murat studied law, and after his admission to the bar, he moved to New Orleans, where he practiced his profession. While thus engaged, he purchased a sugar plantation on the Mississippi River, near Baton Rouge. After several years spent in Louisiana he heard of the death of his mother, and leaving his wife with her father, he went to Europe to look after his interests. Returning in about a year he again went to Florida with his wife, where they lived several years on his plantation, called "Econchettie," in Jefferson County.

About this time began the Florida Indian War, in which he took an active part as aide-de-camp to Gen. R. K. Call, and as colonel in command of the forces then guarding the frontier settlements. After a lingering illness, Prince Murat died, April 15, 1847. His remains were interred in the Episcopal Cemetery at Tallahassee. His widow

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

bought a house, called "Belle Vue," two miles from the city, and there made her home. She was, however, so much attached to "Econchettie" that she spent a part of each year there. When the Bonapartes were restored to power, and the family assembled in Paris, "Cousin Kate" was there. The Emperor Napoleon III tried to persuade her to make her home in France, but her love for her Florida home, and the responsibility she felt as the mistress of two hundred slaves, caused her to decline and to return to America. In 1866, being in poor health, a trip to Europe was prescribed by her physicians, and accompanied by one of her nephews, she again left Florida. Returning to America with health apparently restored, she soon began to decline, and died August 6, 1867. She was buried beside her husband in Tallahassee.

Sometime after 1822, another nephew of Joseph Bonaparte, Napoleon François Lucien Charles Murat, brother of Achille, followed the example of his brother and uncle, and came to America, settling on a farm near Columbus, New Jersey. Later he bought a farm of about one hundred acres at Bordentown, New Jersey, near the home of his uncle. History repeated itself. The landing on American soil of another of the Bonaparte family was the prelude to another romance. While living at Bordentown, Prince Lucien Murat met and loved Miss Caroline Georgina Fraser, daughter of Major Fraser, a Scotch officer in the British Army, who, having served in America during the Revolutionary War, settled here and married Miss Anna Longton, of South Carolina, who bore him five daughters and one son, Caroline being the youngest and the beauty of the family. The wild and extravagant habits of Murat caused the Frasers to seriously object to the union of their daughter with him, and his uncle just as strongly objected to the match. Joseph thought his nephew should marry one of his cousins in Europe. In opposing his nephew's marriage, Joseph Bonaparte said whoever married him would have to support him, and this proved true. All objections, however, amounted to nothing, and one afternoon while out driving Lucien Murat and Caroline Fraser went to Trenton and were married. A polished gentleman in manners when occasion demanded, he chose his companions from among the bar-room loafers of Bordentown. He spent his own fortune, borrowed all he could of his uncle, Joseph, and squandered the estate of his wife and her sister. He became involved

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

in debt, and, for the first time in his life, he began to realize the want of money, though he never did the value of it. His uncle assisted him many times, but left him nothing in his will. He induced his wife and her sister to invest in a tract of land in Jefferson County, New York, on the Indian River, between the villages of Evans Mills and Theresa. Here he erected a gristmill and store, built roads, commenced a hotel that was never finished, put up a number of small frame dwellings with such rapidity as to cause the remark that "Joachim" was growing at the rate of a house a day. A residence was built for his own use in which, during the periods of his occupancy, he held a sort of protracted carnival. He named the city which he fancied he had founded "Joachim," in honor of his father. He filled his store with a large stock of goods, purchased on credit in New York, and carried on an extensive trade for a time, but the inevitable end came. Creditors seized the goods that remained, the store, and whatever else they could find uncovered, the town collapsed, and the Prince left the country. Nothing now remains of "Joachim," a city whose glory passed while yet it never was, but the name still clings to a bridge and dam which were built when the city was planned.

At last, in spite of his objections, his wife and her sisters opened a boarding and day school. In this they were successful, and to this alone was due the rearing and education of the Murat children, five in number. Caroline, who married the Baron de Chasseron; Anna, who became the wife of the Duke de Mouchy; Joseph Joachim Napoleon; Achille, and Lucien. An infant lies buried in the grounds of Christ Church, Bordentown, whose grave is marked with a headstone upon which is cut, "Murat, December 20, 1844." In 1848, he obtained the loan of a large sum of money and returned to his native land. In December of the same year, his first cousin, Louis Napoleon, was elected President of France, and in 1849 Murat was appointed envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary to Turin. In January, 1852, he became Senator, and the next year, after his cousin had assumed the imperial crown, he received the title of Prince of the Empire. In 1870, when the War with Prussia broke out, he joined the army under Marshal Bazaine, and was with him in Metz when that city capitulated. Upon the Prince's return to France, in 1848, as soon as he was satisfied the star of the Bonapartes had risen, he sent to Bordentown for his family to join him. Disposing of the house

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

and furniture, Madame Murat and her children sailed for France. The oft dreamed-of grandeur of her young love was now realized, and she and her children were received into the imperial family.

When the republic was restored Lucien Murat and family crossed to England, where, in April, 1878, at the age of seventy-five, he died. His wife survived him less than a year. Unlike his uncle, Jerome Bonaparte (the first of the Bonaparte blood to visit America), who deserted his young wife at the instigation of Napoleon, Murat's love and respect for his American wife never waned. He was sincerely attached to her and was devoted to her to the last. The romantic love she formed for him grew stronger with advancing years, although she did not approve of the democratic tastes he displayed. Unlike Elizabeth Patterson, the deserted wife of Jerome Bonaparte, Mrs. Murat retained to the end fond memories of the home of her childhood, and never forgot the friends of her youth, constantly corresponding with some of them. Upon the fall of the empire the Prince's incomes were cut off and he found himself reduced to the necessity of subsisting on the paltry sum of two hundred thousand dollars. It was preposterous for Murat to expect to live on the interest, so he proceeded to spend the principal. In this he was interrupted. His good wife, the guardian angel of his life, seeing that years had not brought discretion, was forced, to save them from want, to apply to the courts for a separation of estate.

The following was taken from an issue of the "Boston Advertiser" of that date:

Princess Lucien Murat has brought suit for separation of estate from her husband, she styling herself Princess Murat (by birth Caroline Georgina Fraser) and her husband Prince Napoleon François Lucien Charles Murat. His spendthrift habits make this measure necessary, now that he can no longer repair to the emperor's private purse. She wishes to save a portion of the estate given them by Napoleon III. Her husband has run through his father's estate, which was large. He has run through her estate, which was considerable. The emperor gave him two hundred thousand dollars after the coup d'etat, and made him a senator, with six thousand a year, and three times paid his debts.

The Princess succeeded in her suit, and once more they lived happily together.

While living in New Jersey the Prince once had an action for

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

assault and battery brought against him by a groom, whom he had kicked out of the stable for insulting him. The trial took place in the court at Mount Holly, and the following account of it was published in a West Jersey newspaper:

Prince Murat, one of the Bonaparte family, lived near Bordentown, and, being in a false position among republicans, the lower class of his neighbors, when employed by him, took great pains to let him know that every one was equal in New Jersey, that every one could do just as they pleased with him. Murat was a very gentlemanly, good-natured man, of enormous size, some six feet two, and stout in proportion, and accustomed to severe exercise. He could shoot all day in a monstrous pair of boots, going through morasses that would appal most sportsmen. The Prince had employed a worthless fellow to groom his horses. One day he civilly requested him, as was his custom (for he was very polite), to do something. The man flatly refused, and was so very insolent that Murat, with his awful boot, suddenly helped him to the middle of the barn-yard pool. As a matter of course, the fellow sued him for assault and battery, confidently anticipating a handsome sum for damages. The court-room was filled with a very select audience, including many ladies; for Murat was highly esteemed for his elegant manners and commanding person. It was understood that he was to plead his own case, and, as he was extremely acute and quite learned, great sport was anticipated. The fellow, too, was provided with killing evidence, as was supposed; and Murat, it seemed, had little to hope for. On examination, he was confident of having received as many as six kicks from Murat, and, in short, of being grievously afflicted and misused. Murat demanded that he should show the precise spot where the bodily injury was inflicted. He endeavored to evade the demand, but the prince insisted; he accordingly indicated the very lowest possible part of the spine, and again asserted that Murat had kicked him six times. The prosecuting attorney made a powerful appeal, filled with "sacred rights of the meanest citizen," "monarchical oppression," "star spangled banner," etc., etc.; but not a word of the vulgar insolence of the laborer, who always demanded his full pay, whether a thief or liar, or as indolent as a sloth. Murat addressed the jury in the following conclusive style, which we cordially recommended to our doctors, lawyers, and jurymen, for its convicting use of anatomical knowledge and its humor. Bowing profoundly to the bench and jury-box, which happened both to be filled with excellent common sense: "My lord, de judge and gentlemen of de jury, dere has been great efforts and much troubles to make everybody believe me a very bad man; but dat is of no consequence. De man tells you I kick him six times! six times! so low as possible. I am very sorry of de necessity to make him show how low

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

it was, but I could not avoid it. Now, my lord and gentlemen of de jury, you see dis part of de human skeleton (taking from the enormous pocket of his hunting-coat a human pelvis with the os coccygis complete and articulated with wires). Here are de bones. Dese leetle bones vat you see here (shaking them to the jury like the end of a rattlesnake's tail), dese leetle bones are de very place vere de tail of de animal shall grow; dat is to say, if de man who sue me were to be a veritable jack—vot you call it? ah! jack-horse, and not only very much resemble dat animal, vy you see dese leetle bones, if dey were long enough, would be his tail!" The court was convulsed with laughter, and the Prince being extremely acute and knowing he had the best of it, drew his speech to an end by stretching out his enormous leg, armed with his sporting-boot up to his knee, and clapping his hand on his massive thigh so that it resounded throught the courtroom, exclaimed: "My lord and gentlemen, how absurd to say I could given him even von kick vid dat, and not to break all to pieces his leetle tail!" It was some time before the judge could gather enough dignity to sum up, when the fellow got six cents damages and the Prince three cheers.

The Florida "Times-Union," published at Jacksonville, in their issue of June 25, 1927, carried a notice of the death, in an automobile accident, of Mrs. Loynella Murat Day, of St. Augustine. Who was this woman and where did she get the name of Murat? This seems to be an unanswerable question. She was a well-known character in and around St. Augustine, where she had made her home for many years, but little was known of her past life. She was, at one time, owner of the "Fountain of Youth" property on Magnolia Avenue, and maintained, in a small building on the estate, a museum, about the contents of which fantastic stories were told. Among the relics which she exhibited was a cross of coquina stone alleged to have been built by Ponce de Leon in 1513, a sundial brought from Spain, the anchor used by Ponce de Leon, and many other things.

During a visit to St. Augustine a few years ago, the writer went out to the "Fountain of Youth" Park and listened to the stories that the caretaker there was paid to tell. When he discovered that his visitor was skeptical, and was ridiculing the legends he was relating, he changed his story and said the whole thing was a humbug, and the owner herself the biggest humbug of all. He said she sometimes claimed to be a descendant of the Bonapartes, and at other times told a different tale. That she was undoubtedly of French extraction and

BONAPARTES AND AMERICAN MARRIAGES

many years older than she claimed to be. At that time she had sold the property to a company of eastern men, and had repented when too late, and refused to give possession. In order to hold it she was in the house, in bed, under the care of a physician, and the caretaker thought her illness just as big a humbug as the rest. Did the blood of the Bonapartes flow in the veins of this woman? Who can tell?

Even to the present day the lure of the name of Bonaparte endures. The latest union of American and Bonaparte blood was the recent marriage, in Paris, of Mrs. Margaret Rutherford Mills Dukes and Prince Charles Murat. Charles Murat is doubtless a descendant of Lucien Murat, who married Caroline Georgina Fraser, of Bordentown, New Jersey, as they had three sons, and Lucien's brother, Achille, left no children.

AUTHORITIES:

"Bonaparte's Park and the Murats."—E. M. Woodward.

"Bordentown and the Bonapartes."—R. W. Gilder, in "Scribner's Monthly," November, 1880.

"Madame Patterson Bonaparte Letters."—"Scribner's," 1879.

"Joseph Bonaparte in Bordentown."—F. Marion Crawford, in "Century Magazine," May, 1893.

"Life of Achille Murat."—"Century Magazine," May, 1893.

"New Jersey as a Colony and State."—Francis B. Lee.

"Biography of the Mother of Napoleon."

"Hough's Histories of Jefferson and Lewis Counties," New York, and other magazine articles.



Kendall and Allied Families

BY HEROLD R. FINLEY, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



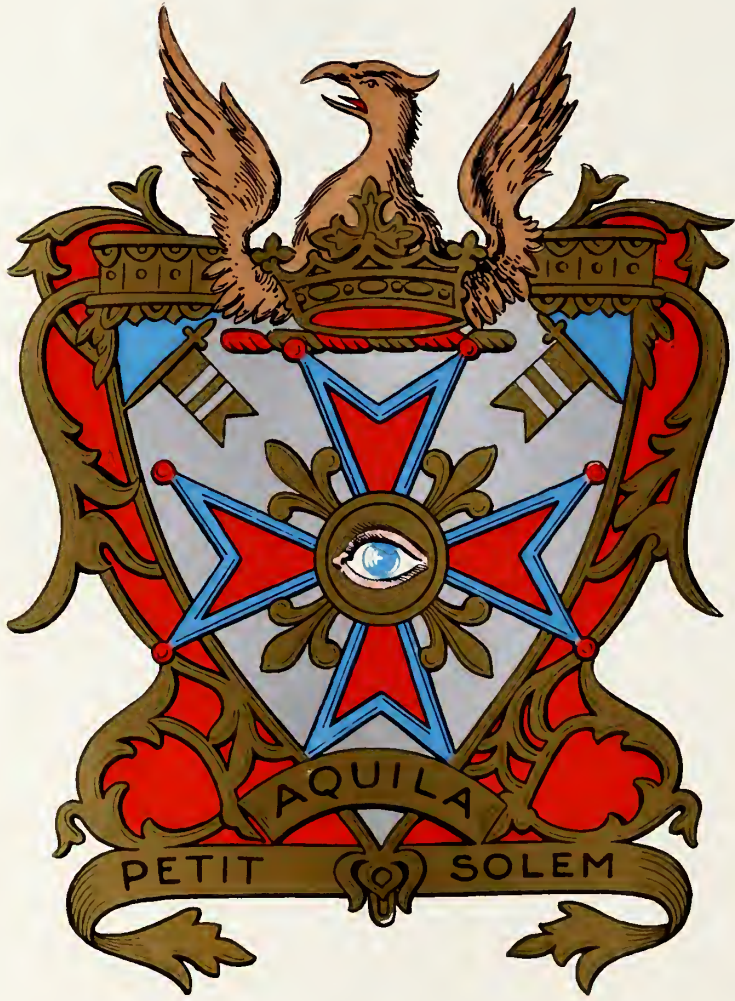
It can be safely remarked that every directory in the English-speaking world will make mention of the name of Kendall, in its several forms, namely, Kendal, Kendell, Kendle, Kendel. This patronymic is of local origin, deriving from Kent-dale, the valley of the Kent, a river of Westmoreland. The early manufacture of "Kendal green" was responsible for the fame of the town and the popularity of the name, which is found in Lancashire, Essex, Devonshire, Cornwall, and Derbyshire. From the beginning of the thirteenth century, right through the seventeenth century, bearers of the surname Kendall have figured prominently in official, judicial, clerical and financial positions.

The ancestor of the Kendall family in America was John Kendall, who was born in 1608, and died in County Cambridge, in 1664. Two of his sons, Francis, of whom further, and Thomas, came to New England prior to 1640.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." W. M. Clemens: "The Kendall Family in America," pp. 3, 4.)

I. Francis Kendall, believed to be the American ancestor of all of his name in New England, was born in England, and died in 1708. He came to New England sometime before 1640, for he was in Charlestown, Massachusetts, in that year, and subscribed to the "Town Orders" for Woburn, Massachusetts. He styled himself "miller," and was well known in Woburn as a gentleman of great respectability and influence. He served on the board of selectmen for eighteen years, and was often appointed to important committees, among them being the committee in charge of the distribution of the common lands of the town in 1664. The mill bequeathed by him has ever since been in the possession of his posterity.

Francis Kendall married, December 4, 1644, Mary Todd (according to some records Tidd), who died in 1705. Children: 1. John, born July 2, 1646. 2. Thomas, of whom further. 3. Mary, born



Kendall



KENDAL CASTLE



Todd

FODD

1. *Vireo* — Vireo a fox (spotted) bird
2. *Ceryle* — A dove (wing) bird
3. *Motacilla* — A white (wing) bird
(Aims in possession of the family)

TODD

Arms—Vert, a fox rampant argent.

Crest—A dove rising argent.

Motto—*Astute cum Virtute.*

(Arms in possession of the family.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

January 20, 1651. 4. Elizabeth, born January 15, 1653. 5. Hannah, born January 26, 1655. 6. Rebecca, born March 2, 1657. 7. Samuel, born March 8, 1659, died in 1749; his will was probated in Worcester County, Massachusetts, in 1749; he married (first), November 13, 1683, Rebecca Mixer; (second), March 30, 1692, Mary Locke. 8. Jacob, born January 25, 1661. 9. Abigail, born April 6, 1666.

(Samuel Sewall: "History of Woburn, Massachusetts," p. 619. Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages, 1640-1873, p. 138. Family data.)

II. Thomas Kendall, son of Francis and Mary (Todd) Kendall, was born in 1648, and died May 25, 1730. He married (first), in 1673, Ruth, who was born December 28, 1656, probably the daughter of Samuel Blodgett. He married (second) Abigail Broughton. Children: 1. Ruth, born February 17, 1674. 2. Thomas, born May 19, 1677. 3. Mary, born February 27, 1681. 4. Samuel, of whom further. 5. Ralph, born May 4, 1685. 6. Eliezer, born November 16, 1687. 7. Jabez (twin), born September 10, 1692. 8. Jane (twin), born September 10, 1692. 9. Son, died at birth.

(W. M. Clemens: "The Kendall Family in America," p. 7. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XXXIX, p. 388. Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages, 1640-1873, pp. 104, 138.)

III. Samuel Kendall, son of Thomas and Ruth (Blodgett) Kendall, was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, October 29, 1682, and died in Woburn, Massachusetts, December 13, 1764, aged eighty-three. He is recorded as taxed in the Woburn Parish tax which was assessed January 28, 1741-42.

Samuel Kendall married (first) Elizabeth, who died January 10, 1741. He married (second), at Concord, Massachusetts, July 23, 1751, Mehitable Hosmer, who died August 31, 1755. Children: 1. Samuel, born June 30, 1708. 2. James, born April 28, 1710. 3. Josiah, born September 1, 1712. 4. Ezekiel, born March 14, 1715. 5. Timothy, born March 23, 1717. 6. Elizabeth, born September 3, 1719. 7. Jonas, born March 10, 1721. 8. Sarah, born April 16, 1723. 9. Susanna, born July 5, 1724. 10. Obadiah, born September 3, 1725. 11. Jesse, of whom further. 12. Seth, born January 4,

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1729. 13. Abigail, born February 27, 1731. 14. Ephraim, born November 9, 1732. 15. Jerusha, born February 13, 1734.

(Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages, 1640-1873, pp. 104, 138, 139, 140. Samuel Sewall: "History of Woburn, Massachusetts," p. 621.)

IV. Jesse Kendall, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Kendall, was born May 15, 1727, and died in Athol, Massachusetts, in 1797. He resided at Athol, of which place he was among the first settlers. He was a husbandman and a miller, developed the water power of Athol, and built several mills there. He was one of the deacons of the old First Church, being chosen to that position November 10, 1774.

Jesse Kendall married, about 1751, Elizabeth Evans. (Evans V.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, born in Woburn, August 17, 1751. 2. Mary, born in Woburn, November 26, 1753. 3. Jesse, Jr., born in Medford, February 11, 1756. 4. Hannah, born December 18, 1757, baptized January 31, 1762. 5. Olive, born March 31, 1760. 6. Joel, born March 11, 1762. 7. Samuel, born January 20, 1764. 8. Andrew, born April 17, 1766. 9. David, of whom further. 10. Calvin, born July 15, 1770. 11. Lois, born September 11, 1772. 12. Anna, born May 4, 1775.

(Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages, p. 40. Samuel Sewall: "History of Woburn, Massachusetts," pp. 622-23. L. B. Caswell: "Athol, Past and Present, Athol, Massachusetts," p. 227. Athol, Massachusetts, Vital Records, pp. 50, 51, 52, 53.)

V. Reverend David Kendall, son of Jesse and Elizabeth (Evans) Kendall, was born in Athol, Massachusetts, March 20, 1768, and died February 19, 1853, at the age of eighty-five years. He was graduated from Harvard College in 1794, and was ordained at Hubbardston, Massachusetts, in 1802, serving as minister there from July 1 of that year until 1809. His letter of acceptance for that position follows:

*To the Church and people of Hubbardston:
Beloved in the Lorde Jesus Christ:*

Your invitation requesting me to settle with you in the gospel ministry has been taken into serious and deliberate consideration: counsel has been sought of Heaven, and Christian advice received. Thus far appears no obstacle in the way of my compliance with your wishes, but as it is a duty enjoined by the gospel that "every one should pro-

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

vide for his own, especially those of his own house"; and as it is required that "they who preach the gospel should live of the gospel" and that he who ministers to a people "in spiritual things should be partaker of their temporal things" it is highly fit and proper that the means for a comfortable and decent support should be taken into consideration, when we deliberate on a subject of so much importance as the devoting one's self to the service of a people in the work of the ministry. Candid deliberation and friendly advice have, therefore, been taken on this part of the subject. From which it appears that the stipulation proposed for an annual salary would of itself alone, be rather inadequate to the numerous expenses incident to a clerical life, taking into view, at the same time, the propriety of making suitable provision for those whom it may please God to give us the care of, together with the very high price of land, which is the foundation of all temporal substance. But I have further taken into account the friendly and benevolent disposition of the people of this town, heretofore manifested toward their pastor, and the assurances which have been given me, that the same would be continued toward his successor. Particular encouragements have been specified, upon which I am requested to rely with implicit confidence, and I do not scruple the sincerity of these proposals, and it would no doubt be deemed a want of Christian candor to anticipate a dereliction from them, so long as the relation of pastor and people should continue between us, provided it be once formed.

The above particulars being duly weighed and considered I have seen fit, with submission to divine Providence, to accept of your invitation and encouragements, so long as these encouragements are realized. And I do therefore make known to you by these presents, my willingness to serve you in the work of the gospel ministry, according to the grace which is, or may be given unto me, to enable me to fulfill this arduous and important service. And may this decision in all its effects and consequences be attended with the blessing of the Almighty God "to whom I now commend you and to the word of his grace, and to the Spirit of all truth which are able to build you up in faith and holiness, to establish you in every good word and work, and to give you an inheritance among all them that are sanctified." That this may be your happy lot and portion may God in his infinite mercy grant, through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

DAVID KENDALL.

(NOTE—The liberty of being absent three or four Sabbaths in a year, if need so require, is usually reserved by ministers, at the time of their settlement; this indulgence will also be expected by me.)

As David Kendall was a man of decided principles and strong indomitable will, the relations between him and his pastorate did not

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

long remain peaceful. The result was that he was finally requested to leave the parish, although it appears that a majority of the church members wanted him to stay. He removed to Augusta, Oneida County, New York, where he acted as minister of the Presbyterian Church from 1810 to 1814. This was his last pastorate.

The Rev. David Kendall married, in Augusta, Maine, February 3 or 20, 1803, Susanna Jarvis. (Jarvis VI.) Children: 1. Mary Ann, born January 10, 1804. 2. Rebecca Parkman Jarvis, born May 9, 1805; married David N. Bishop. 3. Elizabeth Wyeth, born September 28, 1806. 4. David, born April 13, 1808. 5. Leonard Jarvis, of whom further.

(Samuel Sewall: "History of Woburn, Massachusetts," p. 623. Hubbardston, Massachusetts, Vital Records, pp. 61, 62, 146. S. W. Durant: "History of Oneida County, New York," p. 414. Family data.)

VI. Leonard Jarvis Kendall, son of the Rev. David and Susanna (Jarvis) Kendall, was born in Augusta, Oneida County, New York, July 31, 1810, and died June 23, 1898. He married (first), January 19, 1835, Olive J. Kendall, who died March 18, 1839, the daughter of Calvin Kendall. He married (second), October 1, 1840, Sarah Rebecca Spencer, who died September 20, 1855. He married (third), April 9, 1856, Sally Maria Noyes, who was born July 12, 1820, and died March 4, 1909, the daughter of Gilbert and Hannah (Knowlton) Noyes, of Shrewsbury, Massachusetts. Child of the first marriage: 1. Susan Olive, born January 16, 1837, died June 2, 1912. Children of the second marriage: 2. Austin Jarvis, born July 25, 1842, died February 14, 1908. 3. Sarah Elizabeth, born June 4, 1845, died June 20, 1911. 4. Nathaniel Wyeth, of whom further. 5. Albert Spencer (twin), born March 6, 1850, died May 29, 1915. 6. Herbert Parkman (twin), born March 6, 1850. 7. Eugene Miles, born May 20, 1852. Children of the third marriage: 8. Calvin Noyes, born February 9, 1858, died September 4, 1921.

(D. E. Wager: "Our County and Its People, A Descriptive Work on Oneida County, New York," p. 287. Family data.)

VII. Nathaniel Wyeth Kendall, son of Leonard Jarvis and Sarah Rebecca (Spencer) Kendall, was born at Augusta, Oneida County, New York, May 12, 1848, and died at Atlantic City, New Jersey, April 21, 1921, in his seventy-third year. He received his education

SPENCER

Arms—Quarterly, argent and gules, on the second and third quarters a fret or, over all, on a bend sable, three escallops of the first.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or, a griffin's head argent, gorged with a bar gemelle gules between two wings expanded of the second.

Supporters—Dexter, a griffin per fesse ermine, and erminois gorged with a collar sable the edges flory, counter flory and chained of the last, on the collar three escallops argent; sinister, a wivern, erect on the tail, ermine collared and chained as the griffin.

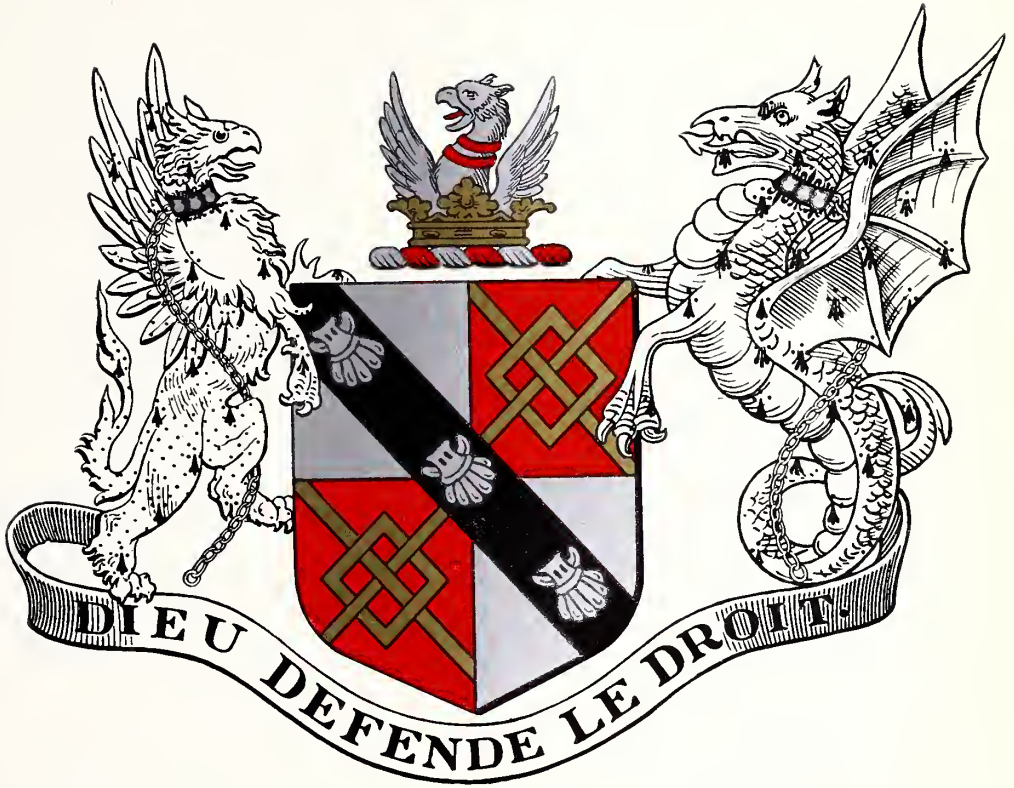
Motto—*Dieu Defende le Droit.*

(Arms in possession of the family.)

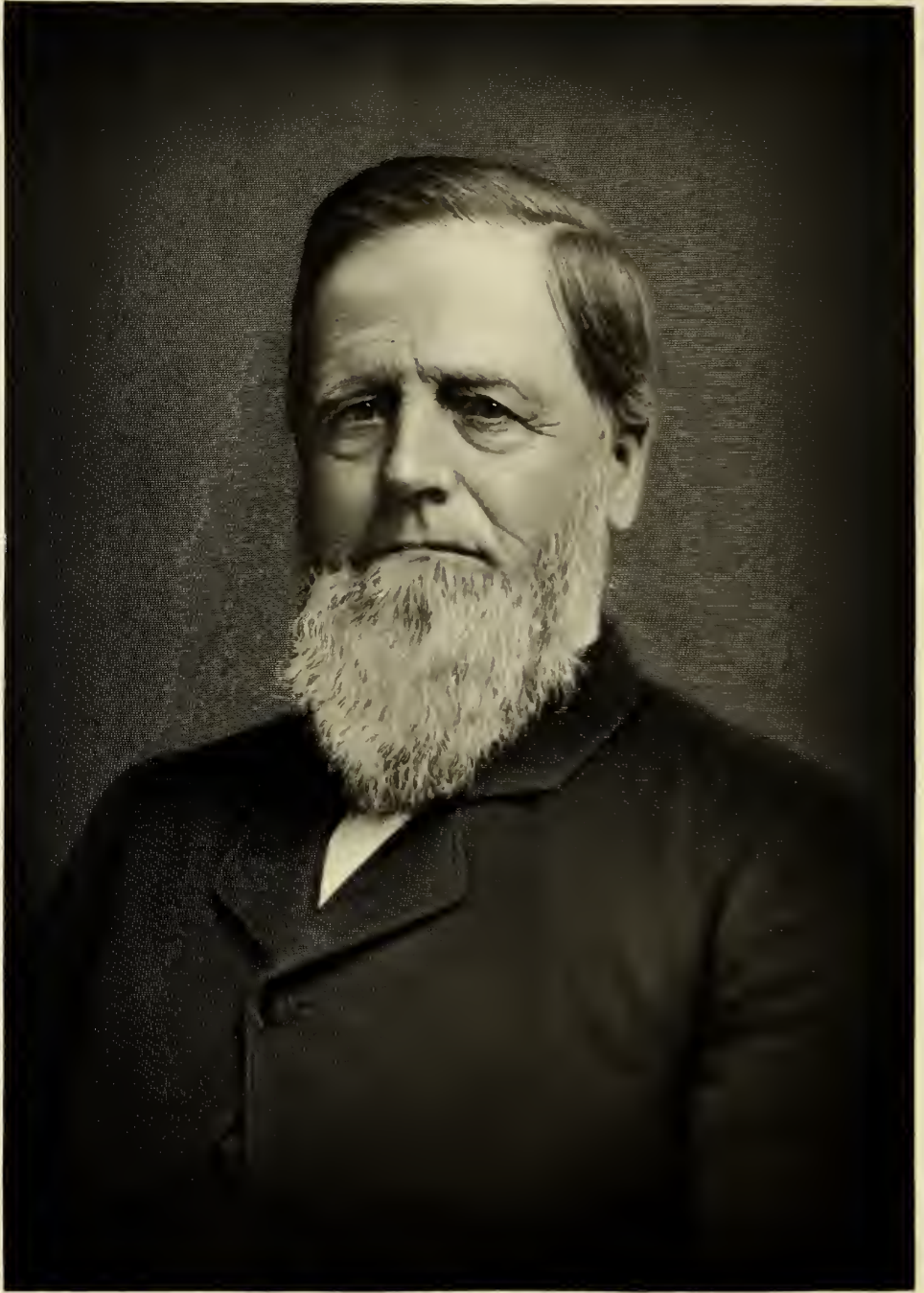
THE FIRST

... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...
... the first ... the second and third ...

(This is done for the family)



Spencer



Leonard Jarvis Kendall



Sarah R. Spencer Kendall



American Historical Society

Engby Finlay & Lonn

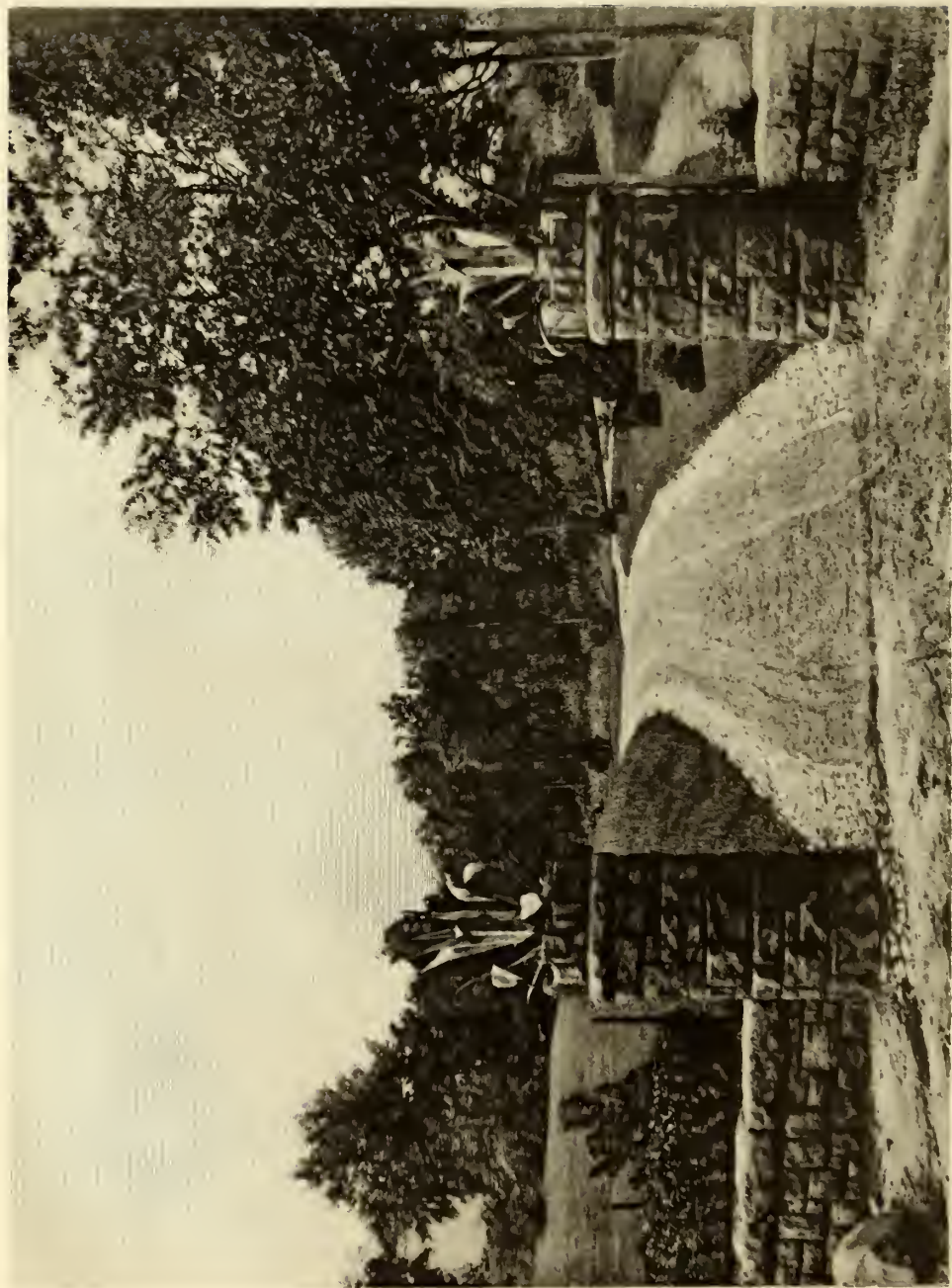
A. M. Kendall



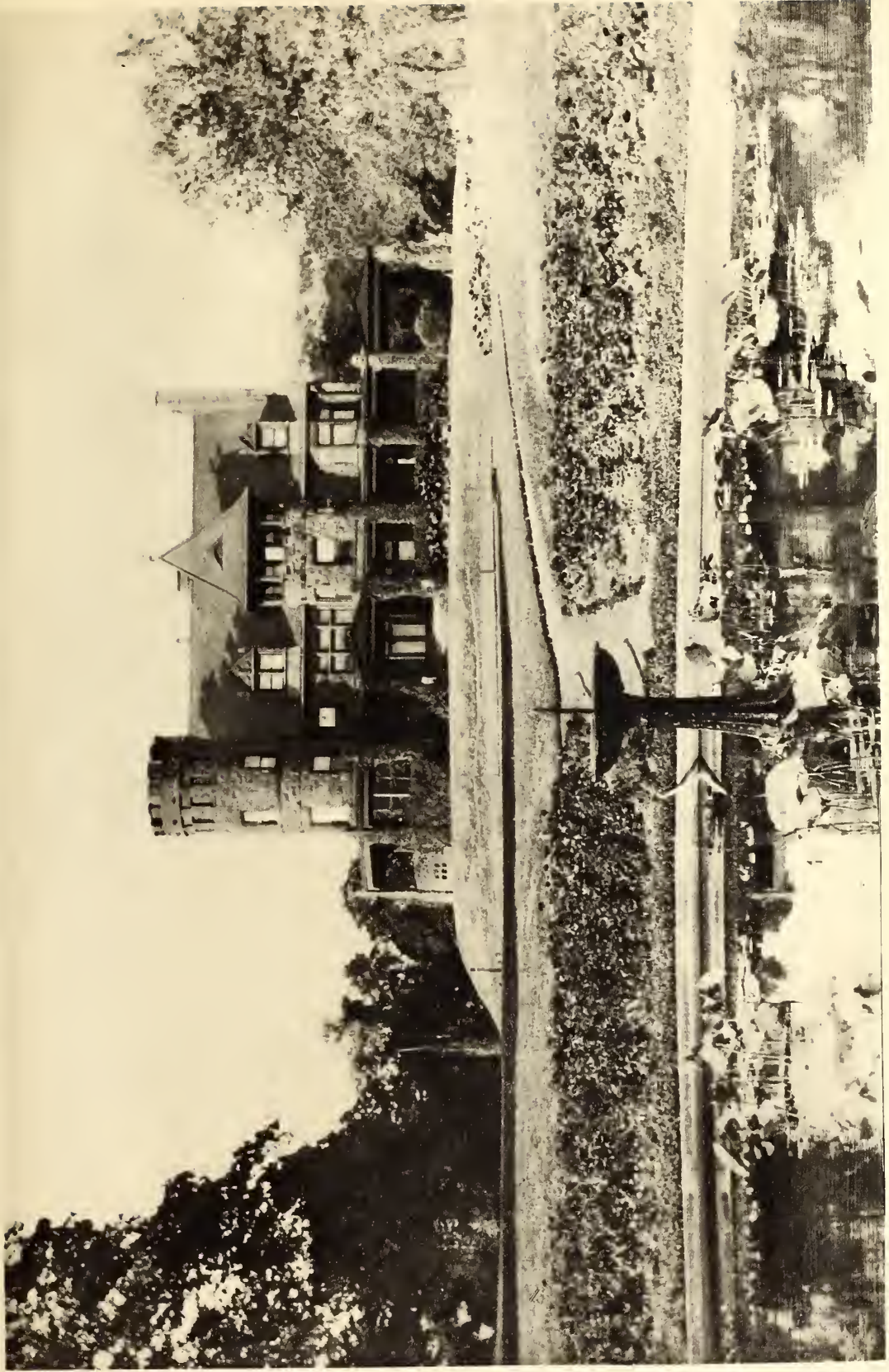
American Historical Socy.

Engr by Pinlay & Conn.

Harriet Mary Luddell



KENMORE
MAIN ENTRANCE



KENMORE
HOME OF NATHANIEL WYETH KENDALL
NEW HAVEN, CONNECTICUT



English Furniture of the Nineteenth Century

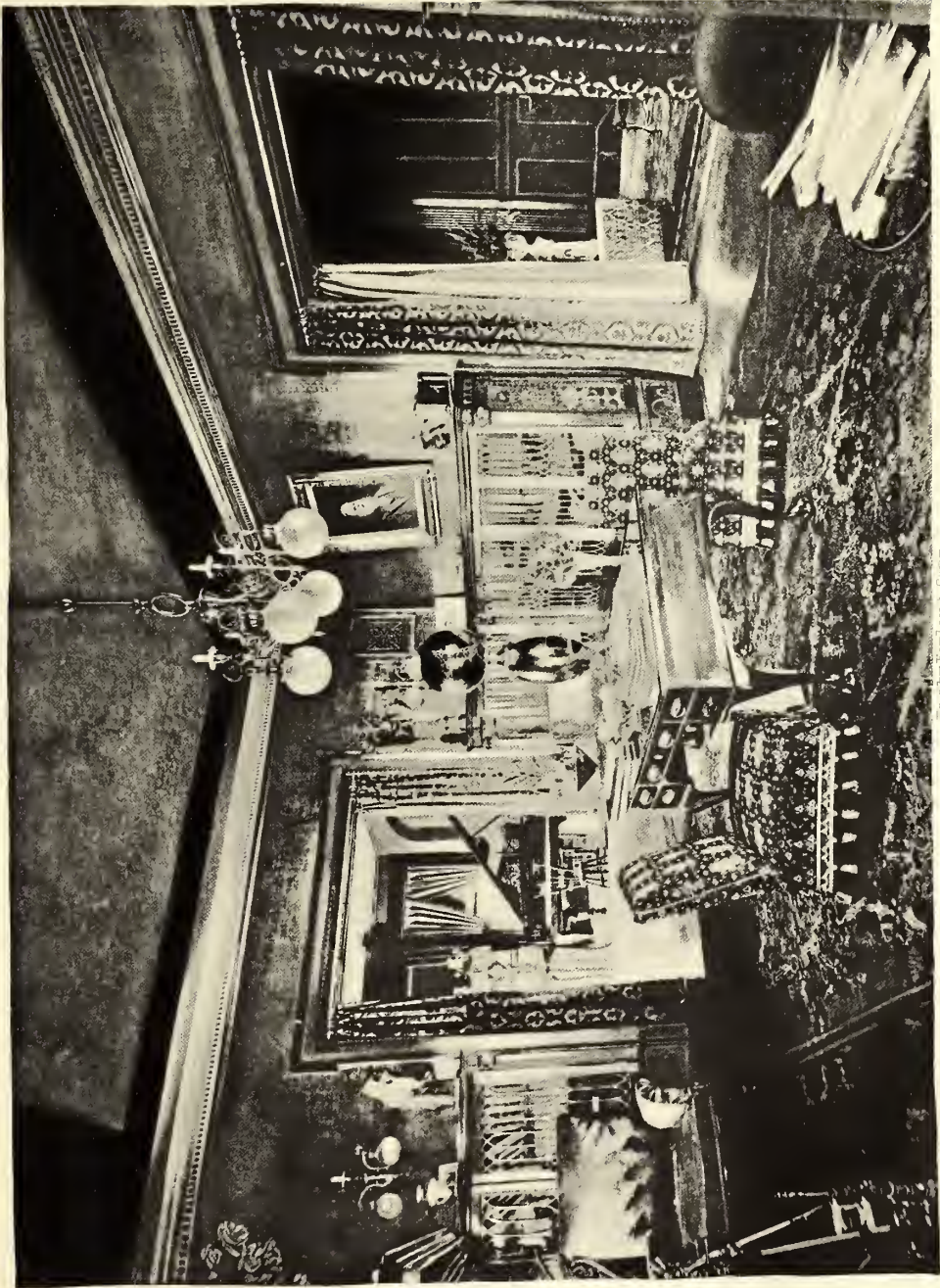
DRAWING ROOM



DRAWING ROOM

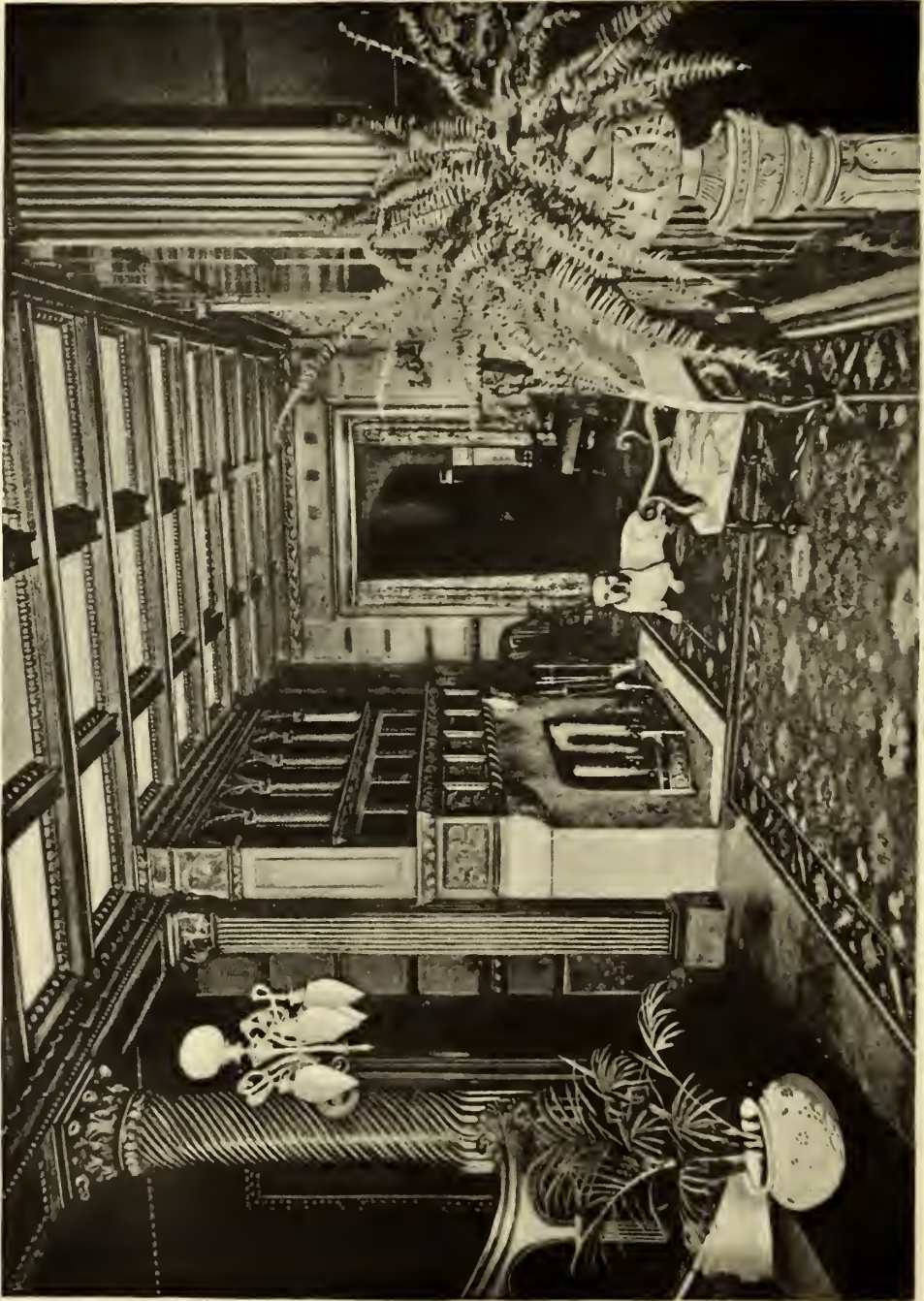


MAIN HALL AND STAIRCASE



by Percy S. Dean

LIBRARY AND MUSIC ROOM



HALL LEADING TO THE DINING ROOM



Joseph Penney & Co.
DINING ROOM

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

in the old "red schoolhouse" of historic fame. In 1896, he removed to Kenmore, making his home on a beautiful estate at New Haven, Connecticut. The house was situated on an elevation giving a most picturesque view of Long Island Sound, the river, harbor and city of New Haven. In New Haven Mr. Kendall conducted his numerous and large business interests. His business associates, well acquainted with his executive and commercial abilities, availed themselves of his talent and imposed upon him positions of trust and responsibility. In 1885, he was president of the Yale Brewing Company of New Haven; was a director of the Mechanics' Bank of New Haven; president of the Cashin Card and Glazed Paper Company; vice-president and director of the Consumers' Malting Company of Minneapolis, Minnesota; director of the National Brewers' Insurance Company of Chicago, Illinois; president of the Connecticut Brewers' Association; director of the Underwriters' Agency Company; and president of the United States Brewers' Association. Being connected with these companies in various capacities, he was most zealous and sincere in his efforts to promote the interests of these concerns, and soon won the esteem and respect of his associates because of his unceasing endeavors, his integrity, probity and sterling worth.

In his fraternal affiliations Mr. Kendall was a member of Crystal Wave Lodge, No. 638, Free and Accepted Masons, of Brooklyn, New York, and at one time was Past Worshipful Master of this lodge; and a member of Constellation Chapter, No. 209, Royal Arch Masons, also of Brooklyn. He was also a member of the Sons of the American Revolution; the Union League Club; the Quinnipiack Club; the Farmers' Club; and the Chamber of Commerce. In politics Mr. Kendall was a staunch supporter of the theories and candidates of the Republican party.

In the death of Mr. Kendall, the commercial world lost an honest, intelligent, and unusually able man, fully equipped with the necessary qualifications to solve problems of extraordinary complications, and to handle difficult situations with the utmost precision and accuracy; his country lost a loyal and respectable citizen; his community, a staunch supporter of all movements aiming to improve and advance its civic progress; his numerous friends and acquaintances, a true understanding confidant; and his family a devoted husband and father.

Nathaniel Wyeth Kendall married, in New York City, New York,

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

December 20, 1894, Harriet Frances Terry. (Terry VI-B.) Child: 1. Nathaniel Wyeth, Jr., born May 31, 1898; married Violet Marquis Miller; children: Nathaniel Wyeth, 3d, born December 8, 1923, and Gwendolyn Marquis, born January 23, 1929.

(Family data.)

(The Terry Line)

Arms—Argent, a cross between four martlets gules.

Crest—A demi-lion proper holding a fleur-de-lis gules.

(Arms in possession of the family.)

As a surname, Terry definitely does not stand for "the tearful one," as some etymologists assert. Rather, it is a corruption of the personal name, "Theoderic," which is similar to the French "Thierry." In the Hundred Rolls, Terri and Terry are both given without a prefix. It is also claimed that this is a baptismal name derived from the "son of Theoderic."

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

The Terry family is one of the oldest on Long Island, and was founded in that region by two brothers, Thomas and Richard Terry. January 13, 1635, in company with a third brother, Robert, they set sail from England for the New World on board the "Janus," or as some accounts have it, the "James." It is believed that the brothers came from the vicinity of London. At the time of their departure, Thomas Terry was twenty-eight years of age, Robert Terry was twenty-five, and Richard Terry only seventeen.

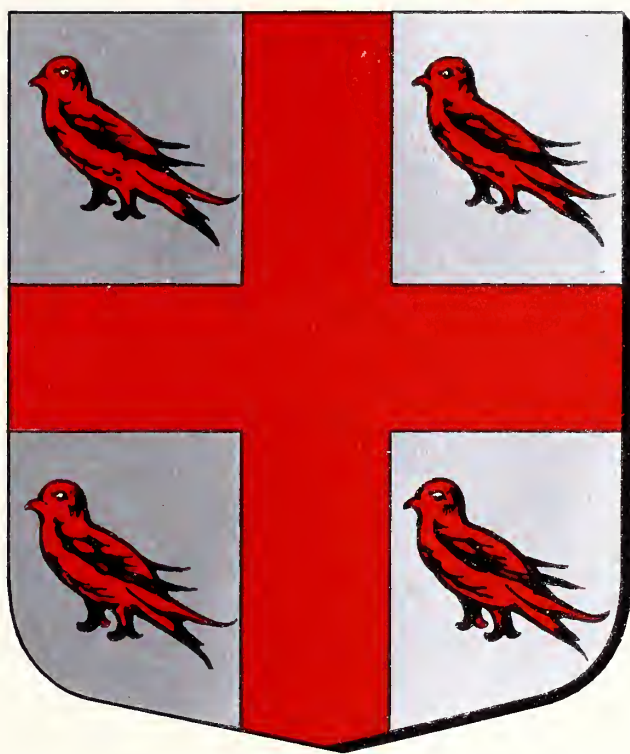
Thomas Terry, the older of the brothers, was born in England in 1607, and died in Southold, Long Island, in 1672. In 1640, he signed an agreement with Captain Howe, of Lynn, Massachusetts, for a settlement on Long Island, and in 1661, a petition to settle seven families at Matinecock, Queens County, New York. In 1662, he was appointed excise officer for Southold, and the following year was admitted a freeman of Connecticut Colony at Hartford for Southold. He was one of the appraisers of William Salmon's estate in 1665, and joined in a deed to John Young for Plumb Island the following year. Thomas Terry, in his will, dated November 26, 1671, and proved June 5, 1672, is "senior," and names his children.

The name of the wife of Thomas Terry is not known, but she was still living in 1671. Children: 1. Daniel, died November 20, 1706; married Sarah. 2. Thomas; married (first) Eliza, and, perhaps



Eng. & Son

n. w. kendall.



Terry

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(second), Eleanor, widow of George Havens. 3. Elizabeth. 4. Possibly, Ruth, who married John Tilleson. 5. Mary; married a Mr. Reeve.

Richard Terry, the younger brother, was born in England in 1618, and died in Southold, Long Island, in 1675-76. In 1640, he removed to Southold, Long Island, probably with Minister Young's company, but it was not until 1662, that he was admitted a freeman of the Connecticut Colony residing at Southold. In 1665, with his wife Abigail, he executed a deed to Thomas Moore, while that year and the next, he along with his brother, were appraisers of the estate of William Salmon. Richard Terry, in his will, proved in 1676, mentions his brother, Thomas Terry. In 1683, Abigail Terry, his widow, was taxed ninety-seven pounds, and in 1686 she had one male and two females in her family.

Richard Terry married Abigail, who died after 1686. Children: 1. Abigail, born in 1650; married Thomas Rider. 2. Gershom, born in 1652, died March 14, 1724-25; married Deborah. 3. Nathaniel, born in 1656, died October 23, 1723; married, in November, 1682, Mary Horton. 4. Sarah, born in 1658. 5. Richard, born in 1661, died February 2, 1734; married (first) perhaps, Prudence; (second) Widow Martha Benjamin. 6. Samuel, born in 1664. 7. Elizabeth, born in 1666. 8. Mary, born in 1668. 9. Bethia, born in 1672.

Just what the connection was between these two brothers and the Terry family which follows is not known, as the Long Island records of that period were very incomplete.

(Charles Moore: "Town of Southold, Long Island, Personal Index Prior to 1698 and Index of 1698," pp. 39, 118, 143. "History of Suffolk County, New York; Town of Southold," p. 7. "Portrait and Biography Record of Suffolk County, Long Island," p. 465.)

I. Daniel Terry, whose ancestry we are unable to trace definitely, was, according to records preserved by descendants, one of the three brothers who settled on Long Island; the other brothers being William and Shadrach Terry. Little, however, is known of these other two brothers, outside of their names.

Daniel Terry resided as early as 1749 in the town of Brookhaven, Suffolk County, New York. His tax that year was £0 17s. 10d. The tax list of 1741 shows no one by the name of Terry.

There is also a record that a Daniel Terry was a fence-viewer in the town of Brookhaven, the date being given in the record, as printed,

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

as 1776; but from the context, it is apparent that this is an error, and the correct date is many years earlier.

Daniel Terry's will, dated January 23, 1761, and proved February 4, 1761, was recorded in New York City, where most of the wills of of that period are found of record. A complete copy, as found there, follows:

In the Name of God Amen I Daniel Terry of Brook Haven in the County of Suffolk and Province of New York, being weak in Body but of sound mind and memory do make and ordain this my Last Will and Testament in manner and form following, First and principally I Committ my Soul into the hands of God that gave it hoping through the merits Death and Passion of Jesus Christ to Inherit Eternal Life and my body I Commit to the Earth to be decently buried at the Discretion of my Executors here after named and Touching such Worldly Goods and Estate as it hath pleased God to bestow upon me I do give and dispose of them in manner and form following,

Imprimis, I Will Order and require that all my Estate Real and Personal of every Kind Household Goods Excepted to be sold that is to say all my Land and Meadows in the Township of Brook Haven aforesaid and at the South Beach and also all my Cattle Horses Sheep and Swine and my Sloop with all the Sails and Riging and that all my Just debts be paid therewith, Item I give to my son Daniel Terry the sum of three hundred Pounds Current Money of New York and also one bed and furniture to him his heirs and assigns for ever the remaining part I give to my other five Sons to be equally divided between them share and share alike to be paid to Joseph, Shadrock and to Jeremiah within four Years after my Decease and to Thomas and William when they shall arrive to the full age of twenty-one years. Item I give to my three Daughters Desire Elizabeth and Jemima all my Household Goods of every sort not otherwise Disposed of by me to be aqally divided between them share and share alike Lastly I constitute make and Ordain my Son Daniel Terry and Ezekiel Hodges (*sic*) and John Brewster Executors of this my last Will and Testament Desiring the same may be Executed according to my true Intent and meaning In Witness whereof I have hereunto Interchangably set my hand and Seal this twenty third day of January Anno Dom: one thousand seven hundred and sixty one. his

DANIEL X TERRY (LS)

mark

Signed Sealed Published and Declared by the Testators as his last Will and Testament in Presence of us Samⁿ Conkline, Ezekiel Wickes, Nathaniel Landon.

Proved Feb. 4, 1761.

Administration was granted unto Ezekiel Terry (*sic*) and Daniel Terry two of the Executors in the said Will named June 26, 1761.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Daniel Terry's wife's name is not known. She doubtless died before he made his will, as she is not mentioned therein. Children (in order named in will): 1. Daniel, was an executor of his father's will; was perhaps the same Daniel Terry who owned land, February 15, 1799, between the lands of Ebenezer Homans and Christopher Swezey, in the town of Brookhaven. 2. Joseph, named in his father's will in 1761. 3. Shadrach, was chosen overseer of highways in Smithtown in April, 1775; in April, 1776; in April, 1777; in April, 1778, and in April, 1779. Shadrach Terry was, June 25, 1776, the only Terry head of family in Smithtown, his family consisting only of one male over sixteen and under fifty years, and one female over sixteen years of age; the following is an abstract of his will, dated February 1, 1783, proved February 13, 1783:

I, Shaderich Terry, of Smith Town County Suffolk, being weak in body, do this first day of February, 1783, make this will I leave to my loving wife Mary, the equal third part of all my lands, to be improved by her during her natural life; and one room in the house; all my household goods; one horse and half my neat cattle and smaller stock; except one bed. Unto my loving brother Thomas, all my lands, house and barns, and the said bed; ordering him to take and *bring up*, ye *youngest child of James Morris*, providing for it whatever is needful for its comfort and subsistence till it is of age, provided its friends shall give consent. Also to him, the remainder of my stock, and my farming utensils to carry on farming. . . . My ready money to be equally divided between my wife and my brother Thomas. I make my wife and my brother Thomas and Joseph Blydenburgh, executors.

SHADRACH TERRY

Witnesses, Joseph Blydenburgh, Timothy Mills, yeoman,
Joshua Hart.

4. Jeremiah, of whom further. 5. Thomas, under twenty-one years of age in January, 1761; by the terms of his brother's will, in 1783, he received one-half of his "ready money," and was made an executor of said Shadrach's will; he was also chosen as overseer of highways at town meeting in Smithtown, in April, 1787, and again in April, 1788. 6. William, under twenty-one years of age in January, 1761; probably the William Terry who, in 1790, resided in Islip, Long Island, New York, his family consisting of two males over sixteen years of age, two males under sixteen, and five females. The fact that in the non-alphabetical census of 1790, his name appears next to

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

that of Joseph Ketcham, suggests that Ketcham may have been his father-in-law or brother-in-law, and that William Terry may have been father of Ketcham Terry, born about 1775, who in 1800, was in Islip, as head of family and under twenty-six years of age, with apparently two young children, and a close neighbor of a Joseph Ketcham, over forty-five years of age. 7. Desire, named in her father's will. 8. Elizabeth, also named in her father's will. 9. Jemima, also recorded in the will of her father. 10. Mary, though not recorded in her father's will, is recorded in family data as a sister of Jeremiah, William, Daniel, and Thomas Terry, and of Shadrach Terry; it is possible that she may have been the Mary mentioned in the will of Shadrach Terry as his wife.

("Records of the Town of Brookhaven Up to 1800," compiled by the town clerk, pp. 155, 164. "Records of Town of Brookhaven, New York, 1798-1856," p. 15. "Wills, Recorded in New York County, New York," Book XXIII, p. 55 (new folio, 64.) "Abstracts of New York Wills," Vol. XII, pp. 43, 44, Liber XXXV, p. 239. W. S. Pelletreau: "Records of Town of Smithtown, Long Island, New York," pp. 110, 112, 113, 114, 117, 118. W. W. Munsell: "History of Suffolk County, New York," p. 14. 1790 Census of New York State, p. 165. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. LVI, pp. 14, 15. Family data.)

II. Jeremiah Terry, son of Daniel Terry, of Brookhaven, was born probably in Brookhaven, or Islip, Long Island, New York, about 1735-40, and died some time after May 23, 1817.

He seems to have been the Jeremiah Terry, "Jr.," who, in 1790, was an inhabitant of Islip, with a family consisting of himself, one other male over sixteen years of age (probably a son), and three females (probably wife and two daughters). The "Jr." does not necessarily mean "son of," but in many cases indicates only the younger or junior in age of the two persons of the same name living in the same locality. Jeremiah, senior, was possibly a cousin of Jeremiah, junior, or may have been of the Terry family of Southold, Long Island, where one Jeremiah Terry died in 1792 or 1793, leaving a son, Jeremiah, the residence of the son not being mentioned in the father's will.

As only one Jeremiah Terry appears as a head of family in Islip in 1800, it is apparent that this was Jeremiah, son of Daniel, and that the elder Jeremiah had either died or removed from the town.

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Jeremiah Terry, by every evidence at hand the same who was the son of Daniel, reappears in the records of the settlement of the estate of James Morris Terry, wherein "Jeremiah terry" (signs by his mark) with Jeremiah Terry, "Jun'r." Hannah Terry, John Davis, and Matthew Edwards, all "Relatives" of the said James M. Terry, who had died leaving a widow, Hannah, and six minor children. Each of these five persons renounced his or her right to administer on the estate of the deceased. All the internal evidence and surrounding circumstances tend to prove that, of the five who renounced, "Jeremiah terry" was the father of the deceased James M. Terry, Jeremiah Terry, "Jun'r," was a brother, Hannah Terry the widow, and John Davis and Matthew Edwards were brothers-in-law of the said James M. Terry.

Although the parentage of Jeremiah Terry's wife has not been ascertained, it seems to be a matter of interest in this connection that Jeremiah's brother, Shadrach, in his will of 1783, directed that his brother, Thomas, should bring up the youngest child of James Morris.

Jeremiah Terry married, probably about 1770-72, Elizabeth Norris (or Morris). Children, order not known: 1. Morris. 2. A daughter, born before 1774; married Matthew Edwards, who renounced right to administer on James M. Terry's estate, resided in 1800, in Islip, Long Island. 3. Probably, a daughter born after 1774; married John Davis, who also renounced right to administer on James M. Terry's estate; resided in 1800 in Islip, Long Island. 4. Shadrach, born after 1774, resided in Islip apparently with wife, one son and one daughter, both children being under ten years of age; a Shadrach Terry married in or about September, 1813, Betsey Rowe. 5. Jeremiah. 6. James Morris, of whom further.

(1790 Census of New York, p. 165. Suffolk County, New York, Wills, Book A, p. 276. "New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. LVI, pp. 14, 15. Suffolk County, New York, Surrogate's Records, Original Papers, File No. 1345. "Long Island Star," September 29, 1813. Family data.)

III. James Morris Terry, son of Jeremiah Terry, was born December 28, 1778, and was baptized at Smithtown, Long Island, June 20, 1779, by the Rev. Mr. Joshua Hartt, of the Presbyterian Church. He died May 10, 1817.

James M. Terry resided in the town of Islip, Suffolk County,

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

New York. Administration on his estate was granted the same month as his death, five of his relatives having renounced their right to administer. The proceedings were as follows:

JAMES M. TERRY, INTESTATE: ESTATE OF,

We whose names are underwritten being relatives of James M. Terry, late of Islip decease'd do hereby certify that we do each decline serving as administrators of the Estate of the s'd James M. Terry & we do further hereby recommend Willets Green of Islip & William Beale of Brookhaven as suitable persons to Administer on s'd Estate.

Witness our hands—

Islip 23rd May 1817

HANNAH TERRY

JEREMIAH X TERRY his mark

JEREMIAH TERRY JUN'R

JOHN DAVIS

MATTHEW EDWARDS

Willets Green and William Beale were bonded as administrators on above, May 29, 1817, their fellow-bondsmen being John Davis and Matthew Edwards, in amount \$2,000.

BROOKHAVEN 18 Nov 1818

SIR—It has been a question between the Guardians whether to pay within Ballance & keep the Property or have it sold. They have finally concluded it more Beneficial to the Heirs to have it sold & there is now a person stands ready to buy we expect. As there can be no objection from any quarter you will please to make the time as short as the Law will admit as we are anxious to get through with the Bissiness & the Money due is very much wanted.

Yours,

W. GREEN

W. BEALE Adm's.

The estate, according to an accounting of the two administrators, is as follows:

4 JULY 1818	JAMES M. TERRY ESTATE: DECE'D	DRS.
THE ESTATE OF JAMES M. TERRY LATE OF THE TOWN OF ISLIP		
To Cash paid John Hawkins on Book Acct.		3.00
To Cash paid Mott weaver—do-do		4.00
To Cash paid Joseph Youngs—do-do		7.12½
To Cash paid William Green—do-do		2.80
To Cash paid John Green—do-do		8.87
To Cash paid Elijah Smith—do-do		5.00
To Cash paid John Davis on a Note		563.87
To Cash paid David Youngs—Book Acct.		1.00

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

To Cash paid William Brown—do-do	2.71
To Cash paid Jacob Morris on a Note	62.82
To Cash paid William Tooker for attending venue	2.00
To Cash given Widow Terry topay for qualifying as Guardians	6.00
To Cash paid Archabald Jayne for Liquor vendue62
To Cash paid Matthew Edwards, going to Surrogates	1.00
To Cash paid William Brown Jun'r Book Acct.	15.58
To Cash paid for Dockage, N. Y.	4.12
To Cash paid William Rowe, N. Y. Book Acct.	24.62
To Cash paid Samuel Conkling—do-do	3.08
To Cash Paid William Terry—do-do	2.00
To Cash paid Custom House, N. Y.	1.50
To Cash paid Shadrach Terry Book Acct.75
To Cash paid Davis for Acct—N. Y.	17.06

DEBTS UNPAID

To Elijah Smith Book Acct.	6.03
To Ship Chandellers Amount N. Y.	41.75
To William Swezey—Book Acct.	8.00
To Sandy Lattin N. Y.	5.00

\$814.08

	CRS.
By amount of Sale of Movables	695.90
By Cash Rec'd of David Ross	31.12½
By do. Rec'd of Jeremiah Terry	11.28
By do. Rec'd of Philetus Smith	10.00
By do. Rec'd of William Terry	5.00

\$753.30½

WILLETS GREEN
WILLIAM BEALE Administrators.

I have since learned that there is another account in New York, the amt have not learned
W. B.

An accounting November 18, 1818, differs slightly from the foregoing. The new items are as follows: "To Acct in N. Y. 63.00" and instead of "William Rowe, N. Y." the new account states "To Roe, N. Y."; instead of "Sandy Lattin," it reads "To Sandy Latin." The six dollar amount in the first account as paid to "Widow Terry," is shown as paid to "Hannah" Terry.

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Under the date of November 18, 1818, the administrators certify that "there is land belonging s'd estate lying in the Town of Islip & that a part of it cannot conveniently be disposed of without the whole."

The following is an inventory taken of the same estate by Jacob Hawkins and Matthew Edwards, May 30, 1817, the total amounting to eight hundred and fifty dollars and ten cents:

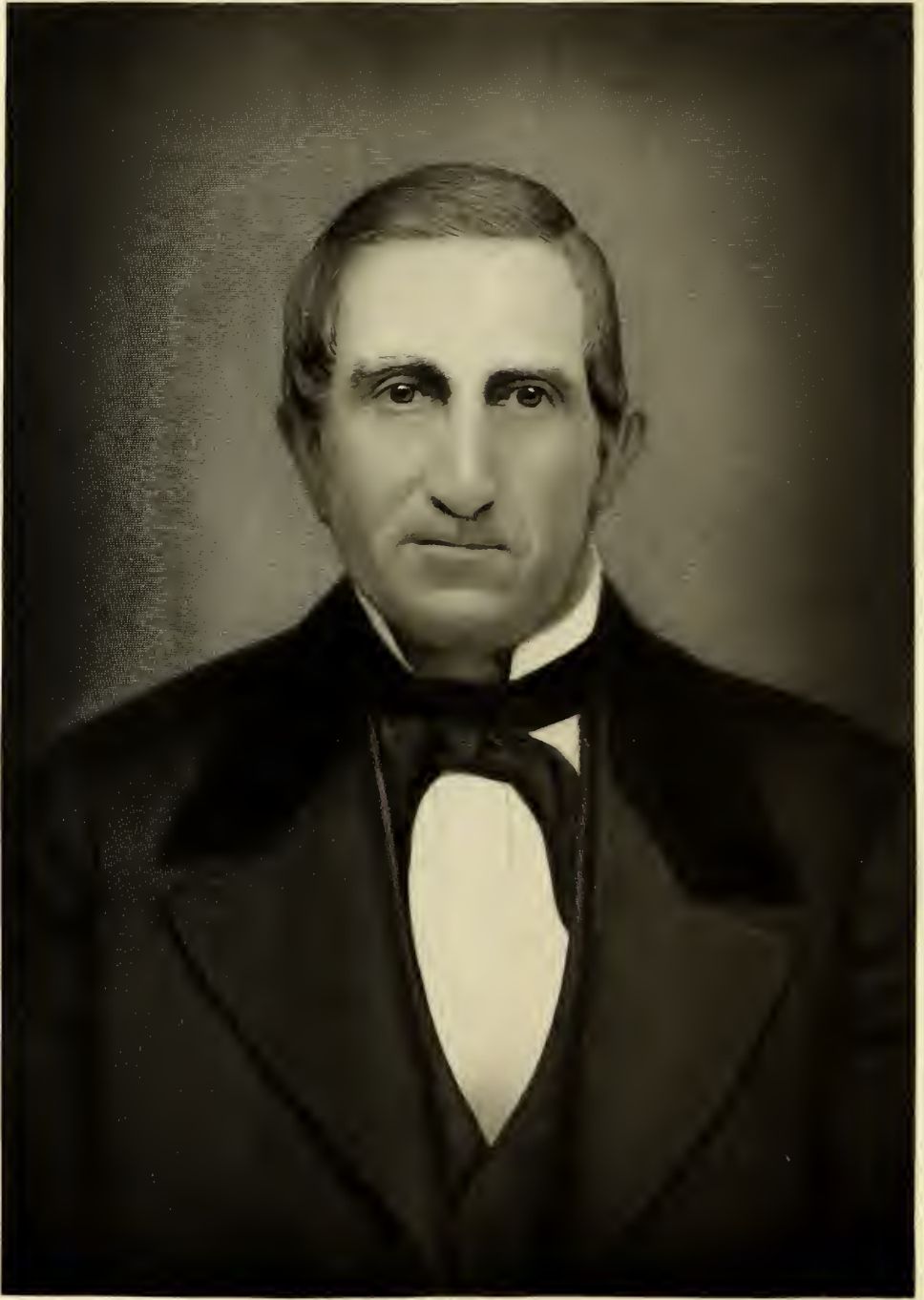
One half of the Schooner A Hero.....	\$600.00
One Cow	15.00
Grain in the Ground.....	5.00
Cordwood in the Woods.....	13.50
1 Gun	5.00
2 Spring Wheels	2.00
due bill against David Rose.....	7.05
" " " Jeremy Terry	11.18
Note against Philetus Smith.....	30.00

Also three beds, bedding and many other small items.

(WILLIAM BEALE signs as "Justice")

James Morris Terry married (first), January 1, 1803, Charlotte Booth, who was born September 18, 1779, and died October 6, 1806. He married (second), June 21, 1809, Hannah Roe, who was still living, October 30, 1817. Children of first marriage: 1. Noah, born July 28, 1803, drowned September 3, 1821; Shadrach Terry, of Brookhaven, was appointed his guardian, February 6, 1821. 2. Tyler, of whom further. 3. Charlotte, born October 6, 1806, died October 30, 1836, under fourteen years of age, October 30, 1817, when Shadrach Terry was appointed her guardian. Children of second marriage: 4. Edmond, under fourteen years of age, October 30, 1817, when Hannah Terry, of Islip, was appointed his guardian. 5. Wilson J., under fourteen years of age, October 30, 1817, when Hannah Terry, of Islip, was appointed his guardian. 6. Maria, under fourteen years of age, October 30, 1817, when Hannah Terry, of Islip, was appointed her guardian.

("New York Genealogical and Biographical Record," Vol. XLII, p. 238; Vol. LVI, pp. 14, 15. Suffolk County, New York, Surrogates' Record, Original Papers, File, 1345. United States Census, State of New York; Heads of Families in 1790, p. 165. "Abstracts of New York Wills," Vol. XII, pp. 43, 44, 416. Suffolk County, New York, Letters of Guardianship, Book I, pp. 60, 61, 92. Suffolk County, New York, Letters of Administration, Book C, p. 89. Family data.)



Captain John Tyler Ferry



Harriet Monselet Terry



Hannah Rice Mansell

MONSELL

Arms—Argent on a chevron between three mullets sable, a trefoil slipped or.

Crest—Upon a wreath of the colors a lion rampant proper holding between the paws a mullet sable.

Supporters—On either side a lion proper gorged with a collar vair, therefrom pendant an escutcheon of the arms.

Motto—*Mone Salé.*

(Arms in possession of the family.)

NOTES

... on a chair between three pillars with a metal
...
... of the robes a lion rampant proper hold
...
... to either side a lion passant guardant with a collar
...
... of the arms
...
... of the family



Monseff

ROE

Arms—Argent, on a chevron between three trefoils azure, as many quatrefoils of the field.

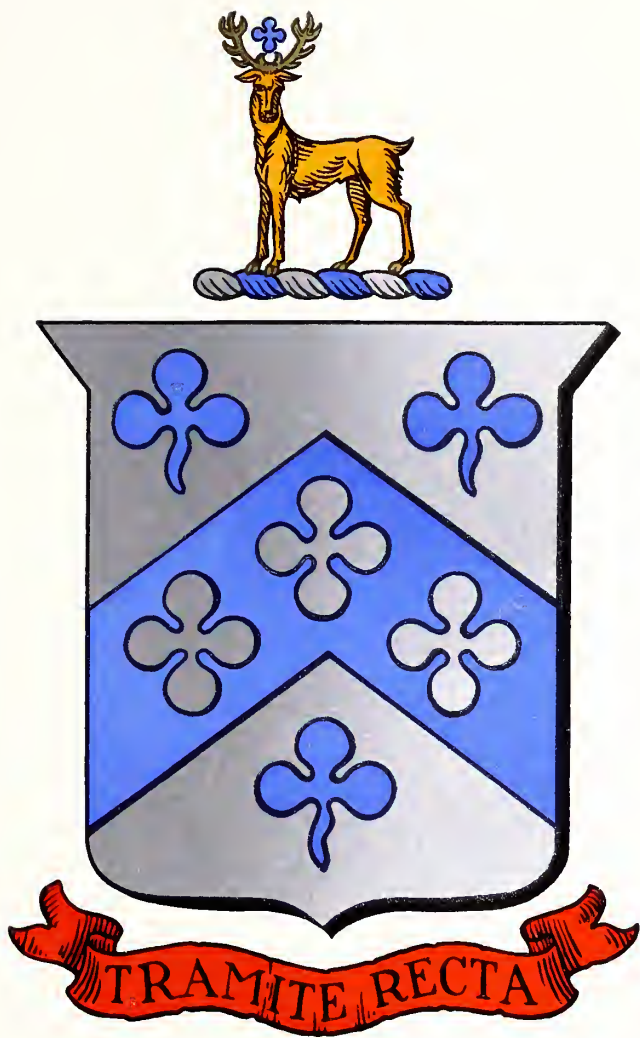
Crest—A roebuck, statant, gardant, attired and hooped or, between attires a quatrefoil azure.

Motto—*Tramite recta.*

(Arms in possession of the family.)

ROE

Arms—Argent, on a chevron between three trefoils azure, as many quarterly of the field.
Crest—A roebuck, statant, gardant, attired and hooded or, between attires a quarterly azure.
Motto—Trenite recte.
(Arms in possession of the family.)



Roe

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Captain John Tyler Terry, probably identical with Tyler Terry mentioned above, the son of James Morris and Charlotte (Booth) Terry, was born on Long Island, April 6, 1805, and died December 16, 1890. He is reported by family tradition to have been an old sea captain. Various land records show that, following the custom of the family, Captain Terry also owned land in Islip.

Deed January 19, 1837 from Daniel G. Gillett & John Hawkins execs; of the will of Wm. C. Smith dec'd to James M. Terry, land in Islip, a part of land which adjoins land of John Hawkins, a stake in the strand & to the low water mark, Morris Terry, Tyler Terry, 75 acres: the land in this deed is south of the middle road, bounded on the west by land of said deceased, on south by the South Bay, on east by land of John Hawkins & on n. by the middle road, 41 acres; James M. Terry was the highest bidder (auction) \$700.

Deed May 22, 1840 from John Hawkins & wf. Jenney of Islip to James M. Terry for \$300, land in Islip bounded by land of Tyler Terry ½ acre.

Deed November 16, 1843 from James M. Terry of Islip & wf. Hannah to John Hawkins of Islip for \$300, land & bldgs in Islip bounded by land of Tyler Terry (on middle road) ½ acre.

Captain John Tyler Terry married, February 12, 1829, Harriet Monsell, the daughter of Isaac Monsell. In the family Bible in possession of descendants of this family, it is recorded that Isaac Monsell was born April 30, 1772, and died March 7, 1825. He married, February 15, 1801, Hannah Roe, who was born in September, 1775, and died February 18, 1859. In the possession of the descendants of this family there are two samplers, inscribed as follows: "Hannah Roe, 1791." "Charlotte Munsell born Dec. 8, 1809." Child: 1. William Rowe, of whom further.

(Suffolk County, New York, Deeds, Book Y, p. 259; Book XXXIII, p. 111; Book XXXVIII, p. 180. Family data.)

V. William Rowe Terry, son of Captain John Tyler and Harriet (Monsell) Terry, was born at Bayport, Long Island, September 20, 1840, and died July 27, 1910. He married, October 9, 1861, Frances Maria Rowland, who was born April 12, 1841, and died October 26, 1923. Children: 1. William Tyler, of whom further. 2. Harriet Frances, of whom further.

(Family data.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Captain John Tyler Terry, probably identical with Tyler Terry mentioned above, the son of James Morris and Charlotte (Booth) Terry, was born on Long Island, April 6, 1805, and died December 16, 1890. He is reported by family tradition to have been an old sea captain. Various land records show that, following the custom of the family, Captain Terry also owned land in Islip.

Deed January 19, 1837 from Daniel G. Gillett & John Hawkins execs; of the will of Wm. C. Smith dec'd to James M. Terry, land in Islip, a part of land which adjoins land of John Hawkins, a stake in the strand & to the low water mark, Morris Terry, Tyler Terry, 75 acres: the land in this deed is south of the middle road, bounded on the west by land of said deceased, on south by the South Bay, on east by land of John Hawkins & on n. by the middle road, 41 acres; James M. Terry was the highest bidder (auction) \$700.

Deed May 22, 1840 from John Hawkins & wf. Jenney of Islip to James M. Terry for \$300, land in Islip bounded by land of Tyler Terry $\frac{1}{2}$ acre.

Deed November 16, 1843 from James M. Terry of Islip & wf. Hannah to John Hawkins of Islip for \$300, land & bldgs in Islip bounded by land of Tyler Terry (on middle road) $\frac{1}{2}$ acre.

Captain John Tyler Terry married, February 12, 1829, Harriet Monsell, the daughter of Isaac Monsell. In the family Bible in possession of descendants of this family, it is recorded that Isaac Monsell was born April 30, 1772, and died March 7, 1825. He married, February 15, 1801, Hannah Roe, who was born in September, 1775, and died February 18, 1859. In the possession of the descendants of this family there are two samplers, inscribed as follows: "Hannah Roe, 1791." "Charlotte Munsell born Dec. 8, 1809." Child: 1. William Rowe, of whom further.

(Suffolk County, New York, Deeds, Book Y, p. 259; Book XXXIII, p. 111; Book XXXVIII, p. 180. Family data.)

V. William Rowe Terry, son of Captain John Tyler and Harriet (Monsell) Terry, was born at Bayport, Long Island, September 20, 1840, and died July 27, 1910. He married, October 9, 1861, Frances Maria Rowland, who was born April 12, 1841, and died October 26, 1923. Children: 1. William Tyler, of whom further. 2. Harriet Frances, of whom further.

(Family data.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

VI-A. William Tyler Terry, son of William Rowe and Frances Maria (Rowland) Terry, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, March 26, 1866. He married Catherine O'Connor, who was born in New York City, April 2, 1866, and died July 29, 1921. Child: 1. Harriet Frances, born in New Haven, June 12, 1888; married Adolph Friedrich Haffenreffer. (Haffenreffer II.)

(Family data.)

VI-B. Harriet Frances Terry, daughter of William Rowe and Frances Maria (Rowland) Terry, was born July 2, 1862. She married Nathaniel Wyeth Kendall. (Kendall VII.)

(*Ibid.*)

(The Haffenreffer Line).

For many centuries the house of Haffenreffer has been located in Germany. The men of that family are noted for their participation in the affairs of the government, clergy, legal and medical professions.

(Family data.)

I. Hans Haffenreffer, who is the earliest member of the family of whom we have record, lived near Goppingen in Germany. The name of his wife is not known. Child: 1. Martinus, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

II. Martinus Haffenreffer, son of Hans Haffenreffer, was born about 1500. The name of his wife is not known. Child: 1. Mathias, of whom further.

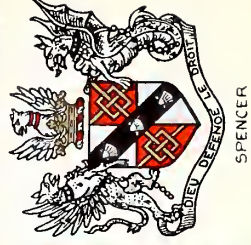
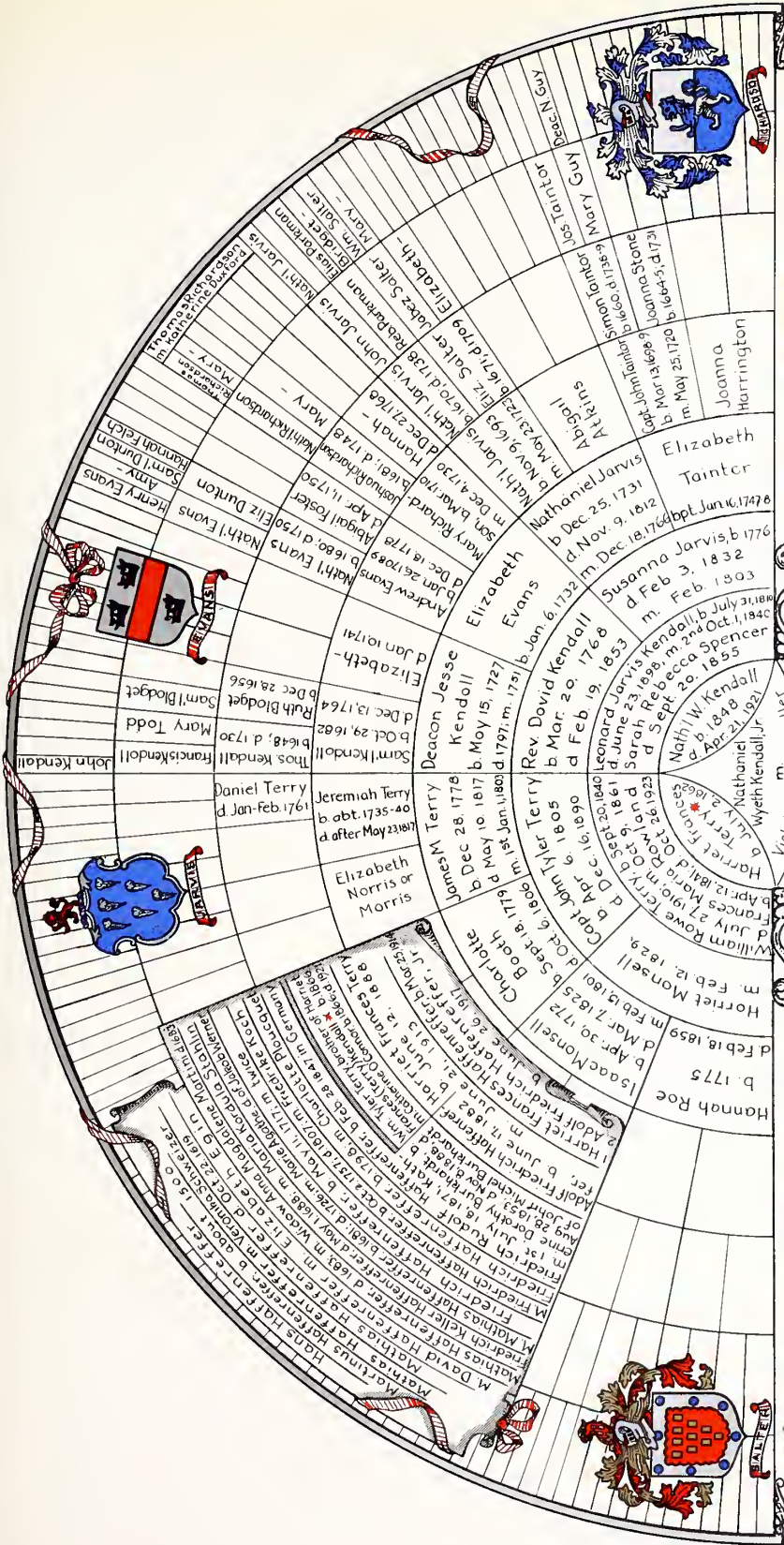
(*Ibid.*)

III. Mathias Haffenreffer, son of Martinus Haffenreffer, married Veronika Schweizer. Child: 1. Mathias, of whom further.

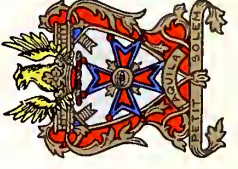
(*Ibid.*)

IV. Mathias (2) Haffenreffer, son of Mathias and Veronika (Schweizer) Haffenreffer, was born about 1559 and died October 22, 1619. He was a Doctor of Theology and Chancellor in Tubingen. He married (first) Agathe Spindler, and (second) Eufrosine Beserer, daughter of the mayor of Memmingen. Child: 1. M. David, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)



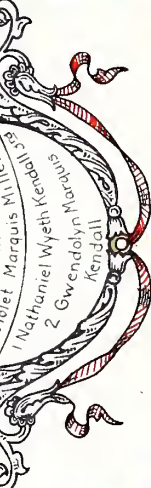
SPENCER



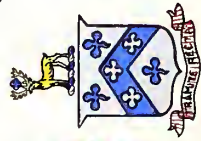
KENDALL



TERRY



ROE



TODD



MONSELL



KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. *M. David Haffenreffer*, son of Mathias Haffenreffer, was superintendent in Cannstatt about 1625. He married Elizabeth Egin. Child: 1. Mathias, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

VI. *Mathias (3) Haffenreffer*, son of M. David Haffenreffer, died in 1683. He was a clergyman in Grossbottwar, and married the Widow Anna Magdalene Martini, who died in 1683. She was the daughter of a Mr. Zeller. Child: 1. Friedrich Keller, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

VII. *Friedrich Keller Haffenreffer*, auf Howentwiel Vogt, the son of Mathias and Anna Magdalene (Martini) Haffenreffer, died in Balingen, May 1, 1688. He married Maria Kordula Stahlin. Child: 1. M. Mathias, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

VIII. *M. Mathias Haffenreffer*, son of Friedrich Keller and Maria Kordula (Stahlin) Haffenreffer, was born in 1681 and died April 16, 1726. He was a clergyman in Onstmettingen and Dornstetten. M. Mathias Haffenreffer married Marie Agathe Werner, daughter of Jakob Werner, a merchant and mayor of Balingen. Child: 1. Friedrich, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

IX. *Friedrich Haffenreffer*, son of M. Mathias and Agathe (Werner) Haffenreffer, was born May 11, 1717. He was at one time Secretary of State. He married (first) a Miss Holland, the daughter of Secretary of State Holland, of Rosenfeld; and (second) Elizabeth Roller, daughter of a Mr. Roller, who was mayor of Balingen. Child: 1. M. Friedrich, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

X. *M. Friedrich Haffenreffer*, son of Friedrich Haffenreffer, was born October 2, 1757, and died in 1807. He was a clergyman in Neuhausen bei Nürtingen and Hohenacker bei Waiblingen. He married Friedrike Koch, daughter of a Mr. Koch, who was a government official in Uhlbach. Child: 1. Friedrich, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

XI. Friedrich Haffenreffer, son of M. Friedrich and Friedrike (Koch) Haffenreffer, was born in 1798. He was a judge. Friedrich Haffenreffer married Charlotte Ploucquet. Child: 1. Friedrich Rudolf, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

(The Family in America)

I. Friedrich Rudolf Haffenreffer, son of Friedrich and Charlotte (Ploucquet) Haffenreffer, was born in Germany, February 28, 1847. In 1868, he came to the United States and located in Boston. He had large interest in breweries and until the time of his retirement, in 1905, participated actively in the business.

He married (first), July 18, 1871, Katherine Dorothy Burkhardt, who was born August 28, 1853, and died November 8, 1888, the daughter of John Michel Burkhardt, of Unterreichenbach. He married (second), January 11, 1890, Christine Soldner, who was born July 6, 1863, the daughter of August Soldner, merchant of Augsburg. Child: 1. Adolph Friedrich, of whom further.

(*Ibid.*)

II. Adolph Friedrich Haffenreffer, son of Friedrich Rudolf and Katherine Dorothy (Burkhardt) Haffenreffer, was born June 17, 1882. He was engaged in the warehouse business in Fall River, Massachusetts. He married, at Kenmore, New Haven, Connecticut, June 21, 1913, Harriet Frances Terry. (Terry VI-A—child one.) Children: 1. Harriet Frances, born March 25, 1914. 2. Adolf Friedrich, Jr., born June 26, 1917.

(*Ibid.*)

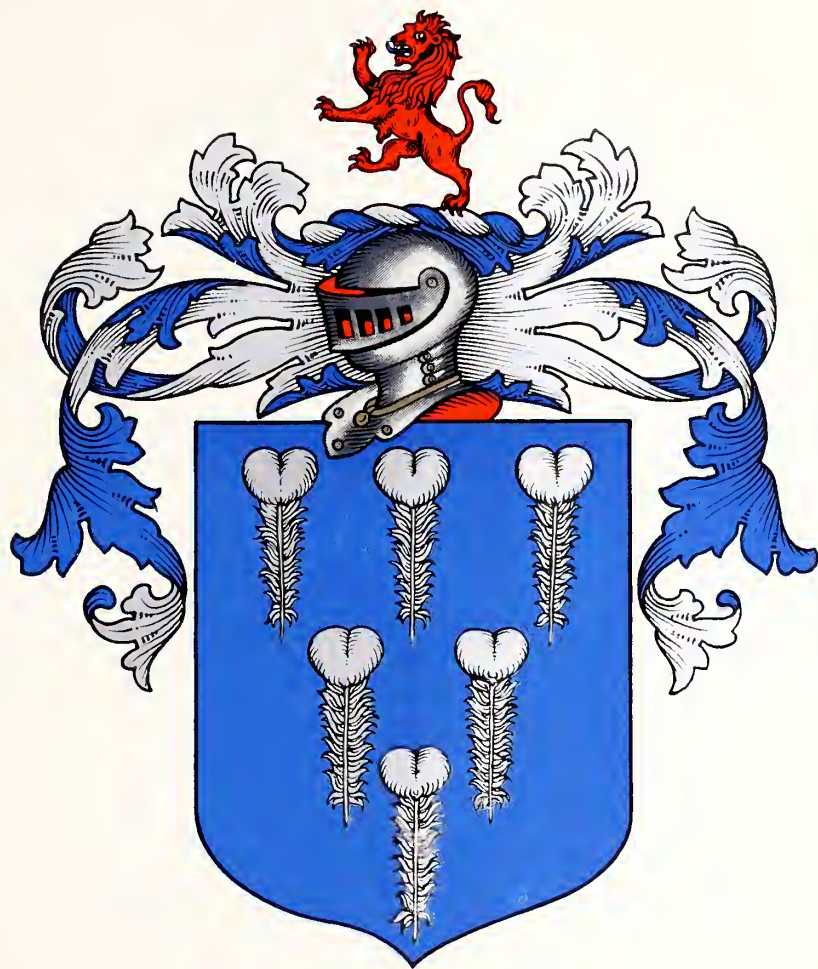
(The Jarvis Line)

Arms—Azure, six ostrich feathers argent, three, two and one.

Crest—A lion rampant gules.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

The Jarvis families in the United States and Canada are generally believed to be of British extraction, although they were originally from Normandy, where their seat was Bretagne. This name, which has ramified into innumerable variants, some of them being Jervis, Gervais, Gervis, and Jervais, is derived from "the son of Gervase," which is a French form of the personal name Gervasius, corrupted to Jarvis. The earliest mention of it is Richard Gervasius, of Normandy, 1180-95. Jarvises may be found scattered all over the United States, as well as in the British provinces of North America. The



Jarvis

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

name has been well represented in practically all the professions and pursuits of life, notably, the bench and bar, the pulpit, and stage. The Rt. Rev. Abraham Jarvis, second Episcopal Bishop of Connecticut, and his son, Samuel Farmar Jarvis, were included among the very prominent divines of the Episcopal pulpit. Early records of the name are also found in medieval English documents.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." "The Norman People," p. 259, published by H. S. King & Co., London. G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," pp. 1-11. Appleton: "Encyclopedia of American Biography," p. 405.)

I. Nathaniel Jarvis, the first of the line of whom certain record is found, was born in Wales. He was captain of a ship that ran between Bristol, England, and the Island of Jamaica. Captain Jarvis became a prosperous merchant and influential citizen of Boston, to which city he came to reside about 1668, bringing with him his wife, the widow of a rich planter at Jamaica. At a later date he was joined by two brothers from England, and it is traditionally believed that one went to Hartford, Connecticut, while the other removed to Concord, Massachusetts. Nathaniel Jarvis was probably the parent of: 1. John, of whom further.

(G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," p. 200. "Record Commissioners' Report, Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, p. 56.)

II. John Jarvis, probably the son of Nathaniel Jarvis, married, September 18, 1661, Rebecca Parkman. (Parkman II.) Children: 1. John, Jr., born in 1662. 2. Elias, born January 13, 1663. 3. Nicholas, baptized in 1666, died young. 4. James; married, July 18, 1694, Penelope Waters. 5. William, born August 10, 1666. 6. Nathaniel, of whom further. 7. Rebecca, born April 17, 1672. 8. Samuel, born in 1674. 9. Mary, born April 17, 1677; married, January 29, 1699, Richard Collier. 10. Rebecca, born January 27, 1679. 11. Abigail, born September 2, 1684; married, December 4, 1712, John Bess.

(G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," pp. 200-01. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, pp. 82, 88, 100, 115, 123, 142, 149, 163, 198, 218.)

III. Nathaniel (2) Jarvis, son of John and Rebecca (Parkman) Jarvis, was born May 25, 1670, and died December 13, 1738. The

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

name of Nathaniel Jarvice appears as one of those chosen and sworn to serve as constable for the year 1719-20.

He married (first), September 28, 1691, Elizabeth Salter. (Salter III.) He married (second) Elizabeth Trevet. Children, all except the last one by his first marriage: 1. Nathaniel, of whom further. 2. Elizabeth, born July 21, 1696; married Ebenezer Allen. 3. Rebecca, born December 11, 1701; married Alexander Parkman. 4. William. 5. Leonard, born May 7, 1716, died September 30, 1760.

(G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," p. 202. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. VIII, p. 140; Vol. IX, pp. 115, 198.)

IV. Nathaniel (3) Jarvis, son of Nathaniel (2) and Elizabeth (Salter) Jarvis, was born November 9, 1693. He was a shipwright. He married, May 23, 1723, Abigail Atkins. Children: 1. Abigail, born in 1723. 2. Elizabeth, born November 15, 1726, died in 1742. 3. Marcy, born April 19, 1729, died in 1800. 4. Nathaniel, of whom further. 5. Thomas, born May 8, 1734, died in 1792.

("Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, p. 207; Vol. XXIV, p. 160. G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," pp. 202-03.)

V. Nathaniel (4) Jarvis, son of Nathaniel (3) and Abigail (Atkins) Jarvis, was born December 25, 1731, and died November 9, 1812. He removed from Boston to Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1755, where he bought an estate which remained in the family possession as late as 1853, and at a later date was bought by the college. This estate was a few rods from the common, on the northeast side of the road from Cambridge to West Cambridge (known as Arlington).

Nathaniel Jarvis married, December 18, 1766, Elizabeth Taintor. (Taintor IV.) Children: 1. Elizabeth, born February 15, 1768; married, November 8, 1796, Jacob Wyeth. 2. Mary, born August 25, 1769; married, April 4, 1796, Phineas Stone. 3. Rebekah, born December 13, 1771. 4. Nathaniel, born February 26, 1774, died in 1779. 5. Susanna, of whom further. 6. Leonard, born January 7, 1779, died November 16, 1845; married, March 5, 1808,

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Mary Cogswell, of Westford. 7. Abigail Atkins, born October 17, 1783.

(“Record Commissioners’ Report of Boston, Massachusetts,” Vol. XXIV, p. 203. G. A. Jarvis: “The Jarvis Family,” pp. 203, 235. Vital Records of Cambridge, Massachusetts, Vol. I, p. 393; Vol. II, pp. 218, 619.)

VI. Susanna Jarvis, daughter of Nathaniel (4) and Elizabeth (Taintor) Jarvis, was born May 13, 1776, and died February 3, 1832. She married Rev. David Kendall. (Kendall V.)

(G. A. Jarvis: “The Jarvis Family,” p. 203. Cambridge, Massachusetts, Vital Records, Vol. I, p. 393; Vol. II, p. 218.)

(The Taintor Line)

Classed as an occupative surname, Taintor signifies “one who dyes,” a dyer. In the early days a dyer was sometimes spoken of as a teinturer or teyntour, and often as tinctor. This family is found in England in the counties of Lincoln and Kent. We quote from Bardsley’s fifth edition of his “English Surnames,” pp. 322-23, concerning this patronymic as follows:

It was John Litterer, a dyer, who in 1381 headed the rebellion in Norwich. Here the surname was evidently taken from the occupation followed. Halliwell gives the obsolete verb “to lit” or dye, and quotes an old manuscript in which the following sentence occurs: “We use na clathis that are littede or dyverse coloures.” Such names as Gilbert le Teinteur, or Richard le Teynterer, or Philip le Teinter, which I have come across in three separate records, represent the old French title for the same occupation, but I believe they have failed to come down to us—at least I have not met with any after instance. The old English forms of “tincture” and “tint” are generally found to be “teinture” and “teint.” The teinturer is not without relics. We still speak when harrassed of “being on the stretch,” or when in a state of suspense as “being upon tenter-hooks,” both of which proverbial statements must have arisen in the common converse of cloth-workers. The tenter itself was the stretcher upon which the cloth was laid while in the dyer’s hands. On account of various deceits that had become notorious in the craft, for instance, as the overstretching of the material, a law was passed in the first year of Richard III, that “tentering” or “teyntering” should only be done in an open place, and for this purpose public tenters were to be set up. (Statutes of the Realm, Richard III.)

(Bardsley: “Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.”)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. *Joseph Tainter*, whose surname was also spelled Taynter, Taintor, and Tayntor, ancestor of the family in America, died February 20, 1690. At the age of twenty-five, he embarked at Southampton, April 24, 1638, in the "Confidence of London," John Jobson, master, as a servant of Nicholas Guy. In 1639 he had a share in the first division of land in Sudbury, where he may have resided for a very short time, and in the third division in November, 1640. Mr. Tainter served as selectman of Watertown several times between the years 1657 and 1680.

Joseph Tainter married Mary Guy, who died in 1705, said to be aged eighty-six years, daughter of Deacon N. Guy. Children: 1. Mary; married a Mr. Pollard. 2. Ann, born September 2, 1644, probably died young. 3. Joseph, Jr., born September 2, 1645, died August 7, 1728, probably unmarried. 4. Rebecca, born August 18, 1647. 5. Benjamin, born January 22, 1650-51. 6. Jonathan, born September 10, 1654. 7. Sarah, born November 20, 1657; married, about 1681, Elnathan Beers. 8. Simon, of whom further. 9. Dorothy, born August 13, 1663; married John Taylor.

(H. Bond: "Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts," pp. 596-97. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, pp. 248-49. A. S. Hudson: "History of Sudbury, Massachusetts," p. 26. C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts." G. M. Bodge: "Soldiers in King Philip's War," p. 127.)

II. *Simon Tainter*, son of Joseph and Mary (Guy) Tainter, was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, September 30, 1660, and died January 19, 1738-39. On July 14, 1703, he and his wife, Joanna Stone, were among the group who, for £100, conveyed to Jabez Beers, of Watertown, a message consisting of a mansion house and barn and twenty acres of arable land and orchard, bounded south by Captain Nathaniel Barsham, north by the town highway, west by Nathaniel Coolidge, and the heirs of Captain Richard Beers, and east by Deacon William Bond and the heirs of the said Captain Richard Beers. This was the homestead of Deacon John Stone, originally granted to Richard Browne.

Simon Tainter married, May 9, 1693, Joanna Stone, who was born January 11, 1664-65, died December 3, 1731. Children: 1. Simon, Jr., born February 28, 1694; married, May 25, 1714, Rebecca

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Harrington. 2. Mary, born January 24, 1695-96, died January 13, 1697-98. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Rebecca, born May 26, 1701, died December 14, 1715. 5. Mary, born November 27, 1703; married, April 14, 1726, Benjamin Hastings. 6. Dorothy, born May 20, 1706.

(H. Bond: "Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts," p. 597. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 249. Watertown Records, p. 112; Vol. III, pp. 1, 7, 18, 32. J. C. Bartlett: "Simon Stone Genealogy," pp. 57-58.)

III. Captain John Taintor (as he spelled the name), son of Simon and Joanna (Stone) Tainter, was born in Watertown, Massachusetts, March 13, 1698-99. He married, May 25, 1720, Joanna Harrington. Children: 1. Mary, born June 12, 1721, died February 20, 1745-46. 2. Hannah, born February 14, 1723; married, November 25, 1746, Moses Stone. 3. Rebecca, born August 14, 1725. 4. Susanna, born July 29, 1727; married, May 31, 1753, Abraham Hill, of Cambridge. 5. Joanna, born December 10, 1730; married, November 1, 1750, Ebenezer Shedd, Jr., of Charlestown. 6. John, born August 12, 1732; married, May 31, 1754, Mary Shed. 7. Ann, born August 12, 1734; married, November 24, 1757, David Watson, of Cambridge. 8. Samuel, born March 25, 1737, died January 4, 1759. 9. Eire (or Eyres), born July 20, 1741; married, December 15, 1767, Elizabeth Coolidge. 10. Mary, born February 20, 174— . 11. William, born June 1, 1746, died March 6, 1759. 12. Elizabeth, of whom further.

(H. Bond: "Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts," pp. 597-98. Watertown Records, Vol. III, pp. 13, 61, 111, 112, 116, 120, 142, 174. Wyman: "Genealogies and Estates of Charlestown, Massachusetts," Vol. II.)

IV. Elizabeth Taintor, daughter of Captain John and Joanna (Harrington) Taintor, was baptized January 16, 1747-48. She married Nathaniel Jarvis. (Jarvis V.)

(H. Bond: "Genealogies and History of Watertown, Massachusetts," pp. 597-98. "Cambridge Vital Records," Vol. II, pp. 218, 619. G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," p. 203.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Salter Line)

Arms—Gules, ten billets or, four, three, two and one, a border engrailed argent charged with eight hurts.

Crest—An eagle's head couped gules billettée or.

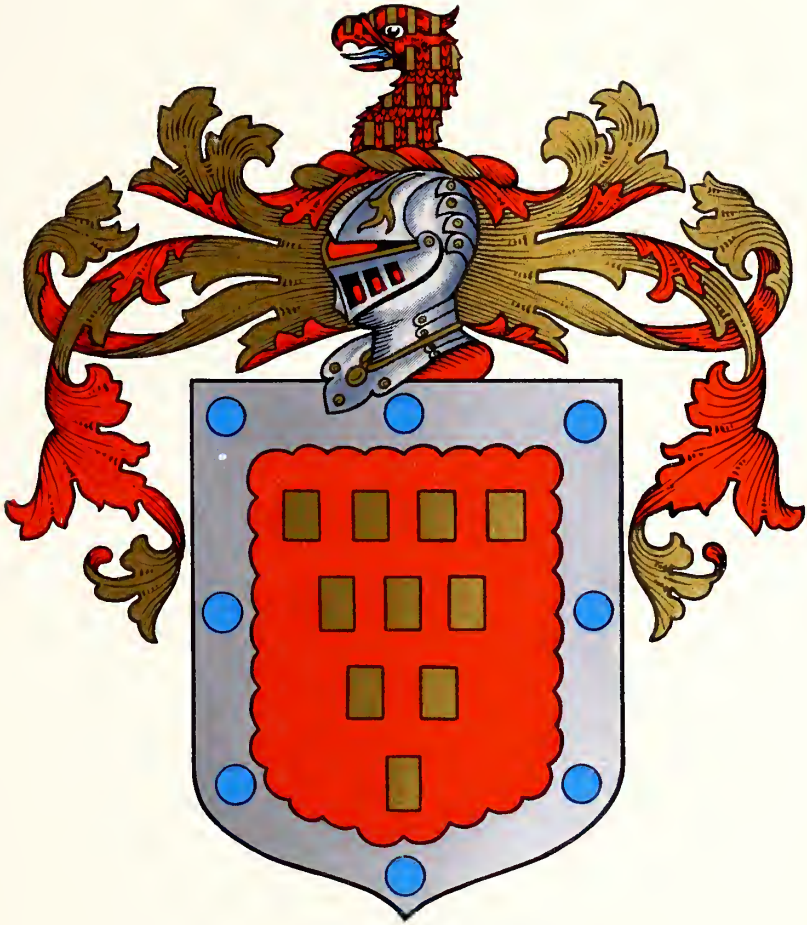
(Burke: "General Armory.")

Derived from the occupation of "the salter," a manufacturer or dealer in salt, the surname Salter was frequently found in several counties of England, as Buckingham, Northampton, Suffolk, Devonshire, Cornwall, Essex, Norfolk, Salop, and others. The manufacture of salt was a very important business during the Middle Ages, hence the popularity of the name. According to an early record, a deed was issued, in 1394, granting a license to the Company of Salters to be a guild or fraternity in honor of "the body of our Lord Jesus Christ in the Church of All Saints, commonly called Allhallows, Broad Street."

The Salter family is an ancient one. During the reign of Henry VI (1423), a William Salter possessed a large estate, and his ancestors had resided at and were the lords for over two hundred years of a manor called Bokenhamis, in England. In 1524, one Henry Salter was among the sheriffs of Norwich.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames."
William T. Salter: "John Salter, Mariner," pp. 5, 6, 7.)

I. William Salter, the American ancestor of this branch of the Salter family, was born in 1607, and died August 10, 1675. He was a fisherman at Boston, and in 1635 was a proprietor. He acted for August Clement in the sale of property in 1638. His name appears on the list of persons described as owners of land in Boston in the Book of Possessions; and also as one of the founders of the Old South Church in 1669. He was admitted freeman May 25, 1636. In 1656, Mr. Salter witnessed the will of Ann Hibbins, who was the second person recorded to be executed for witchcraft in New England. His name appears as witness to several wills. William Salter married Mary. Children: 1. Peleg, born January 15, 1635. 2. Elizabeth, born February 16, 1639, baptized February 26, 1640. 3. Mary, born June 10, 1642. 4. Jabez (or Jabesh), born in June, 1645, baptized June 17, 1646; probably died young. 5. Jabez (or Jabesh), of whom further. 6. Mehetabel, baptized in February, 1648. 7. John, baptized April 8, 1651. 8. Elisha, born March 7,



Salter

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1653-54, died July 14, 1655. 9. Lydia, born March 24, 1656. 10. Ann, baptized January 22, 1657. 11. (Probably) Hannah; married, in Boston, October 4, 1651, Nicholas Philips.

(C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," pp. 397-98. William T. Salter: "John Salter, Mariner," p. 8. J. Winsor: "Memorial History of Boston," pp. 560, 573. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. I, p. 194; Vol. II, p. 37; Vol. III, p. 94; Vol. VI, p. 283; Vol. VIII, p. 345; Vol. IX, p. 166. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, pp. 2, 13, 21, 26, 28, 34, 35, 45, 52.)

II. Jabez (or Jabesh) Salter, son of William and Mary Salter, was born probably in July, 1647. He served in an artillery company in 1674, and his name appears in the "Petition of Boston Inhabitants in 1696 that the Law Relating to Building with Brick be Repealed." In 1689, he came into possession of his father's place near the Common. Jabez Salter married Elizabeth. Children: 1. Elizabeth, of whom further. 2. Mary, born January 28, 1673. 3. Jabez, born July 8, 1678, died soon. 4. William, born January 5, 1680. 5. Jabez, born July 4, 1682, died soon. 6. Jabez, born June 1, 1683. 7. Elisha, born September 22, 1685, died soon. 8. Elisha, born October 9, 1686. 9. Richard, born February 3, 1689. 10. Samson, born March 21, 1692, died December 31, 1720; married Elizabeth.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 6. C. H. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 398. J. Winsor: "Memorial History of Boston," Vol. II, p. 36. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, pp. 129, 146.)

III. Elizabeth Salter, daughter of Jabez and Elizabeth Salter, was born October 6 (or 1), 1671, and died August 13, 1709. She married Nathaniel Jarvis. (Jarvis III.)

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 6. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, p. 120.)

(The Parkman Line)

Of occupational origin, the English family name, Parkman, is derived from "the parkman," synonymous with "the parker," designating the guardian, keeper, or custodian of a park. Record of the name is found in every early register throughout the country. So

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

popular has this patronymic become that it is almost a rival of Smith, Wright, Green, Brown, Jones, and Robinson for numbers.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Elias Parkman, progenitor of the family in America, was in Dorchester, Massachusetts, in 1633, and a freeman, May 6, 1635. He removed to Windsor, Connecticut, in 1636, where he was a first settler. It is probable that he had an establishment for trade at New Haven, in 1640, but he ultimately removed to Boston. Elias Parkman was a mariner, traded from Boston to Connecticut River, and perhaps on longer voyages, during one of which he was probably lost, for his wife presented an inventory, and he was supposed to be deceased July 28, 1662.

He married Bridget, and they had the following children: 1. Elias. 2. Rebecca, of whom further. 3. Samuel, born August 12, 1644. 4. George, died in 1645. 5. Mary, baptized September 24, 1648. 6. Deliverance, born August 3, 1651, died November 15, 1715; married, December 9, 1673, Sarah Verin. 7. Nathaniel, born June 24, 1655; married Hannah.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, p. 359. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. III, p. 93; Vol. V, p. 365; Vol. XII, p. 50. J. Farmer: "Genealogical Register of the First Settlers of New England," p. 218. F. R. Holmes: "Directory of Ancestral Heads of New England Families," p. 181. H. R. Stiles: "History and Genealogies of Ancient Windsor," p. 531. "Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," Vol. IX, pp. 28, 33, 50, 53.)

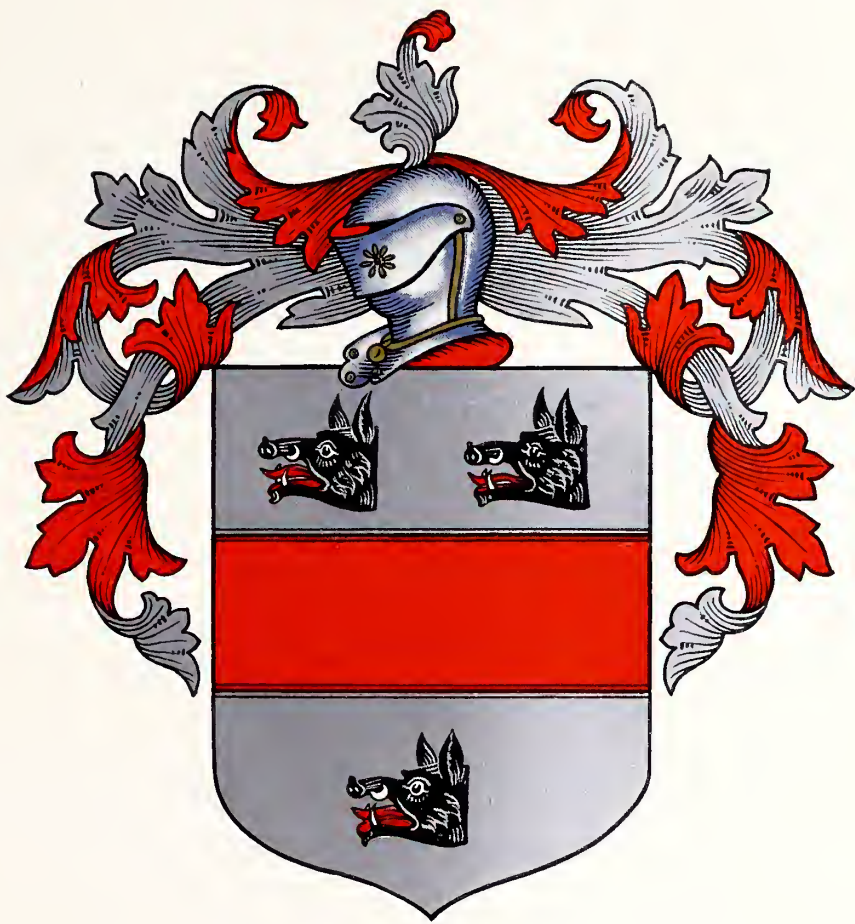
II. Rebecca Parkman, daughter of Elias and Bridget Parkman, married John Jarvis. (Jarvis II.)

("Record Commissioners' Report of Boston, Massachusetts," p. 82. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. II, p. 539; Vol. III, p. 359. G. A. Jarvis: "The Jarvis Family," p. 200.)

(The Evans Line)

Arms—Argent a fesse gules between three boars' heads coupéd sable.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

Originally Jevon, later Yevan, and lastly and permanently Evan, the patronymic Evans is derived from "the son of Evan," a Welsh personal name. One Howell ap Yevan appears in the Rolls of Parlia-



Evans

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ment and David ap Evan in the Calendar of Proceedings in Chancery. The Evans family is anciently from Wales, but nothing is known of the early history of the line herein considered, beyond the statement that Henry Evans came from Wales.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." L. Eaton: "History of Reading, Massachusetts," p. 69.)

I. Henry Evans, American ancestor, came from Wales to New England. Yeoman of Boston, Massachusetts, in 1643, he appeared in the Charlestown records, with wife, Hester, as selling land (two acres) with house, barn and other buildings situated on the common of Charlestown at the west end of the town, to Richard Palgrave, physician, and wife, Anna, 5-5-1650, for the sum of £50, which included also three acres of meadow and four acres of arable land. Henry Evans was admitted to the church 18-4-1643, and was freeman in 1645. His wife, Amy, was admitted from Roxbury Church 23-1-1644, and it would appear that she died before 5-5-1650, when Henry Evans' wife is Hester in the above sale of Charlestown property. Mr. Evans was drowned about March 1, 1666-67, and the inventory of his estate was filed in Middlesex County Court, and administration granted to wife, Esther, April, 1666-67.

Henry Evans married (first) Amy. He married (second) Esther (or Hester). By his first wife (probably) he was the father of: 1. Nathaniel, of whom further.

(L. Eaton: "History of Reading, Massachusetts," p. 69. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. II, p. 127. "Boston, Massachusetts, Record Commissioners' Report," Vol. III. Charlestown Land Records (1638-1802), pp. 117-18.)

II. Nathaniel Evans, son of Henry Evans, is said to have come from Wales with his father, Henry. Records of the First Church of Boston show a Nathaniel, son of ——— Euins (Evans), baptized 26-3-1650 (possibly the Nathaniel of our interest). Charles Pope says this Nathaniel is a son of David Evans, yet David was not recorded in Boston until 1654. Nathaniel Evans settled in Malden, which in 1729 was annexed to Reading, Massachusetts. His family was one of ten families in the section set off, now called Greenwood. He was a farmer, and died in Malden, Massachusetts, December 16, 1710.

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

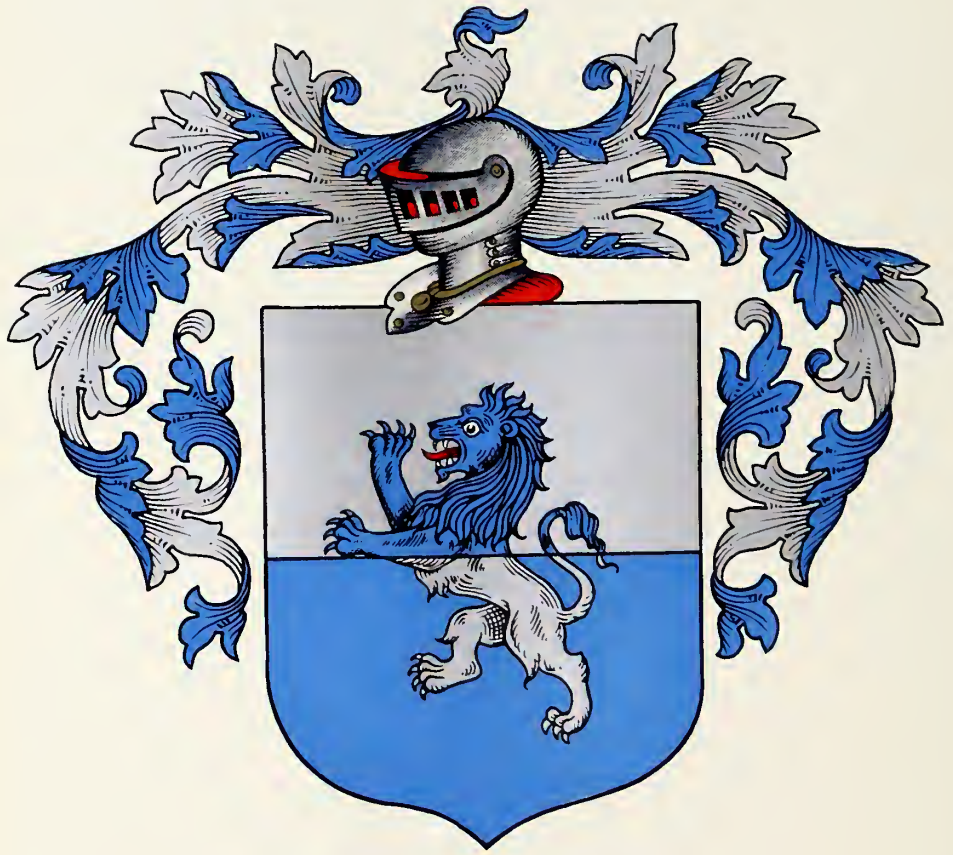
Nathaniel Evans married, before 1680, Elizabeth Dunton, born March 25, 1658, died May 8, 1740, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (or Anna) (Felch) Dunton. Children: 1. Nathaniel, Jr., of whom further. 2. (Perhaps) John; married, April 23, 1719, Sarah Sweeter (called Sarah Streeter in Vital Records).

(C. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 158. "Boston, Massachusetts, Record Commissioners' Report," Vol. IX, p. 31. (Boston Births, Marriages and Deaths, 1630-99). Vital Records, Malden, Massachusetts, p. 342. Vital Records, Reading, Massachusetts, pp. 71, 335, 516, 519. L. Eaton: "History of Reading, Massachusetts," p. 69. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIV, p. 286.)

III. Nathaniel Evans, Jr., son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Dunton) Evans, was born September 12, 1680, and died in Reading, Massachusetts, April 29, 1750. Records of Nathaniel Evans appear in Malden and in Reading, Massachusetts. He married, September 27, 1704, Abigail Foster, who died in Reading, Massachusetts, April 11, 1750. Children: 1. Abigail, born June 23, 1705. 2. Sarah, born October 20, 1707; married, March 9, 1732, Josiah Converse. 3. Andrew, of whom further. 4. Elizabeth, born March 26, 1711, died December 4, 1718. 5. David, born July 19, 1715; married, August 5, 1740, Hannah Nevers. 6. Elizabeth, born December 4, 1719. 7. Jonathan, born May 9, 1722, died in 1797; married, January 10, 1744, Eunice Green. 8. Mary, born March 4, 1723, died October 20, 1747.

(Vital Records, Malden, Massachusetts, pp. 229, 519. Vital Records, Reading, Massachusetts, pp. 89, 335, 516. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XI, pp. 26, 46, 47, 48.)

IV. Andrew Evans, son of Nathaniel and Abigail (Foster) Evans, was born in Malden, Massachusetts, January 26, 1708-09, and died December 18, 1778, aged seventy. He married, December 4, 1730, Mary Richardson. (Richardson V.) Children, recorded in Woburn, Massachusetts: 1. Mary, born June 25, 1731. 2. Elizabeth, of whom further. 3. Andrew, born November 20, 1734, died January 20, 1799, aged sixty-five; married, November 25, 1760, Sarah Center. 4. Nathaniel, born February 19, 1736; married, April 18, 1758, Mary Tidd. 5. Samuel, born October 30, 1742; possibly identical with the Samuel Evans who married, in 1766, Elizabeth Johnson, of



Richardson

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Leominster. 6. Hannah, born August 4, 1744; married, March 22, 1763, Bill Center.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XI, p. 48. Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages (1640-1873), pp. 64, 87, 90, 212, 228. S. Sewall: “History of Woburn, Massachusetts,” p. 635. J. A. Vinton: “Richardson Memorial,” pp. 504, 518, 540.)

V. Elizabeth Evans, daughter of Andrew and Mary (Richardson) Evans, was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, January 6, 1732. She married Jesse Kendall. (Kendall IV.)

(Woburn, Massachusetts, Births, Deaths, Marriages, pp. 26, 39, 87. S. Sewall: “History of Woburn, Massachusetts.” Vital Records, Athol, Massachusetts, pp. 50-53.)

(The Richardson Line)

Arms—Per fess argent and azure a lion rampant counterchanged.
(Burke: “General Armory.”)

Richardson is a derivative of the popular baptismal name Richard. The Richardson family, of Woburn, Massachusetts, was founded by three brothers, Ezekiel, Samuel, and Thomas Richardson, who emigrated to America. They were sons of Thomas Richardson, of West Mill, in Hertfordshire, England. The reasons for their coming to New England seem to have been as follows:

As early as 1628, religious disturbances were frequent in the county of Herts. The feeling is plainly shown in the incident of affixing, on the church door at Hemel Hampstead, a place seven miles west of St. Albans, a letter against certain forms of worship.

Religious persecution was not the only factor in driving the people of Herts to other parts. It was necessary in 1632 and succeeding years, for the justices of the peace for the county to take measures for the relief of the poor, the country being overpopulated, and it was with difficulty that the poor obtained employment and food.

It was, however, the ship money tax, first designed in June, 1634, . . . that in the succeeding four years was a cause for the emigration to New England of many of the people in Herts.

Twelve miles east of St. Albans (mentioned above) is Ware, and eight miles north of Ware is West Mill, a parish with a station on a branch railway terminating at Buntingford.

Francis Wyman, of West Mill, made his will, 15 September, 1658, which was proved 14 February, following. In it he left bequests to his two sons, Francis and John Wyman, “which are beyond

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the seas." The sons were in Woburn in 1640. A reference to the parish register of West Mill gives the following :

"1617, Francis Wymant and Elizabeth Richardson weare married 1 May. . . . 1630, Elizabeth ye wife of Francis Wymant buried June ye 22."

There are also records of the baptism of six children of Francis Wymant, as well as several Richardson items which are given in the history of Thomas Richardson, below.

(Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LVII, pp. 297-300.)

I. Thomas Richardson, whose ancestry is untraced, was born, doubtless in England, about 1570 or earlier, and died in the parish of West Mill, Herts, England, early in January, 1633, which, by the present method of reckoning, would be January, 1634. He was buried January 8, 1633. He was a resident "of Standon" at the time of his marriage. Standon is a parish in County Herts, and is eight miles northeast of Hertford, which is the capital of that county. Thomas Richardson's occupation was that of a "husbandman," as shown by his will. The parish register at West Mill contains a nearly complete record of his family, but does not show the baptism of his son, Ezekiel, who was perhaps the eldest child and who certainly was the first to emigrate to New England of the three sons who are known to have gone there. Ezekiel's departure before the date of his father's will was, presumably, the reason for his not being mentioned therein. Possibly he received his portion before leaving England. The fact that Ezekiel was a brother of Samuel and Thomas is shown by the following portion of Ezekiel's will: "I doe frelie fforgive and discharge whatsoever accounts and demands have been between my Brother Samuel Richardson and myself. I give unto my brother Thomas Richardson his son Thomas ten shillings."

The original will of Thomas Richardson, of West Mill, Herts, found at Hitchin, reads:

March the 4th Ano domini 1630. In the name of God Amen I Thomas Richardson of Westmill in the County of Herts, husbandman, being sick in bodye but of good and perfect memory thanks be to God doe make and ordeyne this my laste will in manner and forme following, firste. I bequeath my soull unto the hands of God my

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

maker and Redeemer by whose merits I only truste to be saved, and my body to be buryed in the place of Christian buryall and Touchinge my temporall goods I doe dispose of them as followeth.

First. I gyve unto Katherine my wife duringe the tearme of her naturall life my littell close of pasture called little hunnymede cont half an acre and after her decease I give the same to my sonn Samuell and his heyers for ever.

Item. I give to my sonn John forty shillings to be payed to him within the space of three yeares next ensueing the decease of me and Katherine my now wife by my executor.

Item. I give to my sonn James Twelve pence.

Item. I give to my sonn Thomas three pounds to be payed to him within the space of fyve yeares next ensueing the decease of me and Katherine my now wife.

Item. I gyve unto Katherine my wife all my movable goods to use for and during the terme of her life and after her decease I gyve the same unto my sonn Samuel whom I doe ordeyne and make my sole executor. In witness whereof I have sett my hand and Seal the daye and yeare above sayd.

Sealed and declared in the presence
of us

SIG^m THOMAS
(mark) RICHARDSON

RICHARD BAKER.

PHILIP BAKER.

Proved 31 July 1634 at Hitchin presented by son Samuel Richardson.

Thomas Richardson's marriage record, as it appears on the parish register of West Mill, is as follows: "Thomas Richardson of Standon and Katherine Duxford of West Mill were married 24 August 1590." She was buried March 10, 1631 (1632, according to new style). Children: 1. Ezekiel, perhaps the eldest child, was in Charlestown, Massachusetts, in 1630; died in Woburn, Massachusetts, October 21, 1647; married Susanna, who married (second) Henry Brooks. She died September 15, 1681, and the records speak of her as "an ancient and skillful woman, famous for her attainments in medical science." 2. Elizabeth, baptized January 13, 1593 (1594, new style); married, May 1, 1617, Francis Wimant (or Wyman). 3. John, baptized November 7, 1596. 4. James, baptized April 6, 1600. 5. Samuel, baptized December 22, 1602 (or 1604), died in Woburn, Massachusetts, March 23, 1658; married, doubtless in England, about 1632, Joanna, who probably died in Woburn in 1666 or

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

soon after. 6. Margaret, baptized April 19, 1607. 7. Thomas, of whom further.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LVII, pp. 298-300. A. Keith Johnston: “A General Dictionary of Geography—Forming a Complete Gazetteer of the World,” p. 1306. John Adams Vinton: “The Richardson Memorial,” pp. 35, 36, 504. R. P. Brooks: “Timothy Brooks, of Massachusetts, and His Descendants,” p. 9.)

II. *Thomas Richardson, Jr.*, son of Thomas and Katherine (Duxford) Richardson, was baptized in infancy, in the parish of West Mill, Herts, England, July 3, 1608, and died in Woburn, Massachusetts, August 28, 1651. One of the first records of him found in New England is on 18th of 12th month (February), 1637-38, when, with his brother, Samuel, he joined the church in Charlestown, Massachusetts, of which church his (Thomas') wife, Mary, had become a member on February 21, 1635-36. Both Samuel and Thomas were admitted freemen of the Colony, May 2, 1638. Each had been granted a house-lot in Charlestown in 1637 and it is probable that they came from England together, their brother Ezekiel having preceded them about 1630. The three brothers, Ezekiel, Samuel, and Thomas Richardson had lots assigned them, April 20, 1638, on “Mistick Side and above the Ponds,” that is, in Malden; and their names, among others, appear as persons having the privilege of pasturing cows upon the Common, December 30, 1638. November 5, 1640, these three brothers and four other men were chosen by the church of Charlestown as commissioners or agents for the settlement of a church and town, within what were then the limits of Charlestown, but soon after made a separate town and called Woburn. The three brothers lived on a street which, over two centuries later, was still known as “Richardson's Row.” It ran almost due north and south, in the northeastern part of what became the town of Winchester, being a part of Washington Street in that town, and near the Woburn town line.

The personal estate of Thomas Richardson was inventoried, September 22, 1651, at a value of £133 14s. 4d., and included four oxen, five cows, five steers, two heifers, three calves, one mare, one ewe, eight swine, “Corne in the Barne,” household goods, “two muskets and other arms,” “instruments of husbandry,” etc. In addition, his

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

real estate, valued at £80, consisted of "one Dwelling House, Barn, and one hundred acres of Land, situate in the Town of Woburn, of which 25 acres are plowed land, and ten of meadow." Following the inventory is this statement: "He hath left a wife, three sons, and four daughters. The eldest son is 8 years old; the second, 6 years; and the third, three quarters. The eldest daughter is 13 years old; the second, 11 years; the third, 4 years; the fourth, 2 years."

Thomas Richardson married, probably in England, Mary, who died May 19, 1670, having married (second), as his second wife, October 26, 1655, Michael Bacon, Sr. Children (first two born in Charlestown, remaining in Woburn, Massachusetts): 1. Mary, baptized November 17, 1638; married, May 15, 1655, John Baldwin. 2. Sarah, baptized November 22, 1640; married, March 22, 1660, Michael Bacon, Jr. 3. Isaac, born May 14, 1643, died April 2, 1689; married, June 19, 1667, Deborah Fuller. 4. Thomas, born October 4, 1645, died February 25, 1720-21; married (first), January 5 or 25, 1669-70, Mary Stimpson (or Stephenson); (second), December 29, 1690, Mrs. Sarah (Ditson) Patten, widow of Thomas Patten. 5. Ruth, born April 14, 1647. 6. Phebe, born January 24, 1648-49. 7. Nathaniel, of whom further.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LVII, pp. 298-300; Vol. LIX, p. 245. John Adams Vinton: "The Richardson Memorial," pp. 183, 184, 504-10. Woburn, Massachusetts, Vital Records, 1640-1873, p. 226.)

III. Nathaniel Richardson, son of Thomas and Mary Richardson, was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, January 2, 1650-51, and died probably in Woburn, Massachusetts, December 4, 1714, aged sixty-four. He resided in Woburn, and was made a freeman in 1690. He served in King Philip's War as a soldier in Captain Prentiss' troop of horse, and was wounded in the "Great Swamp Fight," December 19, 1675. Seven other Woburn men were wounded in that tremendous encounter; six brave captains fell in the action, and eighty men were killed or mortally wounded. When, in 1728, and 1732, the General Court of Massachusetts granted seven townships in the central and western parts of that Colony to the soldiers or heirs of those who had served in the Narragansett campaign of 1675, one of Nathaniel Richardson's grandsons (Joshua, son of John) drew a lot of forty acres, in Templeton.

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Nathaniel Richardson married, about 1672, Mary, who died December 22, 1719. Children, born in Woburn, Massachusetts: 1. Nathaniel, born August 27, 1673, died in 1728-29; married, September 18, 1694, Abigail Reed. 2. Captain James, born February 26, 1675-76, died March 23, 1721-22; married (first), in 1698, Rebecca Eaton, who died in 1699; (second), December 22, 1699, Elizabeth Arnold. 3. Mary, born March 10, 1679-80; married (first) Thomas Wyman; (second) Joseph Winn. 4. Joshua, of whom further. 5. Martha, born in 1683. 6. John, born January 25, 1684-85, died in January or February, 1752; married Abigail. 7. Thomas, born April 15, 1687, was living in 1729; married (first), in 1712, Elizabeth Green; (second) Jane. 8. Hannah, born May 6, 1689, was living in 1766; married (first), June 10, 1713, Timothy Baldwin; (second), about April, 1752, John Vinton. 9. Samuel, born September 24, 1691, was living in 1740; married, about 1713, Sarah. 10. Lieutenant Phinehas, born in February, 1693-94, died April 11, 1738; married (first), October 30, 1716, Mary Arnold; (second), May 9, 1728, Rebecca Fowle. 11. Phebe, born March 4, 1695-96; married, October 31, 1716, David Wyman. 12. Amos, born August 10, 1698; married Abigail. 13. Benjamin, born August 27, 1700, died September 5, 1700.

(John Adams Vinton: "The Richardson Memorial," pp. 509, 510, 515-24.)

IV. Joshua Richardson, son of Nathaniel and Mary Richardson, was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, June 3, 1681, and died in Woburn, Massachusetts, November 5, 1748, in his sixty-eighth year. He resided in Woburn. His will, dated September 26, 1748, proved November 28, 1748, mentions the four children whose names are given below; and the will of his widow Hannah, dated August 30, 1760, mentions the same children.

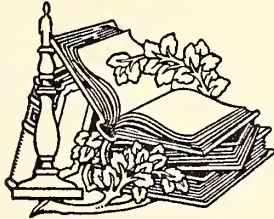
Joshua Richardson married, about 1705, Hannah, who died in Woburn, Massachusetts, December 27, 1768. Children, born in Woburn: 1. Hannah, born January 8, 1706-07, was living in 1760; married a Farmer (or Varnum). 2. Mary, of whom further. 3. Martha, born May 18, 1714, was living in 1760. 4. Joshua, born October 18, 1716, died March 13, 1774; married (first), July 11, 1739, Eunice Jennison; (second), after April, 1748, Abigail Carter.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 510, 518, 540, 541.)

KENDALL AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. Mary Richardson, daughter of Joshua and Hannah Richardson, was born in Woburn, Massachusetts, March 13, 1710. She married Andrew Evans. (Evans IV.)

(*Ibid.*, p. 518.)



Oct. 1932



"THE HERMITAGE," HOME OF PRESIDENT ANDREW JACKSON

VOL. XXVI

OCTOBER, 1932

NUMBER 4

AMERICANA

ILLUSTRATED



THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY, Inc.
SOMERVILLE, NEW JERSEY
AND
NEW YORK CITY

Entered at the Post Office in Somerville, N. J., as Second Class Matter, under the Act of Congress of March 3, 1879.

Copyright, 1932
The American Historical Society, Inc.

Contents

	PAGE
The Mission of Soliman Mellimelni, Tunisian Ambassador to the United States, 1805-07. By Ray Watkins Irwin, Ph. D., Instructor in History, New York University - - - - -	465
Washington. By Charles Howard Bangs, M. D., Swampscott, Massachusetts - - - - -	472
Casimir Pulaski. By Mary-Elizabeth Lynah, Charleston, South Carolina - -	474
Our Ancestral Animals. By Louise Hubert Guyol, Newport, Rhode Island - - -	489
Jackson's Hermitage—An Intimate Record of Its Builder. By Mary F. Anderson, Washington, District of Columbia -	502
Banning and Allied Families. By E. D. Clements, Providence, Rhode Island - - -	516

A M E R I C A N A

October, 1932

The Mission of Soliman Mellimelni, Tunisian Ambassador to the United States, 1805-07

BY RAY WATKINS IRWIN, PH. D., INSTRUCTOR IN HISTORY,
NEW YORK UNIVERSITY



CURIOUS chapter in American diplomacy opened in 1805 when Hamuda Pasha, the Bey of Tunis, expressed a desire to send an Ambassador to the United States. The Bey was at the moment facing a crisis precipitated by his own stubbornness and greed. Again and again throughout the preceding years he had threatened to break the treaty which he had formed, in 1797, with the United States unless the latter power would agree to give him a frigate, expensive consular presents, and other valuable gratuities. In fact, while the United States had been involved in war with Tripoli, Hamuda's attitude had become so menacing that the offer of an annual tribute had failed to mollify him; and in 1804 he would undoubtedly have opened hostilities if the failure of Tunisian crops had not resulted in famine and serious revolts throughout his dominions. During the spring and early summer of 1805 the distress in Tunis had remained unrelieved, and although the Bey had continued his threats against the United States, he had been too deeply enmeshed in domestic difficulties to declare war. In June the conflict between the United States and Tripoli had been brought to an end; and, in consequence of this event, Commodore John Rodgers had sailed to Tunis with a powerful naval squadron. Upon his arrival before the Tunisian capital he had threatened to bombard the city and to blockade the ports of Tunis unless the Bey would promise to abide by the terms of the existing treaty, and to relinquish numerous claims which he had made respecting extraordinary gifts. Hamuda had accepted the terms of this ultimatum, but at the

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

same time had insisted that he receive indemnification for three of his vessels, a small cruiser and her two prizes, which the Americans had captured while the War with Tripoli was in progress. Upon Rodgers' refusal to comply, the Bey proposed that the matter be settled by negotiation at Washington through an envoy whom he would send thither. After some hesitation the commodore consented, whereupon the Bey appointed as his representative a prominent Tunisian named Soliman Mellimelni. The latter, with a number of attendants, soon went aboard the frigate "Congress," and sailed for the United States. Thus was despatched the first, and what later proved to be the last, diplomatic delegation sent to this country by any of the Barbary governments.

On November 4, 1805, the "Congress" arrived at Hampton Roads, where Mellimelni was received with all the honors befitting his official character.¹ He and his suite of secretaries and servants reached Washington November 30, and were escorted to a house prepared for them on Capitol Hill. That they found their new environment on the whole congenial is indicated by the following letter which Mellimelni wrote to the Secretary of State:

We have been here these ten days, and we have been very well treated. . . . In ten days more our fast will be over and my people will want wine, but I don't wish them to have any for fear they should fight amongst one another. For that reason I wish it is agreeable to you to send me the money that you spend every day for us and I will purchase whatever we want. . . . Winter is coming on, and I don't want too much expense for the sake of our country.²

In the ensuing negotiations regarding differences between the United States and Tunis, Mellimelni proved to be a difficult individual with whom to deal. Ignoring the promises which Rodgers had exacted from the Bey respecting presents, he immediately sought to obtain a gift of military and naval stores. "As your Excellency has abundance of these articles," he wrote to President Jefferson, "my master only demands a part of your superfluities as a proof of your Excellency's sincere friendship towards him; promising to reciprocate these acts of friendship as much as circumstances will admit, whenever occasion furnishes him an opportunity."³

1. "American Citizen" (New York), December 6, 1805, quoting "National Intelligencer."

2. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Mellimelni to Secretary of State, December 9, 1805.

3. *Ibid.*, III, Mellimelni to President of United States, December 31, 1805.

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

Mellimelni was equally exasperating in the position which he took respecting the captured vessels. He admitted that their value was not in excess of four thousand dollars, but when informed that the vessels were no longer in the possession of the United States, he refused to accept indemnification in the form of a cash payment. "If the vessels in question," he wrote to the Secretary of State, "are sold or otherwise disposed of . . . the United States will substitute another cruiser in lieu thereof . . . as a substitute in cash cannot be admitted in a case that involves the honor of the Tunisian flag." He demanded, also, that the vessel to be provided be loaded with naval stores for his master, Hamuda Pasha. If these terms were not complied with, he asserted, he would return to Tunis, and within one year after his arrival there, war would be declared against the United States.⁴

Finding Mellimelni's determination fixed with respect to the issues in dispute, the administration decided to give the Bey an armed brig, the "Franklin," together with a considerable quantity of naval supplies and other commodities which might be well received at Tunis. The brig was to be loaded in part with merchandise which Mellimelni proposed to purchase on his own account, and by the ultimate sale of which, an interpreter reported, he hoped to enrich his family "even to the third generation." The administration also arranged for the Ambassador to make a tour northward as far as Boston, where he would find the "Franklin" awaiting him. James L. Cathcart, an American who had resided for many years in Barbary, agreed to serve as guide despite his expressed apprehension that many of his countrymen would view him "in the same light as they would an Indian interpreter."⁵ He completed preparations for the journey with all possible speed, and on May 6 wrote to Madison as follows:

This day the Ambassador intends to take leave of the President, and will be ready to leave Washington on Wednesday the 14th inst. He proposes taking with him three servants, a trunk and some small packages; for his own private present he prefers cash, as he must give part of it to his suite, and he observes that if he should see anything on his travels which he may like, with money he can purchase it.⁶

Soon thereafter Cathcart and the Ambassador proceeded, *via*

4. *Ibid.*, III, Mellimelni to Madison, March 11 and 18, 1806.

5. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to Secretary of State, May 5, 1806; "Despatches to Consuls, Instructions," I, Secretary of State to T. Lear, May 15, 1806.

6. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Cathcart to Madison, May 30, 1806.

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

Annapolis, to Baltimore. They experienced some difficulty en route in obtaining lodgings at inns and private houses, but on May 30, Cathcart wrote that the Ambassador was receiving better treatment; that every precaution was being taken "to efface unfavorable impressions"; and that the tour promised success "equal to the expectations of Government."⁷ The travelers remained in Baltimore until June 7, visiting points of interest, and purchasing commodities to be shipped to Tunis. So enthused did the Ambassador become over his speculation that he neglected no opportunity to urge that a present which he expected from the United States be given him in the form of cash. This money, he informed Cathcart, he wished to invest in coffee and indigo.⁸ The request was transmitted to Madison, who thereupon asked the Secretary of the Treasury to remit to Cathcart two thousand dollars, half of which sum would serve as a present to Mellimelni, and half to his attendants.⁹

Concerning the next major stop, at Philadelphia, Cathcart wrote, on June 15, to Madison:

The Ambassador has seen everything worthy of notice in this city and its environs, and I had proposed to leave town on Monday morning, but am prevented by the eclipse which renders it improper to travel on that day, lest it might alarm the Ambassador, and then there would be no knowing to what extravagance his superstition might lead him.¹⁰

While Cathcart was proceeding northward with his charges, three Tunisians whom Mellimelni had left at Washington were started on their way to rejoin the Ambassador. A certain Charles Governis undertook to serve as their guide, agreeing to receive one hundred and seventy dollars if he succeeded in conveying them all to Boston, and twenty dollars less if he failed.¹¹ The journey appears to have been uneventful until the company reached New York. At this point the Tunisians balked, and all efforts made by their guide failed to induce them to proceed.¹² Meanwhile, Mellimelni and Cathcart had arrived as Boston. When informed that the three members of his suite had refused to join him, the Ambassador declared that he would leave

7. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to Secretary of State, May 5, 1806.

8. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to Secretary of State, June 6, 1806.

9. "Domestic Letters," XV, Madison to Cathcart, June 21, 1806.

10. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Cathcart to Madison, June 15, 1806.

11. "Domestic Letters," XV, Madison to Cathcart, June 30, 1806.

12. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Cathcart to Jacob Wagner, July 20, 1806.

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

them in America, and that he would have nothing further to do with them. Cathcart, on the other hand, wished to see the unruly members leave the country, "knowing that if they remained in the United States, . . . they would be continually tormenting the heads of departments for money."¹³ He, therefore, wrote to the mayor of New York, DeWitt Clinton, and requested him to compel the three Tunisians to embark for Boston.¹⁴ Madison, curiously enough, also wrote to Clinton, urging him to use whatever power he might be able to command in forwarding them. "It is understood by the general law of nations," he wrote, "that any of the suite of a foreign legation, may on proper grounds be expelled and returned to their Sovereign, and if it is conceived that the laws of New York can be made instrumental for this purpose, you may consider the President's order as hereby given."¹⁵ But Clinton was unable to persuade the Tunisians to leave the city voluntarily, and he considered himself unauthorized by State law to employ coercion. President Jefferson, in anticipation of the Bey's displeasure if three of the latter's subjects were permitted to remain in this country, suggested that they be sent to England. "If they would stipulate to deliver themselves to any Tunisian or other Barbary agent there . . . , " he wrote to Madison, "it would excuse us to the Bey of Tunis."¹⁷

In the meantime Cathcart was confronted with new difficulties. When the brig "Franklin" reached Boston, Mellimelni refused to accept it as a substitute for the vessels captured off Tripoli. The reason which he gave was that the brig had previously belonged to the Bey, who sold it. "I request," wrote Mellimelni to President Jefferson, "that you will either order Mr. Cathcart to charter a small vessel to convey me to Tunis or permit me to charter one myself as it is more than my life is worth to return in a vessel that has already belonged to my master and was sold to Christians by his particular order."¹⁸ Complying with this request, the Secretary of State instructed Cathcart to charter another vessel, without delay.¹⁹ Cathcart then chartered the "Two Brothers," a vessel of about one hundred and fifty tons.²⁰ But

13. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to Madison, July 1, 1806; "Boston Repertory," July 2, 1806.

14. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Cathcart to Madison, July 22, 1806.

15. "Domestic Letters," XV, Madison to DeWitt Clinton, July 24, 25, 1806.

17. "Madison Papers," XXIX, Jefferson to Madison, September 16, 1806.

18. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Mellimelni to President of United States, July 26, 1806.

19. "Domestic Letters," XV, Madison to Cathcart, August 4, 1806.

20. "Despatches, Tunis," III, Cathcart to Madison, August 9, 1806.

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

new difficulties arose when steps were taken to transship the cargo of the "Franklin" to the "Two Brothers." Someone discovered that according to law a debenture of almost four thousand dollars must be paid before transshipment could be effected.²¹ When Mellimelni was informed that he was expected to pay the amount, he asserted that he was not subject to the revenue laws of this country, and that upon his return to Tunis, he would have the citizens of the United States subjected to the same duties that might be exacted from him here. This assertion caused Cathcart to recommend to Madison that the government make Mellimelni a present of the amount in question and thereby "deliver the United States of this political pest of society."²² The recommendation appears to have been acted upon favorably, for after some further delay caused by futile attempts to round up the strays at New York, the Ambassador and the greater portion of his suite embarked and sailed for Tunis.²³ In a letter, dated September 23, Mellimelni wrote to Madison as follows:

On the 17th Sept. I sailed from the port of Boston and on the 21st returned to Marblehead in consequence of adverse winds. . . . It is my intention to proceed again on my voyage the first favorable wind. You are already informed that three of my suite have persevered in a determination not to accompany me home. . . . In this resolution I presume they are encouraged in consequence of your Govt. having already furnished them with \$327. Should such gifts be continued, there is little hopes of their ever returning to Tunis. What shall I reply when the Bey demands of me my reasons for leaving these men, when the American government might compel them to accompany me? Had they no relations in Tunis, it would be unimportant, but on my return, my doors will be beset from morning till night with their importunate and disappointed relatives.

I must therefore respectfully solicit you Sir, to adopt such measures as you may deem expedient to confine these men, and have them sent home, at the same time I will be thankful if you will write the Bey requesting that his pardon may be granted them. They are the subjects of Tunis—one a slave to my brother, what they say to the contrary is not to be credited. On my arrival, I shall inform the Bey that they have preferred to return in a frigate.²⁴

Although the administration was finally rid of Mellimelni, it had failed to reach an agreement with him regarding the captured Tunisian

21. *Ibid.*, III, J. Stricker to R. Smith, August 13, 1806.

22. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to Madison, August 20, 21, 1806.

23. *Ibid.*, III, Cathcart to J. Wagner, September 3, 1806; Mellimelni to Madison, September 23, 1806.

24. *Ibid.*, III, Mellimelni to Madison, September 23, 1806.

THE MISSION OF SOLIMAN MELLIMELNI

vessels. The Secretary of State, accordingly, instructed Tobias Lear, United States Consul-General at Algiers, to proceed to Tunis for the purpose of negotiating a final settlement with the Bey. Lear reached his destination January 12, 1807, about three weeks after the arrival of the "Two Brothers," and during the remainder of the month had a number of interviews with the Bey. Hamuda spoke very disparagingly of the presents which Mellimelni had brought from America. These, he assured the Consul-General, were of no consequence by comparison with those which the United States had given to the other Barbary regencies. The Bey of Algiers and the Pasha of Tripoli had been given cruisers, while he, the Bey of Tunis, had not even received indemnification for three of his vessels which the United States had seized. Lear replied that he had seen the last-named vessels, and had estimated their value as not more than one thousand dollars; but that, in order to dispose of the Bey's claims, the United States would pay an indemnity of eight thousand dollars. After a considerable amount of bargaining, the Bey agreed to accept ten thousand; to relinquish all claims against the United States; and in the future to respect his treaty obligations in every particular.²⁵ He would probably have attempted to drive a much harder bargain but for the fact that Tunis was at the moment engaged in a war with Algiers; also, that Mellimelni had observed the resources of the United States; and, finally, that a strong American naval squadron had but recently visited Tunis.²⁶ Thus circumstanced at the time he concluded negotiations with Lear, Hamuda must inwardly have rejoiced over the favorable terms which he had obtained from the United States. He had, to be sure, received no promise of a frigate or of any future tribute; and he had given his word to abide by the treaty of 1797. On the other hand, by skillful diplomatic maneuvering he had extricated himself from the desperate position in which he had found himself during the summer of 1805. He had obtained delay and a change of location in the carrying on of negotiations which ultimately had brought him valuable presents and handsome indemnification for his captured vessels. In achieving these results he had been ably assisted by the tricky Mellimelni, who, incidentally, after his return to Tunis, was rewarded with an Ambassadorship to Spain.²⁷


25. "Despatches, Algiers," VII, Lear to Secretary of State, January 25, 1807.

26. Allen, "Our Navy and the Barbary Corsairs," p. 272.

27. "Despatches, Tunis," IV, Charles D. Coxe to Madison, March 8, 1807.

WASHINGTON

*From an Address Delivered Before the New York City Chapter, S. A. R.,
Feb. 21, 1929, by Charles Howard Bangs, M. D., Swampscott, Mass.*

“O add brightness to the sun or glory to the name of Washington is alike impossible,” was the tribute that Abraham Lincoln paid to him who was “first in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen.” In attempting to speak of Washington I shall not undertake to gild the lily; I shall speak of him simply as a symbol of Americanism.

I am encouraged in this by the fact that I find after studying the greater number of the portraits of Washington that no two are alike in detail. While the pictures have been produced by the greatest masters of brush and pencil—those qualified to produce not only lines of likeness but to portray character, to reveal soul and depict inspiration—no two pictures agree in the details of portraiture. Each is a Washington, true to the conception of one particular artist. To behold the true Washington it is necessary to produce a composite of all individual conceptions. So it is only to assist in making this composite that I feel justified in attempting to contribute to the verbal portrayals that have been placed on record regarding this great American.

Would that I possessed the artistry to present his picture as he stands revealed to me.

In the picture that I behold he appears to me:—not as the son of Augustine and Mary Ball Washington, born through the incident of migration to the life of a colonial gentleman; not as the descendant of Augustine Washington through whom he would have been entitled to an English birthright; not as the Virginia planter or the capable Continental soldier, who was the outstanding and redeeming figure of Braddock's defeat; not as the devout young officer leading his troops daily in prayer at Fort Mifflin, nor the head of an army supplicating Almighty God for aid and guidance at Valley Forge; not even as the commanding general of an eventually victorious army, the head of a just cause, or the President of a struggling Republic—not in any one of these pictures do I find my conception of Washington. Rather in each do I see a glimpse of the circumstance and influence that nurtured and developed that great individuality which stands out as the enduring Washington, now that the lapse of a century and a third gives perspective to our study of his life.

I see in him the outcropping of heredity, the culmination of circumstance, the crystallization of events, the manifestation of influence reaching far back in the centuries and destined to be the leaven of future ages.

I picture him as a monarch of the woods, from the implantation of foreign seed springing up in American soil; nurtured by the sacrifices of the pioneers, strengthened by the struggles of the colonists, budding with the American Revolution, towering to great height in the young American republic, and bearing fruit to be gathered by the immortal Lincoln for the rehabilitation of the whole world.

I behold in him a great force for righteousness in human government, a being of destiny whose mission was to establish the supremacy of Right over Might; an embodiment of the ideals of freedom, independence and self-government, justice and equality, obedience to the law and protection of individual rights—those principles that constitute the ideals of Americanism.

Far be it from me to deify Washington; rather would I treasure those human attributes that have been preserved for us in history.

I would regard him as a personage to be venerated rather than a being to be worshipped.

I would strip from him the mantle of miraculous fortuitousness and clothe him in the habiliments of human accomplishment.

In the poise and punctiliousness of all his attitudes I would point out his inheritance from generations of ancestry of good breeding.

In his daring and courage to lead and to rule I see the manifestations of that germplasm transmitted from a far-off strain of royalty of the time when a King was a King because he had the mental and the physical attributes to lead and to rule.

I see in him a mind reflecting the revolt of Luther against centuries of subservience—a mind directed by the trend of thought of his environment toward freedom and independence, and concentrated on accomplishment.

I see in him a man vitalized by out-of-door life, thoughtful as are those who commune with Nature, trained to resourcefulness, schooled to discipline, and believing in destiny.

In him I perceive indomitable courage and persistency combined with strong conviction, marvelous tact and diplomacy and an unshaken faith in the God of the Fathers.

Let us then in reverence echo that great tribute of Abraham Lincoln to the Father of his Country: "In solemn awe pronounce the name and in its naked deathless splendor leave it shining on."

Casimir Pulaski

BY MARY-ELIZABETH LYNNAH, CHARLESTON, SOUTH CAROLINA



ASIMIR, Count Pulaski, was born on March 4, 1747. Kostry-Pulazi, Podolia, and Lithuania in Poland have all been named as his birthplace, but to which of the numerous claimants this honor belongs must remain shrouded in an historical mist until, perhaps, some day some diligent searcher of records shall discover the truth.

Casimir Pulaski is a name to conjure with. It symbolizes romance, daring and martyrdom to an ideal, and the fact that, even today, so little is actually known of his early life, and that so much must be deduced from the few existing facts, adds tremendously to the brilliancy of the glowing aura of romanticism which already surrounds his heroic figure.

Heroism, moreover, was Casimir's heritage. His father, Count Joseph Pulaski, was destined to sacrifice his life in a noble effort to rid his well-beloved Poland of the Russian menace. By nature a quiet, scholarly jurist, and by birth a member of the Polish nobility, Count Joseph had busied himself with the official duties of the office of chief magistrate of Warech during the reign of the worthless king, Frederick Augustus (1734-63). Had Frederick Augustus lived longer, Poland's history would have been quite different, whereas, Count Joseph's life and that of his son, Casimir, would have been much the same as during the corrupt monarch's rule. However, as things turned out, Frederick Augustus, whose favorite amusement had been taking pot shots at the dogs of Warsaw from his palace windows, suffered a fate similar to that of the unfortunate canines, and was buried with somewhat more elaborate ceremony at Dresden.

Poland, weakened internally by constant friction between her powerful and unscrupulous nobles and her equally unscrupulous and correspondingly impotent kings, was shapeless clay awaiting the potter's wheel. Russia saw her opportunity, and assumed the rôle of potter.

"The king is dead! Long live the king!" shouted the populace. "The king is dead! Long live the king!" was the cry of certain gen-

CASIMIR PULASKI

tllemen whose lifelong hope had been that some day they would wear the crown themselves. And so, as is usually the case in the event of a monarch's dying without an heir, candidates for the throne of Poland were loudly demanding their "rights."

Prominent among these claimants were Prince Adam Czartoryski, a cousin of Count Joseph Pulaski, and Count Stanislas Poniatowski, a cousin of Prince Adam himself. The Prince Chancellor, however, although the uncle of the two candidates, favored Prince Adam, together with whom he was striving to effect a number of needed constitutional reforms. For, under the fatal constitution of Poland all legislation had to be unanimous, with the result that the presence of a single dissenting voice, or "Liberum Veto," was sufficient to quash any measure before the assembly, and even to dissolve the body itself. So, it may easily be seen that before the Prince Chancellor and his favorite candidate might even dream of success, it would be necessary for them to eliminate this deadly "Liberum Veto."

Finding it, therefore, impossible to effect the desired changes without outside aid, the Prince Chancellor called on Catherine of Russia for military assistance, thereby furnishing Russia with a much desired key to the Polish situation and his cause with a *coup de grace*.

This request was made on February 7, 1764, and when the Convocation Diet met in May, 1764, in order to make arrangements for summoning the Election Diet, the smug Prince Chancellor was astounded when the Russian army, assembled in Poland at his invitation, was insolent enough to rout his political supporters, apparently sweeping the country clean of opposition to Stanislas' election.

The wily Catherine was overjoyed with the success of her plan, and in June a Confederation was formed which cleared the way for the election of Stanislas Poniatowski as King of Poland on August 26, 1764, ten days after the session of the Election Diet. Eight thousand Russian troops stationed within a radius of three miles from the place of election no doubt exerted a material influence on the Polish voters' selection of a ruler.

When we remarked above that Catherine's army had "apparently" swept the country clear of opposition, we meant just that. For about a year after Frederick Augustus' death (1763) the struggle between the two political rivals, Prince Adam and Count Stanislas, had been carried on pretty much in the open. However, after the success of

CASIMIR PULASKI

Stanislas' party it became necessary that any existant opposition party should carry on its operations in utmost secrecy. So it was that Confederation after Confederation had been formed throughout Poland in an effort to crush Russia's power and effect Polish unity, but Russian troops and Russian secret agents had always effectively squelched any efforts on the part of Polish patriots.

Such was the state of affairs when Count Joseph Pulaski, seeing in the election of Poniatowski a *casus belli civilis*, set out to Warsaw with the intention of instituting a new opposition. The visit to the capital was well timed, coinciding with the time for the formation of a new diet. All circumstances appeared to favor the project when Count Joseph, conferring with some trusted friends, worked out a plan for a meeting to take place just outside of the capital. After having made such arrangements as were necessary, the Count then hastened to a family estate near Warsaw to discuss the matter with his sons and a nephew, Krazinski, all of whom, upon learning of the plan, proudly offered their services.

So to each of his two oldest sons Joseph Pulaski delegated a task. Francis, the elder of the two, was to incite the nobles and secure their aid, whereas Casimir was to round up at least one hundred and fifty Cossacks from the family's scattered estates, and bring them to the southern city of Leopol. As was usually the case, Russian secret agents learned in a short time of the proposed meeting at Leopol, and the conspirators decided to meet instead at Bar, not far from the Turkish border.

On February 29, 1768, therefore, the Count Joseph, Casimir, his two brothers and his cousin, together with two confederates, assembled at Bar and secretly signed the celebrated compact known as the Confederation of Bar, whereby they pledged themselves to free the country from Russian intervention, and so preserve her integrity as a nation.

The cousin, Krazinski, noted for his ability as a military leader, was immediately made marshal of the Confederation, and Count Joseph marshal of the troops. To Count Joseph's one hundred and fifty Cossacks had been added as many more sympathizers, and in a short time the little army, swelled by outlaw recruits from the Polish borderland, numbered eight thousand men. The Russians, as always, were on the alert, and almost immediately engaged the rebel troops.

CASIMIR PULASKI

Count Joseph Pulaski, through the medium of a manifesto, called fervently upon all loyal Poles to withstand the invading forces, while his young son, Casimir, then only twenty-one, won youthful laurels by repulsing the Russians three different times at the head of his detachment.

Casimir, though young in years was old in the wisdom of war. He had literally been reared in a hotbed of warfare of one kind and another. His birthplace, somewhere in the Province of Podolia, was so situated as to have been constantly open to borderland invasions. Then, too, he had been accustomed to the warlike presence of grim Cossacks, the armed followers of the old Count, whose duty it was to protect the Pulaski estates from chance bands of robber nomads. Thus had Casimir Pulaski had ample opportunity to observe the workings of warfare of an informal nature, as well as on a rather small scale. However, when twenty years of age, he saw six months' active service under Charles, Prince of Courland, during a successful defense of Mitau from Russian besiegers. At Mitau, therefore, the future General Pulaski received a formal introduction to war on the *grande scale* and acquired a knowledge of military tactics and a skill in horsemanship, all of which was to serve him well in later life.

For, in 1768, soon after the Confederation of Bar had been effected, the government brought formal charges of rebellion against the Confederates and seven regular regiments, together with five thousand Cossacks, laid siege to the little town of Bar. Temporarily deprived of the defense of the elder Pulaski, who had gone to the assistance of the defeated rebel leader Count Polocki, Bar, after a gallant defense under the direction of the Monk Mark, was forced to surrender, and twelve hundred of her citizenry were led prisoners to Russia.

Disaster followed upon disaster for the Confederate cause, and, in spite of his indomitable spirit and courage, Casimir Pulaski saw one fortress after another fall into the hands of the brutal and seemingly innumerable Russian troops. For three weeks, with a mere three hundred men, he succeeded in holding the tiny monastery of Berdichef, only to be forced to quit the stronghold, a prisoner of war. After his release, however, he made several forays upon the scattered Russian troops, and finally hurried into Moldavia, whither his father had fled for safety. There for a while the Pulaskis succeeded in getting a

CASIMIR PULASKI

foothold as well as in establishing a nucleus from which to direct operations. And there, too, Count Joseph, treacherously taken captive, was led off to end his life in prison, leaving the supreme command of the Confederate forces to his able son, Casimir.

Zwaniek and the Fortress of Okope were next occupied by the Confederates. Francis Pulaski assumed command of Zwaniek, and Casimir occupied Okope. This was done in order to insure the sympathetic Turks a means of entry into Poland. Russia, however, dispatched a large army against the two strongholds, and Count Casimir Pulaski saw his youngest brother led away in chains to Russia. Soon after Zwaniek and the fortress of Okope capitulated, Casimir led his two hundred troops in a spectacular night escape down the precipices to safety.

By this time the greater part of the Confederates, intimidated by the terrific cruelty of their Russian oppressors, had fled the country. Casimir Pulaski, however, remained undaunted in spirit, and it was at this very time that he performed one of the most daring feats of his brilliant military career when, together with his brother, Francis, he led a small army of Confederates through territory dotted with Russian troops and spies into Lithuania. Meeting with repeated success in a number of engagements while there, Casimir made a terrific blunder when he attempted to enter Hungary with only six hundred men. This unsuccessful essay cost him his brothers' life and left his forces stripped to ten men.

Again, in August of the year 1770, Pulaski was in Poland, directing Confederate maneuvers. And it was at this time that some of the more radical Confederates hit upon the plan of abducting the King. Pulaski agreed to the proposal, and dispatched twelve of his officers in peasant guise to the capital. These "peasants" actually succeeded in capturing King Poniatowski, and the throne of Poland was accordingly declared unoccupied. The officers, however, soon lost their spirit of bravado, and, terrified at their own temerity, set the royal prisoner free, seeking safety in flight.

Their leader, Count Casimir Pulaski, did not fare so well. Declared to be the instigator of a plotted regicide by the Empress of Austria and Frederick the Great, Pulaski, in spite of his ardent denials, and his friends' attempted defense, was declared an outlaw and his lands were

CASIMIR PULASKI

confiscated as belonging to a man about to be executed. Nothing remained to him but a slight hope of escape.

And so it was that Count Casimir Pulaski fled into Turkey. In 1772, part of his beloved Poland was lost in the First Partition, the treaty having been signed on August 5. The noble patriot, however, did not yet give up hope, but actually remained in Turkey several years in an attempt to incite that country against Russia. Turkey, nevertheless, had no intention of continuing hostilities with Russia, and in the year 1774 signed a pact to that effect. Casimir Pulaski at last realized the utter futility of his cherished dreams for Polish liberty, and, stricken with disappointment, he journeyed to Paris to seek the assistance of a friend, arriving there in 1775.

His arrival in the French capital was unheralded. In fact, the young Count desired his whereabouts to remain unknown until he could sound the feelings of the French government officials and learn whether they were for him or against him. So, on a gloomy, rain-drenched night, Casimir Pulaski, sick with fatigue, and without funds, made his way up an ill-lighted Paris street to beg lodgings at the home of his schoolmate, Dr. N. Belleville. Dr. Belleville, preparing to retire for the night, heard a noise as of gravel thrown against his window panes, and looking down into the dark street, he inquired what was desired of him at that time of night. There was no direct reply, but he thought he heard the nocturnal visitor call his name in most familiar tones. Curiosity and a kind heart caused the doctor to go downstairs and there at the door he found his stricken friend Pulaski.

Needless to say, Casimir Pulaski received every attention while at his friend's house. Dr. Belleville, moreover, saw to it that Pulaski's friends were informed of his whereabouts, and when the convalescent expressed a desire to champion the cause of the American Colonies, Dr. Belleville encouraged him to appeal to Dr. Benjamin Franklin. This Pulaski did, in the hope of securing a commission in the American Army, and Dr. Franklin, taking into consideration the brilliant continental record of the youthful general, furnished him with valuable letters of recommendation which were addressed to General George Washington. And so it was that Dr. N. Belleville and his young and illustrious friend travelled on to Liverpool, where they took a ship bound for the United States, with the sole purpose of casting their lot with the American champions of liberty.

CASIMIR PULASKI

Count Pulaski of Poland, an officer famous throughout Europe for his bravery and conduct in defense of the liberties of his country against the three great invading powers of Russia, Austria and Prussia, will have the honor of delivering this into your Excellency's hands. The Court here have encouraged and promoted his voyage, from an opinion that he may be highly useful to our service. Mr. Deane has written so fully concerning him, that I need not enlarge; and I only add my wishes that he may find in our armies under your Excellency occasions of distinguishing himself.

Such were the excellent credentials which the young Polish officer presented to the greatest of American generals upon his arrival in Philadelphia in August, 1777.

General Washington, though deeply impressed by the confidence which Dr. Franklin had thus genially expressed in the Count's ability, was especially attracted by the personality of the young Pulaski himself. He, therefore, suggested to Count Casimir that he serve in the capacity of volunteer officer on his staff until he should get a reply from the President of Congress, to whom he had written as follows on August 28, 1777:

Having endeavored, at the solicitation of the Count de Pulaski, to think of some mode for employing him in our service, there is none occurs to me liable to so few inconveniences and exceptions, as the giving him the command of the horse . . . a man of real capacity, experience and knowledge in that service, might be extremely useful. The Count appears by his recommendations, to have sustained no inconsiderable military character in his own country; and as the principal attention in Poland has been for some time past paid to the Cavalry, it is to be presumed this gentleman is not unacquainted with it. I submit it to Congress how far it may be eligible to confer the appointment I have mentioned on him.

On September 11, 1777, at the battle of Brandywine, Count Casimir Pulaski proved to the world that the faith Franklin and Washington had placed in his ability was quite justifiable. For, on that day, at the risk of his life, he distinguished himself by riding as close as was possible to the British lines, taking note of their position, and, finally, by hurling Washington's bodyguard in an unexpected attack at a vulnerable point in the enemy lines, thereby delaying their deadly advance. All this took place near Chadd's Ford. Later on, moreover, at Warren's Tavern, the young officer's ingenuity and daring saved further losses at the Americans' expense. Having learned of

CASIMIR PULASKI

the threatening approach of the British, of which the Americans were as yet unaware, Count Pulaski, drawing up his foaming mount before Washington's headquarters, breathlessly demanded audience. Being refused, at first, he insisted on the major importance of the news he bore, and so finally succeeded in giving his report to the general. Alexander Hamilton, then a colonel in the army, acting in the capacity of an interpreter for General Washington, asked Pulaski if he might not have mistaken approaching American troops for British. The young Count, however, ardently insisted on the correctness of his observation, and as it happened, his alertness and timely warning forestalled any further losses, and won for him the award by Congress of a commission as brigadier-general in command of the entire cavalry of the American forces.

The commission of brigadier-general was conferred on Pulaski on September 15, 1777. A little less than a month later, on October 3, there occurred the battle of Germantown. It is a pity that there are no actual or detailed accounts of General Pulaski's conduct at this engagement. Such records would undoubtedly silence forever the only unfavorable charge that has ever been launched against Pulaski's reputation as a soldier. The imputation is that Count Casimir Pulaski, lately elevated to the rank of brigadier-general, proved himself less alert at Germantown than he had at Brandywine, when merely a volunteer officer on General Washington's staff. It is charged that Pulaski, supposedly on duty, was discovered fast asleep in a comfortable Pennsylvania barn. Supporters of this infamous charge argue, furthermore, that it was Pulaski's unsoldierly conduct at this critical period of the war which turned what would have been an American victory at Germantown into chaotic defeat. It is true that the Germantown defeat was the direct result of a sudden panic among the American troops, but it is incredible that the cause of the disorderly retreat could have been any such fault on the part of the noble Pulaski.

Although there were worthy persons of his time who were inclined to credit this impious suggestion, there were as many contemporaries in even closer personal contact with the Count whose words or lack of words on the subject deny the possibility of such an act. It is interesting to note, however, that a distinguished Charlestonian, Judge William Johnson, sided with Pulaski's accusers in his mention of the Count in "The Sketches of the Life and Correspondence of Major-

CASIMIR PULASKI

General Nathanael Greene" (1822). There exists, moreover, in the handwriting of Charles Cotesworth Pinckney an original note on this subject to a librarian by the name of Logan. This note, in the possession of the Charleston Library Society, is to be found pasted to a front page in the first volume of Johnson's "Sketches" and reads as follows:

Sr

CHARLESTON, Jan. 7, 1825

I return by the desire of Mr Bee "Pulaski Vindicated;" the author of which has improperly attacked Judge Johnson for mentioning the truth of Pulaski—I remain

your hble Sevt—

CHARLES COTESWORTH PINCKNEY.

MR. LOGAN
Librarian

To some people, this mere note would serve as conclusive evidence, for Charles Cotesworth Pinckney was aide to General Washington at Germantown, and should have known the truth. Then, too, there is a postscript attached to a pamphlet written by Judge Johnson in self-defence, which reads:

This pamphlet was put to press early in the summer. Its distribution was prevented by the Author's being suddenly called from home.

If Gen. Pinckney's testimony to support the fact related of Count Pulaski could need corroboration, it can be further proved that General LaFayette, when lately in Columbia, declared it to be true of his own knowledge.

Charles Cotesworth Pinckney, William Johnson, and LaFayette undoubtedly were convinced of the truth of the accusation. Captain Paul Bentalou, Pulaski's comrade, and General George Washington, his military superior and ardent admirer, obviously were not. In 1824, Captain Bentalou's indignation flared forth in his fiery pamphlet, "Pulaski Vindicated from an unsupported charge, inconsiderately or malignantly introduced in Judge Johnson's Sketches of the Life and Correspondence of Major-General Nathanael Greene." Washington's icy silence on the subject and his continued praise of Pulaski are the most dignified and convincing of refutations.

The battle of Germantown was followed by Valley Forge and winter quarters, Washington showing constantly by word and letter his absolute faith in Count Pulaski. In February, 1778, General Wayne

CASIMIR PULASKI

was ordered into New Jersey. Pulaski, occupying Trenton, received orders to coöperate with Wayne, and so, in March, the two joined forces at the crossing of the Delaware River. At Haddonfield, New Jersey, the British, having received intelligence of the American Army's maneuvers, attacked Wayne's forces. Pulaski's presence at the head of his forces saved the situation, not only making it possible for Wayne to escape, but even to turn and attack the British as they attempted to debark at the ferry.

Shortly after this engagement, Count Pulaski applied to General Washington for permission to resign his command. The reason for this apparently unwarranted move on Pulaski's part was not far to seek. Discord, the result of a growing jealousy among the American officers serving under him, had placed the foreign-born general in an awkward position. And, Pulaski, being a thoroughly sensible and wholly generous individual, argued that it would be his duty to resign in order to relieve the distressing situation. Years before, he had seen the same thing happen in his adored Poland, when native officers had chafed under the leadership of the French Dumouriez.

Washington, however, was not willing to part so easily with as valuable and capable a leader as he knew Pulaski to be. His reply to the Count's request was made with such tact that Pulaski was persuaded to retain his rank of brigadier-general at the head of a proposed separate command. Washington's next move was to write Congress, suggesting that it allow Count Casimir Pulaski the privilege of organizing an independent corps of sixty-eight horse and two hundred foot soldiers equipped as light infantry. "The Count's valor and active zeal on all occasions have done him great honor," he wrote to Congress on March 14, 1778, and on the same date in a letter addressed to Governor Livingston, of New Jersey, he says of Casimir Pulaski:

I am pleased with the favorable account which you give to Count Pulaski's conduct while at Trenton. He is a gentleman of great activity and unquestionable bravery and only wants a fuller knowledge of our language and customs to make him a valuable officer.

Two weeks later Congress resolved that Pulaski be allowed to retain the rank of brigadier-general, and, at the same time, be given command of an independent body of horse and foot to be recruited as General Washington saw fit. And so for four months a recruiting sta-

CASIMIR PULASKI

tion was kept open at the home of Mrs. Ross in Baltimore (April 13-July). The three companies of horse and three of infantry thus assembled totaled three hundred and thirty men. The character of the legion was subsequently approved by General Washington, being known from that time on as Pulaski's Legion.

It was about this time that the "Pulaski banner" came into existence. As described by the "North American Review" for 1825:

The standard of his legion was formed of a piece of crimson silk embroidered by the Moravian Nuns of Bethlehem in Pennsylvania.

There have been numerous theories as to the identity of the donors of the banner. Some people believe that the Moravian Sisters themselves presented it to the Count, who is known to have visited the settlement at Bethlehem in April of the year 1778. There exists no record of such a presentation having been made, however.

Another suggestion is that Pulaski, admiring the skilled handiwork of these Singing Sisters, had the banner made at his own expense. But this theory is hardly to be credited, since Pulaski's legion certainly must have been officially supplied with all necessary flags, and it is hardly probable that the Count himself had the surplus money wherewith to buy another standard.

The only remaining theory, therefore, is one which has been well substantiated by the actual testimony of Pulaski's friend, Captain Paul Bentalou, a short time before his death. Pulaski's Legion having been largely recruited from the male population of the city of Baltimore, it is quite natural that the women of Baltimore, perhaps patterning their actions after those of Mrs. Susanna Elliott, a Charlestonian, should desire to present their favorite general with a beautiful banner in token of their patriotic interest. Captain Bentalou, whose sacred mission it was to take the famous banner back to Baltimore at the close of the war, remarked that:

It was deposited in the Baltimore Museum as a relick of the early days, interesting to Baltimore at least, which, when a village, had been the cradle of the legion, and whose women, with a touch of patriotism, had caused this standard to be made and presented to the young corps.

Whatever may have been the origin of the banner, this much is known of its after-life; Pulaski loved it and kept it at his side until his tragic end in the siege of Savannah, in 1779. The story of the banner is beautifully told in Longfellow's poem:

CASIMIR PULASKI

HYMN OF THE MORAVIAN NUNS OF BETHLEHEM

AT THE CONSECRATION OF PULASKI'S BANNER

When the dying flame of day
Through the chancel shot its ray,
Far the glimmering tapers shed
Faint light on the cowled head;
And the censer burning swung,
Where, before the altar, hung
The crimson banner, that with prayer
Had been consecrated there.
And the nuns' sweet hymn was heard the while,
Sung low, in the dim, mysterious aisle.

"Take thy banner! May it wave
Proudly o'er the good and brave;
When the battle's distant wail
Breaks the Sabbath of our vale,
When the clarion's music thrills
To the hearts of these lone hills,
When the spear in conflict shakes,
And the strong lance shivering breaks.

"Take thy banner! and, beneath
The Battle-cloud's encircling wreath,
Guard it! God will prosper thee!
In the dark and trying hour,
In the breaking forth of power,
In the rush of steeds and men,
His right hand will shield thee then.

"Take thy banner! But when night
Closes round the ghastly fight,
If the vanquished warrior bow,
Spare him! By our holy vow,
By our prayers and many tears,
By the mercy that endears,
Spare him! he our love hath shared!
Spare him! as thou wouldst be spared!

"Take thy banner! and if e'er
Thou shouldst press the soldier's bier,
And the muffled drum should beat
To the tread of mournful feet,
Then this crimson flag shall be
Martial cloak and shroud for thee."

The warrior took that banner proud,
And it was his martial cloak and shroud!

CASIMIR PULASKI

Pulaski remained in Baltimore until September 30, 1778, when he was ordered to Princeton and thence to Egg Harbor to chase off the British, who were planning an attack on American vessels lying there. His arrival proved too late, however, as the British had returned to their ships and were safely out of reach. There being nothing else to do about it, Count Pulaski pitched camp eight miles in from the ocean, and awaited developments, which were not long delayed.

As it happened, a soldier in the infantry, resenting the ill treatment he had received at the hands of his captain, deserted to the enemy. The British, gaining intelligence of the American troops' exact position through this despicable channel, attacked before daylight on October 15, 1778. And the result was that the wretched deserter had the satisfaction of seeing his ill-mannered captain bayoneted and forty of his former comrades slain.

Pulaski was next ordered to join forces with General Lincoln, who was in command of the Southern forces. This order came on February 2, 1779, the young Count having spent part of the winter in the vicinity of Washington's headquarters. While there at Morristown, Pulaski had busied himself instructing his cavalry in the Cossack manner of riding, performing many breath-taking feats for their amusement and instruction alike. And for these efforts Pulaski was well rewarded, his legion's name becoming synonymous with "efficiency."

We next hear of Pulaski in connection with the siege of Charleston, South Carolina. The English general, Prevost, occupying Savannah, had planned to approach Charleston in the hope of causing General Lincoln to follow him, thus leaving Augusta, and the State Legislature assembled there, exposed to attack. After some deliberation, however, Prevost actually decided to attack the seaport town.

General Lincoln, realizing this change in the British general's plans, immediately forsook Augusta, setting out to defend Charleston. Even by employing such drastic means as forced marches, however, Lincoln failed to reach Charleston in time to oppose Prevost. The alert Pulaski did. In fact, his crossing of the Cooper River was simultaneous with Prevost's crossing of the Ashley River on May 11, 1779.

Charleston, in a state of desperation, was on the point of surrender when Pulaski marched through her streets at the head of his wearied legionaries. Together with Lieutenant-Colonel Laurens and General Moultrie, however, he soon persuaded the citizens to hold out

CASIMIR PULASKI

for a while longer. Then at the head of his faithful legion he hurled himself in a surprise attack on the British forces. General Prevost was thoroughly convinced by that time that Charleston had received reinforcements, and accordingly turned on his heels and fled in the general direction of James Island and the Stono Inlet, his troops following on the double-quick. Much has been said about Pulaski's bravery during his defense of Charleston, and deservedly so, for no less a man than Casimir Pulaski could have inspired such tired troops to a victory against such enormous odds.

Only once again was Pulaski destined to display his unparalleled courage and daring in the face of extreme danger. This was at the siege of the city of Savannah, on October 9. There is a great diversity of accounts with reference to the manner in which Casimir Pulaski met his death, but all accounts concur in one point at least, that is in extolling his utter selflessness and supreme bravery.

Learning that the Count d'Estaing had been severely wounded, and that the Americans and French were retreating in confusion from the Spring Hill redoubt, where they had succeeded in effecting a lodgement, Count Pulaski, giving his own troops into the care of Colonel Horry, spurred his mount to the front of the frightened troops and shouted to them to follow him. Pulaski thereupon dashed into the midst of the fray, and the retreating troops, inspired by his encouraging example, advanced again to the redoubt in great numbers. As Pulaski was in the act of entering the redoubt, he fell from his horse, wounded by a small grapeshot which had pierced his groin. The troops retreated, being discouraged by the loss of their fiery leader, leaving Pulaski lying mortally wounded. Some of his legionaries, however, learning of the terrible fact, rushed through the shower of fire and bore their beloved leader to the rear. Here, Dr. James Lynah, physician-general of all the military hospitals in South Carolina, and a skilled Charleston surgeon of the time, extracted the grapeshot and employed all his skill in an effort to save the Count's life. Pulaski, having then been made as comfortable as possible, was placed on board the vessel "Wasp" to be sent for further treatment to Charleston. Gangrene, however, had set in, and Pulaski died shortly after the "Wasp" had cleared Savannah Harbor.

Captain Paul Bentalou, his faithful comrade, and a valued member of Pulaski's staff, was also wounded and on board the vessel at the time.

CASIMIR PULASKI

In his pamphlet, "Pulaski Vindicated," he writes of the sad event, saying that :

Just as the "Wasp" got out of the river, Pulaski breathed his last and his officer was compelled, though reluctantly, to consign to a watery grave all that was now left on earth of his beloved and honored commander.



Our Ancestral Animals*

BY LOUISE HUBERT GUYOL, NEWPORT, RHODE ISLAND



F cows were like people every pasture in this country, and many in distant lands, would echo with talk about the tercentennial of the State of Massachusetts. Every grandmother among the kine would be dinning into the ears of her grandcalves the fact that their ancestors DID come over on the "Charitie," which is, to the dairy animals of America what the "Mayflower" is to their masters.

Their Coming—Four years after the Pilgrims landed at Plymouth three heifers and a bull followed in their footsteps, from a ship to the Cape Cod Shore.

But, still endowing these Lesser Folk with human frailties, the conversational cows would now be interrupted by goats, wagging gray beards and boasting solemnly not only of an earlier arrival in America but of praise from His Excellency, Governor Bradford himself.

In 1623 William Bradford, Governor of the colony at New Plymouth wrote, on the 8th day of September, to his friends in England thus:

It would be a principall stay and a comfortable help to the Colonie if they had some catle, in many respects, first it would much encourage them, and be in time a gretter ease both for tillage of ground, and cariag of burden; 2ly, it will make victuals both more plentiful, and comfortable; 3ly, it might be a good benefite after some encrease that they might be able to spare some to others that should have thoughts this way; espetially goats are very useful for the first, and very fite for this place, for they will here thrive very well, are a hardly creature, and live at no charge, ether wenter or sommer, their increas is great and milke very good, and need little looking toe; also they are much

*The material herein appeared originally in "Our Dumb Animals," the monthly publication of the Massachusetts Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, and the copyright is held by Miss Guyol. Lecturer and author, her work in New England history is notable not only for its original viewpoint, but from the fact that, a Southern woman of French descent (born in New Orleans of the family of Guyol de Guiron de la Brienne) she has come to love and understand New England and its history. Her work has appeared in "The Atlantic Monthly," "The Boston Transcript," and "The Christian Science Monitor," while Harpers have published her "The Gallant Lallanes."

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

more easily transported and with less difficulty and hassard, then other kattle; yet tow of those which came last dyed by the way, but it was by some neclegence. For kine and any other catle it will be best when any comes that it be in the spring, for if they should come against the winter they would goe near to dye; the Colonie will never be in good estate till they have some.

James Sherley, who was treasurer of the New Plymouth adventurers, and lived either in "Croked Lane in London or at the Golden horsshaw on London bridg," wrote thus on January 25, 1624:

Most worthy and loving friends, Your kind and loving leters I have received and render you many thanks, etc. It hath plased God to stirre up the harts of our adventures to raise a new stock for the seting forth of this shipe, caled the "Charitie," with men and necessaries for the plantation.

Among those things counted necessary for the plantation by Governor Bradford who had asked for them, and Mr. Sherley who saw to the supplying of his needs, were domestic animals.

They were taken aboard the "Charitie" in Old England much as Noah's animals went into his ark—up a gangplank, doubtless with pulling from one end and pushing at the other; sailed the Atlantic for five long weeks and so came, at last, to New England.

Edward Winslow was aboard the "Charitie" on this voyage and "he brought .3. heifers and a bull," writes Governor Bradford, "the first begining of any catle of that kind in the land."

More animals were to come within the next twelve months. On December 22, 1624, Robert Cushman wrote from London:

Sherley who lieth even at the point of death entreateth me ever with tears to write to excuse him and signify how it is with him; he remembers his hearty and as he thinks his last salutation to you and all the rest who love our common cause he hath sent you a cheese, &c. Also he hath sent an heifer to the plantation to begin a stock for the poor. There is also a bull and three or four jades to be sold unto you

A few days earlier on the 18th of December, another letter, signed with the initials of James Sherley, William Collier, Thomas Fletcher and Robert Holland, stated:

. . . . We have sent you hear some catle [aboard the Ann]
. . . . we have committed them to the charge and custody of Mr.

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

Allerton and Mr. Winslow at whose discretion they are to be sould, and commodities to be taken for them, as is fitting and by how much the more they will be chargeable unto you and though we hope you shall not want things necessary, so we think the harder they are got, the more carefully they will be husbanded

That was for the prosperous, but in this same shipment came the heifer, gift of Mr. Sherley "to begin a stock for the poor," as well as the bull and the several horses that those who could might buy.

In 1626 the stock was further augmented by a purchase of goats, from Monhigen, paid for in corn.

The planters finding their corne [wrote Governor Bradford in his "History of Plimmoth Plantation] what they could spare from ther necessities, to be a commoditie, (for they sould it at 6s a bushell,) used great dilligence in planting the same and wanting trading goods, they understoode that a plantation which was at Monhigen, and belonged to some marchants of Plimoth was to breake up, and diverse usefull goods was ther to be sould; the Gover and Mr. Winslow tooke a boat and some hands and went thither. But Mr. David Thompson, who lived at Pascataway, understanding their purpose tooke oppertunitie to goe with them, which was some hindrance to them both; for they, perceiving their joynt desires to buy, held their goods at higher rates; and not only so but would not sell a parcell of their trading goods, excepte they sould all. So lest they should further prejudice one an other, they agreed to buy all, and devid them equally between them. They bought also a parcell of goats, which they distributed at home as they saw neede and occasion and tooke corne for them of the people which gave them good content. Their moyety of the goods came to above 400 li. starling.

"I shall a litle returne backe and begine," not with talking of the foundation of their "govermente," as Bradford does in what he calls The .2. Booke of his history of Plimmoth Plantation, but in describing somewhat the animals who were in America before the Pilgrims came.

Their Kind—When William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins and Edward Tilley followed Captain Standish, from the "Mayflower" to the shore, on the 15th day of November, 1620, they "espied .5. or .6. persons with a dogg coming towards them."

Earlier than this, however, in 1603, Martin Pring, entering "that greate Gulfe which Captain Gosnold ouer-shot the yeere before" found "Stags, fallow Deere in abundance, Beares, Wolues, Foxes,

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

Lusernes, and (some say) Tygres, Porcupines, and Dogges with sharpe and long noses."

Pring was accompanied by his own dogs, "two excellent Mastiues, of whom the Indians were more afraid, then of twentie of our men. One of these Mastiues would carrie a halfe Pike in his mouth. And one Master Thomas Bridges, a Gentleman of our company accompanied only with one of these Dogs, and passed sixe miles alone in the Countrey hauing lost his fellowes, and returned safely. And when we would be rid of the Sauage's company wee would let loose the Mastiues, and suddenly with out-cryes they would flee away."

One of Purchas' Pilgrims reported that, in 1609, at the Island of Cape Cod, on the one and twentieth there was "a sore storme of winde and rayne all night . . . This night our Cat ranne crying from one side of the ship to the other, looking over boord, which made us to wonder but we saw nothing."

Doubtless the cat was excited over the mullets "of a foot and a halfe long a peece," and "the Raye as greate as foure men could hale into the ship," which the voyagers caught next morning.

Be that as it may, the Pilgrims knew the comfort of domestic animals and the value of dairy ones. When the Colonists were assessed, in 1627, each for his share of the debt due the London Company, "first accordingly, the few catle which they had were devided, which arose to this proportion; a cowe to .6. persons or shares, and .2. to goats the same, which were first equalised for age and goodnes, and then lotted for; single persons consorting with others, as they thought good, and smaler famlys likewise; and swine though more in number, yet by the same rule."

By the next year these animals were playing an important part in the economic life of the plantation. And, if one wanted to own a cow, in toto, he had to pay its assessed value in other animals of lesser value, in corn, or in chosen commodity.

Myles Standish wanted a whole red cow, descendant of that heifer sent by Sherley and still the property of the poor of the company, or rather the principal from which the poor drew interest. Whereupon he bought from Edward Winslow six shares, valued at £5 and 10s., to be paid for "in Corne at the rate of six shillings per bushell, freeing the said Edward from all manner of charg belonging to the said shares

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

during the terme of the nine yeares they are let out to halues and taking the benefit thereof."

For the same guarantee and two ewe lambs Standish purchased two more shares in the same red cow from Abraham Peirce.

The other five shares were held by Resolved and Peregrine White, whose widowed mother Winslow had married. Winslow controlled these shares which he must have sold for account of his stepchildren for we read, that "by these purchases Standish obtained full control of the thirteen shares she [the red cow] represented."

She was valued at £11 18s. 4d.

This was in 1628, the same year in which the first sale of land is recorded—one acre for "fower pounds sterling," and two years to pay—less than half of the value of the one red cow.

The next year William Bradford made this entry in his diary to the effect that it was to the admiration of many and almost wonder of the world that from so small beginnings so great things should ensue . . . but it was the Lord's doings, therefore, should be "marvellous in our eyes."

Of these small beginnings there were always, of course, the cattle, important in the eyes of their Maker from the time the Commandments were handed down to Moses on the Mount. So, we find that the associates of "Mr. John Indecott" considered "twelve Kine and Buls more," among the necessities for the establishing of the Massachusetts Bay Colony and, "conferring casually with some *Gentlemen of London* moved them to adde unto them as many more." So:

In the yeare 1629, about March, six good ships are gone with 350. men, women, and children, people possessing themselves of good ranke, zeale, meanes and quality; also 150. head of cattell, as horse, mares, and neat beasts; 41 goats, some conies. . . . They arrived for the most part exceeding well, their cattell and all things else prospering exceedingly, farre beyond their expectation.

Thus Captain John Smith in his Advertisements for the Unexperienced Planters, but of this voyage, or one made during the same year, we read in *The Planters Plea*, that of the "conuenient proportion of rother Beasts, to the number of sixty or seventy or there about and some Mares and Horses, . . . the Kine came safe for the most part; but the greater part of the Horses dyed, so that there remained not above twelue or fourteen alive."

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

Notwithstanding this tragedy, at the beginning of 1630—year so epochal to Pilgrim and Puritan, his heirs and assigns forever—there were goats and cattle, sheep and swine enough to start the growth of the animals' family trees, which from so small beginnings so great things were to ensue.

Myles Standish's purchase of thirteen shares in one red cow was in 1628. The year before that:

Their Division—"At a publique Court held the 22th of May it was concluded by the whole Companie that the cattell whch. were the companies, to wit, the Cowes & the Goates," should be divided equally among the colonists; that each allotment should be well and sufficiently paid for under penalty of forfeiture; and that the old stock, with one-half of the increase, "should remaine for common use to be divided at thend of the said term, otherwise as occasion falleth out."

"Uppon which agreement they were equally divided by lotts soe as the bother of the keeping of the males then being should be borne for common use by those to whose lot the best Cowes should fall & so the lots fell as followeth 13 psonts being apportioned to one lot."

There were thirteen persons to one lot and twelve lots of such persons.

"i—lot fell to ffrancis Cooke & his Companie Joyned to him his wife Hester Cooke," who is number two in this list. Other Cookes follow, and other names, the thirteenth being one Phinihas Pratt, and to this lot fell "the least of the 4 black Heyfers came in the 'Jacob' and two shee goats."

The second lot was headed by "Mr. Isaac Allerton, Companie and wife ffeare," who were given a Greate Black Cow, who had come in the "Ann," the lesser of two steers and 2 shee goats.

Myles Standish was the head of the third companie who were given care of the Red cow which belonged to the poor of the Colony, with orders to keep her calfe of this year, which was also for the use of the poor. There were two shee goats in this parcel also, as there were in all of the other allotments, except the fourth, which went to John Howland and Companie and his wife Elisabeth. But here we find an animal dignified by name—Raghorne, one of the four heyfers come in the "Jacob."

In the William Brewster Company are listed the names of his children, Love and Wrestling, and thirteenth in this list Humilyty

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

Cooper. The animals allotted to them had also come over in the "Jacob." The "Ann" had brought the lesser of the black cows allotted to John Shaw and his Company of Adamses, Winslows and Bassetts. To Stephen Hopkins' Company fell among other animals "A black weining Calfe."

Samuel Fuller, Richard Warren, Francis Eaton, headed each his own company of thirteen, receiving proper allotment of cattle according to age and goodness as had the others. Governor Bradford was allotted "An heyfer of the last year which was of the Greate White Back Cowe that was brought over in the 'Ann,'" and this same "White Backt Cowe" herself fell to the care of John Jene, who headed the twelfth group of the Colonists of New Plymouth on that "22th" day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and twenty-seven.

Ten or eleven years later, in July of 1638, there was some "difference how farr the Town of New Plymouth doth now pperly extend after much agitation and allegations made It was concluded that the Inhabitants of the said Towne of New Plymouth dwelling betwixt the houses of Willm Pontus and John Dunham on the south and the outside of the new streete on the north side have power to order and dispose of the said stocke of cowes given as aforesaid. . . . "

This had reference to the stock given by "Mr. James Shurley of London merchant to the poore of Plymouth who had playnely declared by severall letters in his owne hand writing that his intent therein was wholly to the poore of the Town of New Plymouth wordes of said lres recorded it does most playnely appear."

Thomas Prence, Gent., Governor Bradford, Edward Winslow, Gent., and Assistants of the Government Stephen (probably Bryant), John Done and Thomas Willet, Gent., and John Dunham were nominated to "have the power and authoritie for there foure next years to put forth and dispose the said stock of cowes to the Inhabitants of the poore of the sd Towne of Plymouth as shalbe thought fitt to ptake therein. . . . And also by way of curtesye to supply the wants of some others wch doe inhabite wthin the liberties of said Towne if they shall thinke fitt."

Thus, three hundred years ago, the people of New England expressed their sense of justice and of mercy, duly inscribing their wishes in the records of the Colony.

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

“And this,” says a member of the Massachusetts Historical Society, referring to the division of the cattle among the poor of Plymouth Plantation, “was the first organized charity on New England soil.”

Their Liberties—When the Colonists in New Plymouth divided their cattle, according to a public court held on the twenty-second day of May, 1627,

It was further agreed at the same court :

That if anie of the cattell should by accident miscarie or be lost or Hurt : that the same should be taken knowledg of by Indifferent men : and Judged whether the losse came by neglegence or default of those betrusted and if they are found faulty, that then such should be forced to make satisfaction for the Company's as also their partner's damage/∴

On the 15th day of November, 1636, exactly sixteen years after the first Pilgrims waded from the “Mayflower” to the Plymouth shore, each man was made inevitably responsible for his own live stock, by the passage of the following law :

That every mans marke of his Cattle be brought to the towne book where he lives and that no man give the same but shall alter any other brought to him and put his owne upon them.

This law was passed on the same day that another provided for the appointment of a Clerk of the Colony Court. In the following January one Nathaniel Sowther was appointed to such position and his first entries have to do with animals and their markings. Each man's name is listed, with the mark he must use for his cattle and the Clerk has enlivened the records with many little pictures, of slits “of the fore side of the far eare,” of crosses and triangles—the variety of markings is incredible. There are peeces and scotches and round cutts and swallows cropt, and a “snipp kutt.” And here we find mention of two mares, one belonging to Nathaniel Morton whose “naturall markes of a black couller . . . tending to an iron gray being whit on the topp . . . of her head downward,” to which he must add markings in the each eare. John Morton's “Mare coultē” had “a starr of white in the forehead and two hinde feet white the horse coulte . . . and a tipp of white on the Nose.”

Then came laws for the keeping of the cattle, and in 1637 “William Nelson is hyred to keep the coves this yeare at the same wages he

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

had the last year wich is 50 bushells of Indian corne and is to keep them untill the middle of November next."

Other keepers followed, and one was "to be paid by eich man according to the number of his cattle pportionally and according to the tyme they are kept by him."

Only the milch cows and working beasts should be kept about the town. He who did not remove the rest of his cattle from the town by May had to "forfeit tenn shillings a peece for every beast remayneing here." None should suffer calves nor goats to go without a keeper.

Later came laws "That all swine above three months old shalbe ringed from the first of Aprill next until the last of October following upon the penalty of *vid* a swine as often as they shalbe found runing during the said term pvided that if any shall loose their ringes upon warneing ringe them again psently and if any swine be complayned of to be unruly or break into mens grounds that they beyoaked also."

No oxen should be kept about the Towne except "when they are wrought" and a penalty was imposed on owners of young cattle except when on the south side of the town, with a keeper.

This was in 1640.

The next year, 1641, the Massachusetts Body of Liberties was adopted, by the General Court of the Colony of Massachusetts Bay—the result of much thought on the part of Nathaniel Ward, Minister at Ipswich, "bred to the law," and by members of the General Court, then by the freemen of the various towns, again by the General Court, and after revisions, vetoes, votings, and more revisions, there came into being the earliest New England Code of Laws, "for the free fruition of such liberties, Immunities and priveledges as humanitie, Civilitie, and Christianitie call for as due to every man in his place and proportion; without impeachment and Infringement hath ever bene and ever will be the tranquillitie and Stabilitie of Churches and Commonwealths"

Among the "Rites, liberties and priveledges" that were to be enjoyed by the members of the Commonwealth, the animals were considered from the points of both fruition and humanitie

No mans Cattell or goods of what kinde soever [we read] shall be pressed or taken for any publique use or service unless it be by warrant grounded upon some act of the generall Coirt, nor without such reasonable prices and hire as the ordanirie rates of the Countrie do afford.

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

And if his Cattle or goods shall perish or suffer damage in such service the owner shall be sufficiently recompensed.

The next law, numbered 32, reads:

Every man shall have libertie to replevy his Cattell or goods impounded, distreined, seised, or extended, unlesse it be upon execution after Judgment, and in payment of fines. Provided he puts in good securitie to prosecute his replevin And to satisfy such demands as his Adversary shall recover against him in Law.

Then:

92. It is ordered by this Court that no man shall exercise any Tyranny or Cruelty towards any Bruit Creatures, which are usually kept for the use of man.

And:

93. If any man shall have occasaion to leade or drive Cattel from place to place that is far off, So that they be weary or hungry, or fall sick, or lambe, it shall be lawful to rest or refresh them, for a competent time, in any open place that is not Corne, meadow, or inclosed for some particular use.

Thus Pilgrim and Puritan early provided for their cattle the liberty to live unfettered by cruelty. And was this law, providing for rest and refreshment in transportation across the limited domain of New Plymouth, the root from which has come our wide-spreading Federal laws for the protection of animals in transit across these broad United States?

Even William Bradford, in his voluminous history written three hundred years ago, felt constrained to "omitte for brevities sake," much that he felt would be of deep interest to his readers. How much more, therefore, in this hurried twentieth century, has the present scribe been obliged to omit from the outline history of the Pilgrim cattle. And more must be omitted now, "for brevities sake," from the records of those later years when live stock was to the Colonists what Wall Street investments are, today, to their descendants.

Their Value—Early in the seventeenth century Pilgrim and trader recognized the money to be made in live stock. The sale of some twenty heifers, brought over in 1630, was argued as compensation for loss of promised profits in fishing. In the same year Josselyn observed,

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

that "Swine, Goats, Sheep, Neat and Horses," had cost some 12,000 pounds to transport beside the price they cost.

Two mares and 34 Dutch sheep were landed in Boston in 1633, although forty were lost in transit. This same year the Court at New Plymouth forbade the exportation of sheep and restrained Nehemiah Smith from taking his sheep from the colony until they had been offered for sale, at rate of forty shillings for each ewe, twenty for each lamb, to be paid for in money or commodities.

A few years later Bradford wrote: "catle of all kinds stood at a high rate for diverce years togeather. Kine were sould at 20 li and some at 25 li a peece, yea some times at 28 li. A cow-calfe usually at 10 li. A milch goat at 3 li. and some at 4 li. And femall kids at 30 s and often at 4 p a peece. By which means the anciente planters which had any stock began to grow in their estates."

An anciente planter was one who had started life in America eighteen years earlier. This was written in 1638. And about this time they had "sundry letters out of England to send one over to end the business and accounte with Mr. Sherley." And one Andrews claimed, among other large sums, one half the increase from the gift of heifers that had been sent for the poor of New Plymouth.

The Colonists were anxious to brings things to a settlement not only to "stope the clamours and aspertions raised and cast upon them hereabout," but because "they feared the fall of catle, in which most parte of their estates lay. And this was not a vaine feare; for they fell indeede before they came to a conclusion, and so souddeyly, as a cowe, that but a month before was worth 20 li, and would so have passed in any paymente, fell now to 5 li, and would yeeld no more; and a goate that went at .3 li. or .50 s. would now yeeld but .8. or .10s. at most. All men feared a fall of catle, but it was thought it would be by degrees; and not be from the highest pitch at once to the lowest, as it did, which was greatly to the damage of many and the undoing of some."

Against such damage and undoing Mr. Winslow made strong opposition, with an uprightness that—but, says Governor Bradford, in one point of his history, "I thinke it best to render their minde in their owne words": and Mr. Winslow's letter to Mr. Andrews, who insisted on cattle of a certain age and price is far more interesting than words of mine:

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

But the price at that time was under their worth [he writes, in 1639] by a yeares growth; for yearlings and the advantage were ordinarily sold for 15 li. Againe Mr. Andrews is well acquainted with payments in England and how easie a thing it is to turne any valuable commodity into money, but it is otherwise heer, and especially at this the most hard and dead time of all other these many yeares. I speak as it is with us: but if you conceiue the Gentlemen valued them too high I am contented to let them goe as I offered to your selfe at 18 li per head the fiue. If you say it is too high, truly I marvell at it, being this weeke Mr. Hatherly made payment to Mr. Freeman and Mr. Atwood in cows, (and in a business Mr. Andrews, if I be not much mistaken, is interested) at 18 li 15 s per head. Nay since these valued some passed in account between Mr. Paddy and some of your parts at 20 li per head; and therefore I pray you take it into further consideracon, and remember you may fall into an extreame. Truly Sir it is my desire to discharge it that makes me importune you, neither doe I conceiue how you can justly suffer in it; and to avoide suffering I see is not possible; for I finde innocency (by lamentable experience) will little helpe amongst men, yea wherein I haue been most carefull, therein most abused, and therefore in discharging a good conscience we must leaue all events to God.

In 1640 John Winter wrote to Edward Trelawny: "Provision is very plentyfull now in the Bay, and very Cheape. Money growes scarce their with them; yf passengers Com not over with money, the prize of Cattell will fall speedily. I would willingly sell a score of Cattell, young and old, yf I could gett a good Cheapman. I do purpose to go into the Bay shortly, yf I can bringe yt to pas to se If I can put away any of our Cattell." Three months later he wrote: "I do beleaue Cattell will be Cheape in this Country very shortly. I would willingly sell Yearlings heare now for ten pounds per prize head, which ar better then them which I sold for £13 and £15 per head the last yeare. Heare ar all sellers of Cattell now that haue them, but noe buyers."

The truth was, however, according to the Governor's own estimates, that the people had wronged themselves much in their valuation of the cattle also "being tender of their oaths, they brought in all they knew owing to the stock; but they had not made the like diligente search for what the stocke might owe to any, so as many scattering debts fell upon afterwards more then now they knew of."

Of this speculation in stock Bradford was to burst into poetry in later years, of which poetry, however, the less said the better. So, we

OUR ANCESTRAL ANIMALS

will bring to a close this series of sketches about our ancestral animals, with a letter written about the end of their first half century in this New World, for Hubbard wrote about 1670:

By reason of this long continued and extreme sharpness of the cold through the whole country, the seven months of the summer's increase are usually devoured by the five lean and barren ones of the winter's following, as was shewed to Pharoah in his dream; so as if some stranger should chance to be there in the end of every winter, he might be ready to think that all the cattle here were the issue of Pharoah's lean kine, that had been transported hither; the cattle at that time of the year much resembling the wild deer in Greenland, when the bridegroom of the earth begins to smile upon them, after the long, cold and dark night of winter begins to take his leave.

Thus, in our study of Massachusetts Bay Colony, one must not forget the so-called Lesser Folk, who bore their full share in the labor and suffering of those long, hard winters of early sixteen hundred.



Jackson's Hermitage---An Intimate Record of Its Builder

BY MARY F. ANDERSON, WASHINGTON, DISTRICT OF COLUMBIA



THE President's Nation-wide appeal to interest every American in owning his own home falls on fertile soil. In no other country are homes and their builders more tenderly associated than here. Homes of people of national interest are claimed as patriotic shrines by their appreciative countrymen. Washington's Mount Vernon, Jefferson's Monticello, and the simple log cabin in which Abraham Lincoln was born evoke more interest than any costly memorials which have been erected to their memory.

The Hermitage of Tennessee holds the life record of Andrew Jackson; and in its perpetual maintenance, a people's regard for his deeds. As he loved the place so intensely, and had worked into it so much of his virile personality, those who have held the place since his death have tried to restrain the hand of change, and have preserved it as when the Hero of New Orleans lived there. Since his death no individual except his adopted son has owned it. From Andrew Jackson, Jr., the State of Tennessee bought it in 1856 and transferred it in 1889 to the present guardian, the Ladies' Hermitage Association.

It has been said that the measure of a man or his influence cannot be understood without a knowledge of his home. The Hermitage keeps and reveals a visible and an intimate record of the builder, who by his own efforts had bought the land, cleared it of forests, wild animals and skulking Indians, and after entrenching himself there, had served his country in many capacities. Orphaned early and deprived of a home in his youth, the Hermitage received all the pent-up devotion of one who appreciated something that in early life he had sorely missed.

The house that he built holds the story of his devotion for his wife. "She shall have the best that I can build," he had exclaimed in no uncertain tones to a visitor, as he struck his cane against a stump that was to be uprooted where the ground was being leveled for his front



FLOWER GARDEN AT "THE HERMITAGE"

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

doorstep. His fields, which were his pride and sustenance, in many instances have their original boundaries preserved. The stables recall his fondness for fine horses. The garden contains shrubs and trees growing in the identical places where "Old Hickory" planted them. The log cabins recall the work of the faithful slaves who contributed an important part to the life of the plantation—Uncle Alfred, Gracie, Hannah, and a host of others.

Every nook and cranny of the house is filled with reminders of patriotic service rendered by Jackson to his country, and expressions of regard that came to the master of the Hermitage from all parts of the world.

The Hermitage sent to the White House a pioneer—the first President to be chosen from west of the Appalachian Mountains. Jackson's administration meant the rise of the people to national rule, the physical fulfillment of the spirit of the Declaration of Independence.

There are two Andrew Jacksons: the courageous, arbitrary, impetuous, inflexibly determined military and political leader that strides across the pages of American history which he dominated for a period, and the Hermitage Jackson who was kind, patient and generous to every one who claimed his protection—and whose hospitality was proverbial.

That a wide path might lead from the gate at the public road to his door, when Jackson built his house, he laid out an avenue a quarter of a mile long, and on each side of it planted a row of cedars. These century-old trees grip the earth tighter each year, grow closer together, and rigidly execute the trust imposed in them by keeping the roads in bounds and guaranteeing forever Jackson's intent of hospitality. They add dignity and seclusion to the place while connecting the house with the public highway.

The visitor who goes up that cedar-lined avenue today must go on foot, for the drive is closed to the motorist. As the road nears the house, it encircles an oblong lawn, curving inward, then outward, determining the shape of the plot which gives it the name of the "guitar-driveway."

The mansion is a two-story brick with double verandahs, front and rear. The lower floor of the front verandah is of stone, the others are of cedar. One visitor remarked that he could build a house of the

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

cedar plank in the rear porch floor. At each end of the front there is a wing, one story in height. The front door is hospitably wide. A similar door at the rear of the hall makes possible an uninterrupted vista from the front gate, through the wide front and rear door of the main hall to the back of the premises—if the eye could reach the distance.

Upon entering the front door one becomes immediately interested in two outstanding features of interest: the beautiful staircase and the pictorial wall paper. On the paper is depicted in four scenes the wanderings of Telemachus on the island of Calypso in search of his father, Ulysses. It was brought from Paris in 1835 when the Hermitage was rebuilt. There is an old umbrella stand where Jackson was accustomed to rest his high-top hat, and the mahogany sofa in its special place between the two doors, where it stood in Jackson's time.

Uncle Alfred, General Jackson's body-servant, who was caretaker of the Hermitage for a number of years, and its oral historian, would point to the double doors at the right of the hall and say, "Many a time I've seen General Jackson, when there was company, dance in there and swing Miss Sarah up and down the room." Miss Sarah was the wife of his adopted son—the youthful bride who presided over the White House in the Jackson régime.

Uncle Alfred's reminiscences lighted the rooms and the memory of the traditionally grim master with human interest stories, of how he was fond of gaiety and had the rooms of the Hermitage filled with friends and relatives whenever they could be prevailed upon to visit the plantation.

In the connecting double parlors most of the original furniture has been preserved. There are many gifts there that came to the Hero of New Orleans. Among them are two chairs presented to Jackson by the Khedive of Egypt, two silver luster vases from the Czar of Russia, busts of Jackson by Levi Woodbury, which are in the front parlor. The back parlor contains a table belonging to a set which was presented to General Jackson after the battle of New Orleans.

In the dining room is a mantel made of hickory sticks worked on only on the eighth of January, the anniversary of the great battle in which Jackson led the American forces to victory in 1814. Before an iron fence was placed inside the door, the mantel was almost destroyed by souvenir hunters. The room also contains a mahogany table at

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

which eight Presidents have dined, and the sideboard of magnificent proportions, upon which are pieces of historic silver plate, among them dishes purchased from the widow of Stephen Decatur.

The bed on which General Jackson died is in the room to the left of the hall. Over it is the original canopy of figured brown silk matching the draperies over the windows. His dressing gown is on his easy chair, as if placed within the reach of his hand, and over the mantel is his favorite portrait of Mrs. Jackson.

Four bookcases in the library hold the books which Jackson accumulated. Among them are histories, books on travel, medicine, farming, and a variety of subjects. Of special interest is his desk with its secret drawers, and the chair in front of it made from the timbers of the "Constitution," presented to him by Levi Woodbury, his Secretary of the Treasury. Another chair in the library was a gift from Chief Justice Taney.

The museum has in it five cases filled with gifts of every description: swords, pipes, walking canes, china, silver, letters, pictures, and innumerable tokens of admiration. A tiny piece of wax candle, which was found in Cornwallis' tent at Yorktown the night of his surrender to Washington, for years was lighted by General Jackson on the anniversary of the battle of New Orleans.

There are eleven rooms in the house besides the pantry, storehouse, kitchen and cellar. Of the guest rooms, the Lafayette room is perhaps the best known. Across the hall from it is the one occupied by a family relative, Earl, and used by him for his studio. Earl painted so many portraits of General Jackson that he was called the "Portrait Painter to the King" by some of Jackson's political critics.

The kitchen was not destroyed when the main building was burned in 1833. The cranes, pot-hooks, ovens, skillets, wide fireplace and original safe are reminiscent of the days when "Betty" prepared the food for the Hermitage table. The smokehouse is another of the original buildings. Its tin roof is the same that was put on in 1819. The blackened rafters are studded with nails from which hung the hams, bacon and shoulders over a smouldering fire of hickory chips in the air-tight room where all the meat was "cured" in the plantation days. Uncle Alfred's cabin is another landmark. The old darkey was born at the Hermitage and lived there all of his ninety-eight years, supremely proud that he had been "Mars' Andrew's" personal servant.

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

The family coach in the carriage house was used at the White House for state, ceremonial and social purposes. The Presidents had to provide their own traveling equipment in those days, and Jackson rode in his coach back to the Hermitage at the close of his second administration. He was thirty days making the trip that can be made by train or motor in less than twenty-four hours. Jackson's homeward journey was interrupted by continuous ovations, however, which consumed much of his time.

In the carriage house is also the skeleton of the phaeton presented by the "Democratic-Republican" citizens of Philadelphia. It was made from the timbers of the old ship "Constitution." Logs from a building at Jackson's first home at Hunter's Hill were used in the carriage house that is located near the spring.

A sun-drenched garden at the left of the mansion with its spaces of green embroidered with the bright threads of the seasons is enclosed as a picture in a frame of white. Four pebbled walks with wide flower beds on each side converge in the center in the maze of a formal art circle. There are plants and shrubs which are still vigorous which were set out by General and Mrs. Jackson when the garden was first planted at the time the Hermitage was built. There is a wealth of crepe myrtle, calycanthus, lilacs, snowballs and many other old-fashioned flowers. A dainty fringe tree stands sentinel at the garden gate, and willows set out by Jackson are not far away.

The home life of the Hermitage in the days of General Jackson was characterized by its abounding hospitality. A writer of that time said that very seldom were any of the guest rooms vacant. Young people, especially, were welcome. In the evenings there was music and dancing. The master of the Hermitage would often come in and request that his favorite songs be sung: "Auld Lang Syne" and "Scots Wha Ha'e Wi' Wallace Bled," songs reminiscent of his people who had come from Scotland generations before. Young ladies brought their autograph albums to General Jackson for a sentiment and a signature. Whimsically, it seems, he must have written the first thing that came to his mind. In one album he wrote: "When I can read my title clear," etc.

An outstanding characteristic of the general was his devotion to his family and friends. His mother, who had died when he was only fifteen

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

years of age, exerted considerable influence over his later life. He deeply loved her and held her memory sacred to the last. To clinch a remark or an argument, he would sometimes say: "That I learned from my good old mother!"

His wife had much to do with making the Hermitage a satisfactory home. She was an excellent manager and when the general was away during the Indian campaigns, she kept the affairs of the plantation running smoothly. Her whole existence was bound up in it. One of the slaves told of the time when gifts were being showered upon the Hermitage after the general's return from his military exploits, how a spring house was built by Jackson, who now had money and time at his disposal, which pleased the mistress more than the many costly rugs, mirrors and jewelry that had been sent to her by her husband's admirers.

Mrs. Jackson had a fund of anecdotes with which she entertained her guests. She had come to the Cumberland country from Virginia through the unbroken wilderness, and could relate deeds of heroism, mystery and adventure of those who had made the first settlements. Her father had been killed by the Indians, and she could remember when no one dared venture out of the blockhouse without a gun. Daniel Boone had been a friend of her father's, and she told thrilling stories of his adventures.

The Jacksons' fondness for children was demonstrated in the care they gave their adopted child, one of the twins of Savern Donelson, Mrs. Jackson's brother. The child was named for Jackson and was accorded every advantage and affection that the general could have lavished upon an own and only son. Young Jackson was married while his father was President, and his wife, Sarah Yorke Jackson, presided as mistress of the White House.

So wrapped up was the President in his grandchildren, when the United States Treasury was under construction, some officials called at the White House and asked that the Chief Executive place something in the corner-stone which he considered of value.

"I'll do it," the President promised.

The visitors thought Jackson would select a letter or a document relating to some important affair connected with the administration. Instead, he took a pair of scissors, cut a lock of hair from the head of

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

his grandchild, Rachel, wrapped it carefully, and handed it to the surprised officials.

When this same little girl was christened, Jackson deemed the occasion important enough to justify the attendance of both Houses of Congress. And it is said that most of the members were there!

Two nations contributed the temperamental ingredients that made Jackson a leader: the Irish, aggressiveness, and the Scotch, persistence. His parents were of a group that had emigrated from northern Ireland to the Carolinas several years before the Revolution, and had settled in the fertile valleys of the Dan, Catawba and Yadkin rivers. They had little material wealth, but they brought with them clear heads, warm hearts, willing hands and a spirit of uprightness destined to flourish vigorously in the untrammelled spaces of the New World.

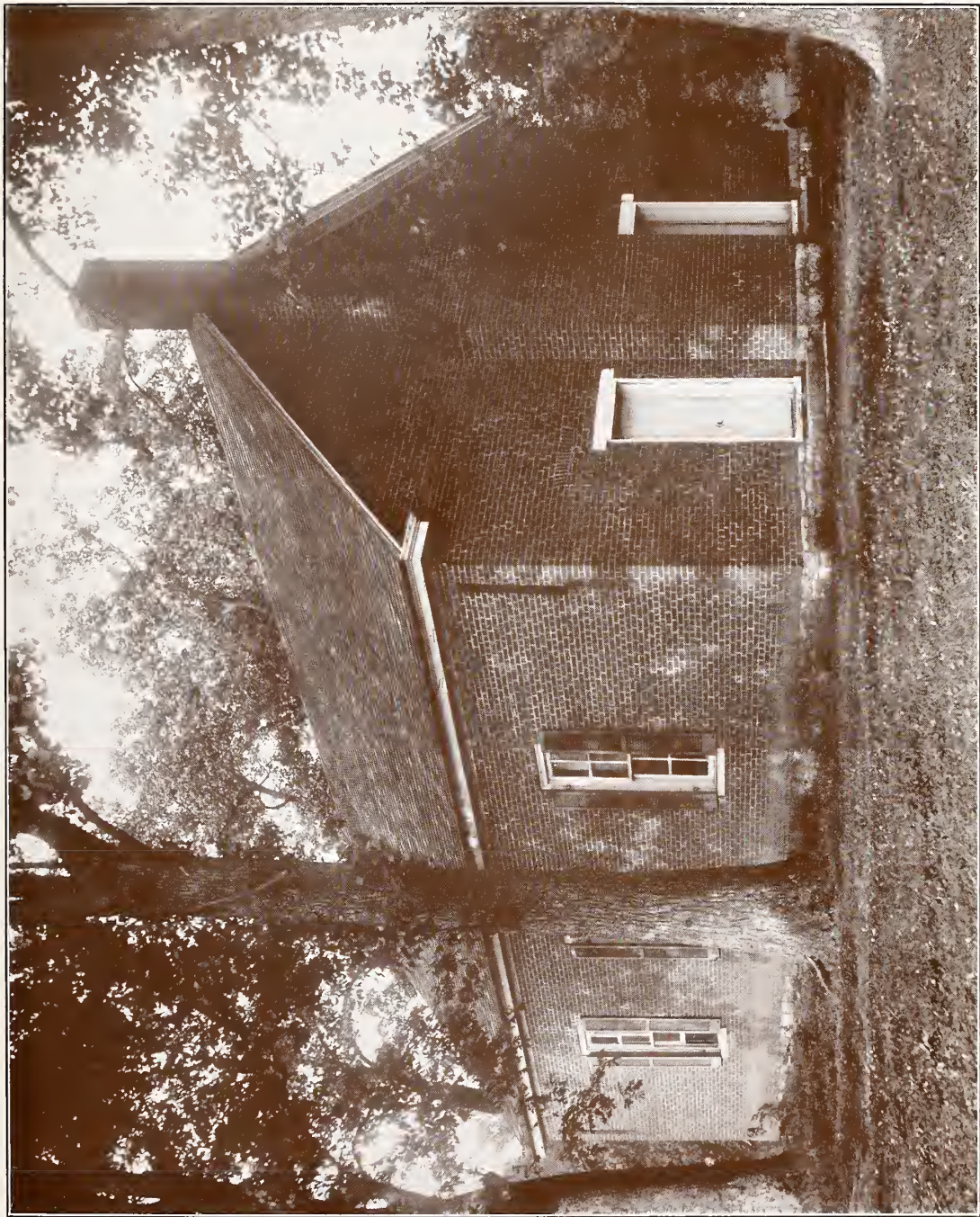
So obscure was Jackson's birth that later two states were to contend for the honor of his birthplace. When the State line was shifted between North and South Carolina, unwittingly, a compromise was the result. Authorities seem agreed that at the time of his birth the Waxhaw Settlement was a part of South Carolina, but later the place was included in what is now Union County, North Carolina.

General Jackson always spoke of himself as a native of South Carolina. "Fellow Citizens of my *native* State," he wrote at the close of his proclamation to the nullifiers of South Carolina.

As Jackson's father died before his birth, his mother found it difficult to make a living for her three sons and give them the rudiments of an education. Andrew, the moth desired, should be a preacher, and to that end directed his education. He went to the old "field school" and then to Waxhaw Academy, but the Revolution cut short his schooling. He has been described as a tall, slender boy with intense blue eyes, a freckled face, an abundance of long, sandy hair, clad in coarse copperas clothes—and ever ready for a fight.

Rumblings of the fighting in New England and Virginia had reached the pine lowlands of the Carolinas, but it was not until Tarleton burst with the fury of a summer storm, striking here and there, disappearing as suddenly as he had come to attack another settlement, leaving ignited and smouldering resentment between Whigs and Tories in the settlement, did the Waxhaw people realize that the war with Great Britain was theirs.

The three adventurous Jackson boys were drawn into it, and not



HERMITAGE CHURCH, WHERE ANDREW JACKSON ATTENDED SERVICES

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

one was grown. Hugh, the oldest, was killed at the battle of Santo, and Robert died of smallpox contracted in the Camden prison. Andrew had also been in battle and had been imprisoned at Camden at the age of fourteen. He carried to his grave a scar from a British officer's sabre, given because he refused to black the officer's boots. Foaming with rage he had shrieked defiance :

“Sir, I am a prisoner of war, and not a servant !”

After studying law in Salisbury for a time, the young solicitor was appointed United States Attorney for the Western District of North Carolina with headquarters at Nashville. The first thing that the pioneers did after making their blockhouses secure from the Indians was to establish law and order among themselves by building court-houses and jails. It is on record that during the first year that Jackson was solicitor he was employed in forty-two cases out of one hundred ninety-two. In the year 1794, out of three hundred ninety-seven cases he acted as counsel for two hundred twenty-eight.

The young red-headed solicitor took an active part in public affairs and was a member of the convention that framed the Constitution of Tennessee. In 1796, when Tennessee was admitted into the Union, he was chosen the first Representative from the new State to Congress. A year later he was appointed to the United States Senate, resigning shortly to become a member of the Supreme Court of Tennessee. He held this position until he retired to private life in 1804, the year that he lost his Hunter Hill's home and moved to the present site of the Hermitage.

From 1798 to 1814 Jackson was major-general of the Tennessee militia. At the head of an untrained group of backwoodsmen he entered the War of 1812 to repel the British activities in the South and to subdue the British allies, the Creek Indians, who were working havoc along the southern and western borders. The success of the war in giving the new nation confidence in itself, developed an enthusiasm for its leaders never experienced before, and Jackson came in for a lion's share of acclaim.

It was on the homeward march to Nashville in 1813 which ended the Natchez expedition that Jackson was given the name “Old Hickory.” It was not an instantaneous bestowal, but came by degrees. A soldier struck by the commander's physical endurance remarked that

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

General Jackson was "tough." Another later made the remark that he was as tough as *hickory*. That seemed a fitting name, and soon the men up and down the lines were calling their commander *Hickory*. That was too brief and unqualified. Soon the prefix *Old* was affectionately added, and Jackson had a nickname that stuck to him through life.

After being made major-general in 1814, Jackson's operations in the Seminole Indian territory resulted in the United States becoming the possessor of Florida with him as Governor of the territory for a brief time. Broken in health he resigned and returned to the Hermitage. It was at this time that he began building the house upon whose foundations, its successor, the present Hermitage, stands.

Jackson had married Rachel Donaldson Robards, daughter of the woman with whom he had boarded when he first went to Nashville. Jackson's modest residence on the Hunter's Hill tract of land on the arterial Cumberland differed little from others in the sparsely settled community, except that it was a frame structure in the day when anything but a log cabin in the neighborhood was regarded as a curiosity.

On the land records of that period Jackson's name appears frequently as the purchaser and assignee of sections of land in different parts of the county. He bought six hundred fifty acres of the tract that afterward formed the Hermitage farm for \$800, which was considered a high price at the time. By the year 1796, when Tennessee became a State, Jackson was rated in the community as an extensive landowner.

He had acquired the land in various ways. A part had been purchased outright, and some of it had come in exchange for legal services. As a stock raiser and a merchant he had secured land by "swapping" for it commodities that ranged from horses to cow bells.

As the Jacksons were beginning to feel comfortably rooted at Hunter's Hill there came a setback in which the home was lost. To pay a large debt incurred by another required the raising of a large sum of money, currency that could be used in Philadelphia, instead of the articles customarily used in settling debts in the wilderness. Money was very difficult to get, but on the day of the maturity of the notes, principal and interest were paid in full. To meet the obligation the Hunter's Hill tract and additional land approximating 25,000 acres had been sacrificed.

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

Then the Jacksons moved farther back into the wilderness, where another spot was cleared. A square two-story log house was built which contained one large room on the ground floor and two rooms above. To this was added about twenty feet away a small structure containing kitchen, dining and weaving rooms joined to the main building by a covered passage.

For fifteen years this log house was Jackson's home. From it he went forth in 1812 an almost unknown frontiersman, and to it he returned after the battle of New Orleans a widely acclaimed hero.

The first Hermitage, later cut down to one-story, providing material for a group of negro cabins, still stands not far from the mansion which succeeded to its name. One may still see the trap door in the floor where Rachel Jackson stored her fruits and vegetables in an improvised cellar. Its unceiled rafters and walls are blackened with the smoke and dust of a century and a quarter, while the yawning fireplace which could hold a quarter of wood at a time, still attests the hospitality of the master and mistress who delighted in having friends, relatives and wayfaring strangers gathered around their hearthstone.

On two occasions in 1805 Aaron Burr visited Jackson in this house. Tennesseans remembered that Burr had sponsored the cause of the State at the time of her admission to the Union, and when he came to Nashville, the people of the capital welcomed him royally. Jackson rode to town to meet him with a saddled white horse for Burr to return with him to the Hermitage. During that visit Burr wrote to his daughter:

For a week I have been lounging at the home of Andrew Jackson, once a lawyer, afterward a judge, now a planter—a man of intelligence and one of those prompt, frank, ardent souls whom I love to meet.

Burr's unpopularity had not then reached the Southwest. His recent duel with Alexander Hamilton was not regarded with disfavor in the region where dueling was still approved, as it was in the East. Jackson always gave his friendship to unreservedly that he never believed that Burr's activities in that region were prompted by anything but the highest patriotic motives.

The second house called the Hermitage was built in 1819. General Jackson had returned from the Seminole War, convinced that he

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

had come home to die. The log house satisfied him completely, but he thought that Mrs. Jackson deserved something better. When Major Lewis, one of the general's closest friends, suggested a better location on an elevation, General Jackson replied:

No, Major, Mrs. Jackson chose this spot, and she shall have her wish. I am going to build this house for her. I don't expect to live long enough to be in it myself.

A brick-kiln was set up on the place, and the architect, Henry Reiff, a neighbor, began work on the building at once. General Jackson, slowly regaining his strength, leaning heavily on his cane, hobbled daily to the place to watch the progress of the building. When it was completed it was by far the most imposing house in the community. It was like the present structure, except there were no wings at the ends of the front porch.

This second Hermitage was where Lafayette was entertained in 1825, and it was from that house that Jackson was called to the Presidency.

On the Hermitage plantation there was a cotton-gin at the time when the tax books in Davison County showed that there were only twenty-four gins in the county. This was only eleven years after Eli Whitney's invention made possible the cleaning of three hundred pounds of cotton in the same time that it had taken to clean one pound by hand. Jackson paid a special tax of \$20 a year for his gin. It served to clean his own cotton, the cotton of his neighbors, and that which he took in exchange for goods.

The Hermitage afforded its owner a substantial income. While Jackson was President, he was compelled to eke out his salary by drawing upon the proceeds of the farm. At the end of his first administration he wrote to Mr. Trist:

I returned home with just ninety dollars in money, having expended all my salary and most of the proceeds of my cotton crop; found everything out of repair; corn and everything else for the use of my farm to buy. The sale of a tract of land has enabled me to begin the New Year (1833) clear of debt, relying on our industry and economy to yield us a support, trusting to a kind Providence for good seasons and a prosperous year.

When Jackson reached the pinnacle of fame and power, at the time of his election to the Presidency, he received a stunning blow. Mrs.

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

Jackson died suddenly about two months before the inauguration. The President-elect buried his wife on Christmas Eve in a corner of the Hermitage garden, and a few weeks later, grimly set out for Washington. The general's fighting days with the sword were over, but for nearly another twenty years he was to engage in a political warfare, more bitter, because he held his political opponents responsible for her death, for in trying to embarrass him in the campaign, they had mercilessly perverted facts in regard to her divorce from her first husband.

While Jackson was in Washington, the Hermitage was burned in September, 1834. It was rebuilt immediately upon the same foundations and by the first of May was ready for occupancy. The kitchen and smokehouse were not damaged and portions of the old walls were incorporated in the new structure. To raise the necessary \$3,000 for the rebuilding, the President had to sell the last piece of land that he owned that was not included in the Hermitage tract.

Jackson spent the closing years of his life at the Hermitage, where he had retired at once at the close of his second Presidential term. For another eight years the place was the political center of the country. Men from all ranks of life came there to confer with him or to pay their respects and until the day of his death in June, 1845, General Jackson, of the Hermitage, wielded an influence in the United States second to none.

The last letter that bears his signature is truly Jacksonian. On his deathbed he dictated a letter to President Polk, expressing confidence in his judgment and patriotism and urging him to act promptly and resolutely in the affairs of Texas and Oregon.

By his own wish his funeral was as simple as possible. An oriental sarcophagus, popularly said to have contained the bones of Alexander Severus, the Roman Emperor, was offered for his body a short time before his death by an admirer who wrote him :

I pray you to live on in the fear of the Lord, dying the death of a Roman soldier; an Emperor's coffin awaits you!

But the sturdy American had no wish to be buried in an emperor's coffin. His dimming eyes flashed as he refused it, saying :

My republican feelings and principles forbid it: the simplicity of our system of government forbids it.

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

General Jackson was buried beside Mrs. Jackson in the Hermitage garden. Six tall hickory trees flank the tomb on one side and a group of magnolias on the other. The slab which covers Mrs. Jackson's grave contains an epitaph, which was really a panegyric upon her virtues and loveliness of character and was written by General Jackson himself. The slab over his grave contains a simple record of his life: the date of his birth and the time of his death. There is something stern and taciturn about the directness and brevity that is in keeping with the character of the man whose memory it commemorates.

The seclusion desired for the Hermitage by its builder has been retained through the years. Only twice have the affairs of the outside world surged so close as to interrupt its tranquility.

In the 1860's its peacefulness was broken by the incessant rumble of wagons and the heavy thud of soldiers marching down the Lebanon Road. Sarah Yorke Jackson, an old woman, with five sons and nephews in the Confederate Army, sat alone on the Hermitage porch. Through the cedar-lined vista she could see groups of men hurrying to and fro. In the enveloping cloud of dust it was often difficult to tell whether they wore uniforms of blue or gray. Sometimes there was a startling report from a lone gunner scouting in the Hermitage woods, or the low thunder of conflict becoming louder and more frequent in the vicinity of Nashville. Just below the plantation there came a clash on Stone's River, so near and so violent that the gray walls of the Hermitage shuddered and gave back the echo of the battle.

Then again, in 1917, the quiet of the countryside was shattered by strange, discordant sounds. Almost overnight a town sprang up on the Cumberland River at Hadley's Bend about a mile from the Hermitage. The peaceful landscape that had never known anything more disfiguring than the timid smoke from a sawmill or the trailing clouds that marked the progress of a steamboat down the river was now soiled with the smoke that poured from chimneys of hurriedly constructed buildings clambering over the bluffs. The town was called "Old Hickory," a name that continues since the manufacture of war munitions has given way to the more peaceful product of rayon silk.

The conglomerate crowd that assembled so quickly at "Old Hickory" in the summer of 1917 was made up of men, women and children from every walk of life, representing every nationality that



ORIGINAL CABINS AT "THE HERMITAGE"

JACKSON'S HERMITAGE

had come to call themselves Americans. Night and day they worked furiously helping to keep loaded trains, trucks and boats that fed the transports hastening munitions to an allied army to which a million and a half Americans were answering the call to "help make the world safe for Democracy."

As the stream of heavily loaded trucks rumbled along a road that divides sections of the original farm, could he have known, the significance of the hour would have thrilled the old warrior sleeping in the Hermitage garden.



Banning and Allied Families

BY E. D. CLEMENTS, PROVIDENCE, RHODE ISLAND



THE name Banning is one of greatest antiquity. It is of Danish origin, applying in early times to a class called hero worshippers, and signifying a home or dwelling. Reference to it is found in the "Scot and Bard Songs," the earliest ballads on record, where it says "Becca ruled the Banning." This Becca was, no doubt, the hero or ruler of the Banning clan of Vikings.

The distinctive Ango-Saxon termination *ing* has always marked the name, and in general it has suffered very slight changes throughout its many hundred years of existence and travel into different countries. Whatever changes have occurred are due to misspelling or to the natural accommodations to the languages. In Holland there appears Banningh, Banningk, Bannick, and earlier, Benningh, Benningk, and Bennick. In Denmark many Bannings live to this day, no doubt, descendants of the first Bannings known, and in England there are found Bayninge, Banninge, and Baninge. Germany shows Bonning, Banninger, Baninger, Behning, Benning, while in this country is Branning, formerly De Branning, a French variety, and from Iceland come Bannon, Bannin, Branigan, and others of similar sound.

Banning Arms—Argent, two bars sable, each charged with as many escallops or.

Crest—On a mount vert, an ostrich argent, holding in the mouth a key or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

It is supposed that about the fourth or fifth century some of the Bannings migrated from their native place, now known as Denmark, to what is at present Holland, which was but a few miles distant. Here they must have lived for nearly a thousand years before coming into prominence; at least no trace of the name has been found in history until about 1386, when Gerrit Banningh, a cloth merchant of Nienwendyk, who came from a hamlet named Banningh by the Stadt of De Venter, and finally located in Amsterdam, is mentioned as being the progenitor of the Banning families in Holland, who governed that country to a greater or less extent for nearly three hundred years.

Rembrandt's famous painting, the "Night Watch," shows as the



Barring

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

central figure Captain Franz Banning-Coq, who, although dying at an early age, made his power and influence felt in a most wonderful way. This picture is generally supposed to represent a rally of the guard at night from the guardhouse, which a name on the picture states, but in fact represents the members of a gun club as they are about to leave their old quarters just prior to moving into their new quarters on Singel Street. This picture was painted in 1642. The name was given it when the picture was discovered many years after it had been painted, in an old attic, and the real purport of the picture was unknown, but recent discoveries establish the above statement as to its meaning. At that time it was customary for prominent organizations to have paintings made of their members in groups. Franz Banning's mother was a Banning of the noble families, and married an apothecary named Coq, from Bremen, against the wishes of her parents. Their son, Franz, of his own accord, prefixed his last name by his mother's name, Banning, making it a hyphenated name.

From Holland, Franz Banning-Coq went to Basel, where he studied law. Returning to Amsterdam he soon became an alderman, then a magistrate, and in a short time burgomaster. The King of France raised him to a nobility. He built the building now used as the King's Palace, but which at that time was the city hall or governor's headquarters. He died at an early age, childless, in the midst of an already wonderful career.

Another famous painting by Van der Helst, entitled "Celebrating the Peace of Munster, or Conclusion of the 30 Year War," which hangs alongside of the "Night Watch" in the Royal Museum at Amsterdam, has as its central figure Jacob Banning, the standard bearer, which pictures the members of a gun club gathered at a banquet to celebrate the Westphalian Peace in 1648.

At some unknown date, probably about 1500, the Bannings went to England and settled at what is now called Banningham in Norfolk. At the present time no traces of the Bannings can be found there, but they are clearly traceable to Midland and London, from which places the different branches now in existence seem to have come.

The Bannings in England became prominent in military and social life during the sixteenth century, taking an active part in the Crusade to the Holy Land. Two peerages were created, both becoming

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

extinct in the seventeenth century. The first peerage was conferred on Sir Paul Bayning, Lord Mayor of London, who, in his Patent of Nobility, reverted to the original spelling Banning, and became Viscount Banning. His country seat was near Banningham, in Norfolk.

One branch of the family in England is about extinct, there being but one male member now living, and it is thought his only son is dead. Another branch has for many years been of local importance, having for several generations held in the family the highly coveted office of postmaster of Liverpool, besides other positions of importance in the governmental service.

Sometime in the seventeenth century Bannings came, supposedly from England, Ireland, Scotland, and elsewhere to America. As to the places from which they came nothing is definitely known with one exception, but some of them are thought to have come from Midland or London. It seems almost certain that the first Bannings in America came from England, Ireland, Scotland, as the given names are English, or at least more common in England than elsewhere, *e. g.*, Edward, James, John, and Samuel. Sometime prior to 1678 an Edward Banning settled in Talbot County, Maryland, which was but a few years after Lord Baltimore was granted a charter for colonization purposes by the King of England. About 1700 there is record of a James Banning being in the same county that Edward Banning came to. About this same time two other Bannings are known of in or near Lyme, Connecticut, by name Samuel and John Banning. These last three by tradition are supposed to have been brothers, which, if a fact, makes it more than likely that they were sons of Edward Banning, of Talbot County, Maryland. Some forty odd years later a Benoni Banning settled in Talbot County, Maryland. He came from Dublin, Ireland, to which place his father is thought to have come from Scotland or England, but about 1790 John Banning, who was born August 15, 1760, in Stafford, England, came to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. His son, Daniel, lived in Pittsburgh or Philadelphia, but of his descendants nothing is known. There is in Los Angeles County, California, and in Pennsylvania, a town named Banning, and in California a military camp by that name.

Some years after James Banning, and about the time Benoni Banning was known of in Maryland, there appeared Bannings in Delaware. It is not unlikely that they may have come from those in Mary-

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

land, as these two states are geographically one, but if they did not, it is possible that they migrated from Holland, where there were so many Bannings. From the names of some of their descendants, it is contended that they are of Dutch origin, and as Delaware was early settled by the Dutch, this may be the case. From the Delaware Bannings there have come two branches, one a branch in California, and a branch now in Delaware and Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. There is a strong likelihood that Phineas Banning was a brother of Benoni Banning, and his brother, James Banning, who came to Talbot County, Maryland.

Paul Bayning was a citizen and alderman of London, and one of the sheriffs of that city in 1593. He accumulated a very great fortune by merchandizing. So advantageous was trade even in its infancy, that Sir Thomas Gresham, Sir Andrew Judde, Thomas Sutton, founder of the Charterhouse, and our two brothers, Paul and Andrew, laid by immense and incredible riches. These two have a monument erected to their memory in the chancel of the Church of St. Olave, Hart Street. Paul Bayning died either September 3 or October 1, 1616, and was buried in St. Olave's Church, above mentioned, leaving his only son and heir, Sir Paul Bayning, Knight, then aged upwards of thirty.

Sir Paul Bayning was created a Baronet, November 25, 1612, constituted sheriff of Essex in 1617, advanced to the title of Baron Bayning, of Horksley, in Essex, February 27, 1627-28, and to the further dignity of Viscount Sudbury, in Suffolk, March 8, 1627-28. He died at his house on Mark Lane, July 29, 1629, possessed of a very large real estate.

For examples of the sheer power of indomitable wills, fierce courage, and unconquerable persistence in the moulding of careers out of the untried resources of virgin fields, we must turn to the Great West and Middle West. No other section of our country has given us such shining examples of work of strong men, true in coping with the almost overwhelming forces of nature and circumstance. The history of the Western Reserve is one of romance and achievement incomparable with that of any other part of the country. "Self-made, self-reliant, sturdy and rugged men have been its product, and it is to these men that the upbuilding and development of the West into the important factor in the world's work which it is today is due." To every man who has contributed a share toward the great task of bringing the

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

West out of a vast wilderness, teeming with opportunity, yet offering untold resistance before it was harnessed to the uses of man, is due a deep gratitude and thankfulness, which can be no more adequately expressed than in preserving for later generations the story of his work and achievement.

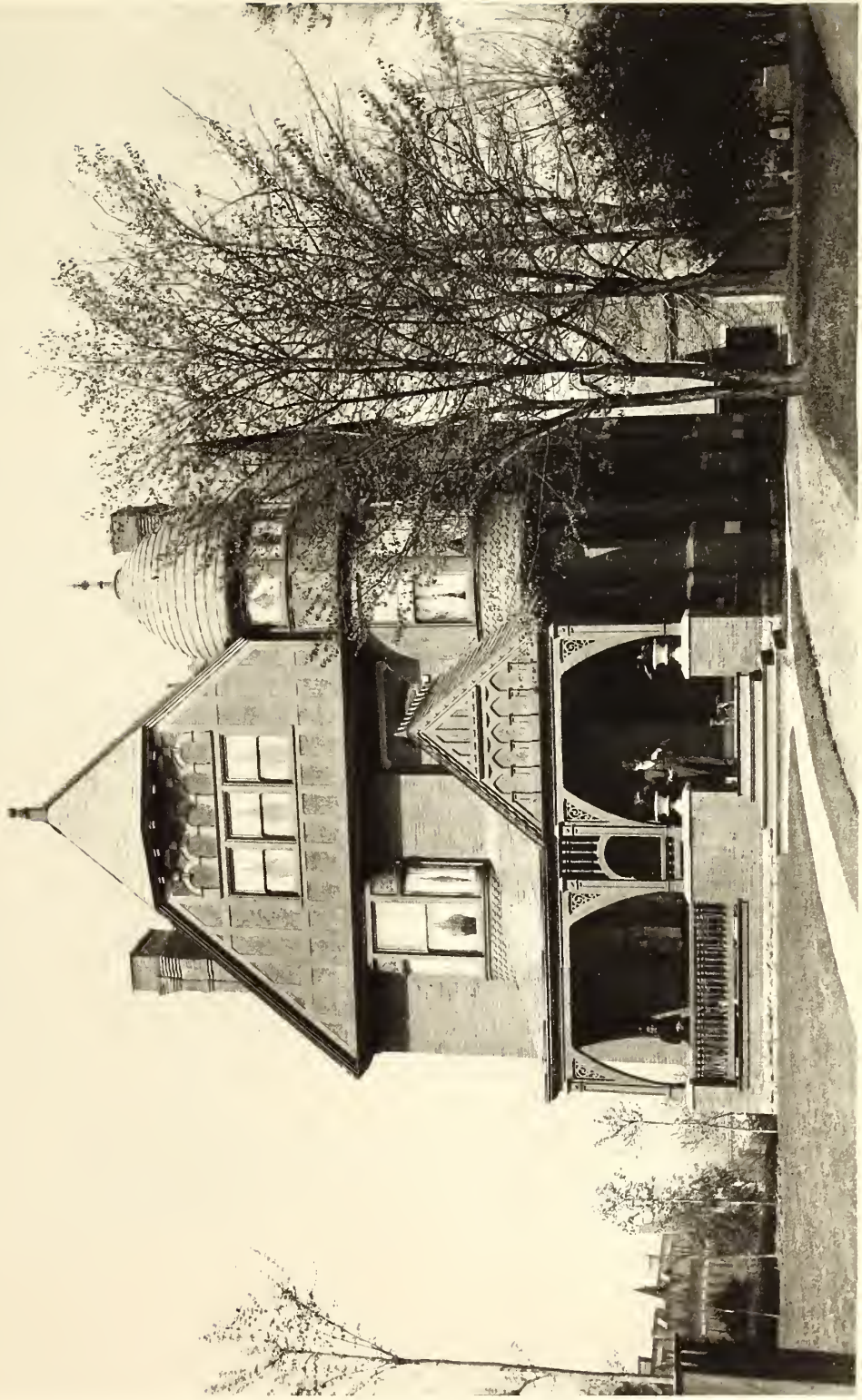
Since the opening of the Western Reserve to settlers, the family of Banning has been prominent. The late David Banning, one of the prominent business men and financiers of the city of Cincinnati, Ohio, during the latter and middle decades of the nineteenth century, was a descendant in the third generation.

(Z. Armstrong: "Notable Southern Families," Vol. I, pp. 25-26. Herr Elias: "De Vroedschatap Van Amsterdam" (published by Vincent Loosjes, about 1895, in Haarlem, Holland), two vols. P. Morant: "The History and Antiquities of the County of Essex," Vol. II, pp. 93, 95.)

I. Samuel Banning, of Lyme, Connecticut, in common with the traditions of other Bannings, is believed to have come from his native England to America, about 1700, being one of three brothers. He located in or near Lyme, Connecticut, upon his arrival in America, where, like John Banning, many of his descendants are to be found to this day, while not a few have scattered to New York State, Ohio, California, and elsewhere. Among the descendants of this line a considerable number of those of most brilliant attainments can be found; this includes medical, musical and scholarly lines, and has established a high average among them. He moved from Lyme to East Hartland, Connecticut. He was killed by lightning and is buried in East Hartland. Children: 1. Elizabeth. 2. Samuel, of whom further. 3. Abner. 4. David.

(Records in possession of the family.)

II. Samuel (2) Banning was son of Samuel Banning. In the records of his descendants, he was born in Lyme, Connecticut, about 1710, and moved to East Hartland, Connecticut, about 1765, where he died on the farm of his son, David, about 1800, being buried at East Hartland, Connecticut. He married two or three times, having in all ten children—sons, Samuel, Abner, and David; daughters, Irene, Rhoda, and Rebecca, and four daughters whose names have not been ascertained. Careful examination of records on the family which have come



BANNING RESIDENCE
CINCINNATI, OHIO

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

to notice, lead us to believe that he is the Samuel who was born in 1713, and died at Hartland, Connecticut, April 22, 1803, aged ninety. Elenora Banning, widow of Samuel, died September 29, 1803, in Hartland, Connecticut. The Hartland, Connecticut, First Church was organized May 1, 1768, and among the members was Elenora Banning. Children (probable): 1. Samuel, probably identical with the Samuel whose wife, Abigail, was received into the church at Lyme, Connecticut, June 4, 1769. 2. Abner, of whom further. 3. David. 4. Irene. 5. Rhoda, probably the Rhoda who married, October 15, 1780, Phineas Coe. 6. Rebecca, probably the Rebecca who married, in March, 1786, Daniel Bushell (Bushnell). Four daughters, names unknown.

(F. W. Bailey. "Early Connecticut Marriages," Vol. V, p. 79. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LX, pp. 392, 393; Vol. LXI, p. 34. Records in possession of the family.)

III. Abner Banning, son of Samuel (2) Banning, was born in East Hartland, Connecticut, about 1755. He served in the Revolutionary War, in the 18th Regiment of Militia of Connecticut (at New York in 1776), from August 18 to September 14 (from the date of arrival in New York to his discharge there) in Captain Benjamin Hutchen's company. His war record is given under the name "Abner Bannin." "Abner Banning and his wife were recommended to the First Church, Windsor, Connecticut, October 3, 1779." He is listed in the census of 1790 as of Litchfield Town, Litchfield County, Connecticut, with five sons under sixteen and three females in his family. Other Bannings then listed in Litchfield were Samuel and David Banning, both with families. Abner Banning married, in the First Church of Christ, East Haddam, April 3, 1777, Annah (Annar) Sparrow. (Sparrow VI.) Children: 1. Malinda. 2. Benjamin. 3. Ashel, of whom further. 4. Morgan, probably took up land in Vernon, Ohio, in 1802, his farm being near that of Thomas Thompson. 5. Calvin. 6. Samuel.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LX, p. 398. "Connecticut Men in the Revolution," p. 472. F. W. Bailey: "Early Connecticut Marriages," Vol. VI, p. 125. "United States Census of Connecticut, of 1790," pp. 62, 69. Records in possession of the family." H. T. Upton: "History of Trumbull County, Ohio," Vol. I, p. 577.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Ashel (Arbel) Banning, son of Abner and Annah (Sparrow) Banning, was born in East Hartland, Connecticut, June 22, 1780, and died in Gustavus, Ohio, the result of being struck on the head by falling timber, May 7, 1873. He married (first), shortly after coming to Ohio, Amelia Wilcox, and they settled in Vernon. He married (second) Dency Crosby, born April 22, 1791, died in Gustavus, Ohio, February 25, 1868. They lived in Vernon, Ohio. Children of the first marriage: 1. Abner Wilcox. 2. Amelia. 3. Melinda. Children of the second marriage: 4. David, of whom further. 5. Jeremiah W., deceased. 6. Timothy, deceased. 7. Mary A., deceased, who became the wife of Benjamin H. Peabody. 8. Converse. 9. Stoddard, of Geneva, Ohio, deceased. 10. Malinda; married Newton Robens, deceased.

(Records in possession of the family.)

V. David Banning, son of Ashel and Dency (Crosby) Banning, was born in Vernon, Ohio, April 11, 1819. He spent his childhood in the healthy atmosphere of his father's large farm, and received his education in the local district schools. He was a boy of studious tastes, a constant reader, and constant searcher after knowledge, and these characteristics remained with him during his long life. After completing the decidedly inadequate course which the public school offered, he continued his education during his spare hours at home and at work. David Banning secured his first employment in a general store in his native town operated by Stoddard Stevens, and here he acted in the capacity of clerk for a few years. Leaving the employ of Stoddard Stevens, he spent a period in the employ of the Federal Government.

David Banning's connection with the city of Cincinnati, Ohio, dated from April, 1847, when the city gave but faint indications of the splendid future which was before it, and the great proportions to which it would grow. He watched carefully the steady growth of its great industries and commercial enterprises, playing a quiet and effective part in the great work. His arrival in Cincinnati antedated the laying of the first railroad in that section of the State. Shortly after his coming to the city he entered on his first business venture, forming a partnership with his brother, Jeremiah W. Banning. The two embarked in a commission business, with their headquarters located on Walnut Street, between Front and Second streets. The business met

CROSBY

Arms—Sable a chevron ermine, between three rams passant argent.

Crest—A ram as in the arms.

(Bolton: "American Armory.")

Motto—Liberty under thy guidance, the guidance of the lamb of God.
(Used by the family.)

CROSSI

Wm. Crossi, a Boston merchant, first seen three years past.

1841.

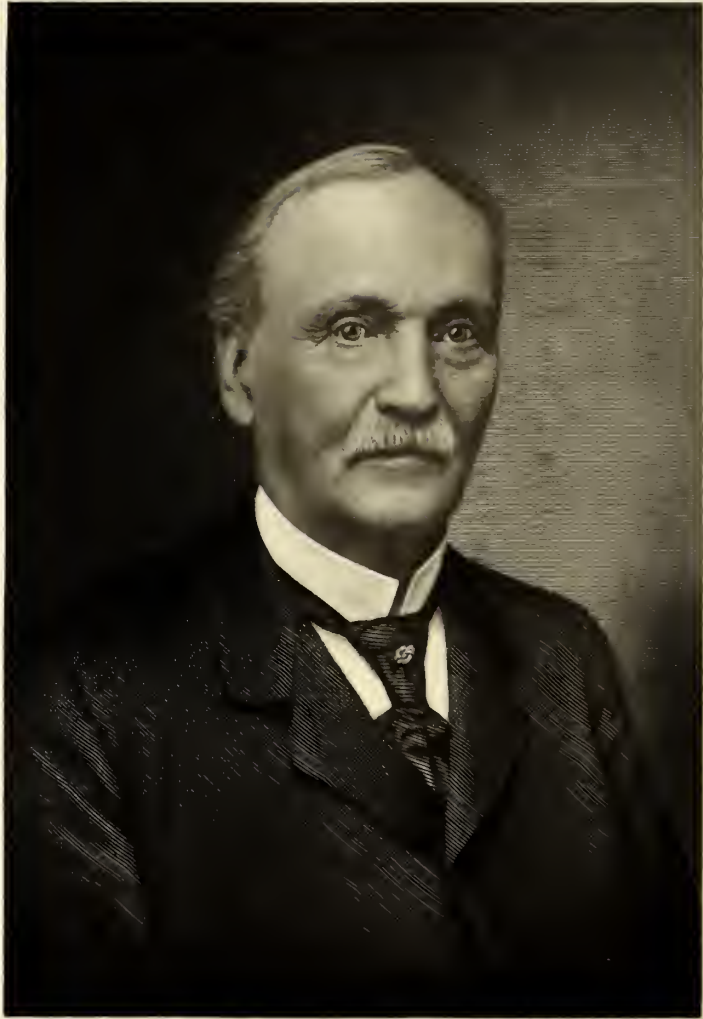
(Boston: American Antiquary.)

Wm. Crossi, a Boston merchant, first seen three years past.

(Set by the family.)



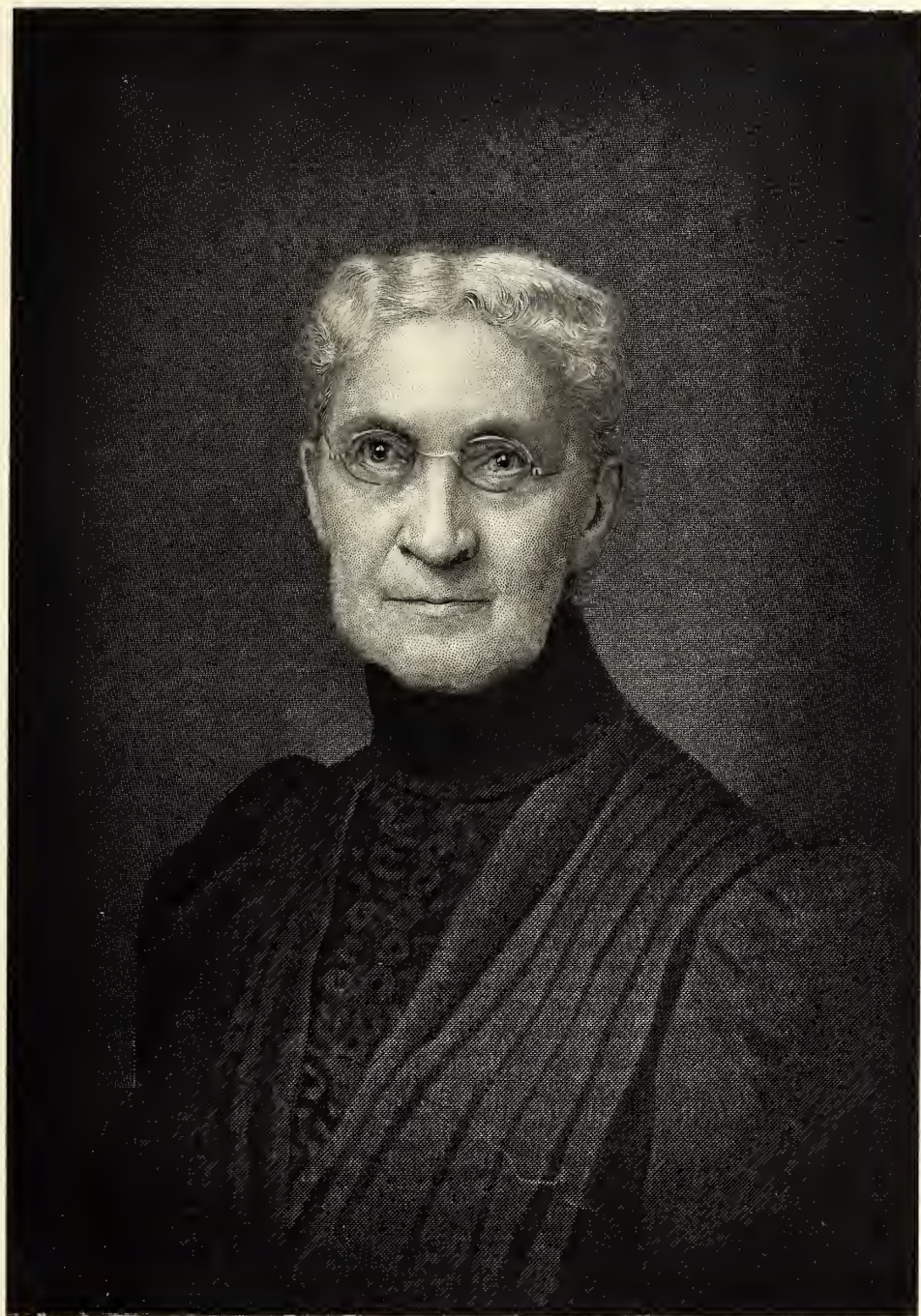
Crosby



American Historical Society

Engraved by F. A. Cummings

David Banning



Asenath C. Banning

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

with a high degree of success, and after a short period the partnership was dissolved, the two brothers thenceforth conducting their operations separately.

Mr. Banning immediately organized another business, which for a period of twenty-five years he continued to direct. From comparatively obscure beginnings, through the business talent and constructive policies of management of Mr. Banning, the business grew to large proportions, and occupied a position of importance among the largest enterprises of its kind in the city of Cincinnati. He was eminently fitted for business life, and the handling of large affairs, by reason of his ability to judge clearly and quickly the relative merits of any proposition brought before him, by his breadth of vision, and his persistence, once his decision to act had been taken. He was a business man of the self-made type, a man of broad tolerance and human understanding, a leader who was instinctively obeyed. He invited and received the confidence of his employees, many of whom he advised, and many of whom he aided toward independent business ventures. He easily inspired confidence and support, first through the marked and well known honesty of his dealings, and second through the success of all his undertakings. David Banning was known throughout the city of Cincinnati and the larger commercial cities of Ohio as a man of the strictest integrity. Although not connected actively nor officially with the public life of the city of Cincinnati, Mr. Banning was, nevertheless, a factor of importance in the city's growth and development. He was looked to as one of its foremost citizens, and accorded a place as such. He was connected in executive capacities with many of the large financial and commercial enterprises of the city, and was for thirty-two years a member of the board of directors of the Fourth National Bank of Cincinnati, his connection with that institution dating from its founding, in which he took an active interest.

Mr. Banning was a Republican in political affiliations, and kept well abreast of the times, though he took no active part in the political life of the city. He was active, however, in social and fraternal interests. The names of his friends were legion, and his death, which occurred in Cincinnati, March 8, 1901, was the cause of deep-felt and widespread grief.

David Banning married, in Erie, Pennsylvania, April 28, 1847, Asenath Crosby Bradley. (Bradley VIII.) Children: 1. Charles,

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

deceased. 2. Blanche, deceased. 3. Kate. 4. Starr, deceased. 5. Harry, deceased. 6. William, twin of Harry, deceased.

(Records in possession of the family.)

(The Bradley Line)

Arms—Gules, a chevron argent between three boars' heads coupé or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

A local name, Bradley is found largely in Yorkshire, Gloucestershire, Lincolnshire, Wiltshire, and Staffordshire, where it is known to signify the Broadlea, from the old English *brad* and *leah*. Bradley is the name of parishes and towns in Berkshire, Cheshire, Derbyshire, Leicestershire, Lincolnshire, Staffordshire, and Hampshire. The first mention in England of the name Bradley is in 1183 at the feast of St. Cuthbert in Lent, when the Lord Hugh, Bishop of Durham, caused to be described all the revenues of his bishopric. The survey of Hugh Pudsey, called Bolton Duke, mentions in Wolsingham, Roger de Bradley, who held forty acres at Bradley. The family in England has been one of the first in importance for many centuries. In the "Visitation of Yorkshire," 1563-64, there is mention of Isabel, daughter of Sir Francis Bradley, who married Arthur Normanton, of Yorkshire. John Bradley was bishop of Shaftsbury in 1539. Alexander Bradley resided in the see of Durham in 1578, and about the same time Cuthbertus Bradley was curate of Barbardi Castle.

In an account of the Pudsey family of Bolton, County York, is found the following note: "John de Podeshay was killed on Joucros' Moor in 1279. Walter de Bradeleghe of Carleton, in Craven, was present."

Robert de Bradeleye was of County Cambridge in 1273. Brice de Bradeleghe was of County Somerset in 1273. William de Bradeleghe was of County Devon, *temp.* Henry III; Wilhelmus Brodeleghe, of Yorkshire, in 1379; Agnes Bradeley, of Yorkshire, in 1379; Richard de Bradleghe, of County Somerset, 1 Edward III; Henry de Bradeleye, County Somerset, 1 Edward III.

In Ravenser, County York, in 1297, was William de Bradeley, while John de Bradeley was of Staynelay (Stainley), County York, at the same time. Emma de Bradley was of Thornton, as was Roger de Bradley. In 1344 Robert Bradeley was living at Holton, County York, England, where his name appears in the case of John de Pude-



Bradley

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

say against Richard de Shotelesworth. In 1394 John, Lord of Coven, granted his manor in Coven with all of his lands to John Bradley, of Penkrich, and William de Hyde, of Brewood, for which they are to pay him a rose at midsummer. John Bradley was of Labrone or Harmbeye, County York, in 1550; Thomas Bradley, of Wadyngton, County York, in 1555; and Richard Bradley and Ann, his wife, were of Bradford, County York, in 1569. John Bradley, of the Bradleys of Berkshire, was in King Henry VIII's army upon an English expedition to France. Thomas Bradley, born in 1598, was chaplain to Charles I, and rector of Ackworth. A great Royalist, he was expelled from his livings during the period of the Commonwealth, but they were returned at the restoration.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." S. B. Doggett: "History of the Bradlee Family," pp. 6-7. "Genealogical and Family History of Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 1061.)

There is a theory which, however, lacks positive proof, that William Bradley, of New Haven, Connecticut, the first definite known ancestor of the line of our interest, was descended from William Bradley, of Sheriff-Hutton, County York, England, as follows:

William Bradley, of the city of Coventry, County Warwick, son of William Bradley, married Agnes Margate. They had: 1. Francis; married Francesca Watkins. 2. Thomas; married Maria Cotes. 3. William, of whom further.

William Bradley, son of William and Agnes (Margate) Bradley, was born in Coventry, England. He married Johanna Waddington. Children: 1. William, believed to be the American progenitor. 2. Anna. 3. Magdalen. 4. Elizabeth. 5. Letticia. 6. An infant, born September 1, 1619.

(J. P. Bradley: "Family Notes Respecting the Bradley Family of Fairfield," p. 65.)

The "New England Historical and Genealogical Register" advances another theory concerning the ancestry of William Bradley, the American progenitor. The first Bradleys are said to have come from the market town of Bingley in the West Riding of Yorkshire, about twelve miles northeast of Leeds on the River Aire. The father of the first emigrant is not known, nor is the name of his first wife. His second

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

wife, Elizabeth, came to America with children: William, Daniel, Joshua, Ellen, Nathan, and Stephen. Later she married (second) John Parmelee, who died November 8, 1659; and married (third), May 27, 1663, John Evarts, who died May 10, 1669. She died in January, 1683. Both of her American husbands were Guilford men. Mrs. Bradley is said to have come over in 1648. All the first generation here given are Elizabeth Bradley's children and stepchildren: 1. William, of whom further. 2. Daniel, died unmarried in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1658. 3. Joshua, of New Haven. 4. Ellen; married, October 14, 1652, John Allin. 5. Nathan, born in 1638, died in Guilford, Connecticut, November 10, 1713; married (first), in 1668, Hester; (second), August 21, 1694, Hannah (Munson) Tuttle; (third), May 16, 1698, Rachel Strong. 6. Captain Stephen, born in 1642, died in Guilford, Connecticut, June 20, 1701; married (first), November 9, 1663, Hannah Smith, of New Haven; (second) Mrs. Mary Leete.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LVII, p. 134.)

I. William Bradley, first definitely known ancestor of this Bradley family, was born in England, about 1620, and died in 1690. He settled in New Haven and took the oath of allegiance there in 1644. William Bradley married, in New Haven, Connecticut, February 18, 1645, Alice Pritchard. (Pritchard II.) Children: 1. Joseph, baptized January 4, 1646, died in 1705; married, October 25, 1667, Silence Brockett. 2. Martha, baptized in October, 1648; married (first), October 26, 1665, Samuel Munson; (second), about 1694, Eliasaph Preston; (third) Matthew Sherman. 3. Abraham, of whom further. 4. Mary, baptized May 1, 1652 (New Haven records say April 30, 1653), died September 26, 1724; married, November 26, 1668, Samuel Todd. 5. Benjamin, baptized April 8-12, 1657, died in 1728; married (first), October 29, 1677, Elizabeth Thompson; (second), August 12, 1719, Mary Sackett; (third) Sarah (Johnson) Wolcott, who married (third) David Perkins. 6. Esther (or Hester), baptized November 25, 1659 (New Haven records say September 29, 1659), died young. 7. Nathaniel, born February 26, 1660, died August 17, 1743; married (first), in 1687-88, Ruth Dickerman;

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(second) Mercy (Mansfield) Thompson. 8. Sarah, baptized June 21-23, 1665; married, May 23, 1682, Samuel Brockett.

(“New Haven Colonial Records,” p. 139. D. L. Jacobus: “Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut,” Vol. II, pp. 261-62. “New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LVII, p. 136.)

II. Deacon Abraham Bradley, son of William and Alice (Pritchard) Bradley, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, October 24, 1650, baptized October 1, 1651, and died October 19, 1718, aged sixty-eight years. His will, dated December 5, 1716, and proved in New Haven Probate Court, November 18, 1718, contained the following clause: “As a token of my love to ye first church of Christ in New Haven I give my silver cup, or the value of it, to be improved at ye Lord’s table; yt is after my decease.” Abraham Bradley was a deacon in the First (now called Center) Church of New Haven, Connecticut, and at one time was justice of the peace. Abraham Bradley married, December 25, 1673, Hannah Thompson, born September 22, 1654, died October 26, 1718, aged sixty-four, daughter of John and Ellen (Harrison) Thompson. Children, born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Daniel, born in 1679, died November 2, 1723; married, January 16, 1702, Sarah Bassett, who married (second) Isaac Johnson. 3. Hannah, born November 8, 1682, died October 27, 1768; married, January 14, 1703, Japhet Mansfield. 4. Lydia, born November 28, 1685, died in 1757; married, September 21, 1704, Thomas Punderson. 5. Ebenezer, born September or November 9, 1689, died October 10, 1763; married (first), August 19, 1719, Joanna Atwater; (second), in 1751, Rebecca Stone. 6. Abraham, born April 9, 1693, died in 1758; married, October 15, 1719, Sarah Wilmot. 7. Esther, born March 14 or 19, 1696; married, December 7, 1716, Samuel Gold.

(D. L. Jacobus: “Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut,” Vol. II, pp. 261-62. “New Haven Vital Records,” Vol. I, p. 6. “New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LVII, p. 136.)

III. John Bradley, son of Deacon Abraham and Hannah (Thompson) Bradley, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, October 12, 1674, and died there, August 13, 1747. He married, September 22, 1698, Sarah Holt. (Holt III.) Children: 1. Enos, of whom fur-

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

ther. 2. John, born September 10, 1702, died November 29, 1772; married, December 4, 1729, Elizabeth Peck. 3. Dorcas, born November 4, 1704; married William Adee. 4. Captain Jason, born August 10, 1708, died May 31, 1768; married, February 28, 1733-34, Sarah Thomas. 5. Jehiel, born September 19, 1710; married, October 5, 1743, Rachel Kinney, of Elizabeth, New Jersey. 6. Phineas, born September 28, 1714, died December 30, 1779 or 1780; married, April 24, 1740, Martha Sherman. 7. Elizabeth, born October 12, 1719; married, June 1, 1738, Richard Sperry. 8. Susanna, born January 21, 1722-23; married, December 13, 1744, Phineas Perkins.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. II, pp. 261, 264-67. S. Orcutt: "History of Derby, Connecticut," p. 704. "New Haven Vital Records," Vol. I, p. 40.)

IV. Enos Bradley, son of John and Sarah (Holt) Bradley, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, December 28, 1699, and lived in New Haven. He married, December 21, 1721, Ellen Skidmore. (Skidmore IV.) Children: 1. Sibyl, born November 8, 1722. 2. Griffin, born November 9, 1724; married Mabel Thompson, sister of wife of Ariel. 3. Enos, born December 20, 1726; married, November 9, 1751, Hannah Pierson. 4. Ariel, of whom further. 5. Ellen, born November 4, 1731, perhaps died soon. 6. Gamaliel, born February 19, 1734; married, March 8, 1759, Hannah Dean. 7. Oliver, born November 1, 1736. 8. (Perhaps) Ellen, baptized in April, 1740.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 265. S. Orcutt: "History of Derby, Connecticut," p. 704. "New Haven Vital Records," Vol. I, p. 84.)

V. Ariel Bradley, son of Enos and Ellen (Skidmore) Bradley, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, March 8, 1729, and removed to New York State. He married (first), November 7, 1751, Amy Thompson. (Thompson V.) He married (second) Mary (Bird) Peck, daughter of Joseph and Dorcas (Norton) Bird, and widow of Dr. Peck. In 1751, Litchfield County was formed from New Haven, and Salisbury, where Ariel Bradley's children were born, fell in Litchfield. Children of the first marriage, born in Salisbury, Connecticut: 1. Thaddeus, born June 8, 1752. 2. Anne, born June 10, 1754, died in infancy. 3. *James*, of whom further. 4. Ann, born

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

November 9, 1763. 5. Ariel, born about 1767, died in Ohio, in 1857; married Chloe Lane.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 265. I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of Bird Family," pp. 14, 21. "Historical Collection, Salisbury, Connecticut," Vol. I, p. 34.)

VI. Captain James Bradley, son of Ariel and Amy (Thompson) Bradley, was born in Salisbury, Litchfield County, Connecticut, June 17, 1755-56, and died in Johnston, Ohio, March 3, 1817. The first settlers of the township of Johnston, Trumbull County, Ohio, were a family of Bradley, consisting of Captain James Bradley, his wife, Asenath, and their three sons. They left their native town, Salisbury, Connecticut, June 7, 1803, on a journey of five or six hundred miles before they made a stop. They remained at Canfield in Trumbull County for a few days to visit friends and former acquaintances and then resumed their journey, making their way from one clearing to another. After a few days, Captain Bradley settled on a lot a little west of the center of the township, but finally removed to a farm in the west part. Here he spent the remainder of his life. In 1790, however (according to the 1790 census of Vermont), he was in Salisbury, Addison County, Vermont, and in 1788 was treasurer of the town. Salisbury was undoubtedly named for Salisbury, Connecticut, from which place many of the original grantees of land in Salisbury, Addison County, Vermont, came. Before starting for the trek west, he appears to have come by the town of his birth for an interim. His children were all born in Vermont. James Bradley enlisted from Salisbury, Connecticut, for the term of the Revolutionary War. He enlisted May 31, 1777, became corporal in 1780, and sergeant January 1, 1781.

Captain James Bradley married Asenath Bird. (Bird VI.) Children, born in Vermont: 1. Thaddeus, born February 11, 1787, died October 7, 1865; married Elizabeth Hine, born in Connecticut, February 16, 1790; children: i. Mary. ii. James. iii. Timothy. iv. Dr. Moore C. v. Lester. vi. Myron. 2. Dr. Moore Bird, of whom further. 3. Dr. Ariel, born in July, 1792, died in Johnston Township, Trumbull County, Ohio, October 7, 1859; married Laura L. Barstow, daughter of Joseph and Betsey Barstow, natives of Sharon, Connecticut.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(H. Z. Williams & Bro.: "History of Trumbull and Mahoning Counties, Ohio," Vol. II, pp. 401, 407-08. H. T. Upton: "A Twentieth Century History of Trumbull County, Ohio," Vol. I, pp. 508-09. H. Child: "Gazetteer of Addison County, Vermont," pp. 203-04. "Census of Vermont of 1790." "Historical Collection, Salisbury, Connecticut," Vol. I, p. 34. "Connecticut Men in the Revolution and War of 1812," pp. 339, 355, 560, 564.)

VII. Dr. Moore Bird Bradley, son of Captain James and Asenath (Bird) Bradley, was born in Vermont, May 28, 1790, and died in Pennsylvania, February 16, 1841, and is buried in Waterford. He came with his parents to Johnston, Trumbull County, Ohio, and after laboring for a time on his father's farm, he turned his attention to medicine, and was first medical student under Dr. Peter Allen. He practiced in Mansfield, Richland County, and later, undoubtedly desirous of establishing himself among a larger population, he went to Pennsylvania, where he attained a leading professional place. His arrival in Waterford, Erie County, Pennsylvania, was some time prior to 1827, since "a Protestant Episcopal Church was organized in Waterford in 1827, Rev. Bennett Glover, first pastor, and Dr. M. B. Bradley, John Vincent, Timothy Judson and others being elected the first officers." We find in the census of Erie County, Pennsylvania, of 1840, Dr. Bradley listed as follows:

M. Bradley,	one male between	10 and	15
"	"	"	50 and 60
"	female	"	15 and 20
"	"	"	20 and 30
"	"	"	30 and 40

While the above proves the residence of Dr. Moore Bird Bradley, it gives incomplete records, of course, of his family, but these have been preserved by his descendants. In the light of the knowledge regarding his children as shown by these records of the family, it would appear that either the above census record was incomplete or that some of Dr. Bradley's children were living elsewhere than under the parental roof; also that the female listed as "between 20 and 30" was not of his immediate family.

Dr. Moore Bird Bradley married (first), December 8, 1817, Reumah Crosby, born, according to family records, December 30, 1792, died July 23, 1831. He married (second), in Erie County,

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Pennsylvania, May 23, 1839, Phebe Vincent, born March 23, 1803, daughter of Bethuel and Martha (Himrod) Vincent. The Vincent family were Huguenots, the ancestor, John Vincent, settling in New York, after having been driven from France to England, after the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes. He had a son, Levi, who settled in Newark Township, Essex County, New Jersey, and who married Esther De Vaux, and who was the father of John. The latter (John Vincent) married Elizabeth Doremus and had a son, Cornelius, who married Phebe Ward, and they were the parents of Bethuel. Bethuel Vincent married (first), January 1, 1788, Martha Himrod, who died August 10, 1806, and by her had Phebe, mentioned above, who married Dr. Moore Bird Bradley. Soon after his death, Dr. Bradley's widow married (second), July 9, 1846, William Himrod, born in Turbot, Northumberland County, Pennsylvania, May 19, 1791. They had Fred M., born in Chicago, Illinois, August 28, 1854. Children of Dr. Bradley, all but the last of his first marriage: 1. Myron Holley, born December 26, 1818, died September 5, 1822. 2. Olivia Cordelia Crittenden, born September 1, 1820, died December 31, 1821. 3. Olivia Cordelia Crittenden, born July 22, 1822, died March 12, 1823. 4. Asenath Crosby, of whom further. 5. Erasmus Darwin, born January 19, 1828. 6. Ariel Bird, born in December, 1831. 7. Moore Bird (2), born September 4, 1840.

Crosby Arms—Sable a chevron ermine, between three rams passant argent.

Crest—A ram as in the arms.

(Bolton: "American Armory.")

Motto—Liberty under thy guidance, the guidance of the lamb of God.

(Used by the family.)

(H. Z. Williams & Bro.: "History of Trumbull and Mahoning Counties, Ohio," Vol. II, pp. 401, 408. Laura G. Sanford: "History of Erie County, Pennsylvania," p. 184. "Census of 1840, Waterford Township, Erie County, Pennsylvania," p. 2; of 1850, p. 625. "Old Northwest Genealogical Quarterly," Vol. XV, p. 132. Family data. Volume published by Boyd Vincent, of Chicago, printed for private circulation, pp. 1-55.)

VIII. Asenath Crosby Bradley, daughter of Dr. Moore Bird and Reumah (Crosby) Bradley, was born June 16, 1824, and died in Cincinnati, Ohio, November 13, 1909. She is evidently the daughter listed in the 1840 census of Waterford as "between 15 and 20." She married David Banning. (Banning V.)

("Census of 1850, Waterford Township, Erie County, Pennsylvania," p. 2. Family data.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Sparrow Line)

Arms—Argent, three roses gules, a chief of the last.

Crest—A yew tree proper.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Originating as a sobriquet for a homely, chirpy disposition, the surname Sparrow is found in early records and mediaeval registers. The Sparrow family was originally of West Harling in Norfolk, where lived William Sparwe, *alias* Sparrow, a person of note in King Edward the Third's reign. From him descended Robert Sparrow, of Long Melford, County Suffolk, who by wife, Marian, had sons, Robert and William. The former carried the line through an only son, Thomas Sparrow, of Bocking, who made his will November 8, 1595. The name Richard occurs in the lineage, but there appears no evidence of connection with the line of our interest.

Through the line of Sparrow as traced hereafter, the families of this record have a connection with that courageous, God-fearing band of Pilgrims whose names surround the story of the passage and landing of the gallant little "Mayflower." A line of honor in its own right, the relationship that thus follows is one lending additional distinction to a proud family history.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." P. Morant: "History and Antiquities of the County of Essex," Vol. II, p. 289.)

I. Richard Sparrow, first definitely known ancestor of this family, came to America in 1632, and settled in Plymouth. In 1653, he removed to Eastham, Massachusetts, where he died January 8, 1660. His will, dated November 19, 1660, mentions his wife, Pandora; son, Jonathan, and grandchildren, John, Priscilla, and Rebecca. Richard Sparrow married Pandora, and they were the parents of: 1. Jonathan, of whom further.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 145. "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. XII, p. 57; Vol. XIV, p. 193.)

II. Captain Jonathan Sparrow, son of Richard and Pandora Sparrow, was of Eastham, Massachusetts. He was captain of the train band and served in early Indian wars. In 1668 and for eighteen years following, he was representative to the General Court. He served as constable in 1656; took the freeman's oath in 1667; was schoolmaster

SPARROW

Arms—Argent, three roses gules, a chief of the last.

Crest—A yew tree proper. (Burke: "General Armory.")

HONEYWOOD (HONYWOOD)

Arms—Argent, a chevron between three falcons' heads erased azure, beaked or.

Crest—A wolf's head couped ermine.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

STEELE

Arms—Argent, a bend chequy sable and ermine, between two lions' heads erased gules, a chief azure.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or a demi-ostrich with wings endorsed gules. (Burke: "General Armory.")

WOODFORD

Arms—Sable, three leopards' heads reversant jessant de lis argent.

Crest—A naked savage wreathed about the head and waist, in the dexter hand a club, and in the sinister a palm branch in bend, all proper.

Motto—*Libertate quietam.* (Ease in liberty.)

(Burke: "General Armory.")

NORTON

Arms—Gules, a fret argent, over all a bend vair.

Crest—A griffin sejant proper, winged gules, beak and forelegs or. (Burke: "Encyclopædia of Heraldry.")

SKINNER

Arms—Sable, a chevron or between three griffins' heads erased argent.

Crest—A griffin's head erased argent, holding in its mouth (beak) a dexter gauntlet.

Motto—*Nunquam non paratus.* (Never unprepared.)

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

WINDY

Windy - A wind that blows in a gust or fit (see "Gust")

WINDY (ADJECTIVE)

Windy - A person who is full of wind, boastful, or full of empty talk (see "Boastful")

WINDY

Windy - A person who is full of wind, boastful, or full of empty talk (see "Boastful")

WINDY

Windy - A person who is full of wind, boastful, or full of empty talk (see "Boastful")

WINDY

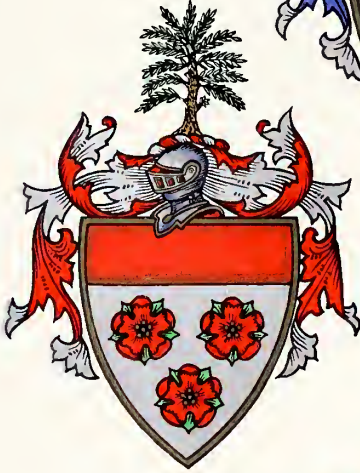
Windy - A person who is full of wind, boastful, or full of empty talk (see "Boastful")

WINDY

Windy - A person who is full of wind, boastful, or full of empty talk (see "Boastful")



Honeywood



Sparrow



Steele



Norton



Woodford



Skinner

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

in 1665; deacon; selectman at Eastham for ten years; deputy; and in 1689 was made justice of the Associate Court. In the 1675 Narragansett fight, Captain Sparrow served as lieutenant under Captain John Gorham. His will, dated March 10, 1706-07, and probated April 3, 1707, mentions his sons, John, Jonathan, Richard; grandsons, John and Jonathan, and daughters, "Rebecka," Lydia, and Patience.

Captain Jonathan Sparrow married (first), October 26, 1654, Rebecca Bangs. (Bangs II.) He married (second) Hannah (Prence, or Prince) Mayo, widow of Nathaniel Mayo, of Eastham, Massachusetts, and daughter of Governor Thomas Prence, of Plymouth, and his first wife, Patience (Brewster) Prence, and granddaughter of William Brewster. He married (third), in 1698, Sarah (Lewis) Cobb, daughter of George Lewis, and widow of James Cobb, of Barnstable, Massachusetts.

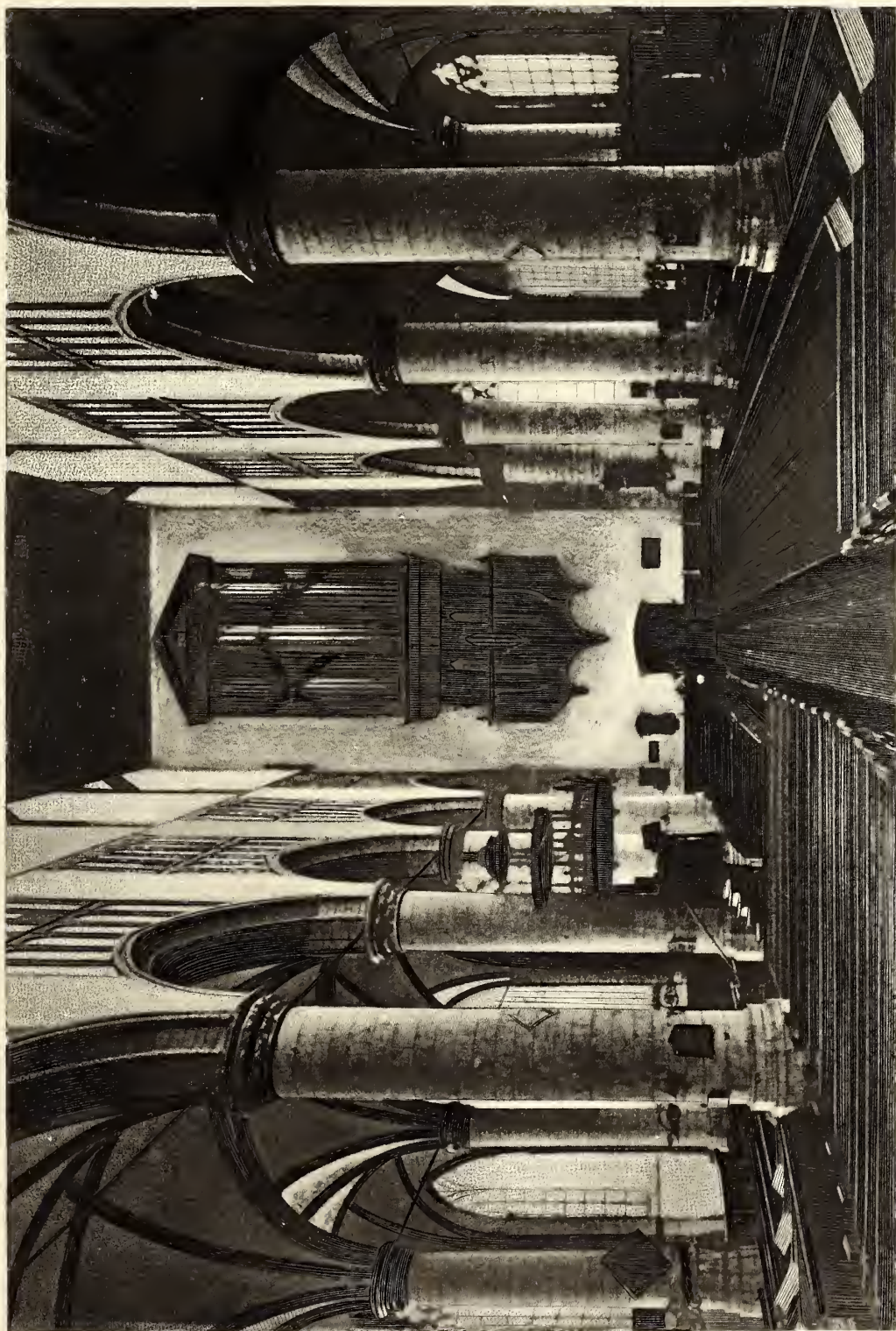
William Brewster, who was justly named the "Patriarch of the Plymouth Colony," was the moral, religious, and spiritual leader of the colony, and until his death was its trusted guide. His early environments were of wealth and prosperity; therefore, he was not brought up to arduous labors. The surname is derived from Brewer, meaning a brewer of malt liquors, and appears among the old families in the reign of Edward III as ranking among "the English landed gentry." The Suffolk branch of the family, through Robert Brewster, became established in the fifteenth century at Castle Hedingham, located in Essex, and marriage relations were formed with several knighted families. His father, William Brewster, was appointed, in 1575-76, receiver of Scrooby, and bailiff of the Manor House there, belonging to the Archbishop Sandys, of the Diocese of York. He had a life tenure of both these offices. Between 1583 and 1588 he was made postmaster, and became known as the "Post of Scrooby"; he was master of the court mails, accessible only to those connected with the court. The office of postmaster in those days was filled by persons of high social station, and was a position of much consequence, as it involved the supplying of relay of horses and the entertainment of travelers. The Scrooby Manor was a residence of importance; royalty had often been entertained there, and Cardinal Wolsey was its inmate for several weeks after his downfall. The paternal Brewster died at Scrooby in 1590. The birth, marriage, and death records of the parish of Scrooby are intact only since 1595, and there is no authentic testimony of the

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

date of birth, or the birthplace, of Elder Brewster. In accordance with an affidavit made by him at Leyden on June 25, 1609, in which he declares himself as being forty-two years of age, the date of his birth must have been in the last half of 1566 or the first half of 1567. That Scrooby was his birthplace is a matter of question, as there is no evidence that his father was a resident of that parish prior to his appointment as receiver. Young Brewster's education followed the lines given to the sons of the nobility and gentry. He matriculated, December 3, 1580, at Peterhouse, which was the oldest of the fourteen colleges, which afterward became the University of Cambridge, but he did not remain long enough at that institution to receive his degree. We find him after leaving Peterhouse in the service of William Davidson, Queen Elizabeth's Secretary of State; he accompanied him in August, 1585, to the Court of The Netherlands on a diplomatic mission. The downfall of William Davidson occurred in 1587, and William Brewster, leaving court circles, returned to Scrooby. At the time of his father's death, he administered his estate, and succeeded him as postmaster. For his services he received the munificent salary of twenty pence a day, which was increased in July, 1603, to two shillings. He resided at the Manor House, and was held in high esteem among the people, associating with the gentlemen of the surrounding country, and was prominent in promoting and furthering religion. Of a serious and religious mind, the forms and customs of the Established Church became abhorrent to him, and he became interested and active in the cause of the dissenters. Always loyal to the home government, he reluctantly accepted the fact that his conscientious scruples required his separation from the Established Church. He helped to form a dissenting society, which met at his residence, thus forming the nucleus which constituted the Plymouth Pilgrims. The meetings were interrupted by persecutions, continuance of which caused a number of the Separatists (by which they became known), to agitate, in 1607, an emigration to Holland. William Brewster, being under the ban of the church, became a member of a party which unsuccessfully tried to sail from Boston in Lincolnshire, England, and was arrested and imprisoned. He was in possession of considerable property at this time, a large part of which was spent in regaining his liberty and in assisting the poorer members of the party to escape to Holland. His release



ST. PETER'S CHURCH, LEYDEN, HOLLAND.



Engr. by Campbell. N.

ST. PETER'S CHURCH, LEYDEN, HOLLAND.

On the 6th of September, 1620, in the Mayoralty of Thomas Towners, after being kindly entertained and courteously used by divers Friends there dwelling, the Pilgrim Fathers sailed from Plymouth in the *Mayflower*, in the Providence of God to settle in **NEW PLYMOUTH** and to lay the Foundation of the **NEW ENGLAND STATES**. The ancient Causeway whence they embarked was destroyed not many Years afterwards, but the Site of their Embarkation is marked by the Stone bearing the name of the **MAYFLOWER** in the pavement of the adjacent Pier. This Tablet was erected in the Mayoralty of J. T. Bond 1891, to commemorate their Departure, and the visit to Plymouth in July of that Year of a number of their Descendants and Representatives.



COMMEMORATIVE STONE AND TABLET ON THE BARBICAN,
PLYMOUTH, ENGLAND



THE MAYFLOWER



Image by W. Verelstam (1672)

EMBARKATION OF THE PILGRIMS



LANDING OF THE PILGRIMS

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

from imprisonment having been obtained, a successful attempt at emigration was made and Holland was reached. After a short stay at Amsterdam he proceeded to Leyden, where the Rev. Mr. Robinson had established a church of which he was made ruling elder. He now found himself deprived of most of his wealth, and not fitted, like the other Pilgrims, to unaccustomed hardships and hard labor. His means had been spent in providing for his family, also by the treachery of a ship captain on his voyage to Leyden, who appropriated to himself most of his worldly possessions, including valuable and choice books. He was not, however, disheartened; his collegiate education became available in this his hour of need. He established at Leyden a school; his knowledge of Latin brought him many students, both Danes and Germans, who desired to acquire education in the English language. This, supplemented by his cheerfulness and contentment, enabled him to bear the burden of straitened finances, and the hardships incidental to emigration were overcome. He could not look for any financial assistance from his children, who had been bred to refinement and culture and were not fitted for toilsome and laborious duties. He was materially benefited financially by the establishing of a printing office; religious books were printed that were contrabanded by the English Government, and the operation was closely watched by the English Ambassador, Sir Dudley Carleton. Elder Brewster was sent to England in 1619 to arrange for the emigration of the Pilgrims to America. The English Ambassador forwarded information of his departure for England, and recommended that he be apprehended and examined. His efforts were futile, and Elder Brewster returned to Leyden without being molested.

At the time of the departure of the Pilgrims for their future home in a new land, on account of his popularity, he was chosen their spiritual guide. He embarked on the "Mayflower" with his wife, whose maiden name was Mary Love, and the two youngest members of his family, Wrestling and Love, sons, the latter being an infant in arms. On the arrival of the voyagers on the bleak coast of Massachusetts, the famous covenant establishing the Pilgrim Republic was drafted, and William Brewster is credited as being its author. For the first nine years of the Plymouth settlement he supplied the vacant pulpit, preaching impressive sermons; though often urged, he never administered

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the sacrament. Elder Brewster died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, April 16, 1644. His wife's death had preceded his, she passing away April 17, 1627. The late years of his life were spent in Duxbury, Massachusetts, with his son, Love, who was apparently the wealthiest man in that town, and was engaged in the cultivation of the paternal acres and establishing a family home. Jonathan, his eldest son, was living at the time of his father's death. He remained at Leyden at the time of the first emigration of the Pilgrims, but joined his father soon afterward at Plymouth. He removed to Connecticut, and died at Brewster's Neck, in that province. Children of Captain Jonathan Sparrow, of his first marriage: 1. Rebecca, born October 30, 1655, died in February, 1740; married, December 31, 1673, Thomas Freeman. 2. John, of whom further. 3. Priscilla, born February 13, 1658, died before March 10, 1706-07; married Edward Gray, who was a grandson of James Chilton, of the "Mayflower," whose death took place on board that vessel. 4. Lydia, born after November 19, 1660, died after March 16, 1708-09; married (first), after 1675 and before 1684, William Freeman; (second), probably about 1696, Jonathan Higgins, the grandson of Thomas Rogers, of the "Mayflower." Thomas Rogers was a native of England, and a member of the Leyden congregation. He was accompanied on the "Mayflower's" voyage by his son, Joseph, who became a resident of Duxbury, and afterwards lived in Eastham, Massachusetts, on Cape Cod. He was, in 1647, appointed lieutenant of the military company at Nawsett. The father, Thomas Rogers, died in the first sickness in 1621, and Joseph received his allotment of lands in the division of Plymouth in 1623. Thomas Rogers' other sons, John, William, and Noah, afterwards emigrated from England to the Plymouth Colony, and settled at Duxbury, Massachusetts. 5. Elizabeth, born after November 19, 1660, and before 1670, died after August 31, 1688, and before 1694; married, February 5, 1684, Samuel Freeman. 6. Jonathan, born July 9, 1665, died March 9, 1739-40; married (first) Rebecca Merrick; (second) Sarah Young, widow. Children of the second marriage: 7. Richard, born March 17, 1669-70, died in infancy. (Was probably of the second marriage, but evidence is not conclusive.) 8. Patience, born before October 25, 1675, died October 25, 1745; married (first), May 27, 1691, Joseph Paine; (second), November 23, 1715, John Henkins



SIGNING OF THE COMPACT
IN THE CABIN OF THE MAYFLOWER, 1620

54.

set by them done (this their condition considered) might
be as firme as any patent; and in some respects more sure.
The forme was as followeth.

In y^e name of god Amen. We whose names are underwritten,
the loyal subjects of our dread soveraign Lord King James,
by y^e grace of god, of great Britaine, France, & Ireland King
Defendor of y^e faith, &c.

Having undertaken, for y^e glorie of god, and advancement
of y^e christian ^{faith} and honour of our king & countrey, a voyage to
plant y^e first Colonie in y^e Northern parts of Virginia. God
by these presents solemnly & mutually in y^e presence of god, and
one of another, Couenant, & combine our selves together into a
Ciuill body politicke; for ^{our} better ordering, & preservation & fur-
therance of y^e ends aforesaid; and by vertue hereof to enacte,
constitute, and frame such just & equal Lawes, ordinances,
Acts, constitutions, & offices, from time to time, as shall be thought
most meete & convenient for y^e generall good of y^e Colonie: vnto
which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witness
whereof we haue hereunder subscribed our names at Cap-
Codd y^e 11. of Nouember, in y^e year of y^e raigne of our soveraign
Lord King James of England, France, & Ireland y^e eighteenth,
and of Scotland y^e fifth fourth. An: Dom. 1620.]

After this they chose, or rather confirmed in John carver (a man
godly & well approved amongst them) their gouernour for that
year. And after they had provided a place for their goods, or
comon store, (which were long in unloading for want of boats,
foulnes of y^e winter weather, and sicknes of diuers) and began
some small cottages for their habitation; as time would admit
they met and consulted of Lawes, & ordors, both for their
Ciuill & military gouernments, as y^e necessitie of their condi-
tion did require, still adding therunto as vrgent occasion
in severall times, and ^{as} cases did require.

In these hard & difficulto beginings they found some discontents
& murmurings ^{arise} amongst some, and mutinous speeches & carriage
in other; but they were soon quelled, & overcome, by y^e wis-
dom, patience, and just & equal carriage of things, by y^e gou-
ernour, both part with claw faithfully together in y^e maine.
But that which was most sadde, & lamentable, was, that in 2
or 3. moneths time halfe of their company dyed, especially
in Jan: & february, being y^e dorth of winter, and wanting
houses & other comforts; being infected with y^e Scuerie &

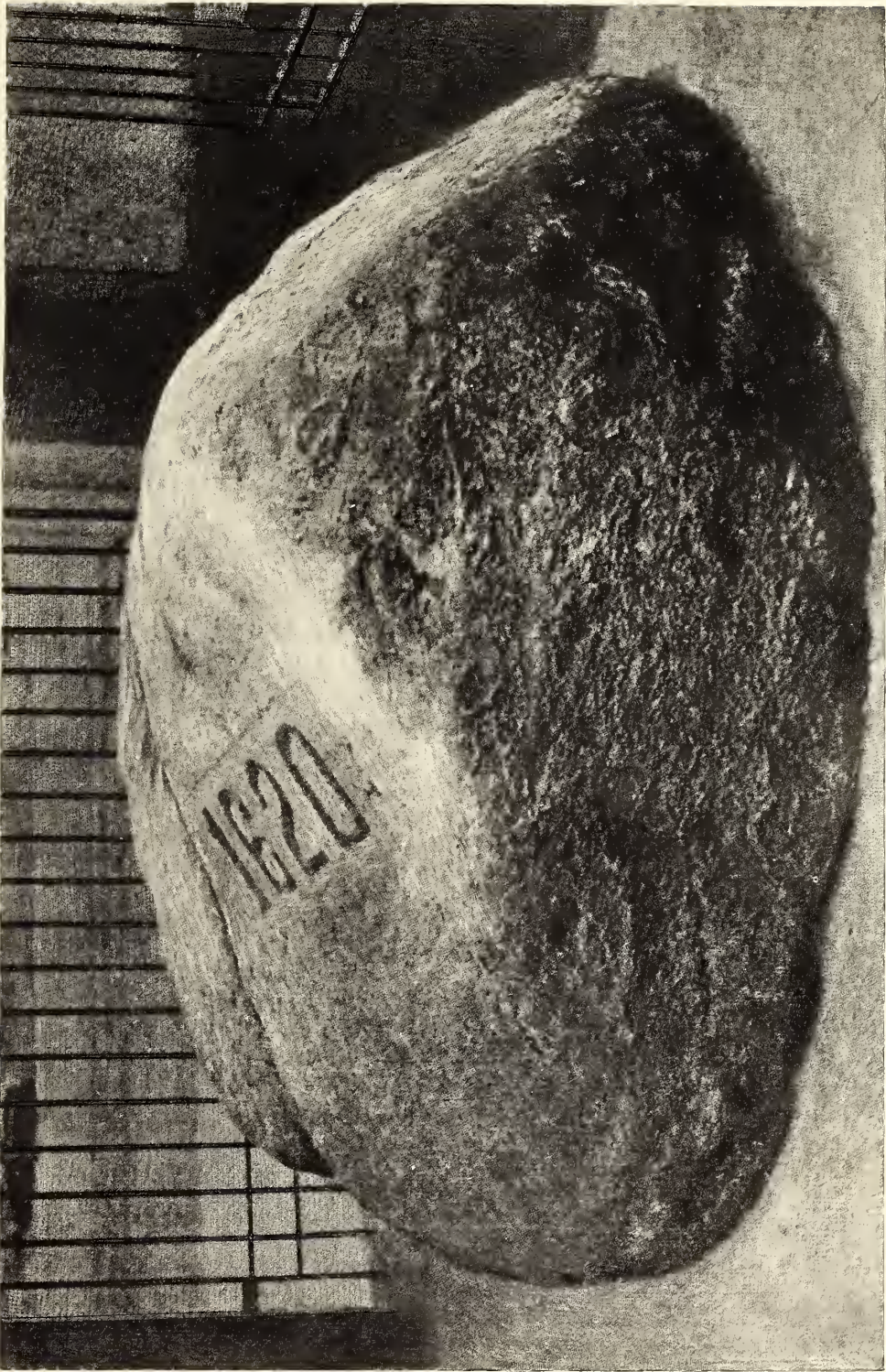
IN YE NAME OF GOD, AMEN.

We whose names are underwritten, the loyal subjects of our dread fovereigne Lord, King James, by ye grace of God, of Great Britaine, France and Ireland, King, defender of ye faith, etc., having undertaken for ye glory of God and advancement of ye Christian faith, and honour of our King and countrie, a voyage to plant ye first Colonie in 'ye Northerne parts of Virginia, doe by these presents solemnly, and mutuallly, in ye presence of God, and of one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil body politik for our better ordering and preservation and furtherance of ye end aforesaid, and by vertue hearof to enacte, constitute and frame such just and equal lawes, ordinances, acts, constitutions and offices from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and convenient for ye generall good of ye Colonie, unto which we promise all due submission and obedience. In witness whereof we have hereunder subscribed our names at Cape-Codd ye 11 of November, in ye year of ye raigne of our fovereigne Lord, King James of England, France and Ireland, ye eighteenth, and of Scotland ye fiftie-fourth. Ano Dom. 1620.

1. John Carver,
2. William Bradford,
3. Edward Winslow,
4. William Brewster,
5. Isaac Allerton,
6. Nyles Standish,
7. John Alden,
8. Samuel Fuller,
9. Christopher Martin,
10. William Mullins,
11. William White,
12. Richard Warren,
13. John Howland,
14. Stephen Hopkins,

15. Edward Tilley,
16. John Tilley,
17. Francis Cooke,
18. Thomas Rogers,
19. Thomas Tinker,
20. John Rigdale,
21. Edward Fuller,
22. John Turner,
23. Francis Eaton,
24. James Chilton,
25. John Crackston,
26. John Billington,
27. Moses Fletcher,
28. John Goodman,

29. Degory Priest,
30. Thomas Williams,
31. Gilbert Winslow,
32. Edmund Margeson,
33. Peter Brown,
34. Richard Britteridge,
35. George Soule,
36. Richard Clarke,
37. Richard Gardner,
38. John Allerton,
39. Thomas English,
40. Edward Dotey,
41. Edward Lister,



Engd by Campbell N.

PLYMOUTH ROCK

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

9. Richard, born about 1675, died April 13, 1728; married, February 4, 1701-02, Mercy Cobb, daughter of his father's third wife.

(“Mayflower Descendant,” Vol. XIV, pp. 193-95. J. Savage: “Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England,” Vol. IV, p. 145. Records in possession of the family. D. Dudley: “History and Genealogy of the Bangs Family in America,” p. 20.)

III. John Sparrow, son of Captain Jonathan and Rebecca (Bangs) Sparrow, was born in Eastham, Massachusetts, November 2, 1656, and died there, his will, dated May 10, 1731, being proved March 19, 1734-35. He lived at Eastham, and served in early Indian wars. John Sparrow married, December 5, 1683, Apphia Tracy. (Tracy III.) Children: 1. Rebecca, born December 23, 1684. 2. John, born August 24, 1687, died young. 3. Elizabeth, born January 19, 1689. 4. Stephen, of whom further.

(“Mayflower Descendant,” Vol. XIV, p. 195. J. Savage: “Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England,” Vol. IV, p. 145.)

IV. Stephen Sparrow, son of John and Apphia (Tracy) Sparrow, was born in Eastham, Massachusetts, September 6, 1694, and died at East Haddam, Connecticut, September 9, 1785. He lived at Eastham, Massachusetts, and later removed with his sons to East Haddam, Connecticut. He served in the expedition to Louisburg, in 1745. Stephen Sparrow married, at Eastham, Massachusetts, November 17, 1717, Annah Mulford. (Mulford III.) Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Thomas, born February 5, 1720-21. 3. Stephen (twin), born March 18, 1723; married, in 1746, Apphia Pepper. 4. Elizabeth (twin), born March 18, 1723. 5. Nathaniel, born March 4, 1725, died at East Haddam, Connecticut, in 1804. 6. Richard, born July 16, 1727, died before 1790; married twice, the name of his first wife being unknown; married (second), in 1763, Deborah Howland. 7. Joshua, born May 28, 1730. 8. Apphia, born July 18, 1731; married, April 26, 1753, Abner Beebe. 9. James, born October 22, 1735.

(“Mayflower Descendant,” Vol. VI, p. 203; Vol. XV, pp. 69-70. “Eastham, Massachusetts, Vital Records.” Records in possession of the family. F. W. Bailey: “Early Connecticut Marriages,” Vol. I, p. 89.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. *John Sparrow*, son of Stephen and Annah (Mulford) Sparrow, was born in Eastham, Massachusetts, July 6, 1719, and died in East Haddam, Connecticut, July 25, 1764, aged forty-five years. He removed from Eastham, Massachusetts, to East Haddam, Connecticut, before 1749. John Sparrow married Elizabeth, who was born in 1723, and died in East Haddam, Connecticut, October 11, 1774, in her fifty-second year. Children: 1. Mary, born December 14, 1749. 2. Annah, of whom further. 3. Elizabeth, born December 13, 1753. 4. John, born February 22, 1756; possibly was the John who married, at East Haddam, Connecticut, February 2, 1792, Dolly Hungerford. 5. Apphia, born May 2, 1758. 6. Stephen, born November 8, 1760. 7. Benjamin, born November 9, 1762.

(“Mayflower Descendant,” Vol. XV, p. 69. “Eastham, Massachusetts, Vital Records.” Records in possession of the family. F. W. Bailey: “Early Connecticut Marriages,” Vol. I, p. 85.)

VI. *Annah Sparrow*, daughter of John and Elizabeth Sparrow, was born April 19, 1751. She married Abner Banning. (Banning III.)

(F. W. Bailey: “Early Connecticut Marriages,” Vol. VI, p. 124.)

(The Molford-Mulford Line)

Arms—Sable, a fesse ermine between three swans argent.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or, a demi swan with wings expanded argent beaked gules. (Burke: “General Armory.”)

Surname authorities give differing opinions in regard to the English surname Mulford. In all probability, it has been derived from the Old English “mulne,” for mill and ford, hence the mill by the ford, although the name might possibly have been taken from the place now known as Mudford, a parish three miles from Yeovil, County Somerset. The earliest references are found in this district. That it is a surname derived from a locality is generally accepted.

The Molford family of Devonshire traces back to Roger Molford, of South Molton, who was living in 1420, and it is believed that this is the ancestry of the brothers, John and William Mulford, who settled on Long Island, and probably of Thomas, the first of the line herewith. No record shows the kinship, however.

(Bardsley: “Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.” Lower: “Patronymica Britannica.” S. C. Wade: “Mulford Family,” pp. 1-3. Kitchell: “The Genealogy of the Mulford Family,” p. 6.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Family in America)

I. Thomas Mulford was one of the legal inhabitants of Eastham, Massachusetts, in 1695. Both the date of his birth and the date of his arrival remain obscure. He died before 1717. Thomas Mulford married Hannah, who died February 10, 1717-18. Children: 1. Thomas, Jr., of whom further. 2. John, born in July, 1670; died before January 2, 1736-37; married, November 1, 1699, Jemima Higgins. 3. Patience, born August 17, 1674. 4. Anna, born March 23, 1677.

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 252. Freeman: "Cape Cod," Vol. II, p. 375. "The Mayflower Descendant," Vol. III, p. 229; Vol. IV, pp. 210-11.)

II. Thomas Mulford, Jr., was the son of Thomas and Hannah Mulford. He died February 4, 1738-39, in Truro, Massachusetts. On June 17, 1703, he was allowed lands in Pamet (Truro), Massachusetts, for seven pounds. He was appointed to serve on a committee, February 22, 1710, to request Mr. Avery for minister. On October 17, 1718, Thomas Mulford, yeoman of Truro, Massachusetts, conveyed land to Jonathan Bangs, of Harwich, and Benjamin Collins, of Truro. Thomas Mulford, Jonathan Paine and Benjamin Collins were appointed trustees to receive the town's proportion (from the General Court) of the £60,000 loan, July 17, 1728. At Truro, Thomas Mulford was known as "Elder" Mulford. The baptism and death of one of his slaves is recorded in Truro; also the purchase by him, March 14, 1740-41, of the slave "London," formerly the property of his brother, John, and of Nathaniel Freeman.

Thomas Mulford, Jr., married, October 28, 1690, Mary Bassett, who died November 3, 1734, in Truro, Massachusetts. Children: 1. Anna, of whom further. 2. Dorcas, born March 6, 1693. 3. Mary, born June 26, 1695. 4. Hannah, born September 1, 1698. 5. Elizabeth, born June 30, 1701. 6. Thomas, born October 20, 1703. 7. Jemima, born October 13, 1706.

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 252. "The Mayflower Descendant," Vol. X, pp. 239-40; Vol. IV, pp. 210-11. Freeman: "Cape Cod," Vol. II, pp. 375, 544, 548.)

III. Anna Mulford, daughter of Thomas, Jr., and Mary (Bassett) Mulford, was born July 28, 1691, and died June 26, 1772, in

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

East Haddam, Connecticut. She married Stephen Sparrow. (Sparrow IV.)

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 252. "Mayflower Descendant," Vol. XV, p. 69.)

(The Tracy Line)

Arms—Or, an escallop in the chief point, sable, between two bendlets gules.

Crest—On a chapeau gules turned up ermine an escallop sable between two wings expanded or.

Motto—*Memoria Pii Aeterna.* (E. E. Tracy: "Tracy Genealogy," pp. 6-7.)

This famous Norman family borrowed their surname from Traci-Bocage in the arrondissement of Caen, Normandy, called in documents in the eleventh century, Traceium. They went to England at the time of the Conquest, and were subsequently lords of Barnstaple, in Devonshire. The parishes of Woolcombe-Tracy, Bovi-Tracy, Minet-Tracy, and Bradford-Tracy in Devonshire derived their suffixes from this family.

According to an old manuscript, Stephen Tracy, American progenitor of this family, was a son of Samuel Tracy, one of the sons of Richard Tracy, of Gloucestershire, and thus a cousin of Lieutenant Thomas Tracy, of Salem, Massachusetts, and Norwich, Connecticut. If this be true, the line goes back to the illustrious Tracys, descendants of the Saxon kings, according to the historians of the Thomas Tracy family. The first ancestor thus was Woden or Odin, who had control of a part of Europe (Scandinavia) in the third century, and among whose descendants was Alfred the Great, from whom the line traces down through illustrious generations to William Tracy, of Toddington, in County Gloucester, whose son was Richard Tracy, Esq., of Stanway, County Gloucester, sheriff of the county in 1560. He married twice and had twenty-one children, one of whom, Samuel, was said to be the father of Stephen Tracy, first of this American Tracy family. However, no actual proof is given of the exact connection by the various family historians.

(Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." E. E. Tracy: "Tracy Genealogy," p. 239.)

(The Family in America)

I. Stephen Tracy, said to be the son of Samuel Tracy, was born, probably in England, and died after 1654-55, in all probability in England, as there is no record of his returning to America. He

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

came to this country in 1623 on the ship "Ann" and settled in Plymouth, Massachusetts. He had three acres on the south side in 1623, and shared in cattle division in 1627. He was listed among freemen in 1623. He removed to Duxbury, Massachusetts, and in 1634 was one of the highway commissioners; constable, 1639; grand juror, 1639, 1640, 1642. Stephen Tracy's name is among those to whom land was allotted in Dartmouth, Massachusetts, purchase, 1652; "Steven Tracye, one whole share." Before 1654, he returned to England, and then gave power of attorney to John Winslow to dispose of his property in Duxbury, Massachusetts. This document was dated at London, England, March 20, 1654-55, and in it Stephen Tracy calls himself "of Great Yarmouth, in old England" (a seaport town in County Norfolk), and states that he has five children in New England. He married, January 2, 1621, in Leyden, Holland, Triphosa La—— (entry blurred and not decipherable in records). Children: 1. Sarah, born in Holland; named with her parents in the division of cattle in 1627; married George Partridge. 2. Rebecca, named with her parents in the division of cattle in 1627. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Ruth, living in New England in 1654-55. 5. Mary, living in New England in 1654-55. 6. Thomas.

(E. E. Tracy: "Tracy Genealogy," p. 239. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. IV, p. 320. "The Mayflower Descendant," Vol. I, pp. 153, 230; Vol. IV, pp. 186-87; Vol. X, pp. 143-44.)

II. *John Tracy*, son of Stephen and Triphosa Tracy, was born in 1633, in Plymouth, Massachusetts, and died June 30, 1718, in Windham, Connecticut. He served as representative in 1683 and 1686, and as deputy in 1677 and 1692. In 1696 John Tracy was witness to transactions on the estate of John Thompson, of Middleborough, Massachusetts. He married Mary Prince, daughter of Governor Thomas and (second wife) Mary (Collier) Prince (or Prence.) (Prence III.) Children: 1. John. 2. Alpha (or Apphia), of whom further. 3. Stephen, born in 1673; died December 14, 1769; married, January 26, 1707, Deborah Bingham.

(Tracy: "Tracy Genealogy," p. 240. "The Mayflower Descendant," Vol. III, pp. 204-05.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. *Apphia Tracy*, daughter of John and Mary (Prince) Tracy, was born in one of the New England colonies, and died December 15, 1739, in Eastham, Massachusetts. She married John Sparrow. (Sparrow III.)

(Tracy: "Tracy Genealogy," p. 240. "The Mayflower Descendant," Vol. VI, p. 203.)

(The Prince-Prence Line)

Arms—Gules, a saltire or, surmounted of a cross engrailed ermine.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or, a cubit arm habited gules cuffed ermine holding in the hand proper three pineapples gold, stalked and leaved vert.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Prence is a later spelling of the old English surname Prince. Prince, like King, is not a name designating royal descent, nor yet is the title a mere nickname from the royal bearing or appearance of the original nominee in all cases. Often this sobriquet was bestowed upon those who took the part in the numerous festivals and mock ceremonies of mediæval times. That the possessor was proud of these mock titles is shown by the numerous families bearing the names, Prince, King, and Queen. We find Willelmus Prynce recorded in County York in 1379, and Isolda Prynce, in the same records of that county in 1379.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. *Thomas Prence (Prince)*, first known ancestor of this New England family, resided at All Saints' Barking, London, England, where he made his will July 31, 1630, proved August 14, 1630. In the will he stated that he was a carriage maker. He mentions no wife, but names his three children: 1. Katherine; married, before July 31, 1630, Ambrose Crayford, of Redrith, Surrey, mariner. 2. Rebecca; married, before July 31, 1630, Thomas Diple, citizen and merchant tailor, of London. 3. Thomas, of whom further.

(A. C. Kingsbury and W. E. Nickerson: "A Historical Sketch of Thomas Prence," p. 1.)

II. *Governor Thomas Prence (Prince)*, son of Thomas Prence, was born in England, probably about 1600, and died at Plymouth, Massachusetts, March 29, 1673. His father's will referred to him as his "son Thomas Prence now remayninge in New England in the pts. beyond the seas," and bequeathed him "one beere bole of silver and alsoe my seale Ringe of gold to be del^d to him at his next return."

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Thomas Prence came to America in the ship "Fortune," which arrived in November, 1621, he being then, as he stated, "in the twenty-second year of his age." He settled in that part of Plymouth Colony which has since become Duxbury. With wife, Patience; son, Thomas, and daughter, Rebecca, he shared in the division of cattle, in 1627. His name is found among those who, in April, 1632, "promise to remove their fam(ilies) to live in the towne in the winter time that they the better repair to the worship of God." In the earliest New Plymouth tax list that is found, Thomas Prence's tax is stated as £1 7s. That year he had become a freeman. In July, 1627, Thomas Prence was one of the twelve signers of an agreement between The Adventurers to New Plymouth, of the one part, and Isaac Allerton, "resident at Plimouth," of the other part, whereby Allerton was to obtain others with him to assume the debt of £1800 due the Adventurers. At the court, January 1, 1633-34, Mr. Thomas Prence was elected Governor of the Colony for one year. At the end of the term, he became an Assistant, first under Governor William Bradford, and, second, under Governor Edward Winslow. He was also elected treasurer, January 3, 1636-37; and March 6, 1637-38, was again elected Governor. He held other important positions, on the Council of War, etc. He early came into possession of about two hundred acres of the best farming land of Nausett, with six others, settling there in 1644. In 1645, 1650, 1653-58, and 1662-72, he served as commissioner of the United Colonies. The following eulogy is found in the Plymouth Church records:

In 1673: was a very awfull frowne of God upon this chh (church) & colony in the death of M^r Thomas Prince the Governour in the 73^d yeare of his Age; when this Colony was in a hazardous condition upon the death of Gov^r Bradford the lott was cast upon M^r Princ to be his successour, God made him a repairer of breaches & a meanes to setle those shakings that were then threatening, he was excellently qualified for the office of a Governour, he had a countenance full of Majesty & therein as well as otherwise was a terrour to evill doers, he was very amiable & pleasant in his whole conversation & highly esteemed of the saints & acknowledged by all.

Governor Thomas Prence married (first), in Plymouth Colony, August 5, 1624, Patience Brewster, who "died of the pestilent fever" before December 12, 1634, daughter of Elder William Brewster, of

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

the "Mayflower." He married (second), April 1, 1635, Mary Collier, daughter of William Collier. He married (third), on or before December 8, 1662, Mrs. Apphia Freeman. He married (fourth), between February 26, 1665-66, and August 1, 1668, Mrs. Mary Howes, widow of Thomas Howes, of Yarmouth, Masachusetts; she died December 9, 1695.

Of his nine children, the first four were by his first wife; the next three are generally conceded to have been by his second wife; while it is uncertain whether the last two children were by his second or third wife. Children: 1. Thomas, born probably in or before 1627; went to England; married; and died before his father. 2. Rebecca, born probably in or before 1627, died before July 18, 1651; married, April 22, 1646, Edmund Freeman, Jr. 3. Mercy, born probably about 1631, died in Eastham, September 28, 1711; married, February 13, 1649-1650, "Major" John Freeman. 4. Hannah, died before November 23, 1698; married (first), February 13, 1649-50, Nathaniel Mayor; (second), between June 5, 1667, and September 11, 1671, Jonathan Sparrow. 5. Jane, born November 1, 1637, died in May or June, 1712; married, January 9, 1660-61, Mark Snow. 6. Mary, of whom further. 7. Sarah, born in 1643-46, died March 3, "1703-04," or "1706"; married Jeremiah Howes. 8. Elizabeth, died after July 11, 1711; married, December 9, 1667, Arthur Howland, Jr. 9. Judith; married (first), December 28, 1665, Isaac Barker; (second) William Tubbs.

(*Ibid.*, pp. 1-30.)

III. Mary Prence (Prince), daughter of Governor Thomas and probably his second wife, Mary (Collier) Prence (or Prince), was bequeathed the following in her father's will: "Item I give to my Daughter Mary Tracye a silver wine Cupp and a Dram Cupp." Also, after various other bequests, the following appears: "The Remainder of My estate my will is shalbe equally Devided to my seaven Daughters, hannah Marcye Jane Mary Elizabeth, Sarah and Judith, and my above mensioned Grandchild Susanna Prence."

Mary Prence married John Tracy. (Tracy II.)

(*Ibid.*, pp. 12, 13, 17, 20, 24.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Bankes-Bangs Line)

Arms—Sable a cross engrailed ermine between four fleur-de-lis or.

Crest—A Moor's head full-faced couped at the shoulders proper on the head a cap of maintenance gules turned up ermine adorned with a crescent issuant therefrom a fleur-de-lis or.
(Burke: "General Armory.")

The English surnames Bangs and Banks find their origin in residence "at the bank," a slope or declivity in the land. Also, there was a town "Banc" near Honfleur, Normandy, and some authorities claim the name originated there.

Traditionally the Bangs or Banks family came from the Isle of Man, and were perhaps of an earlier Normandy family. There was a Banks family seated early in Cumberland and North Lancashire, and it is a supposition that there was a connection between them and the Bancks family of the Isle of Man. Also a family of Banks came from County Cumberland to London about 1630, of which line was Sir John Banks, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." D. Dudley: "The History and Genealogy of the Bangs Family," pp. 13-14.)

I. Edward Bangs was born in all probability, in England, about 1591-92, and died in 1677-78, aged eighty-six. He came to America in the "Anne" in 1623, the third of the ships bringing the "Plymouth Pilgrims." He had four acres for a garden plot on the "other side of Eel River" in 1623. In 1633 he was made freeman at Plymouth, and was taxed twelve shillings. Among other positions of importance in the organization of the affairs of the colony, Mr. Bangs held that of surveyor in 1633; assessor, 1634, 1635, 1636; grand juryman, in 1636, 1637, 1638, 1641. He served on a committee for land division in 1637. In 1641-42, he contributed one-sixteenth part of the money to build a barque of forty or fifty tons to cost two hundred pounds, for which contribution eighty acres of land were granted him. Edward Bangs was a shipwright by trade and he was probably supervisor of the building of the vessel. In 1645, he was made freeman of Nauset or Eastham, where he was town treasurer and selectman, and an established merchant. About 1650, he served as deputy to the General Court.

Edward Bangs married (first) (probably Lydia) Hicks, who died before 1651, daughter of Robert and Margaret Hicks. Robert and Margaret Hicks came to Plymouth in the "Anne," and resided in the

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

house next to their son-in-law's. Edward Bangs married (second) Rebecca. Children, except the first, of the second marriage: 1. John, will proved May 17, 1708; married, January 23, 1660, Hannah Smalley, of Eastham. 2. Rebecca, of whom further. 3. Sarah; married, in Eastham, Massachusetts, in 1656, Captain Thomas Howes. 4. Captain Jonathan, born in Plymouth, Massachusetts, in 1640, died in Harwich (now Brewster), Massachusetts, in 1728, aged eighty-eight; married (first), July 16, 1664, Mary Mayo; (second) Sarah; (third), in 1720, Mrs. Ruth Young. 5. Lydia, living in 1709; married (first), December 24, 1661, Benjamin Higgins; (second) name unknown. 6. Hannah; married, April 30, 1662, John Doane. 7. Bethia, born May 28, 1650, died October 15, 1696; married Gershom Hall. 8. Apphia (twin), born October 15, 1651; married (first), December 28, 1670, John Knowles; (second) Stephen Atwood. 9. Mercy (twin), born October 15, 1651; married, December 28, 1670, Stephen Merrick.

(D. Dudley: "History and Genealogy of the Bangs Family," pp. 9-20.)

II. *Rebecca Bangs*, daughter of Edward and Rebecca Bangs, was born in Plymouth, Massachusetts, about 1635, and died in Eastham, Massachusetts, before 1677. She married Captain Jonathan Sparrow. (Sparrow II.)

(*Ibid.*, p. 20.)

(The Bird Line)

Arms—Argent on a chevron engrailed gules between three lions rampant sable, as many fleur-de-lis, or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Names of animals have in all ages and among nearly all nations been applied as sobriquets to individuals and these, in modern times, have acquired the force of surnames and thus been handed down hereditarily. Bird, a nickname, is from the Middle English *bird* or *brid*, perhaps given to the original bearer because of his singing propensities.

The Bird family in England is very ancient and widely distributed. They are or have been numerous in the counties of Chester, Cumberland, Derby, Essex, Hereford, Oxford, Shropshire, Warwick, and Yorke. The ancestry of the Birds of Penrith, County Cumberland, is traced to the year 1295. Father William Bird, a Benedictine monk,

THOMPSON

Arms—Or, on a fesse dancetté azure three estoiles argent, on a canton of the second the sun in his splendour.

Crest—A cubit arm erect vested gules cuffed argent, holding in the hand five ears of wheat or.

Motto—*In lumine lucem.* (Shine in light.)

(A. G. Hibbard. "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 548.)

SKIDMORE

Arms—Gules, three stirrups, leathers and buckles or.

Crest—A unicorn's head erased sable, platée.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

BIRD

Arms—Argent, on a chevron engrailed gules between three lions rampant sable as many fleurs-de-lis or.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

VICARS

Arms—Sable, on a chief dancetté or, two cinquefoils gules, a border engrailed ermine.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

THEORY

The first part of the theory is concerned with the general principles of the subject. It is divided into two main sections, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject. The first section is divided into two parts, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject.

THEORY

The second part of the theory is concerned with the special principles of the subject. It is divided into two main sections, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject. The first section is divided into two parts, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject.

THEORY

The third part of the theory is concerned with the special principles of the subject. It is divided into two main sections, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject. The first section is divided into two parts, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject.

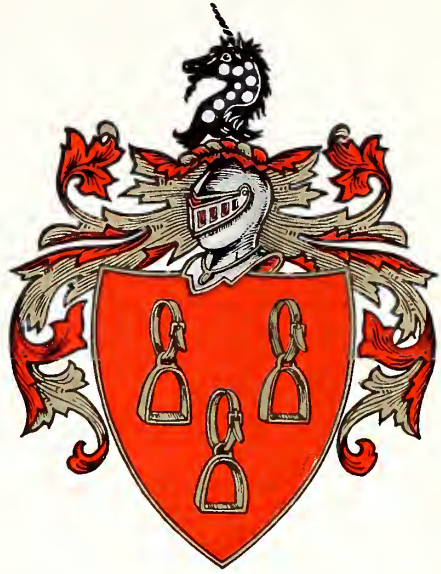
THEORY

The fourth part of the theory is concerned with the special principles of the subject. It is divided into two main sections, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject. The first section is divided into two parts, the first of which deals with the general principles of the subject, and the second with the special principles of the subject.

11



Thompson



Skidmore



Bird



Vicars

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

was a candidate for the degree of Bachelor of Divinity at Oxford in 1504. Wood thinks his church was at Bath, and that he died there May 22, 1525. There have been many famous men of this surname in every generation of England since the earliest records. David le Brid was of County Oxford in 1273; John le Brid was of the same county in that year; Stefan Brid was of County Suffolk in 1273, and Geoffrey Byrd of County Salop. Henry le Brid was of County Somerset in 1327.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

The Bird pedigree is found in an old pedigree in vellum in the custody of Mr. James Bird, of Brogham. Henry Bird, of County Cumberland, England, married Joan Beauchamp, daughter of Thomas Beauchamp, of Little Croglin, County Cumberland. Their son, William Bird, of Little Croglin, County Cumberland, married Joan Tindall, daughter and co-heir of John Tindall, of Northumberland County. Their son, William Bird, of Pireth, County Cumberland, was living in 1295. He married Emma Gospatrick, daughter of Gospatrick, Knight, of Cumberland. Their son, Adam Bird, of Pireth, married Joane Threlkeld, daughter of William Threlkeld, of Yanworth, County Westmoreland. Their son, William Bird, of Pireth, married the daughter of Thomas Martindale, and had a son, Roger Bird, of Pireth. He married Jane Crakenthorpe, daughter of John Crakenthorpe, of New Bigging, County Westmoreland. They had three children: James, John, and Hugh.

The Birds of Worcester derive from the old family of Cumberland. Henry Bird, of Bradforton, near Evesham, County Worcester, was originally of the Bird family of Lincolnshire. He married and was the father of William Bird, born early in the sixteenth century, who married Mary Rutter. From him descend the Birds of Gloucester and the family that continued in Worcester.

Among the collateral branches of the Bird family are the Birds of Gloucestershire, England, who descend from the Cumberland family. William Bird, of Bradford, County Worcester, married Mary Rutter, the daughter of Michael Rutter. Their son, William Bird, of Evesham, County Worcester, married Anne Cox, daughter of Robert Cox, of Castleton, County Worcester. Their son, Peter Bird, of

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Wootton-under-Edge, County Gloucester, was born about 1570. He married Mary Foster, daughter of Humphrey Foster, of County Gloucester. They were the parents of: Mary, Anne, Susan, Anthony, Gyles, Richard, and William.

The Birds of Cheshire trace to Randoll Bird, of Yowley, Cheshire, who married Anne Merbury, daughter of Thomas Merbury, of Merbury. Their son, Richard Bird, of Yowley, married the daughter of a Davenport, and had a son, Richard Bird, of Yowley, who married the daughter of a Hocknell, of Duddon. Their son, John Bird, of Yowley, married Anne Delves, daughter of John Delves, of Delves Hall, and had: John, Thomas, and Richard.

John Bird, son of John and Anne (Delves) Bird, lived at Yowley. His brother, Thomas Bird, established a branch of the family at Crew, Cheshire, and his younger brother, Richard Bird, was also of Cheshire. All of these sons of John and Anne (Delves) Bird were living about 1500.

Another family of Birds in Cheshire was represented in 1580 in the city of Chester by William Bird, alderman and justice of the peace. Of him it is recorded "In the which servyce (he) demeaned hym selfe in sutche wise that bothe of her Majesties Counsell in England and Irelande reported hym to bee a verey good subjecte, a wyse man and a readye further(er) of her Majesties services." He was the son of another William Bird, who was Mayor of Chester in 1557, whose wife was Jane Norley, daughter of Raffe Norley, of Eccleston, Cheshire. William (2) Bird married three times and had children as follows: John, born about 1640; Richard; Jane; Alice; Thomas; and Ellen.

The Birds of Yorkshire descend from George Burd (or Bird), of New Castle, merchant, and at one time mayor of New Castle. He married Elinor Harbottle, daughter of Sir Ralph Harbottle, and had a son, Anthony. Anthony Bird married Elizabeth Hilton, daughter and co-heir of Hugh Hilton, of Slingsby. Their children were: George, Mark, Hugh, Henry, Isabel, Anne, Alice, Eleanor, and Elizabeth; they were all born before 1600.

We cannot tell to which of the above families the line which follows owes its origin. Like many of the families who came to New England in the early days, recorded contact with the relatives or friends left in the Old World seems to be lacking in this branch of the Bird family.

(Records in possession of the family.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. Thomas Bird, who was of Hartford, Connecticut, in 1644, died about 1660. He married and had the following children: 1. Joseph, died in 1695; had eight children. 2. James, of whom further. 3. Hannah; married John North. 4. Hannah; married a Scott.

(I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family," p. 5.)

II. James Bird, son of Thomas Bird, and his brother, Joseph Bird, were among the first proprietors of Farmington, Connecticut, about 1660, and both, with their wives, were members of the church. James Bird died in 1708. He married, March 31, 1657, Lydia Steele. (Steele II.) Children: 1. Thomas, of whom further. 2. Hannah; married Nathaniel Morgan. 3. Rebecca; married Samuel Lamb. 4. Lydia; married Peletiah Morgan. 5. Mehitabel, baptized at Farmington, March 12, 1681-82; married Simon Newell. 6. Elizabeth, baptized November 23, 1684; married Ebenezer Alvord. 7. Daughter.

(*Ibid.* "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XII, pp. 36, 38, 148. "Farmington Church Records." J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 180.)

III. Thomas Bird, son of James and Lydia (Steele) Bird, died in 1725. He lived in that part of Farmington, Connecticut, afterwards called Northington, now Avon. He was a member of the church in 1691. Thomas Bird married, July 3, 1693, Mary Woodford. (Woodford III.) Children: 1. Mary. 2. John, born in 1695; married and had four sons, and went to Little Nine Partners, New York. 3. Joseph, of whom further. 4. Jonathan, born December 28, 1699. 5. Mary; married Abraham Goodwin. 6. Rebecca; married Thomas Hart. 7. Jonathan. 8. Jonathan. 9. Jonathan. 10. Jonathan.

(I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family," p. 5. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XII, p. 148. Records in possession of the family.)

IV. Joseph Bird, son of Thomas and Mary (Woodford) Bird, was born in 1697, and died in Salisbury, Connecticut, September 9, 1754, aged fifty-seven. He lived in Avon, removed to Litchfield, Connecticut, in 1718-19, where he was one of the first settlers and proprietors; and in 1748 removed to Salisbury, Connecticut. He was chosen nine times to the General Court or State Legislature, and at his death he was justice of the quorum.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Joseph Bird married (first), in 1721, Dorcas Norton. (Norton III.) He married (second), in 1752, Mrs. Eldredge. Children: 1. James; married and had five children. 2. Mary; married (first), June 20, 1753, Dr. Abner Peck, of Sharon; (second) Ariel Bradley, of Salisbury. 3. Thomas. 4. Moore, of whom further. 5. Isaac, died October 29, 1756, in his twenty-eighth year. 6. Ruth. 7. Joseph; married and had twelve children. 8. Nathaniel. 9. Amos, born in Salisbury, Connecticut, in 1742; married and had one daughter; he was a leader in settlement at Castleton, Vermont, in January, 1766, where he died September 16, 1772, aged thirty.

(I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family," pp. 14, 21. C. W. Manwaring: "A Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records," Vol. II, p. 554. "History of Litchfield, Connecticut," pp. 106-108. Records in possession of the family. L. Van Alstyne: "Births, Marriages and Deaths, Sharon, Connecticut," p. 14. Rudd: "Inscriptions at Salisbury, Connecticut," pp. 5-6. "Historical Collections, Salisbury, Connecticut, Association," Vol. I, p. 34.)

V. Moore Bird, son of Joseph and Dorcas (Norton) Bird, was born in 1729, and died in Salisbury, Connecticut, September 3, 1756, in his twenty-eighth year. He married, in Salisbury, Connecticut, November 9, 1751, Rebecca Skinner. (Skinner V.) Children: 1. Asenath, of whom further. 2. Electa, born June 1, 1754. 3. Nathaniel, born March 25, 1756, died the next day.

(I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family," pp. 14, 21. "Historical Collections, Salisbury, Connecticut, Association," Vol. I, pp. 34, 66.)

VI. Asenath Bird, daughter of Moore and Rebecca (Skinner) Bird, was born in Salisbury, Connecticut, some records say December 5, 1752, others say June 18, 1752, and died June 10, 1832, in Ohio, aged eighty years. She married Captain James Bradley. (Bradley VI.)

("Historical Collections, Salisbury, Connecticut, Association," Vol. I, p. 34. Records in possession of the family.)

(The Skinner Line)

Arms—Sable, a chevron or between three griffins' heads erased argent.

Crest—A griffin's head erased argent, holding in its mouth (beak) a dexter gauntlet.

Motto—*Nunquam non paratus.* (Never unprepared.)

(Crozier: "General Armory.")

Skinner, an English surname, is derived from the occupation of skinner, a dealer in skins. In the thirteenth and fourteenth centuries

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

we find the name spelled in a variety of ways. Henry le Skyniar is recorded in the Hundred Rolls of Oxfordshire, A. D. 1273; Robertus le Skynnere, in the Writs of Parliament, 1302; Robertus Skynner, in the Poll Tax of Yorkshire, 1379. The Skinners Company of London received their charter of incorporation as early as the first year of the reign of Edward III. The name was brought to New England by two immigrants from England, John and Thomas Skinner, both of whom left a numerous progeny. John, ancestor of the line of our interest, settled in Connecticut, while Thomas located in Massachusetts.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." W. R. Cutter: "Genealogical and Family History of Central New York," Vol. III, p. 1273.)

I. John Skinner, probably from or near Braintree, County Essex, England, was born in England and died in 1650. John Skinner was one of the Thomas Hooker congregation who settled in Hartford, Connecticut. He was a kinsman of John Talcott, whose mother was Anne, daughter of William Skinner, which gives support of the family tradition that the family came from County Essex, England. It is said three brothers Skinner, one of whom had been a high sheriff, fled to America after the Revolution in England, one settling in Connecticut, one in Vermont, and one in Maryland. It is quite probable that this John Skinner may have been a soldier in England.

John Skinner married Mary Loomis, who died in Windsor, Connecticut, August 19, 1680, daughter of Joseph Loomis, Sr. After Joseph Skinner's death she removed to Windsor and married (second), November 13, 1654, Owen Tudor. Children (as named in settlement of estate in Hartford Court, January 18, 1655): 1. Mary, born in 1638; married Robert Reeve, of Hartford. 2. Ann, born in 1639; married John Colt. 3. John, of whom further. 4. Joseph, born in 1643; married, April 5, 1666, Mary Filley. 5. Richard, born in 1646.

("Genealogical and Family History of Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 990. H. Stiles: "Ancient Windsor," Vol. II, p. 687.)

II. John Skinner, son of John and Mary (Loomis) Skinner, was born in 1641 and died in Hartford, Connecticut, September 15, 1690. He resided at Hartford, Connecticut.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

John Skinner married Mary Easton, who died June 18, 1695, daughter of Joseph Easton. Children: 1. Mary, born December 1, 1664; married, May 21, 1691, Joshua Carter. 2. John, born March 1, 1666-67, died October 27, 1743; married, February 22, 1693, Rachel Pratt. 3. (Deacon) Joseph, born August 26, 1669, died in Windsor, Connecticut, May 31, 1729; married, March 13, 1694, Mary Grant. 4. Nathaniel, of whom further. 5. Richard, born January 16, 1674, died June 20, or July 17, 1758; married, December 23 or 25, 1702, Sarah Gaine. 6. Sarah, born November 4, 1677. 7. Thomas, born November 15, 1680; died in Windsor, Connecticut, March 21, 1761; married, July 19, 1705, Sarah Grant.

(H. Stiles: "Ancient Windsor," Vol. II, pp. 687, 688.)

III. (*Deacon*) Nathaniel Skinner, son of John and Mary (Easton) Skinner, was born in Hartford, Connecticut, April 5, 1672. He appears among the early settlers at Colchester, Connecticut. He removed from there to Sharon, Connecticut, where he was an original purchaser of some town lots in October, 1738. In town affairs he was prominent, serving as the first deacon, first town clerk, and first magistrate. He went to Salisbury, Connecticut, about 1760, probably with his son, Nathaniel, Jr. In Colchester Deacon Nathaniel Skinner lived in the parish society of Westchester. Letters from that church were issued to those who removed to other places April 28, 1740, among them Deacon Nathaniel Skinner, who had gone to Sharon, Connecticut. He had been a member of Westchester Parish since its organization in 1728. His son, Thomas, was later a pastor of that church, 1740-62.

Deacon Nathaniel Skinner married (first), June 13, 1706, Mary Gillett, born March 8, 1687, daughter of Josiah and Joanna (Taintor) Gillett, of Colchester, Connecticut. He married (second), as her second husband, at Sharon, Connecticut, September 20, 1741, Content (Fuller) Fuller, born February, 1698, daughter of Matthew and Patience (Young) Fuller, and widow of Benjamin Fuller. Children, all of the first marriage: 1. Nathaniel, Jr., of whom further. 2. Mary, born July 10, 1709. 3. Reverend Thomas, born April 6, 1712. 4. Eunice, born December 15, 1715. 5. David, born January 17, 1717; died January 31, 1717. 6. David, born November 6, 1719. 7.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Jonathan, born August 15, 1721. 8. Josiah, born April 30, 1724. 9. Joanna, born March 19, 1727. 10. Zermiah, born June 25, 1730. 11. (Possibly) Joseph.

(“New York Genealogical and Biographical Records,” Vol. XXXIII, p. 233. “New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. XIII, p. 51; Vol. XLVII, p. 169. “History of New London County, Connecticut,” p. 396. J. K. Blish: “An Index to Michael Taintor’s Colchester Records,” pp. 38, 39. C. F. Sedgwick: “History of Sharon, Connecticut,” p. 149.)

IV. Nathaniel Skinner, Jr., son of Nathaniel and Mary (Gillett) Skinner, was born in Colchester, Connecticut, July 10, 1707, and died at Salisbury, Connecticut, May 12, 1750. He was listed with his father, also Thomas and Joseph Skinner, as purchasers, with others, of the town of Sharon, Connecticut, October, 1738, when town lots were sold at auction in New Haven. Nathaniel Skinner, Jr., came from the Westchester Parish, Colchester, Connecticut, and was given a letter from that church April 28, 1740. Like his father, he was prominent in church and town affairs, and was chosen selectman in Sharon in 1743. In 1760, he was living in Salisbury, Connecticut. He or his father owned a mill there, known later as Benedict’s mill. Among others of the Skinner name who removed from Westchester Parish, Colchester, to Sharon, Connecticut, were: Thomas, David, Jonathan, and Josiah Skinner. On May 18, 1740, letters were given by the church to Mary, Elizabeth, Mary, Jr., and Abigail Skinner. Salisbury records contain references to Nathaniel Skinner, Jr., thus: “Apr. 7, 1743, John Hutchinson of Lebanon, Connecticut, granted to Nathaniel Skinner Jr. of Sharon that part of the land that he and said Skinner bought of Thomas Lamb. The following July Nathaniel Skinner of Salisbury and John Hutchinson leased school rights for £38-15-3 from the town, 75 acres in the 5th division.” Children (registered in Colchester, Connecticut): 1. Rebecca, of whom further. 2. Nathaniel, born June 23, 1732. Possibly others.

(“Historical Collections, Salisbury, Connecticut,” Vol. I, p. 66; Vol. II, pp. 187, 190. “History of Litchfield County, Connecticut,” pp. 567, 581, 583. J. K. Blish: “An Index to Michael Taintor’s Colchester Records,” p. 38.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

V. Rebecca Skinner, daughter of Nathaniel and Mary Skinner, was born in Colchester, Connecticut, December 3, 1730. She married Moore Bird. (Bird V.)

(J. K. Blish: "An Index to Michael Taintor's Colchester Records" p. 38. "Historical Collections, Salisbury, Connecticut," Vol. I, pp. 34, 66.)

(The Norton Line)

Arms—Gules, a fret argent, over all a bend vair.

Crest—A griffin sejant proper, winged gules, beak and forelegs or.

(Burke: "Encyclopædia of Heraldry.")

Norton is an ancient patronymic, of local origin, signifying "of Norton," the north town, found in nearly every county in England. In 1273 the Hundred Rolls teemed with the name. The Norton family is said to date back in England to the Norman Conquest.

One William Norton, of Sharpenhow, married (first) Margerie (Hawes) Hamen; and (second) Dennis Cholmley, by whom he had several children, among whom were: Richard, of whom further, and Francis, born in 1606, died in 1667. He (Francis) was of Wethersfield, and Branford, Connecticut. He had no children, but called John Norton, the progenitor of our line, his "cousin," meaning his nephew.

Richard Norton, son of William Norton, married Ellen Rowley, and they had: Luke, Richard, John, Ellen, Dorothy.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford, Connecticut," pp. 6, 58. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XIII, pp. 225-29.)

I. John Norton, claimed to be son of Richard and Ellen (Rowley) Norton, appeared on records of Branford, Connecticut, July 7, 1646, when the lands were divided, and again in 1648. The settlement of Branford was made by men from Wethersfield, Connecticut, and Southampton, Long Island, perhaps as early as 1644, but lands were not laid out until 1646. About 1659 John Norton removed to Hartford, but he was a proprietor of Farmington. In Hartford he purchased, September 29, 1659, several pieces of land and housing of Jasper Gunn. These he afterward sold to Jared Spencer, about February 23, 1664. The removal to Farmington may have been about 1659, but it is supposed he was a proprietor from the first (1645), even before Branford residence. On May 21, 1664, John Norton was

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

a freeman at Hartford, called then "of Farmington," and he joined the Farmington Church in October, 1661. In 1656 he took inventory of the estate at Branford, of the "widow Bradford."

John Norton married (first) Dorothy, who died in Branford, January 24, 1652; (second) Elizabeth, who died at Branford, Connecticut, November 6, 1657; and (third) Elizabeth (or Hannah) Clark, who died at Farmington, Connecticut, November 8, 1702, said to be the sister of John Clark, of Saybrook.

The various marriages of John Norton appear to have caused confusion among authorities in recording the names of his children. Some of the facts recorded are too conflicting to make definite statements as to either birth dates or names. However, the following would appear to be absolutely certain since all authorities agree, namely, that John Norton had the following children and possibly others. The children definitely known to be his are: 1. Elizabeth. 2. Hannah. 3. Dorothy. 4. John, of whom further. 5. Felix. 6. Samuel. 7. Thomas.

(W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford, Connecticut," pp. 7-9. J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, p. 292. "New Haven Historical Society Papers," Vol. III, p. 253. C. J. Hoadley: "Records of New Haven," p. 186.)

II. John Norton, Jr., was the son of John Norton, but the name of his mother seems uncertain since his birth date likewise appears to be a matter of question. According to Savage, he was eight years of age in October, 1661, the date of his baptism; while the "Norton Genealogy" gives May 24, 1651, as the date of his birth. A penciled correction in the "Norton Genealogy" consulted says he was born October 14, 1657. Which of these is the correct date has not been ascertained. He died in Farmington, Connecticut, April 25, 1725. He was deputy to the General Court, from Farmington, in 1680, 1681, and 1682. His wife and son, Thomas, administered his estate November 2, 1725.

John Norton, Jr., married Ruth Moore (Moore II.) Children: 1. Ruth, born in 1675, died before 1725; married, February 25, 1700, Thomas Seymour. 2. Isaac, born in 1680; married, May 6, 1707, Elizabeth Galpin. 3. Elizabeth, born in 1682, died before 1725;

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

married, June 5, 1702-03, Samuel Catlin. 4. John, baptized April 6, 1684; married, May 6, 1708, Anne Thompson. 5. Mary, baptized November 21, 1686; married (first) John Pantry, Jr.; married (second), before 1725, Solomon Boltwood. 6. Sarah, born in 1689; married, August 10, 1710, Samuel Nowell. (In 1725 she was Sarah Hewitt.) 7. Hannah, born in 1692; married, January 29, 1713, John Pratt. 8. Dorcas, of whom further. 9. Thomas, born July 11, 1697; died in 1760; married (first), November 17, 1724, Elizabeth McJan; married (second) Widow Rachel Pomeroy; married (third), September 11, 1753, Elizabeth Deming. 10. Ebenezer; married, July 1, 1726, Sarah Savage.

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 293. W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford, Connecticut," pp. 9, 10, 11. C. W. Manwaring: "A Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records," Vol. II, p. 554.)

III. Dorcas Norton, daughter of John and Ruth (Moore) Norton, was born probably in Farmington, Connecticut, January 20, 1695, and died in 1750-51. To Dorcas Bird, daughter of John Norton, was given £28-15-03 in distribution of her father's estate, November 9, 1725, Farmington, Connecticut. Dorcas Norton married Joseph Bird. (Bird IV.)

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of New England," Vol. III, p. 293. I. Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family," p. 21. W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford," p. 10. C. W. Manwaring: "A Digest of Early Connecticut Probate Records," Vol. II, p. 554.)

(The Moore Line)

Arms—Argent a fesse gules between six moorcocks sable beaked and legged of the second. (Burke: "General Armory.")

It is easy to place the name Moore, spelt also Moor, or More, in the category of local names. It signifies "dweller at a moor." It occurs first in the Hundred Rolls, 1273, wherein a John atte Mor, of County Norfolk, was mentioned, and an Adam atte More, of County Oxford. There were also de la Mores in Counties York and Somersetshire in the next century.

There is no indication of the English home of Deacon Isaac Moore, aside from the fact that he was doubtless the Isaac Moore who came from London in 1635 in the ship "Increase," landing at Boston, Mas-

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

sachusetts. Families of his name were found in several English counties, and it is difficult to ascertain which might have been his ancestral home.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," p. 539. J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, p. 228.)

I. Deacon Isaac Moore was probably born in England, and died in Connecticut at an undetermined date. He lived in Farmington, where he was a sergeant in 1649. In 1657, he was a first settler and a representative in Norwalk, Connecticut, but about 1660 he returned to Farmington, where he became a deacon. It is thought that he was the Isaac Moore who came from London in the ship "Increase" in 1635. His wife, Ruth Stanley, was brought up in the family of her uncle, Timothy Stanley, since her father, John Stanley, had died on the passage to America. Her mother's name is not known. In the Farmington records of proprietors, Isaac "More" or "Moor" was rated £127. He was an original settler who had previously lived in Hartford. His residence in Norwalk was not long.

An old lawsuit between Isaac Moore and David Ensign resulted in the magistrate's decision that Isaac must pay David Ensign £15, a part of which was to be paid within a month after his daughter Elizabeth Moore's marriage. This suggests that Isaac may have promised his daughter Elizabeth's hand to David Ensign, and failed in this contract.

Isaac Moore married (first), in Hartford, Connecticut, December 5, 1645, Ruth Stanley, who was born in England about 1629, daughter of John Stanley; he married (second), about 1693, Dorothy (Smith-Blakeman-Hall) St. John, daughter of Rev. Henry Smith, and widow of (first) John Blakeman, (second) Francis Hall, and (third) Mark St. John. Children by his first wife: 1. Elizabeth; married Samuel Hayes. 2. Ruth, of whom further. 3. Sarah, born in Farmington, Connecticut, February 12, 1661-62, and baptized there; married William Lewis. 4. Mary, born September 15, 1664; married John Hart. 5. Phebe, born April 25, 1669.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XIII, p. 54. W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford, Connecticut," p. 10. I. P. Warren: "Descendants of John Stanley," p. 33. N. Porter: "Historical Discourse, Farmington, Connecticut," pp. 58-59, 63-64.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

II. Ruth Moore, daughter of Deacon Isaac and Ruth (Stanley) Moore, was born in Farmington, Connecticut, January 5, 1656-57, and baptized in Norwalk, Connecticut. She married John Norton. (Norton II.)

(W. W. Norton: "Some Descendants of John Norton, of Branford, Connecticut," p. 10. I. P. Warren: "Descendants of John Stanley," p. 33. C. Selleck: "Norwalk, Connecticut," p. 86.)

(The Woodford Line)

Arms—Sable, three leopards' heads reversant jessant-de-lis argent.

Crest—A naked savage wreathed about the head and waist, in the dexter hand a club, and in the sinister a palm branch in bend, all proper.

Motto—*Libertate quietam.* (Ease in liberty). (Burke: "General Armory.")

Woodford, also spelled Woodforde, as a surname, originated from parishes so called in Counties Wilts, Essex, Chester, and Northampton. As early as 1273 A. D., Geoffrey de Wodeford was recorded in County Wilts; Symon Wodeford, in County Bucks, and Nicholas de Wodeford, in County Gloucester.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

I. Thomas Woodford was born in Lincolnshire, England, and died at Northampton, Massachusetts, March 6, 1667. He came from London in the "William and Francis," which sailed March 7, arriving June 5, 1632. Edward Winslow was also a passenger. Thomas Woodford was one of the early settlers of Cambridge, Massachusetts, and removed in 1633 to Hartford, where he was one of the original settlers, but not a proprietor. He served as town crier, fence viewer, and took an active part in public affairs. He was made freeman March 4, 1635. Following the decease of his wife he removed, about 1656, to Northampton, where he was a proprietor. He bequeathed all his property to his three daughters, named in his will, Mary, Hannah, and Sarah.

Thomas Woodford married, March 4, 1635, Mary Blott, daughter of Robert Blott, who came to America in 1632 and possibly was a fellow passenger. Children: 1. Mary; married, in 1653, Isaac Sheldon. 2. Hannah; married, November 29, 1659, Samuel Allen. 3. Sarah, born September 2, 1649; married, September 4, 1664 (when

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

two days more than fifteen years old), Nehemiah Allen. 4. (Probably) Joseph, of whom further.

("American Ancestry," Vol. VIII, p. 639. W. R. Cutter: "New England Families, Genealogical and Memorial," Vol. III, p. 1456.)

II. Joseph Woodford, probably son of Thomas Woodford, died in Farmington, Connecticut, in 1701. His name is included among those of the eighty-four proprietors of Farmington, Connecticut, the value of his estate being £84. He was propounded for freeman 1663, and on October 12, 1669, when a list of the freemen in Farmington was taken, Joseph Woodford is among those named.

Joseph Woodford married Rebecca Newell (or Navell), daughter of Thomas and Rebecca (Olmsted) Newell (or Navell), of Farmington. Children (exact order uncertain): 1. Mary, of whom further. 2. Rebecca; married, January 2, 1696, John Porter. 3. Esther, died in 1742; married, January 2, 1696, Samuel Bird. 4. Sarah, died in 1750; married Nathaniel Bird. 5. Hannah; married, December 14, 1699, Thomas North. 6. Joseph, born in 1676, died in 1760; married (first), in 1699, Lydia Smith; married (second), in 1745, Mrs. Sarah Garret. 7. Elizabeth, born in 1682; married, June 11, 1707, Nathaniel Cole. 8. Susanna, baptized December 3, 1682; married, June 26, 1707, Anthony Judd. 9. Abigail, baptized December 27, 1685; married, August 8, 1710, Caleb Cowles.

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 638. Noah Porter, Jr.: "Historical Discourse in Commemoration of the Original Settlement of Farmington, Connecticut" (1640), pp. 63-64. "American Ancestry," Vol. VIII, p. 209. W. R. Cutter: "New England Families, Genealogical and Memorial," Vol. III, p. 1456.)

III. Mary Woodford, daughter of Joseph and Rebecca (Newell) Woodford, died in 1723. She married Thomas Bird. (Bird III.)

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 638. Isaac Bird: "Genealogical Sketch of the Bird Family, Having Its Origin in Hartford, Connecticut" (1855), p. 5.)

(The Steele Line)

Arms—Argent, a bend chequy sable and ermine, between two lions' heads erased gules, a chief azure.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or a demi-ostrich with wings endorsed gules.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Of Scandinavian origin, the baptismal name Steele, spelt also Steel and Stelle, connotes "son of Steel," from the Danish word "Staal" or

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Icelandic "Stael." Iron and steel are components of many early northern personal names in Great Britain. In early records the surname Steele is found largely in the eastern counties of England. In the Hundred Rolls, 1273, there was a Robert Stele of County Lincoln, and a John Stel, of County Suffolk. In County York, 1379, there was a Johannes Stele, also a Willelmus Steel. Later, a John Steele married, at St. Mary Aldermary, London, in 1651, one Abigail Hannkok.

Traditionally, the Steele line is given County Essex as a background in England, but no connection can be found between the American progenitor and such a family. The name is found early in the Counties Lincoln, Suffolk, and York; and there is a famous Steele family of Cheshire to which belonged the noted Sir Richard (or Dick) Steele, of Dublin, also William Steele, Lord Chancellor of Ireland under the Cromwells. Their early ancestor was Thomas Steele, of Weston.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," p. 715. W. H. Egle: "Notes and Queries," Series 2, Vol. XII, p. 71; Series 4. Vol. XII, pp. 129, 258.)

I. John Steele, presumably of County Essex, England, was born in England, and died in Farmington, Connecticut, November 25, 1665. He and his older brother, George, both proprietors in Cambridge, Massachusetts, in 1633, came to America about 1631, and were freemen May 14, 1634. John Steele served as representative that year for two courts, and was appointed a representative to govern the great exodus to Connecticut. He was one of the founders of Hartford, and served as representative 1639-57; he was also town clerk until he removed to Farmington in 1645. In 1639, he owned two acres near Little River, Hartford.

John Steele married (first), in England, Rachel, who was born in England and died in this country in 1653. He married (second), November 23, 1655, Mary Seymour, probably the widow of Richard Seymour. Children by his first wife: 1. Samuel, born in England, died in Wethersfield, Connecticut, August 14, 1685; married, before 1652, Mary Boosey. 2. John, born in England, died 1653; married, January 22, 1645, Mary (or Mercy) Warner, who afterward married (second) William Hills. 3. Lydia, of whom further. 4. Mary; married, March 31, 1657 (the same date as her sister Lydia's mar-

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

riage), William Judd. 5. Daniel, born in Hartford, Connecticut, April 29, 1645; died in 1646. 6. Hannah, died in 1655, probably unmarried. 7. Sarah; married Thomas Judd.

(C. Pope: "Pioneers of Massachusetts," p. 433. W. Spooner: "Historic Families of America," Vol. II, p. 64. J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 180. "Connecticut Local History," J. Gay's historical address on "Farmington, Connecticut, Two Hundred Years Ago," p. 5. J. Hawes: "Historical Sketches of First Church, Hartford, Connecticut," p. 36. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XII, p. 173; Vol. XIII, p. 54.)

II. *Lydia Steele*, daughter of John and Rachel Steele, was probably born in England, though the date of her birth is not known. She married James Bird. (Bird II.)

(J. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 180. "Farmington Church Records," in "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. XII, p. 36.)

(The Thompson Line)

Arms—Or, on a fesse dancetté azure three estoiles argent, on a canton of the second the sun in his splendour.

Crest—A cubit arm erect vested gules cuffed argent, holding in the hand five ears of wheat or.

Motto—*In lumine lucem.* (Shine in Light.)

(A. G. Hibbard: "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 548.)

The family of Thompson in Kent spelled the name Thomson, and the change to the present form was made in America. Thomas Thompson, of Sandwich, County Kent, merchant, had a son, Thomas. Thomas Thompson, of Sandwich, married a daughter of a Mansfield. He had children: Henry, Anne, and Thomas.

Henry Thompson, named above, had sons, John, Anthony, and William. Thomas Thompson, named last in the paragraph above, also had sons, John, Anthony, and William. These names, found together in the Thompson family of County Kent, and the fact that three brothers, William, Anthony, and John, came from England to America, make it seem highly probable that the Thompsons of America descended from the family of Thompson (or Thomson), of Kent, England. There has been much controversy on this matter, but extensive research has failed to settle the point, and almost all of those who have investigated the Thompson pedigree concede the probability of descent from the family of Kent.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Henry Thompson, son of Thomas Thompson, merchant, of Sandwich, Kent, married Dorothy Honeywood, of Royton Chapel, daughter of Robert Honeywood, of Pett in Charing. They had six children: 1. Robert, baptized March 26, 1595. 2. Mary, baptized October 14, 1599. 3. Judith, baptized August 2, 1602. 4. John, baptized November 18, 1604. 5. Elizabeth, born September 20, 1607. 6. Anthony, baptized August 30, 1612, and claimed by A. G. Hibbard to be the ancestor of the family in America.

Honywood (Honeywood) Arms—Argent, a chevron between three falcons' heads erased azure, beaked or.

Crest—A wolf's head couped ermine.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

The name Thompson stands twenty-first in a roll of common surnames, being rarer than Edwards, but more common than White. Thomson (or Thompson) signifies a son of Thomas. Bardsley, in his "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames," gives: Eborard *fil.* Thome, County Cambridge, in the Hundred Rolls of 1273; Abraham *fil.* Thome, County Bedford, 20 Edward I, 1291; Richard *fil.* Thome, County York, 1291; Petrus Thome-son, County York, 1379; Johannes Thomasson, of County York, 1379.

There are large families of Thompson in both Ireland and Scotland. Baron Haversham, created Baron in 1696, was a descendant of Maurice Thompson, of Cheston, County Herts. This baronetcy became extinct in 1745. A Thompson was Lord Mayor of London in 1737, and another in 1828. Richard Thompson was treasurer of St. Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin, in 1582. Baron Sydenham, Governor-General of Canada, was a descendant of the Thompsons of County Surrey.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." Records in possession of the family. A. G. Hibbard: "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 526.)

I. Anthony Thompson, claimed by A. G. Hibbard (but not definitely proven) to be identical with Anthony Thompson, baptized August 30, 1612, son of Henry and Dorothy (Honeywood) Thompson, was born in England, and died in New Haven, Connecticut, in September, 1648. His will, dated March 23, 1647, was proved May 27, 1650. Three Thompson brothers, Anthony, John, and William, left England with the party led by the Rev. John Davenport and

BISHOP

Arms—Ermine, on a bend cotised sable, three bezants.

Crest—A griffin sejant argent, resting the dexter claw on an escutcheon of the first. (Crozier: "General Armory.")

TOMPKINS

Arms—Azure, on a chevron between three moorcocks or close, three crosses crosslet sable.

Crest—A unicorn's head erased per fesse argent and or, armed and maned counterchanged, gorged with a chaplet of laurel vert.

Motto—*Ne magnum nisi bonum.* (Nothing is great unless it be good.) (In possession of family.)

WILMOT

Arms—Argent, on a fesse gules between three eagles' heads erased sable, as many escallops of the field.

Crest—A portcullis azure, chained or.

(Fairbairns: "Crests.")

BEECHER

Arms—Vaire argent and gules, on a canton or a stag's head cabossed sable.

Crest—A demi-lion erased argent, girded round the waist with a ducal coronet or. (Burke: "General Armory.")

PRITCHARD

Arms—Ermine, a lion rampant sable.

Crest—A dexter arm proper holding a battle axe, handle gules. (Burke: "General Armory.")

HOLT

Arms—Azure, two bars or; in chief a cross formée fitchée of the last.

Crest—A squirrel sejant or, holding a hazel branch slipped and fructed, all proper.

Motto—*Exaltavit humiles.* (He exalted the humble.)

(Burke: "General Armory.")

THESE

These — These are the three books of the Bible. — A thin book, the size of a pocket book, containing the first.

TOURNAI

Tournai — A town in Belgium, three leagues from Brussels. — A town in Belgium, three leagues from Brussels. — A town in Belgium, three leagues from Brussels. — A town in Belgium, three leagues from Brussels.

WILMOT

Wilmot — A town in England, three leagues from London. — A town in England, three leagues from London. — A town in England, three leagues from London. — A town in England, three leagues from London.

IN FICHY

In Fichy — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris.

FOURMANS

Fourmans — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris.

HOIST

Hoist — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris. — A town in France, three leagues from Paris.



Bishop



Tompkins



Wilmot



Beecher



Pritchard



Holt

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Theophilus Eaton, in the "Hecton," and arrived in Boston, Massachusetts, June 26, 1637. Anthony and William Thompson settled at New Haven, and John, the third brother, at East Haven. On June 4, 1639, Anthony Thompson signed the colony compact at a meeting held in Robert Newman's barn, and on September 1, 1640, when the settlement was called New Haven, Anthony Thompson, with a family of four persons, was one of the list of first settlers. He was a member of the band of soldiers organized to protect the settlers from the Indians.

Anthony Thompson married (first), in England. He married (second) Catherine, who married (second), in Milford, Connecticut, July 14, 1652, Nicholas Camp. Children of the first marriage: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Anthony, born in December, 1634, died December 29, 1654. 3. Bridget, born in 1636; married the Rev. John Bowers. Children of the second marriage: 4. Hannah, baptized June 8, 1645; married a Stanton. 5. Lydia, baptized July 24, 1647; married Isaac Crittenden. 6. Ebenezer, born posthumously, baptized October 15, 1648; married Deborah Dudley, June 16, 1671.

(W. B. Thompson: "Thompson Lineage," pp. 71-72. A. G. Hibbard: "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," pp. 526-528. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," Vol. I, p. 3. Records in possession of the family.)

II. John Thompson, son of Anthony Thompson, was born in England, in 1632, and died June 2, 1707. He was called mariner, and is mentioned frequently in deeds and other documents, owning land in New Haven. John Thompson married Anne Vicars. (Vicars II.) Children, born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. John, born May 12, 1657, died November 15, 1711; married, May 9, 1682, Rebecca Daniel. 2. Anne, died January 15, 1691-92; married, May 10, 1688, Caleb Chidsey. 3. Joseph, born April 4, 1664, died December 14, 1711; married, February 2, 1695, Elizabeth Smith. 4. A child, born in September, 1677, died in infancy. 5. Samuel, of whom further. 6. Sarah, born January 16, 1671, died November 21, 1711; married, November 25, 1702, John Mix. 7. William, born January 17, 1674; married Hannah Glover. 8. Mary, born May 16, 1675.

(W. B. Thompson: "Thompson Lineage," pp. 12-13. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. II, p. 396; Vol. V, pp. 1195-96. Records in possession of the family. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," Vol. I, pp. 14, 21, 35, 76.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Captain Samuel Thompson, son of John and Anne (Vicars) Thompson, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, May 12, 1669, and died in Goshen, Connecticut, March 26, 1749, probably at the home of one of his sons, Samuel or Amos. He was probably a merchant, living in Westville, Connecticut, for a time, later removing to Goshen, Connecticut. He was made captain of a company of soldiers.

Captain Samuel Thompson married, November 14, 1695, Rebecca Bishop. (Bishop II.) Children: 1. Samuel, born December 2, 1696; married Esther Alling. 2. James, of whom further. 3. Amos, born May 3, 1702; married Sarah Alling. 4. Gideon, born December 25, 1704; married Lydia Punderson. 5. Rebecca, born, February 23, 1708; married David Austin. 6. Judah, born June 10, 1711, died August 1, 1712. 7. Judah, born October 5, 1713. 8. Enos, born August 18, 1717; married Sarah Hitchcock.

(W. B. Thompson: "Thompson Lineage," p. 13. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. I, p. 202. A. G. Hibbard: "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 529.)

IV. James Thompson, son of Captain Samuel and Rebecca (Bishop) Thompson, was born January 5, 1699, and died in 1737. His will was presented and estate settled in New Haven, December 2, 1737. He lived in Westville, Connecticut. James Thompson married, May 30, 1723, Hannah Wilmot. (Wilmot IV.) Children: 1. Mary, born February 16, 1724; married Jonah Baldwin. 2. James, born November 21, 1725, died in 1818; married, probably at Woodbridge, Connecticut, March 6, 1751, Mehitabel Baldwin. 3. Hannah, born about 1727; unmarried in 1754. 4. Mabel, baptized October 5, 1729; married Griffin Bradley. 5. Amy, of whom further. 6. Hezekiah, born about 1735; married Rebecca Judson. 7. Rachel, baptized October 2, 1737; probably died young.

(A. G. Hibbard: "History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 531. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIX, p. 69. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," Vol. I, pp. 133, 153, 158. F. W. Bailey: "Early Connecticut Marriages," Vol. VII, p. 49. Records in possession of the family.)

V. Amy Thompson, daughter of James and Hannah (Wilmot) Thompson, was baptized at New Haven, Connecticut, April 2, 1732. She married Ariel Bradley. (Bradley V.)

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 265. F. W. Bailey: "Early Connecticut Marriages," Vol. VII, p. 49.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Wilmot Line)

Arms—Argent, on a fesse gules between three eagles' heads erased sable, as many escallops of the field. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Crest—A portcullis azure, chained or. (Fairbairns: "Crests.")

William, the Christian name, is the origin of many of our English surnames. Wilmot is a diminutive form which appears early in Yorkshire, Cheshire, and Cambridge.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Benjamin Wilmot, first of the line of whom positive record is found, was one of the thirty-two who received small home-lots next after the first division among the original proprietors of New Haven, Connecticut, in 1639, where his son, Benjamin, signs the compact of 1639 ("Records of the Colony," p. 18). Benjamin, Senior, may be the Watertown, Massachusetts, debtor of Nathaniel Sparrowhawk, of Cambridge, who died June 27, 1647. Benjamin, Senior, took the oath of fidelity at New Haven, May 2, 1648. He died August 18, 1669, aged "about fourscore." Benjamin Wilmot married Anne, who died October 7, 1668. Children, born in England; named in father's will: 1. Ann, died before May, 1654; married William Bunnell. 2. Benjamin, Jr., died April 8, 1651; married Widow Elizabeth Heaton, and had: Hannah, Mary, and Elizabeth. 3. William, of whom further.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 580. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. VII, p. 176; Vol. LIX, pp. 67-69. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," p. 25.)

II. William Wilmot, son of Benjamin and Anne Wilmot, was born in England, and died in New Haven, Connecticut. His inventory was dated November 5, 1689. He took the oath of fidelity May 22, 1654. William Wilmot married, October 14, 1658, Sarah Thomas, daughter of John and Tabitha Thomas. (Thomas I—Child I.) Children, born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. Benjamin, of whom further. 2. Sarah, born March 8, 1662-63; married (first), November 27, 1677, Thomas Hotchkiss; (second) Lieutenant Daniel Sperry. 3. William, born October 17, 1665, died January 25, 1714; sergeant; married, October 20, 1692, Mary Chidsey, daughter of John and Elizabeth Chidsey. 4. John, born January 20, 1667, died before 1733; married Sarah Clark, daughter of John and Sarah (Smith) Clark; she married (second), February 7, 1733, Lieutenant Daniel Sperry, as his

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

third wife. 5. Anna, born February 26, 1670; married (first) Benjamin Lines, who died July 26, 1689, son of Ralph and Alice Lines; married (second) Dr. Peter Carrington, of New Haven. 6. Alexander, born December 13, 1672; married Sarah Brown, daughter of Eleazer and Sarah (Bulkley) Brown, and settled about 1697 in Southold, Long Island. 7. Tabitha, born November 12, 1675, died December 15, 1675. 8. Mary, born January 7, 1677; married (first), August 24, 1693, Joseph Dorman; (second), April 22, 1718, Benjamin Wooden. 9. Thomas, born September 21, 1679; captain; married (first), June 27, 1705, Mary Lines, daughter of Samuel and Mary (Thompson) Lines; married (second), May 24, 1721, Sarah (Barnes) Moulthrop, widow of Samuel Moulthrop. 10. Elizabeth, born March 24, 1682; married, May 19, 1709, Richard Sperry.

(“New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LIX, pp. 68-71. “New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records,” pp. 16, 17, 19, 27, 42, 44, 50, 53.)

III. Benjamin Wilmot, son of William and Sarah (Thomas) Wilmot, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, March 7, 1661, and died in 1728. He married, February 13, 1701, Mary Beecher. (Beecher IV.) Children, born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. Hannah, of whom further. 2. Benjamin, born December 1, 1701, died in Waterbury, Connecticut, June 21 or 25, 1768; married, December 19, 1733, Abigail Skidmer, of Stratford, Connecticut, who died December 30, 1770. 3. Ebenezer, born March 10, 1707.

(“New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records,” p. 85. “New England Historical and Genealogical Register,” Vol. LIX, p. 69.)

IV. Hannah Wilmot, daughter of Benjamin and Mary (Beecher) Wilmot, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, December 9, 1701. She married James Thompson. (Thompson IV.)

(“New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records,” p. 133. A. G. Hibbard: “History of the Town of Goshen, Connecticut,” p. 529.)

(The Beecher Line)

Arms—Vaire argent and gules on a canton or, a stag's head cabossed sable.

Crest—A demi-lion erased argent, girded round the waist with a ducal coronet or. (Burke: “General Armory.”)

Beecher is sometimes classed as a surname of occupational origin, and sometimes as one of local origin, in the latter case deriving from “the beecher,” signifying a dweller near some prominent beech tree.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

In 1273, we find the names Henry le Beechur (also Becchur) and John Becher, both in the Hundred Rolls of County Cambridge. In 1670, record is made of the marriage of Oliver Beecher and Sarah Wyan, at St. Michael, Cornhill.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. John Beecher, believed to be the ancestor of the family herewith, was born in England, and died probably in the hut built by the earliest New Haven colonists, at New Haven, Connecticut, in 1637-1638. Of the seven ventures into the territory, now New Haven, one was John Beecher, who died in the rigorous winter there probably. History of this first venture of Theophilus Eaton and Rev. John Davenport's followers show that one of the first comers died, and that one was very likely Beecher. In 1750, when excavations were made at the site where these seven men spent their winter, bones of a large sized man were found buried in the English fashion, thus establishing the fact that the remains were not those of an Indian.

John Beecher married Hannah Potter, widow of a Potter. She is recorded in 1651 at New Haven, and in 1655 she was permitted to sit "in the alley" of the meetinghouse at her own request "for the convenience of hearing," and then called "Goodwife Beecher, the elder." In her will, dated June 13, 1657, New Haven, Connecticut, she named son, William Potter; grandson, John Potter; grandchild, Hannah Blackly, wife of Samuel Blackly; grandson, Samuel Potts; son, Isaac Beecher.

John and Hannah (Potter) Beecher were the parents of one child: 1. Isaac, of whom further.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, p. 162. J. C. Frost: "Ancestors of Henry Ward Beecher," pp. 5-6. E. E. Atwater: "History of New Haven," p. 63.)

II. Isaac Beecher, son of (traditionally) John and Hannah (Potter) Beecher, was born in England and died in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1690. His will, dated September 26, 1689, was proved November 12, 1690. March 3, 1659, Isaac Beecher acknowledged receipt of his one-third share of his widowed mother's estate. She had in her will given two-thirds of her estate to her oldest son (Isaac's half-brother), William Potter. Isaac Beecher was among colonists at New Haven in 1638-39; was freeman in 1644; fence viewer in 1650-51;

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

and member of train band 1639-44. On December 4, 1655, John and Samuel Potter conveyed to Isaac Beecher property that was their father's. Isaac Beecher and his wife had a seat in the meetinghouse in 1661 at New Haven.

Isaac Beecher married, about 1643-44, Mary. Children: 1. John, of whom further. 2. Isaac, born August 18, 1650, died in 1708; married Joanna Roberts. 3. Samuel, born October 17, 1652; married, July 2, 1691, Sarah (Hurd) Sherwood. 4. Eleazer, born April 8, 1655, died March 2, 1725-26; married, November 5, 1677, Phebe Prindle. 5. Joseph, died at New Haven, October 2, 1728; married, about 1694, Lydia Roberts.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, pp. 162-64. J. C. Frost: "Ancestors of Henry Ward Beecher," pp. 6-7.)

III. John Beecher, son of Isaac and Mary Beecher, was born in or near New Haven, Connecticut, about 1646, baptized at New Haven, Connecticut, June 27, 1685 (an adult), and died at New Haven, Connecticut, December 5, 1712, aged sixty-seven. John Beecher, Eleazer Beecher, Isaac Beecher, Sr., and Isaac Beecher, Jr., were all on list of proprietors of New Haven, Connecticut, in 1685. John Beecher married Elizabeth Roberts, born about 1650, died August 4, 1722, aged seventy-two, daughter of William and Joanna Roberts. Children, some baptized January 17, 1685, New Haven, Connecticut: 1. John, born October 9, 1671, died young. 2. Mary, of whom further. 3. Elizabeth, born about 1675, died in 1758; married, July 24, 1700, John Dunbar. 4. Joanna, born July 21, 1677, died October 21, 1718. 5. Sarah, born about 1679, died December 18, 1712, aged thirty-two; married Nathan Benham. 6. Jemima, born February 11, 1681. 7. Joseph, born February 13, 1683, died in 1712; married, August 3, 1710, Sarah Morris. 8. Captain Ebenezer, born April 12, 1686, died January 28, 1763, aged seventy-seven; married (first) Hannah Mix, who died February 15, 1739-40, aged forty-eight; married (second) Elizabeth (Wheeler) Dibble. 9. Lydia, baptized August 12, 1688, died in 1690. 10. John, baptized April 26, 1696, died February 29, 1723-24, aged twenty-eight; married, December 7, 1721, Mehitable Tuttle; she married (second) Barnabas Baldwin.

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, pp. 162-63. J. C. Frost: "Ancestors of Henry Ward Beecher," pp. 6-7. "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. I, p. 157.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

IV. Mary Beecher, daughter of John and Elizabeth (Roberts) Beecher, was born February 23, 1672, baptized in New Haven, Connecticut, January 17, 1685. She married Benjamin Wilmot. (Wilmot III.)

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LIX, p. 69. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, p. 162.)

(The Bishop Line)

Arms—Ermine, on a bend cotised sable, three bezants.

Crest—A griffin sejant argent, resting the dexter claw on an escutcheon of the first. (Crozier: "General Armory.")

Of English origin, the name Bishop was often used as a nickname for "the Bishop," a sobriquet readily affixed to anyone of ecclesiastical appearance. Most Bishops, however, got their names from the custom of electing a boy-Bishop on St. Nicholas' Day. The ceremony was a very familiar one—similar to that of King. John le Bissup, County Oxford; William Bisseop, County Norfolk; Henry Biscop, County Lincoln; Elvena, Peter Bishop, County Cambridge, and Alice Bishop, are all mentioned as early as 1273, in England. Later mentions of the name are from Somerset, Chester, and London.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. James Bishop, immigrant ancestor, came from England and had brothers, Henry and Nathaniel, who arrived at Boston, Massachusetts, where Sarah was born to his wife Alice, March 20, 1634. ("Boston Registry Department, Reports," Vol. IX, p. 2.) James Bishop appears in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1651, when he was secretary of New Haven Colony. He was representative of New Haven in 1665, after the first session of the Assembly after the union with Connecticut Colony; assistant in 1668, and deputy governor from 1683 until his death, June 24, 1691.

James Bishop married (first) Mary Lewen, who died November 26, 1664, probably sister of George Lambertson's wife; he married (second), December 12, 1665, Elizabeth Tompkins. (Tompkins II.) Children of the first marriage, all except the first born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. Hannah, born in Branford, Connecticut, May 29, 1651, died June 12, 1710; married, August 12, 1669, John Morris. 2. Grace, born January 17, 1652-53. 3. Sarah, born July 28, 1655. 4. Elizabeth, born July 3, 1657; married, September 12, 1677, Eleazar Giles. 5. Abigail, born October 30, 1659, died October 24, 1710;

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

married (first), November 18, 1686, John Talmadge; married (second) William Maltbie. 6. John, born May 17, 1662, died in 1710; married Abigail Willet, who died in 1725, daughter of Nathaniel Willet, of Hartford. 7. Ruth, born November 22, 1664, died June 1, 1739; married, October 21, 1692, Nathaniel Yale. Children of the second marriage: 8. Samuel, born November 21, 1666, died March 12, 1747-48; deacon and town clerk; married, November 14, 1695, Hannah (Yale) Talmadge, born July 6, 1662, died February 10, 1743-44, daughter of Thomas and Mary (Turner) Yale, and widow of Enos Talmadge. 9. Mary, born March 14, 1668-69. 10. James, born July 27, 1671, died July 1, 1736; married, December 11, 1695, Abigail Bennett, born about 1671, died November 8, 1761. 11. Rebecca, of whom further.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. I, pp. 184-85. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, pp. 201-02. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," pp. 6, 8, 11, 14, 16, 18, 19, 22, 23, 24, 28, 34, 38.)

II. Rebecca Bishop, daughter of James and Elizabeth (Tompkins) Bishop, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, December 10, 1673, and died there April 5, 1734. She married Captain Samuel Thompson. (Thompson III.)

(A. G. Hibbard: "History of Goshen, Connecticut," p. 529.)

(The Tompkins Line)

Arms—Azure, on a chevron between three moorcocks or close, three crosses crosslet sable.

Crest—A unicorn's head erased per fesse argent and or, armed and maned counter-changed, gorged with a chaplet of laurel vert. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Motto—*Ne magnum nisi bonum.* (Nothing is great unless it be good).

(In possession of family.)

The Tompkins family is of English ancestry, dating back to about 1500. The name is one of several forms derived from the Christian name, Thomas, others being Thomason, Thompkins, Tompkinson, and Thomaston. The name of Richard Tompkyn was on record in London marriage licenses in 1566. One Richard Tompkins is mentioned in a list of Noblemen and Gentlemen who, with the usual offices of state, composed the commission of the peace for the county of Hereford during the reign of Elizabeth. The English ancestry of Micah Tompkins, of our interest, has not been learned.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." John Duncumb: "Collections Toward the History and Antiquities of the County of Hereford," Vol. I, p. 102.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

I. *Micah (or Michael) Tompkins* was probably born in England before 1619, and examination of local records seems to indicate that he did not land or subsequently reside at Plymouth, Salem, or Watertown, Massachusetts. He is first mentioned as removing from Wethersfield, Connecticut, to Milford, Connecticut, in 1639, with wife, Mary. On page one, of Book I, of the "Milford, Connecticut, Town Records," the name of Micah Tompkins appears in the list of freemen dated November 20, 1639. The fact that in this year he was old enough to be a freeman, and was also married, makes the probable date of his birth previous to 1619. Milford records state that "at a town meeting, held November 24, 1639, the town was by common consent and general vote of freemen named Milford" in commemoration of the town of this name in their native England. This may have some bearing on the locality from which Micah came. Early Connecticut records speak of the first settlers of Milford as having come from Yorkshire and Essex, England. Their first pastor was the Rev. Peter Prudden, from Edgeton, in Yorkshire. As one of the first settlers of Milford, Micah Tompkins received out of the first subdivisions of land, a house-lot (No. 15) of two acres, one rood and twenty rods; also additional land in the subdivisions of 1643 and 1649.

Micah and his wife, Mary, were admitted December 12, 1643, to membership in a religious society in Milford. In 1666, in company with a large group of friends, he removed to New Jersey. During July, 1667, Micah Tompkins with ten others, purchased a tract of land from the Indians on the Passaic River, on the site of the present city of Newark. The deed was obtained July 11, 1667. Micah Tompkins' home plot on this new tract was on the easterly side of Mulberry Street, near the corner of Kinney Street. He served on a committee appointed in 1668 to erect a church. The exact date of his death is not known, but was between June 30, 1688, the date of his will, and the day in December, 1690, on which his will was probated.

Micah Tompkins married Mary, who was living in 1695. Their children were baptized soon after he and his wife joined the church. Children: 1. Jonathan, born at Milford, baptized December 17, 1643. 2. Mary, born in Milford, Connecticut, baptized December 17, 1643. 3. Elizabeth, of whom further. 4. David, born in 1647, died at the age of two years. 5. Seth, born in 1649. 6. Rebecca, born November 24, 1653. 7. Abigail, born November 13, 1655. 8.

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Micah, born May 9, 1659, baptized at New Haven, November 27, 1659.

(E. Tompkins: "A Record of the Ancestry and Kindred of the Children of Edward Tompkins, Sr." (1893), p. 59. Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 311. H. R. Stiles: "History of Ancient Wethersfield, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 705.)

II. Elizabeth Tompkins, daughter of Micah and Mary Tompkins, was baptized in 1644, and died October 25, 1703. She married James Bishop. (Bishop I.)

(Edward Tompkins: "A Record of the Ancestry and Kindred of the Children of Edward Tompkins, Sr." (1893), p. 59. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. I, p. 201. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," Vol. I, p. 24.)

(The Vicars Line)

Arms—Sable, on a chief dancetté or, two cinquefoils gules, a border engrailed ermine. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Forms of one name, Vicary, Vicery, Vicarey, Vicars, Vicors, Vicaris, Vicaridge, Vickerage, Vickeridge, with many others of the same origin, but of various spellings, mean of the vicarage, or office of the vicar, or at the vicars. They are official or sometimes local names, and are found very early in England. Peter atte Vicars, in 1379, was of County York; in 1574, Stephen Vyccarye married Margaret Johnson, in London; in 1585, John Vicary, of County Devon, was registered at Oxford College; in 1574, John Vicarish married Margery Gerard; in 1665, John Halton married Alice Vicaridge, at Canterbury; in 1614, Margaret Vicares married William Collins, in London; Joan Viccaries married John Wells, at London, in 1617.

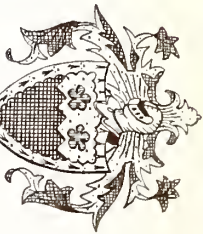
(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

In the "Visitation of Worcester," in 1634, were the families of Robert Vicaris, of Astley, and Robert Vickers, of Bewdley. Descendants of these families were found in Astley and Bewdley in 1682, when the second visitation of that county was made. John Vicaridge, of "Natton," married, in 1603, Mary Sheldon, daughter of William Sheldon. They had a son, John, who was baptized in 1607.

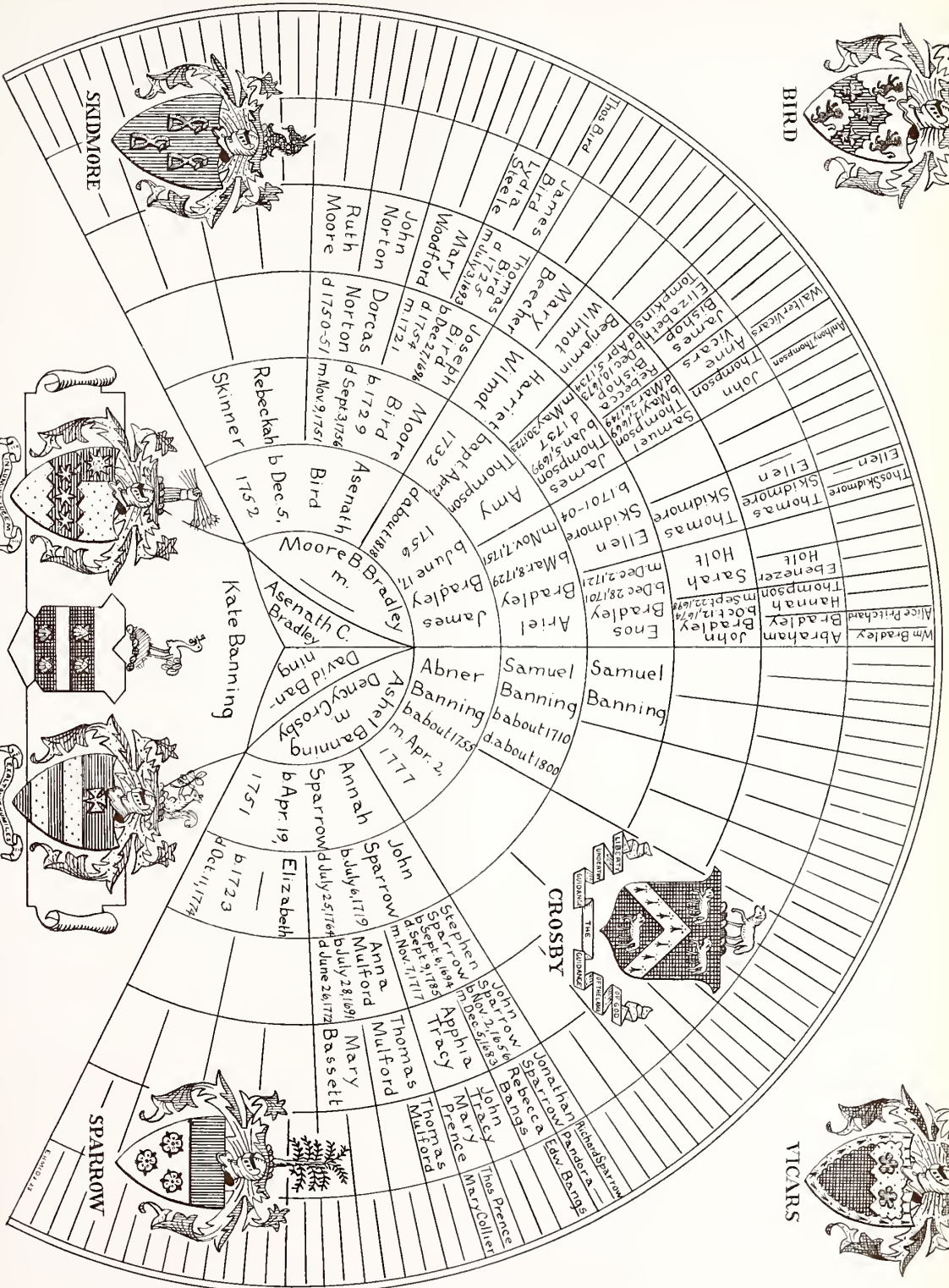
Richard Vicaredg, son of Francis Vicaredg, was baptized in Over Ardey, County Worcester, July 30, 1653. Walter Vicaris, son of Wil-



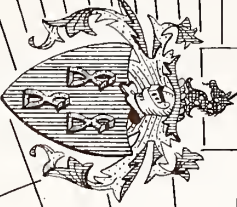
BIRD



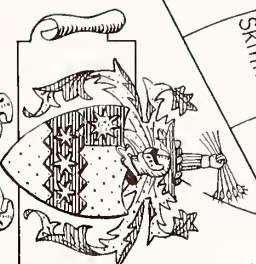
VICARS



SKIDMORE



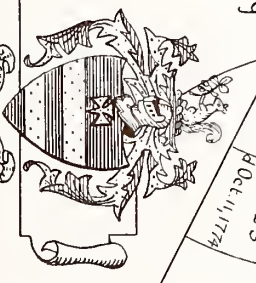
THOMPSON



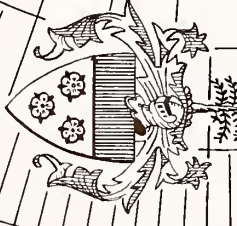
BANNING



HOLT



SPARROW



BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

liam Vicaris and Joyce, his wife, was baptized September 13, 1640, at Doddenham, County Worcester, England. Anne Vicaridge, daughter of Richard Vicaridge and his wife, Anne, was baptized March 20, 1603, at Knightwick, County Worcester, England. Many others of the name are to be found in the parish registers of County Worcester. There are also Hopkins and Wakeman families (the Vicars family intermarried with these families) in County Worcester.

Robert Vicaris married Anne Sterry (both of Doddenham, County Worcester), June 29, 1678. In 1608, Robert Vicaris was of Tibberton, County Worcester, and in 1613 Robert and William Vicaris were taxed at Tibberton. On November 12, 1636, mention is found of Robert Vicaris, of Bewdley, Gentleman. In 1607 Walter Vicaris was of Omberseley (near Bewdley), in County Worcester.

Collateral Vicars families include the following:

Edward Vickers, of Wakefield, Yorkshire, married Mary Rawson, daughter of Thomas Rawson, of Wardsend, near Sheffield, and had children: Thomas, John, William, and Anne. Thomas Vickers married Elizabeth Broadbent, daughter of Joseph Broadbent, of Aston, and had children: William, Sarah, Elizabeth, all living in the seventeenth century. William Vickers, son of Edward Vickers, was of Southall Green, Ecclesfield, Yorkshire. He married Elizabeth Turbell, daughter of James Turbell, of Southall, and had children: John, Thomas, Edward, Elizabeth, and Mary. John Vickers, of Doncaster, attorney, was buried April 21, 1668. He married Mary Rasine, daughter of George Rasine, and had children: John, George, and Catherine.

Thomas Vicars was of Scrawsby before 1585. His daughter, Alice, married Thomas Bosville, of Warmsworth, County York. Joane Vicars married George Metham, of Cadeby, County York, about 1550. Mary Vicars, of Brodsworth, married George Holgate, of Stapleton, about 1600.

At Exeter, in the twelfth year of Henry I (1228), Walter de Wynemaneston and his wife, Alice, remitted and quit-claimed a tract of land in County Devon to Robert le Vicare and his heirs. The will of John Vicary is recorded in County Devon in 1547; that of Robert Vicary in County Devon in 1592; of William in 1596; of Roger in 1603; of John in 1608; of Emott in 1619; and Benedict in

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

1624. The principal seat of the Devon Vicars (or Vicareys) was at Dunkeswell, County Devon. They are of the same parent family as are the Vicars of County Worcester.

(Harleian Society Publications: "Familiæ Minorum Gentium," Vol. XXXIX, pp. 897, 1079. Records in possession of the family.)

I. *Walter Vicars* is called "cousin" in the will of William Hopkins in 1647. William Vicaris (or Vicars), of Bewdley, England, is also mentioned in this will. Walter Vicars may have come to America, but there is no record of him in the New Haven Colony. The son-in-law of William Hopkins, John Wakeman, did come, however, and later on came "the cousin of his wife's," Anne Vicars.

(Records in possession of the family.)

II. *Anne Vicars*, daughter of Walter Vicars, and mentioned as a "daughter of Walter" in the will of William Hopkins, was born about 1634. She came to America probably when between sixteen and eighteen years of age, and was engaged to marry John Roberts. He went back to England from America and was not heard of again. Before leaving he gave his property in America to "his espoused wife Anne Vicars." He left the property in the hands of John Wakeman, to be given to her if he did not return. She married John Thompson. (Thompson II.)

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven," Vol. II. Records in possession of the family.)

(The Skidmore Line)

Arms—Gules, three stirrups, leathers and buckles or.

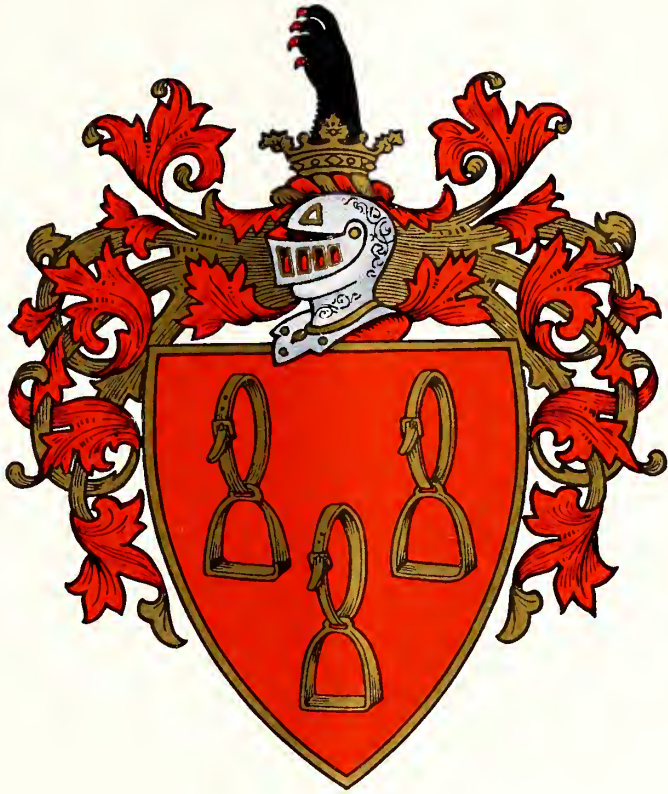
Crest—A unicorn's head erased sable, platée. (Burke: "General Armory.")

Scudamore Arms—Gules, three stirrups, leathery and buckled or.

Crest—Out of a ducal coronet or a lion's gamb sable, armed gules.

(W. Berry: "County Genealogies and Pedigrees of Kent," p. 34.)

As a surname, Skidmore is derived from Norman-French "Escu d'amour," "the shield of love," in allusion probably to some incident from which came the original family of Escudamour or Scudamore. The family motto sanctions this etymology, being "Scuto Amoris Divini"—Defended by the Shield of Divine Love. Skidmore was an early variant, as the following spelling of the name of one and the same individual will show: Walter de Scudamore, recorded in the Writs of Parliament, 1316; Walter de Skydemor, 1319, and Wauter



Scudamore

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

de Skidmore, 1321. Sir Alan Scudamore is said to have been a person of importance in Monmouthshire, in the reign of William Rufus, and Walter de Scudamore was Lord of Upton, County Wilts, in the reign of Stephen. During the days of the early barons in England the family was noted for its excellent horsemanship and the superior breed of horses they possessed. Thomas Skidmore, the American founder, descended from a Norman ancestor, one of the captains who came to England with William the Conqueror. The home of the English family was mostly in Herefordshire.

(Lower: "Patronymica Britannica." Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. Thomas Skidmore, a descendant of Sir Thomas Scudamore, of Holme Lacy, Herefordshire, England, was born about 1600. About 1635 he was of Westerly, County Gloucester, England, and sailed to America in the latter part of the same year. Between 1636 and 1639 he was of Cambridge, Massachusetts, residing on the westerly side of Brighton Street and, in 1640, he arranged to have Henry Hazzard, a Bristol mariner (with power of attorney), sell his place at Westerly, County Gloucester, England, and to bring over his wife, Ellen, and their children. In 1648, he owned a home-lot in New London, Connecticut; December 6, 1649, he was living at Hartford, Connecticut; in 1650, he had land in Stratford, Connecticut; and from there he moved to Fairfield, Connecticut, and in 1672, to Huntington, Long Island. He was a petitioner for Nashaway (Lancaster, Massachusetts), but not a resident there. His interest in coast trading vessels may account for his living in various places. Thomas Skidmore became town clerk in Huntington, representative to the General Assembly in 1673, and served in King Philip's War in 1676. Thomas Skidmore was engaged by Governor John Winthrop, Jr., to assist him in preparing for a plantation at Saybrook, Connecticut. Thomas and John Skidmore (undoubtedly brothers) and also Edward Higbee (who married a daughter of Thomas Skidmore) are named in John Winthrop's papers. It is very probable that these families may have been known to one another in England before their coming to the New World.

Thomas Skidmore married (first), in England, Ellen. He married (second) Mrs. Joanna Baldwin, widow of Daniel Baldwin. He married (third) Mrs. Sarah Treadwell, widow of Edward Tread-

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

well. Children of the first marriage: 1. Thomas, of whom further. 2. Dorothy; married, July 20, 1652, Hugh Griffin. 3. Jedidah; married, as his first wife, Edward Higbee. 4. John, born April 11, 1642, died in 1680; was at Jamaica, Long Island; married Susannah; in his will he left to five children all his estate at Jamaica, Long Island, and £50 "given by my father, Thomas Skidmore of Fairfield, in New England." 5. Grace; married John Golding (Goulding). 6. Joseph.

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LV, pp. 379, 380. E. C. Hawley: "A Genealogical and Biographical Record of Thomas Skidmore," pp. 19, 20-28.)

II. Thomas (2) Skidmore, son of Thomas and Ellen Skidmore, was born in England, about 1625, and died in Huntington, Long Island, at an advanced age. He came to America about 1640, and appeared in records of Huntington as guardian for children of his brother-in-law, Edward Higbee (supposedly lost at sea, but who returned later). Mr. Skidmore owned land in Huntington and in many of the adjoining settlements, also in Connecticut, the home of the family in America. Land transfers were made by him in 1682-98. Ellen Skidmore, his granddaughter, who married Enos Bradley, we know was of Stratford. At this early period the only ones of the name who were there situated were these descendants of Thomas Skidmore, who had land there in 1650. Only one son is recorded as carrying the line and name in this generation. Hence the line herein given is believed to be a logical and correct one based on the above reasoning. Thomas Skidmore married Ellen. Children: 1. Thomas (3), of whom further. 2. Susanna. 3. Ellen. 4. Elizabeth.

(E. C. Hawley: "A Genealogical and Biographical Record of Thomas Skidmore," pp. 29-30. Records in possession of the family.)

III. Thomas (3) Skidmore, son of Thomas (2) and Ellen Skidmore, removed to Connecticut, and lived on land owned by his father. He was, from all data available, the father of: 1. Ellen, of whom further.

(Records in possession of the family.)

IV. Ellen Skidmore, daughter of Thomas (3) Skidmore, was born in 1701-04, and was of Stratford, Connecticut. She married Enos Bradley. (Bradley IV.)

(D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," Vol. II, p. 265. Records in possession of the family.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

(The Holt Line)

Arms—Azure, two bars or; in chief a cross formée fitchée of the last.

Crest—A squirrel sejant or, holding a hazel branch slipped and fructed, all proper.

Motto—*Exaltavit humiles.* (He exalteth the humble.)

(Burke: "General Armory.")

The family name Holt is local in origin, used to designate a resident at a holt or grove (or small forest). Several towns and places bear the name, as Holt Parish in County Suffolk; Holt Parish in Wiltshire; Holt Chapel in Dorsetshire, and Holt Heath in Worcester. Records indicate that the patronymic was in use as early as 1273, when Henry de la Holte is found in the Hundred Rolls of County Worcester, and William de la Holte in those of County York.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

1. *William Holt*, immigrant ancestor, was born in England about 1610, and died in Wallingford, Connecticut, September 1, 1683, leaving an estate inventoried at £238. He came to New Haven, Connecticut, his first record being the signing of the revised Constitution of New Haven, July 1, 1644. His original home-lot was on the north side of the present Water Street, between Union and Olive streets. About 1673 he removed to Wallingford, Connecticut.

William Holt married Sarah, who married (second) William Peck, and died in 1717. Children, born in New Haven, Connecticut: 1. John, born in 1645, died in East Haven, June 16, 1733; married, in 1673, Elizabeth, born May 15, 1648, daughter of John and Tabitha Thomas. He was a mariner. 2. Nathaniel, born in 1647; removed to New London, Connecticut, in 1673; sergeant in King Philip's War, wounded in the shoulder in the Great Swamp fight, December 19, 1675; removed to Newport, Rhode Island, about 1690, where he died May 28, 1723. He married (first), April 5, 1680, Rebecca Beebe, who died in 1689, daughter of Thomas and Millicent (Addis) (or Ash) Beebe, of New London, Connecticut. He married (second), in Newport, about 1690, but his wife's name is unknown. 3. Mercy, born in 1649, died at Wallingford, Connecticut, in 1688; married, November 9, 1680, Abraham Doolittle. 4. Eleazer, of whom further. 5. Thomas, born July 31, 1653, died unmarried, June 3, 1676. 6. Joseph, born April 2, 1655, died at Wallingford, December 19, 1697; married, November 20, 1684, Elizabeth French, born

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

June 20, 1664, died November 18, 1739, daughter of Francis and Lydia (Bunnell) French, of Derby, Connecticut. 7. Benjamin, born March 6, 1656, died without issue August 2, 1690, at Wallingford, Connecticut.

(D. S. Durrie: "Genealogical History of the Holt Family," pp. 231-34. Holt Association: "First Three Generations of Holts in America" (1930), pp. 234-39, 324. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," pp. 784-85.)

II. Eleazer Holt, son of William and Sarah Holt, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, April 5, 1651, and died there, June 24, 1736. He was an ensign. Eleazer Holt married (first), November 5, 1674, Tabitha Thomas. (Thomas II.) He married (second) Mary (Sandford) (Ashhurst) Hotchkiss, born in 1670, died in 1750, daughter of Ephraim and Mary (Powell) Sandford, and widow first of Joseph Ashhurst, and second of Joshua Hotchkiss. Children of the first marriage, born in New Haven: 1. William, born September 25, 1675, died November 28, 1675. 2. Thomas, born November 4, 1676, died March 13, 1758; captain in 1735; married, May 19, 1722, Abigail Johnson, of New Haven. 3. Sarah, of whom further. 4. Susanna, born October 21, 1681, died June 4, 1712; married, February 5, 1707-08, Roger Alling, of New Haven. 5. Tabitha, born January 30, 1683, died October 4, 1743; married (first), June 30, 1709, Samuel Whitehead, who died December 5, 1709, son of Samuel and Sarah (Gilbert) Whitehead; married (second), December 2, 1718, David Atwater, whose first wife, Ruth Bradley, had died in 1717. 6. Abigail, born November 17, 1686, will probated July, 1760; married, before 1715, Enos Pardee, son of Joseph and Elizabeth (Yale) Pardee, of New Haven. 7. Elizabeth, baptized January 12, 1690, died April 21, 1718. 8. Lydia, baptized November 5, 1693, died August 31, 1776; married (first), February 4, 1724, John Bassett, born March 3, 1690, died July 11, 1726, son of Samuel and Mary (Dickerman) Bassett; married (second), before 1731, Stephen Sperry, of New Haven, son of Richard, Jr., and Martha (Mansfield) Sperry.

(D. S. Durrie: "Genealogical History of the Holt Family," p. 235. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," pp. 784-85. Holt Association: "First Three Generations of Holt," pp. 253-72.)

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

III. Sarah Holt, daughter of Eleazer and Tabitha (Thomas) Holt, was born in New Haven, Connecticut, April 2, 1679, and died there, March 29, 1743. She married John Bradley. (Bradley III.)

(Holt Association: "First Three Generations of Holts," pp. 261-62.)

(The Thomas Line)

Arms—Or, a buck trippant proper.

Crest—A buck, as in the arms.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

The name Thomas has an ancient and honorable lineage in both England and Scotland. It has become one of the commonest of baptismal appellatives and surnames, and has also been a most abundant source of derivatives and nicknames. In the Hundred Rolls, 1273 A. D., we find Roger *fil.* Thomas, County Cambridge; Richard Thomas, of County Suffolk; and Walter Thomas, of Wiltshire.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames." Lower: "Patronymica Britannica.")

I. John Thomas, Sr., first known member of this family, was of New Haven, Connecticut, in 1639. He was a freeman in 1669, and a proprietor in 1685. He died December 15, 1671. In his will of January 4, 1670, he mentions wife Tabitha and their children. ("New Haven Probate Records," I, 153.) His estate was inventoried at £174 on January 9, 1672. John Thomas married Tabitha, who died April 1, 1690, leaving a will of March 22, 1690; her son, Samuel, was executor. ("New Haven Probate Records," II, 271.) Children. 1. Sarah, born about 1640, died December 28, 1711 (tombstone record); married, October 14, 1658, William Wilmot. (Wilmot II.) 2. John, died after May 9 and before July 25, 1712; married, January 12, 1671, Lydia Parker. 3. Daniel, Sr., died in 1694; married, December 10, 1702, Eunice Brown. 4. Elizabeth, born March or May 15, 1648-49; married, January, 1673, John Holt. 5. Samuel, born September 5, 1651, died before November 30, 1711; married Elizabeth. 6. Tabitha, of whom further. 7. Joseph, baptized November 9-10, 1660-61, died April 10, 1739; married, March 21, 1688, Abigail Preston.

("The Connecticut Magazine," Vol. XI (1907), pp. 649-50. D. L. Jacobus: "Families of Ancient New Haven, Connecticut," p. 652. J. W. Barber and L. S. Punderson: "History and Antiquities of New Haven, Connecticut" (1870), p. 78. Savage: "Genealogical

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, pp. 280-81.)

II. *Tabitha Thomas*, daughter of John and Tabitha Thomas, was born December 18, 1653, and died August 18, 1725. She married Eleazer Holt. (Holt II.)

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. IV, p. 280. D. S. Durrie: "Genealogical History of the Holt Family," p. 235.)

(The Pritchard Line)

Arms—Ermine, a lion rampant sable.

Crest—A dexter arm proper holding a battle axe, handle gules.

(Burke: "General Armory.")

Pritchard or Prichard is an equivalent for the Welsh ap-Richard, meaning son of Richard. We find David Apyrcharde on the register of Oxford University, A. D. 1521, and in 1545 William ap-Richard or Prichard.

(Bardsley: "Dictionary of English and Welsh Surnames.")

I. *Roger Prichard (or Pritchard)* came probably from the Welsh border, and received an allotment of five acres of land in Springfield, Massachusetts, in 1643. He was taxed there in 1644 for lots below Agawam River, and in 1647 for twenty-eight acres. He was made freeman April 13, 1648, and was granted one and one-half acres of meadow in 1651, and Nathaniel Pritchard four acres. He may have been a relative of Hugh Prichard, of Gloucester and Roxbury, Massachusetts, mentioned in a deed as of Broughton, Denbighshire. He died in New Haven, January 26, 1670-71, his name being written Pritchett in the record.

Roger Pritchard married Frances, who died in 1651. He removed in 1653 to Milford, Connecticut, where he married (second), December 18, 1653, Elizabeth (Prudden) Slough, daughter of James Prudden, and widow of William Slough. Children of the first marriage, born on the Welsh border: 1. Alice, of whom further. 2. Joan; married, at New Haven, September 1, 1647, John Lumbard, of Springfield. 3. Nathaniel; married (first), February 4, 1652, Hannah Langton, who died in 1690, daughter of George Langton; married (second), in 1691, Hannah Davis, widow of Samuel Davis, of Northampton, and removed from Springfield to New Haven, where he died

BANNING AND ALLIED FAMILIES

November 11, 1710. Children of the second marriage: 4. Joseph, born October 2, 1654, died about 1676. 5. Benjamin, born January 31, 1657; married, November 14, 1683, and removed from Milford to Waterbury, Connecticut, about 1733.

(Savage: "Genealogical Dictionary of the First Settlers of New England," Vol. III, pp. 485-86. M. A. Green: "Springfield, 1636-1886," pp. 69, 77, 96, 98, 110. "New Haven, Connecticut, Vital Records," p. 117. H. Bronson: "History of Waterbury, Connecticut," p. 524.)

II. Alice Pritchard (or Prichard), daughter of Roger and Frances Pritchard, was born on Welsh border, and died in New Haven, Connecticut, in 1692. She married William Bradley. (Bradley I.)

("New England Historical and Genealogical Register," Vol. LVII, p. 134.)



STATEMENT OF THE OWNERSHIP, MANAGEMENT, CIRCULATION, ETC.

REQUIRED BY THE ACT OF CONGRESS OF AUGUST 24, 1912.

OF AMERICANA, published quarterly at Somerville, New Jersey, for April 1, 1932,

State of New York, }
County of New York, } ss.

Before me, a Notary Public, in and for the State and County aforesaid, personally appeared Marion L. Lewis, who, having been duly sworn according to law, deposes and says that he is the President and Manager of the American Historical Society, Inc., publishers of Americana, and that the following is, to the best of his knowledge and belief, a true statement of the ownership, management, etc., of the aforesaid publication for the date shown in the above caption, required by the Act of August 24, 1912, embodied in section 411, Postal Laws and Regulations, to wit:

1. That the names and addresses of the publisher, editor, managing editor, and business managers are: Publisher, The American Historical Society, Inc., Somerville, N. J., and 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Editor, Winfield S. Downs, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Managing Editor, Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Business Manager, Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City.

2. That the owners are: The American Historical Society, Inc.; Marion L. Lewis, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Metcalf B. Hatch, Nutley, N. J.; Ed Lewis, Fifth Avenue Hotel, New York City; F. M. Keller, 80-90 Eighth Avenue, New York City; Benj. F. Lewis, Jr., 180 N. Wacker Drive, Chicago, Ill.; Winfield S. Downs, 123 Glen Avenue, Glen Rock, N. J.; Louise M. Greuling, 59 North Spring Garden Avenue, Nutley, N. J.; Mrs. Andrew Payne, Pasadena, Calif.; Mabel E. Lewis, 501 Prospect Street, Nutley, N. J.; Myrtle M. Lewis, 119 Glen Avenue, Glen Rock, N. J.; Florence K. Parks, 550 McDonough Street, Brooklyn, N. Y.; Mrs. O. L. Clampitt, 908 Central Avenue, Wilmette, Ill.; Marion L. O. Clark, Valparaiso, Ind.; James A. Dailey, 12 Division Avenue, Belleville, N. J.; Ida E. de Murguiondo, 750 Westminster Road, Brooklyn, N. Y.; J. A. Ellis, 4433 N. Paulina Street, Chicago, Ill.; Harry S. Hatch, Madison, Ind.; Bruce M. Lewis, 19 Coeyman Avenue, Nutley, N. J.; Koradine Lewis, 501 Prospect Street, Nutley, N. J.; Pauline Lewis, 491 E. De Mar Street, Pasadena, Calif.; Mrs. Ruth Lewis Brewster, Fresno, Calif.; E. G. Osborne, 503 Lincoln Way, Valparaiso, Ind.; L. Murray Ray, 287 Delaware Avenue, Toronto, Canada.

3. That the known bondholders, mortgagees, and other security holders owning or holding 1 per cent. or more of total amount of bonds, mortgages, or other securities are: None.

4. That the two paragraphs next above, giving the names of the owners, stockholders, and security holders, if any, contain not only the list of stockholders and security holders as they appear upon the books of the company but also, in cases where the stockholder or security holder appears upon the books of the company as trustee or in any other fiduciary relation, the name of the person or corporation for whom such trustee is acting, is given; also that the said two paragraphs contain statements embracing affiant's full knowledge and belief as to the circumstances and conditions under which stockholders and security holders who do not appear upon the books of the company as trustees, hold stock and securities in a capacity other than that of a bona fide owner; and this affiant has no reason to believe that any other person, association, or corporation has any interest direct or indirect in the said stock, bonds, or other securities than as so stated by him.

M. L. LEWIS, President.

Sworn to and subscribed before me this 16th day of March, 1932.

(Seal.)

FREDA M. KELLER,
Notary Public Bronx County, No. 38.
Certificate filed in N. Y. Co., No. 354.
(Commission Expires March 30, 1932.)



ANNUAL ROLL CALL, AMERICAN RED CROSS, 1932

HECKMAN
BINDERY INC.



JAN 96

Bound-To-Pleas[®] N. MANCHESTER,
INDIANA 46962

